PIERRE II

Collection of texts

www.pierre2.net

PDF version : May 4, 2026

Part I

Independent believers

Table of Contents

1	**Introduction**	**5**
2	**To our Brothers**	**7**
3	**Our Faith**	**11**
4	**Our Mission**	**13**
5	**The “Road to Damascus”**	**19**
6	**The Tragedy of Jesus**	**23**
7	**Christians and Israel**	**31**

1 Introduction

Fanatics have no friends in these texts.

Our mission aims at injecting the love of the Biblico-Qur'anic Inspiration into the hearts of pure people of all rites, religions and confessions. We want brotherly love to spread and rule on earth among men. Let us discover true faith through the knowledge of the Holy Scriptures!

Only such knowledge can free pure hearted people from the traps of ignorance and the chains of bigotry. Certain cults and traditions have been inherited and are practiced blindly through mere habit. We believe that such practices are undesired by God. He merely asked us to know Him and to love Him (Hosea 6,6 / John 4,23-24 / John 17,3 / Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,37).

Our Mission, together with this site, are a result of the revelation made by Jesus on the 13th of May, 1970. He unmasked the "Beast" of chapter 13 in the book of Revelation: the Antichrist. This revelation turned its depositary - and all those who believe in it - upside down. It was the 'Key' that unlocked all the mysteries in the Book of Revelation and in turn started the 'Universal Restoration' announced by the Holy Scriptures (see our text: "The Key of Apocalypse").

"Here I am standing at the door, knocking. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will enter and will dine with him and he with Me." (Revelation 3,20)

Pierre (2002)

2

To our Brothers

1. To the Jews our Brothers

The worst doctor, is the one who, out of compassion for his patient, hides the truth from him by claiming exceptional health when such is not the case. The true diagnosis must be revealed. True love implicates Truth.

Likewise, there is no worse antisemitism than hiding from the Jews their errors. They have suffered a great deal since Nebuchadnezzar up until Hitler, including Titus in between... there have been many holocausts.

However, this people have always refused -up to this present day- to listen to the prophets, such as Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Yeshua (Jesus). This refusal of the Word of God has been disastrous to them. Would they hear His Word today? They cannot find this Word in the Talmud, nor in the Kabala; not even in their rabbis' nationalistic assurances, and least of all, in leaders such as Ariel Sharon. These Jews are the Jewish people's greatest enemies and make up the worst antisemites.

The blessed Creator never destined Judaism to turn into a political State. In the past, the Jews asked Samuel to establish a Jewish kingdom; but the answer was that this **displeased** God: the one and only King of the Jews (1 Samuel 8,6). In spite of this, they crowned Saul as their first king and later confessed that, by doing so, they "have added to all their sins this evil of asking to have a king." (1 Samuel 12,19). The prophet Hosea also stated God's anger against this kingdom:

> "They have set up kings, but not with my consent, and appointed princes, but without my knowledge... (Hosea 8,4) ... In my anger I have given you a king and, in my wrath, I take him away." (Hosea 13,11)

This is why the kingdom of Israel was fatally defeated in the past. It was God's punishment. Yet today, we have a "resurrected", powerful, and well-disguised Israel! Most Jews cling to it as savior. They see it as a sign of the Messiah's advent. The prophecies have announced its return to sound up men's faith (Jœl 4,9-14). Israel's "resurrection" seduced the world as predicted. Pope John Paul II himself received Israel's Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu exclaiming: "God bless Israel!" This is contrary to God's openly **declared** opinion. By this statement, the Pope drowned his fellow-man in error, and this is the worst form of antisemitism.

The prophecies have also announced Israel's final disappearance after its victorious return (Revelation 17,8). This is when the Messiah's triumph and the resurrection of all those of pure of heart in the world will come about. The "few remnants" of Jews will then return to Yeshua of Nazareth: the one and only true Messiah (Isaiah 10,20-22 / Amos 6,8-10).

To these "few remnants", we open our hearts lovingly. We urge them to reconsider their view of the Messiah. They will find none other than a misunderstood carpenter, despised and put to death by his own people as the prophet Isaiah had so well predicted:

> "... without beauty, without majesty (we saw him), no looks to attract our eyes; a thing despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows and familiar with suffering... He was despised and we took no account of him... Harshly dealt with, he bore it humbly, he never opened his mouth, like a lamb led to the slaughterhouse... He was torn away from the land of the living..." (Isaiah 53)

We pray to God to unite his Jewish, Christian, and Muslim children. Children dispersed by religions and sects.

2. To the Christians our Brothers

To be a **true** Christian is not a matter of heredity or baptism. Nor is being plunged into water sufficient for one to emerge as a committed Christian. Any faith, like love, is a matter of choice: one can only choose one's faith after having known, understood, appreciated and desired it.

Most Christians have become like this; not through faith, but through social customs. They practice their faith by hating and killing non-Christians; rather than loving them and trying to understand them. We have known many Christians who express their faith by hating Jews, Muslims or different races. They are not Christians by choice or by commitment to the person of Jesus Christ whose Name they bear (Christian derives from Christ). How many Christians believe that Jesus of Nazareth is really the Messiah predicted by the biblical prophecies? How many are capable of justifying their faith by these prophecies and are able to explain them? This is what the first Jewish disciples of Jesus used to do. This is what St. Peter also recommends us to do (1 Peter 3,15).

How can a Christian despise a Jew or a Muslim just because they are different?

Jesus Himself is from the Jewish people, and so are His twelve apostles. We differentiate, off-course, between Jews and Zionists, as we do so between authentic Christians and so-called "Christian nations". Again, how can Christians have an aversion towards Muslims, considering them inferior, or pretesting that they reject certain fundamental Christian beliefs? We recommend our friends to refer to the text: "A Look of faith at the Qur'an", in which we demonstrate that the teachings of the Bible and the Qur'an are one and the same; contrary to what some misinformed "believers" claim.

In some Oriental Countries, the so-called 'Jews', the so-called 'Christians', and the so-called 'Muslims' fight ferociously amongst themselves, for each to establish their own nation. Yet, faith is one thing and this type of nationalism is another altogether. No religion; be it Jewish, Christian or Islamic; justifies the establishment of a religious nation which is **political**. Jesus never wanted such a kingdom on earth: "My Kingdom is not of this world" (John 18,36). Hatred and wars spawn from the political concepts of religion. The Vatican, by proclaiming itself a "State" in 1929, betrayed its spiritual Mission.

It is our hope that true Christians, Jews and Muslims will discover the brotherhood that links them together with other fellow man, and thus restore the Kingdom of the Messiah on earth (see text: "The Universal Restoration").

We pray to God to unite his Jewish, Christian, and Muslim children. Children dispersed by religions and sects.

3. To the Muslims our Brothers

Most Muslims consider Islam as a new religion and independent from what was revealed in the Bible to both Jews and Christians. On the contrary, God declares the Qur'an was inspired by Him in order **to confirm** the Biblical message before it; and that the One and only God inspired both Holy Books:

> "Say (O Muslims): 'We believe in what has been sent down upon us (*the Qur'an*), and sent down upon you (*the Bible*). Our God and yours is One God (*the same*), and to Him we submit (*Muslims*).'" (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46)

The fanaticism which contaminated Jews and Christians did not spare Muslims either. We do find tolerant Muslims, however, there are fanatics who turn into fundamentalists. They disregard the Qur'anic verses that are meant to unite the Biblical and Qur'anic communities. They stop, as the Qur'an says, at "what is ambiguous therein, seeking discord and seeking to unravel its interpretation. But none knows its interpretation save God, while those deeply rooted in knowledge say: 'We believe in it. All is from our Lord.'" (Qur'an III; The House of Imran,7).

How many do really understand?

The Muslims are far from being united as there are fundamentalists who kill their fellow believers in mosques. How many people reason in finding a way to stop some Muslims from imposing practices never prescribed by God in the Qur'an? We notice different customs from one Islamic country to another; particularly concerning restrictions imposed on women, when such prescriptions are not imposed by the Qur'an. On this note, many intransigent laws are prescribed, not by the Qur'an, but by those who interpret the ambiguous verses of the Qur'an, "seeking discord".

The Islamic world awaits the "Mahdi", the spiritual Guide to be sent by God in order to orient the believers. We fully agree with all the Muslims, especially those in Iran, who proclaim: "No Mahdi except Issa (*Jesus*)".

However, when one speaks to certain Muslims about Jesus, they rebuff them. To them, speaking of Jesus means giving Him a predominance over the Prophet Muhammad. This is fanaticism. Muhammad never reacted fanatically.

On the contrary, this noble Prophet qualified the Messiah as "the Word of God" and "the Spirit of God" (Qur'an IV; Women,171). He never applied such qualities to himself. He also admits in his "Noble Discussions" (Hadith) that "no man is born without being touched by Satan at birth. All cry at birth as a result of this satanic touch; all save Mary and her Son".

In saying so, the Prophet puts Jesus and his Mother above Himself, and this shocks many Muslims... (One can find this Hadith in the Qur'anic interpretation by "El Jalalein" of the verses 35 from the Sura III, The House of Imran; it is a Hadith related by Abu Houraira , see `http://www.el-ilm.net/t1333-maryam-bint-imran.` It is also reported in a slightly different way by Al Bokhari, see the original French book "L'authentique tradition musulmane, choix de hadiths", Fasquelle, p.48; also see our text: "A Look of faith at the Qur'an")

Muhammad also revealed that, at the end of times, when the Antichrist (Al Massih al Dajjal) will appear, none other than Jesus Himself and his followers will fight against him (see Hadith No. 1806 and 1808 in Sheikh Sobhi Saleh's book on the Prophet's Noble Discussions "Manhal el Waridin", as well as our text "The Antichrist in Islam").

Jesus is truly the expected Mahdi and His Return was also announced in the Gospels (Matthew 24,30).

We pray to God to unite his Jewish, Christian, and Muslim children. Children dispersed by religions and sects.

Pierre (2002)

3

Our Faith

Our purpose is to unite the true independent believers, whœver and wherever they are, by God's Word in the Bible and the Qur'an.

We urge them, by knowing this divine Word, to elevate themselves in order to listen to what the Divine Spirit tells men today.

The Messiah, Word of God, said:

> "Why do you not judge **for yourselves** what is right?" (Luke 12,57)

Many of our correspondents have asked us: "What is your Faith, what do you believe in"? Here is our Faith expressed with simplicity.

We believe:

1. That God exists. He is the only Creator. No polytheism exists.
2. That God manifested Himself to Abraham, the first man who revealed Him four thousand years ago.
3. In the Prophets who followed Abraham and announced the Advent of the Messiah.
4. That Jesus is the Messiah.
5. That Muhammad is the Prophet sent by God to confirm the Biblical Books and enlighten those who knew neither God nor the Bible.
6. In the Inspired Books: the 46 Books of the Old Testament, the 27 Books of the New Testament, the 114 Sura of the Qur'an and the "Holy Discussions" of Muhammad.
7. In the apparitions of the Virgin Mary, the Mother of the Messiah, and especially those in La Salette (France 1846), Lourdes (France 1858) and Fatima (Portugal 1917).
8. That the Book of Revelation has been revealed by the Messiah Himself on the 13th of May 1970, to unmask "the Beast" (the Antichrist), to announce the Return of Christ and establish the Universal Restoration.
9. In the Spiritual Supper offered by the Messiah, in our homes, with Him.

We do not believe in:

1. The material cults: hierarchies, various rituals with their particular garments and gestures, animal sacrifices and pilgrimages etc...
2. Places of cult: synagogues, churches, mosques, pagodas etc... The only place of cult is interior, within the hearts of the believers, where God dwells.
3. Reincarnation, metempsychosis, or cult of animals etc...
4. Religious nationalism or elected people (Jewish, Christian, Muslim etc...). Faith is not political and election is individual and universal.

Some people have asked us: To what religion do you belong?

Our answer: We belong to no religion. We have understood from the Prophecies of the Holy Books and from the Messages of Mary that God wants to renew everything and to establish a direct and personal link with the believers. Thus, we have liberated ourselves from all the religious hierarchies because they have been denounced by the Prophecies and by Mary as mercenaries and traitorous. Let people qualify us as they wish! Let them believe what they wish! We are simply **independent believers**.

We invite all those who are pure in heart to discover spiritual maturity; we urge them to establish the direct link with God, our Creator and Father, like Adam before his fall. This is God's explicit Will.

Finally, we dare to say that, due to the Inspired Books, our faith has become absolute Knowledge.

Pierre (02.2002)

4

Our Mission

The Antichrist, the "Beast" of the Book of Revelation, has appeared! We must unmask it! Holding great power and internationally supported, the Beast has seduced "many different nations and countries and languages and emperors" (Revelation 10,11) "... the whole world had marveled and followed the Beast (*the Antichrist*)" (Revelation 13,3). His cunning has bedimmed the spirits of men. The believers themselves have not recognized it. But a small number resist it. The prophets had announced that he would appear with great power and would propagate international events on a grand scale; and would succeed, for a certain time, before heading to its definitive destruction (Revelation 17,8). After his fall, the world will be renewed (Revelation 21,1).

Our mission is to demonstrate, through the Bible and the Qur'an, the accomplishment of the prophecies concerning our time and to reveal their subsequent consequences. Indeed, the twentieth and the twenty-first centuries have witnessed the fulfillment of historical events predicted by the prophets of the Old Testament, the Messiah and his Apostles, as well as the prophet Muhammad.

These historic events have great consequences: they mark the end of an era ("the End of Times") and inaugurate **a new spiritual era** in the world. These events are symbolized as a loud resounding trumpet to draw all men's attention to the importance of their spiritual significance. The prophetic Book of St John's Revelation is consecrated to these events and the trumpets mentioned therein announce their debut. It is time to sound the Apocalyptic Trumpet to awaken the "sensible" (Matthew 25).

In the past, the Jews used to sound the trumpet ("shofar" in Hebrew) to call for prayer, to gather for combat, or to announce the New Year. The trumpet therefore always attracts people's attention upon an important event.

The prophecies teach us that God will send new Apostles, those of the "End of Times". Their Mission is to blow the (symbolic) trumpet by explaining the prophesied events: historical events of the XXth - XXIst century. The resounding trumpet is therefore, **the explanation of the prophecies**, which perfectly apply to these events. This explanation naturally draws men's attention, particularly believers, to the spiritual valor of what is occurring in the world. These messengers of God, specifically the Messiah's, are charged with this mission:

> Matthew 24,30-31: "The Son of Man (*Jesus*) will send his angels (*messengers*) with a **loud Trumpet** to gather his elect..."
>
> Qur'an VI; Cattle,73: "To Him belongs sovereignty, upon a Day when **the Trumpet** shall be blown."

> Qur'an XXVII; The Ants,87: "A Day shall come when **the Trumpet** shall be blown, and all who are in the heavens and earth shall be filled with horror, save those whom God wills. . . "

Therefore, this spiritual trumpet announces the end of an era that has become obsolete. Also, and above all, it proclaims the dawn of a new spiritual era described as "the New Heaven and the New Earth":

> 2 Peter 3,13: "What we are waiting for is what he promised: **the new heavens and new earth**, the place where righteousness will be at home."
>
> Revelation 21,1: "Then I saw a **New Heaven** and a **New Earth**, the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now. . . "
>
> Qur'an XIV; Abraham,47-48: "God is Almighty, Avenging. A day shall come when the earth is recast into **other Earth and Heavens**. . . "

This **new era** was thus announced **by the prophecies**. We are called to demonstrate this by **opening** the Holy Books:

> Revelation 20,12: ". . . the Book of Life **was opened**, and other books opened which were the record of what they had done in their lives, by which the dead were judged."
>
> Qur'an XXXIX; The Groups,69-70: "The Book shall be **open**, prophets and witnesses shall be summoned, a judgement will be passed among them. . . Each soul shall be paid in full for what it did. . . "

This new spiritual dimension is also symbolized by a new "open door **in Heaven**":

> Revelation 3,8: "I have opened a **Door** in front of you that no one will be able to close", says Jesus.
>
> Revelation 4,1: "Then, in my vision, I saw a **Door** open in Heaven and heard the same voice speaking to me, a voice like a trumpet, saying: 'Come up here: I will show you what is to take place in the future'".
>
> Qur'an XV; Al-Hijr,14: "Even if We open to them a **Door** from Heaven, and they (*the unbelievers*) keep ascending through it, they will still say (*to justify their refusal*): 'Ah, our eyes have been blurred. . . '"

Jesus said:

> "So with you when you see **these things** happening: know that the Kingdom of God is near. . . Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away." (Luke 21,31-33)

What events represent **these things**?

Happy are those who understand that **these things** are manifesting right under our very eyes from 1948, as they "stand with confidence before the Son of Man." (Luke 21,36)

Here is a summary of the events that constitute **these things**:

1. We rediscover a political Entity in the Bible that existed in the past. The Biblical prophets teach us that it displeases God, who decides to destroy it. Also, the Biblical prophecies announce that it will reappear in order to test man's faith. It is given the pejorative name of "the Beast", or more so, "the Antichrist", because of its iniquity. The Beast appears **in Palestine**, reaching the heart of Jerusalem (Revelation 11,2 & 20,7-9), with its "immense empire" (Revelation 13,2) and its multitude of crimes and injustices (Revelation 17,1-7). It appears "healed from its deadly wound" (Revelation 13,3 & 13,12). God rejects those who support it, and blesses those who resist it. (Refer to our text "The Key of the Apocalypse")

2. The appearance of the second Beast which supports it (Revelation 13,11-16).

3. The whole world is seduced by the Beast and supports it.

4. The grand treason of the clergy and Christians, which is obvious to the naked eye (Matthew 24,10-13).

5. "The Wicked One", the Antichrist will enthrone himself in "God's Sanctuary" (the Vatican) (2 Thessalonians 2,4).

6. The Qur'an equally declared the apparition of this Beast at the end of times: "When the Word falls upon them (*the unjust*), We shall bring up a Beast from the earth who will speak to them" (Qur'an XXVII; The Ant,82). The prophet Muhammad spoke about this end of times in his "Noble Discussions" (Hadith). We refer to the text "The Antichrist in Islam" and for more details: "The signs of the Return of Jesus".

"When **these things** begin to take place", Jesus says, "stand erect, hold your heads high, because your liberation is near at hand." (Luke 21,28) This means that believers should not be discouraged by the Beast's overwhelming power. They must resist according to their means up to the end, up till martyrdom if necessary, knowing that it is heading to its utter destruction.

We thus hold our heads high, confident to stand erect before the Throne of the Divine Judge. This is because the day of the **universal** trial dœs not surprise us (Luke 21,34). We owe this to the infinite gentleness and mercy of our Savior. He considers us worthy -because of our perseverance- of his indispensable protection in these days of wœ: "Because you have kept my commandment to endure trials, I will keep you safe during the time of trial, which is going to come, **to test the people of the world**" (Revelation 3,10).

This final **universal** test puts an end to an old religious regime and installs the process of an irreversible and universal spiritual Restoration on earth.

This predicted Restoration is "the New Earth and the New Heaven" announced by the Bible and the Qur'an. **It has already been ignited** (see text "The Universal Restoration"). It grows and strengthens every day, supported by the Spirit of Jesus back among his people.

All those who strive in implanting this prophetical Restoration, together form the "New Earth and the New Heaven" in our world (Revelation 21,1). "Here God lives among men. He will make His Home among them..." (Revelation 21,3)

We are doing our best to enlighten men of good faith, freely, on the subject of this Universal Restoration. Those who are thirsty of God's Love and want to belong to Him, will understand our message. To them, God will give Himself directly in the Bread of Life around the Heavenly Table without any clerical intervention, as was done in the past:

> Revelation 21,6-7: "It is already done... **I** will give water from the well of Life **free** to anybody who is thirsty; it is the rightful inheritance of the one who proves victorious; and I will be his God and he a son to me."

The Messiah is already back, knocking at the door of our hearts. He wants us to open and welcome Him in order to share with Him the Bread of Life:

> Revelation 3,20: "Look, I am standing at the door, knocking. If one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in to **share Supper** (*Heavenly Table*), side by side with him."

The Heavenly Bread is the Source of spiritual Life. Whether one believes it or not, Jesus has announced it:

> John 6,53-58: "If you do not eat the **flesh** of the Son of Man and do not drink his **blood**, you will not have life within you. Anyone who does eat my flesh and drink my blood has eternal Life, and I shall raise him on the Last Day. For my flesh is real food and my blood is real drink. He who eats my flesh and drinks my blood lives in Me and I live in him. As I, who am sent by the living Father, myself draw life from the Father, so whoever eats Me will draw Life from me. This is the Bread come down from Heaven. . . "

These strong words were neither understood nor accepted by many; they shocked the Jews who heard them in the past, and the disciples themselves (John 6,60). They still are a test for humanity because, Jesus explained, "these words are Spirit and they are Life" (John 6,63); they are addressed to men thirsty of spiritual life, who are capable of resisting the worldly currents in order to reach heavenly levels. Materialistic mentalities do not understand these words.

Some people find it difficult to understand what Jesus said about "the Bread that comes down from Heaven". We draw the attention of our Muslim brothers, in particular, on the fact that the Holy Qur'an speaks eloquently about this heavenly Food (Sura V; The Table,112-115. We refer to our text: "A Look of faith at the Qur'an", chapter 5.3; The Heavenly Table).

Everything has to be renewed! And this has already begun. The teaching of the Word of God has to be formed again from the Bible and the Qur'an. By sharing this teaching, we can renew the World. This is a great and beautiful mission to which every true believer should be committed. 2000 years ago, Paul already talked about the priesthood of Jesus: "On this subject we have many things to say, and they are difficult to explain because you have grown so slow at understanding. Really, when you should by this time have become masters, you need someone to teach you all over again the elementary principles of interpreting God's oracles..." (Hebrews 5,11-12) These same words are addressed today to the "modern believers"

Paul wished to speak to men who are mature in faith, to "mature men with minds trained by practice to distinguish between good and bad." (Hebrews 5,14) He wanted to "leave behind all the elementary teaching about Christ and concentrate on its completion, without going over the fundamental doctrines again: the turning away from dead actions and toward faith in God..." (Hebrews 6,1-3). That is what we are asked to do by God today... after centuries of stagnation, or better, centuries of regression.

Nourished by the Bread of Life which is the Body of Jesus, we are elevated every day to be closer to our heavenly Father. We thus re-establish, step by step, the link between God and man.

Paul invited the first Christians to elevate themselves in this very manner: "Let us be confident, then, in approaching the throne of grace, that we shall have mercy from him and find grace when we are in need of help." (Hebrews 4,16) "You have come to the City of the living God, the Heavenly Jerusalem... You have come to God Himself, the supreme Judge... and to Jesus, the Mediator who brings a New Covenant..." (Hebrews 12,22-24)

To rise to the Throne of God, we must **know** the divine messages. By elevating ourselves we possess Eternal Life. Indeed, Jesus says: "Eternal Life is this: to **know You**, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent." (John 17,3)

But how can we get to know God and his messengers in our days of darkness? They have been disfigured by fanaticism, various clerical treasons and sects. People have become unable to distinguish between good and evil because of the lack of Biblical and Qur'anic truthful knowledge.

In 1846, the holy Virgin appeared in France ("La Salette"), and complained about the perversity of the Christian clergy. Before Her, the prophets and Jesus Himself expressed the same reproach about the Jewish clergy (Ezekiel 34 / Jeremiah 23 / Matthew 23). All those religious leaders have been cursed by God because the only "spiritual food" they offered was a theatrical form of worship, incantations, songs, colorful and rich ornaments, pilgrimage and the amassing of money. Many of these bad shepherds left their flocks in complete ignorance of the Word of God in the Bible and the Qur'an. The prophet Muhammad also said in his "Noble Discussions" (Hadith): "A time will come for men in which all that will remain of the Qur'an is its drawing, and of Islam its Name. They claim to belong to Islam but they are the most remote from it".

Without genuine spiritual knowledge, believers have become sickly and weak. Today, they are incapable of eating solid food... or even milk (Hebrews 5,12). What would the prophets say to the "believers" of the XXth and XXIst centuries who ignore the meaning of "the spirit of prophecy" and who instead, run after sects and false charismatic exhibitions? Nowadays, 2000 years after Jesus, some Christians try to stammer incomprehensible words, speaking "in tongues", instead of interpreting prophecies. These practices have been condemned by Paul (1 Corinthians 14).

Unfortunately, we must start all over again, from step one. We must go back to the "elementary principles of interpreting God's oracles" (Hebrews 5,12), and "leave behind us all the elementary teaching about Christ" (Hebrews 6,1). That is, we must embrace the current complex challenges such as the Return of Jesus, the Book of Revelation, the Antichrist, the Universal Restoration, the Bread of Life taken at home, the Immanuel, the New Earth and the New Heaven, the Genuine Spiritual Temple, the real martyrs of today, etc... All these things, yet so simple and clear, have become to most people incomprehensible and much too complicated. Yet this is the consistent, solid spiritual food of those who seek to be perfect (Hebrews 5,11-14). This is the "Straight Way" prescribed by the Qur'an (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha, 6).

We embrace this Mission with courage in the Name of God and for His Glory. Our love for God and for those who are thirsty to know Him, fill us with zeal in spreading the divine Light.

Jesus recommended his disciples:

> "**Teach them** to observe all the commands I gave you..." (Matthew 28,20) ... "The man who keeps them and **teaches them** will be considered great in the Kingdom of Heaven." (Matthew 5,19)

The Qur'an also prescribes:

> "Say: 'O People of the Book (Bible), you follow no religion unless you practice the Torah and the Gospel and what has been revealed to you from your Lord.'" (Qur'an V; The Table,68)

This duty to teach was repeated by the Virgin Mary in La Salette (1846) and Fatima (1917). Talking of the treason of the clergy -whom She described as "cesspools of impurity"- She also revealed that "Rome (*the Vatican*) will lose faith and become the seat of the Antichrist". She ends her Message in saying:

> "I call on **the true disciples** of the Living God, **the true imitators** of Jesus-Christ... my children, **my true devotees**, who gave themselves to Me to be led to my Divine Son. I call on **the Apostles of the end of times**... It is time for them to come forth and **illuminate the earth**... Go, show yourselves as my beloved children. I am with you and **within you**, provided that your faith enlightens you in these unfortunate days. Let your zeal make you hunger for the Glory and Honor of Jesus. Fight, children of Light, you small in number who still perceive; for this is the Time of times, the End of ends... The Abyss is opening: Here is the king of kings of darkness! Here is the **Beast** (*the Antichrist*) ... He will be annihilated by Michael, the Archangel... **Everything will be renewed**: God will be served and glorified... My children, do pass this Message to all my people."

We feel deeply concerned by the call of God, of Jesus the Messiah, of Muhammed, of the Prophets and Apostles, and last but not least, of the Virgin our Mother. We answer this heavenly Call in spreading the teachings and the prophecies of the Bible and the Qur'an. **Everything** will thus "**be renewed**": the New Earth and the New Heaven will finally shine gloriously on earth.

5

The "Road to Damascus"

To Christians

1. Chart of Independence

Paul of Tarsus was a Jew, fully convinced of his beliefs and fanatically attached to the Synagogue. When he was about 25 years old, he took the road to Damascus in order to arrest some Jews in this City who had become Christians. On his way, Jesus suddenly appeared to Paul and asked him to become His disciple (Acts 9).

This apparition struck Paul deeply and drastically altered his outlook on faith: It completely liberated him from the Synagogue, making of him, an **independent believer**.

Today, God invites us to elevate ourselves closer to Him. He **ardently** wants to establish a more intimate and direct relationship with each one of us. To react to this divine call, we must liberate ourselves by personally experiencing a modern-day "Road to Damascus". But many bigots are fanatically attached to various religious institutions, just like Paul was with the Synagogue. They are afraid to walk on their own towards God; they feel the need of a religious institution to sustain them.

Yet, we notice an evident moral deterioration of the diverse religious institutions in the world, particularly the Vatican. This is a sign of the new times. It is the time to rely on God alone. Those who desire to answer God's call must liberate themselves from the ties to various religious institutions that are deviant. They prevent our spiritual growth.

In the Book of Revelation, God offers us the opportunity to elevate ourselves towards Him by opening a new spiritual door for us:

> "I have opened in front of you **a door** that nobody will be able to close... I saw a door open in Heaven and heard... '**Come up here**: I will show you **what is to come in the future**.'" (Revelation 3,8 / 4,1)

We cannot ignore what is actually coming: the obvious moral deterioration of the Church. The media ceaselessly talks about this and a part of our mission consists of witnessing against it. When we denounce this defection, superficial Christians -misinformed or fanatics- answer: "But Jesus said that the gates of Hell will not prevail against her (**The church**)". This is true! Jesus said this! (Matthew 16,18)

However, Jesus also predicted the treason of this Church at the end of times, just before His return: "When the Son of Man comes, will **He find any faith on earth?!**" (Luke 18,8). He confirmed this in insisting that: "... with the increase of lawlessness, love **in most people** will grow cold". But, then adds: "But the man who stands firm to the end will be saved" (Matthew

24,10-13). Those who stand firm will be saved by liberating themselves from an irremediably affected clergy.

Appearing in La Salette (France) in 1846, the Virgin Mary already qualified the clergy as "**cesspools of impurity**", adding that: "Rome will lose faith and will become **the seat of the Antichrist**". Indeed, the gates of Hell have prevailed against this Church! (Refer to our text: "La Salette")

Of which church is Jesus then referring to? Of Peter's Church which betrayed Him? Certainly not! He alludes to the church that is formed by those who stand firm till the end, in the universal trials of the end of times (Revelation 3,10). This time has come.

Jesus told Peter: "when you were young, you put on your own belt and walked where you liked; but when you grow old, you will stretch out your hands, and **somebody else** will put a belt around you and take you where you would rather not go." (John 21,18)

Today, 2000 years after Jesus, Peter, who is personified by the Pope, has become old. He is being dragged -with the church alongside him- by this "somebody else", to where he would rather not go! Who is this "somebody else"? Paul warned us that this enigmatic person will appear just before the Return of Jesus: "It (*Jesus' Return*) cannot happen until the Great Revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Lost One has appeared. This is the Enemy (*of Christ: the Antichrist*), the one who claims to be so much greater than all that men call "god"... he enthrones himself in God's sanctuary..." (2 Thessalonians 2,3-4). Is this not the actual situation with the Vatican?! Is its Pope really free?

No!! "**Somebody else**" is pulling the strings in the dark: the Antichrist. We have been thoroughly warned!!

But who is the Antichrist?

St. John responds: "The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ–he is the liar–he is the Antichrist" (1 John 2,22).

Who denies that Jesus is the Christ? Who still waits for, and always, another Messiah? The Christians? Off-course not. The Muslims? No, as the Qur'an attests that Jesus is the Messiah (Qur'an III; The House of Imran,45). Only the Jews deny that Jesus is the Messiah and await "**somebody else**". They believe that the return of the State of Israel is a sign of his imminent advent.

The presence of this Zionist State is one of the signs that a new spiritual era is being inaugurated and that the return of Jesus has already begun. Many independent believers have already met Jesus on their "Road to Damascus" and have discovered "The new door open in heaven". With him they begin the "Universal restoration" predicted by the prophets (Acts 3,21). (Refer to our text: "The Universal Restoration").

Some Christians used to say: "Outside the Church there is no salvation". Today, there is no salvation inside this church. All those who recognize this evident fact are already on their personal "Road to Damascus"; and as the Messiah manifested himself to Paul, so will He do the same to them too. He will introduce them through the "Open Door".

In the past, Peter urged the Jews to save themselves from the Synagogue: "Save yourselves from this perverse generation. They accepted what he said and were baptized" (Acts 2,40-41). Today, God addresses these same parables to his children with regards to the Church: "Come out, my people, away from her so that you do not share in her crimes and have the same plagues to bear" (Revelation 18,4-5).

On the 13th of May 1970, Jesus appeared to a Lebanese priest who was pro-Israeli. He revealed to him a shocking revelation: "Today is the 13th of May, the day of the apparition of the Virgin Mary, Our Mother, in Fatima. Open the Book of Revelation to Chapter 13: The Beast

is Israel!" This shocking declaration is equivalent to that of Paul's on his "Road to Damascus" because its vital spiritual and practical implications led this priest to become, like Paul, an independent believer. (Please refer to our text "The Key of the Apocalypse")

The Vatican deviated because of the Antichrist, despite the warnings of Jesus, Paul, John and Mary. The clergy has abandoned the Divine Savior to follow the satanic Seducer. "The gates of hell have prevailed upon this Church". This is why Jesus opens for us a new Door, for us to exit and leave, and shepherd us into the "New Jerusalem" to build "the New Earth and the New Heaven", where God lives with his children (Revelation 21,1-4).

After having seen Jesus, Paul had the courage to break away from the Synagogue and thus contributed in building the church. Likewise today, all those who recognize the Antichrist, the Beast of the Book of Revelation, and have the courage to break away from the crumbling Church, contribute in building "the New Earth and the New Heaven". Against such people, "The gates of hell shall never prevail".

The Jewish clergy commanded Peter and John "not to teach anymore in the Name of Jesus", they answered: "How can we stop proclaiming what we have seen and heard" (Acts 4,18-20). The time has also come for us to no longer obey any religious leaders dragged by "somebody else", but to obey Jesus himself.

The Apocalyptical Trumpet has sounded to liberate the true disciples of Jesus. Only their hearts will hear it and will become -like Peter, Paul, the Apostles, and Muhammad- **independent believers**.

6

The Tragedy of Jesus

The Christ in the desert (Ivan Kramskoi)

Few people understand the tragedy of Jesus and the reason for which the Jews refused to recognize in Him the awaited Messiah: He refused to restore a Jewish Kingdom because, as he had revealed, the Kingdom of God "is not of this world" (John 18,36). Thus, a Jewish State is as damnable by God as a Christian or Muslim state.

Indeed, God is for all believers, whereas States belong exclusively to their respective citizens, believers and unbelievers.

1. Zionism against Judaism

The tragedy of Jesus is Zionism, the politicization of Judaism. The whole problem lies here!

The essence of Judaism is spiritual. This faith in God began with Abraham, 4000 years ago, to whom the Creator revealed Himself, in order to make Himself known, through him, **to all men**. The divine intention was not to set up a limited Jewish political movement, but to spread the knowledge of the unique God. Along the centuries, Zionism suffocated Judaism to the point of reducing it into a Jewish nationalism. The Hebrews thought that they should express their faith by creating a national State. Judaism, is it a faith or a State? From God's point of view, the two are incompatible. All the tragedy lies here!

2. History of the politicization of Judaism

Judaism took a political turn in the XIth century BC, after the Israelites entered Palestine. Since this time, the Jewish community wanted to transform itself into a kingdom: "The men of Israel said to Gideon: 'Rule over us, you, your son and your grandson...'; Gideon replies: 'I will not rule over you, and neither will my son, because God is your Ruler'" (Judges 8,22-23). Gideon perceived the danger of such a political dynasty and rejected the project, just as Jesus did after him, in declaring that God is the unique King.

A second attempt took place one century later under Samuel. This time, a Jewish Kingdom was established with Saul as its first king, but contrary to God's explicit will and of the prophet Samuel's. In fact, God considered himself dethroned by the Jews and declared to Samuel: "... It is not you they have rejected, but Me, not wanting Me to reign over them anymore" (1 Samuel 8,7).

After Saul's enthronement, Samuel invited the Israeli community to repentance and to recognize its wrong in choosing a man as king: "Clearly understand what a very wicked thing you have done, in God's eyes, by asking for a king" (1 Samuel 12,17). And the Jews confessed: "To all our sins we have added this wrong of asking for a king." (1 Samuel 12,19). The politicization of Judaism is thus condemned, from the beginning, by the very people who instituted it.

Centuries later, the prophets reminded the Jews of their deviation towards politics. God says through the prophet Hosea:

"They (*the Israelis*) have set up kings but without my consent, and appointed princes but without my knowledge... (Hosea 8,4) ... Israel, you have destroyed yourself, though in Me lies your help. Your king, where is he now to save you and your governors of whom you once said: 'Give me a king and princes'. I gave you a king in my anger and took him away in my wrath." (Hosea 13,9-11)

Effectively, the kingdom was removed from Israel after the Babylonian invasion under Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BC. The Temple of Solomon was destroyed, the Jews were deported to Babylon, and its royalty, the dynasty of David, ceased to exist ever since (2 Kings 25,8-12 / 2 Chronicles 36,17-21).

From henceforth, the Israelis were nostalgic for this Davidic kingdom, totally forgetting that the sole King is God. During the centuries that followed the Babylonian invasion, they often tried to restore their kingdom in Israel. They saw in the Messiah, the only person capable of restoring this Davidic kingdom. This earthly kingdom became their obsession. Just as the old-aged Simeon and Anna; they waited for, with all their strength, this "consolation of Israel", this "political deliverance of Jerusalem" (Luke 2,25-38).

In the first century B.C., under the Roman Empire, the Jews managed to restore a kingdom with the help of the Romans. The first king was Herod the Great. He did not obtain the people's consent, was not of David's lineage, but a descendant of the Maccabees (from the tribe

of Levi). Moreover, Herod was just a puppet at the service of the Romans, enthroned by them to calm the Jews eager to have a kingdom.

Yet the Jews wanted an autonomous kingdom led by a **dynasty issued of David**. Their aim was therefore, to provoke a rebellion against Herod and the Romans to restore this kingdom. But they believed that the Messiah should first appear, so to mobilize the people for war against the Romans. This nostalgic belief of an Israeli kingdom totally eclipsed the spiritual dimension of Judaism. The Messiah, was solely awaited to "save" Israel militarily, in order to restore a vast Jewish empire, a "Greater Israel", similar to that of Solomon.

3. John the Baptist

At the sight of John the Baptist attacking Herod (Mark 6,17-20 / Luke 3,19-20), the nationalists took him for the Messiah and followed him in mass numbers. But he told the masses that another, more powerful, and more important than he, will appear (Matthew 3,11 / John 1,26-37). Yet for John the Baptist, this Messiah to be followed, could only be a liberating warrior. He himself did not understand Jesus' behavior, and "when John had heard in prison what **Christ was doing**, he sent his disciples to ask Him: 'Are you the One who is to come, or are we to expect someone else?'" (Matthew 11,2-3). He expected that Jesus assemble the people for war. Yet "the works" of Christ, which John heard of, were those of a man of mercy who forgives, and a healer, not of a revolutionary Jew. These spiritual works could not satisfy the nationalists, which John was part of.

This is why, without doubting Jesus as a divine envoy, John sent some disciples of his to ask Him if He was the expected Messiah, "or are we to expect someone else" as Messiah to lead the revolt? He had not yet grasped the spiritual dimension of the Liberation. This is the reason why Jesus had said that John the Baptist is, because of his materialistic conception of the kingdom, smaller than the least one in the Kingdom of God, the latter having understood that this Kingdom is internal, in the soul. John the Baptist himself, did not understand this (Matthew 11,2-11).

Today too, all those who do not grasp this dimension, also expect this "other Messiah" to restore the political kingdom in Israel.

4. Jesus

In Jesus' time, the Jews had already lost the spiritual notion of salvation. The best among them understood this fact politically. To them, the Messiah should come from a family of high rank, or the rich and powerful of Jerusalem, and capable of mobilizing the people for combat. Paradoxically, Jesus came from a modest family in the remote village of Nazareth: "From Nazareth, can anything good come from there?" (John 1,46)

A poor carpenter did not convince the proud expectations of the Israelis. His main mission was to restore Judaism to its original purity -spiritual- liberating it from politics: "My Kingdom is not of this world", says Jesus (John 18,36). Through Jesus, God would reconquer his Throne in the hearts of believers. This Kingdom should not be limited to Jews only, but to all men of good faith in the whole world.

Jesus appeared speaking of the Kingdom of God. The Jews believed in Him when they saw Him performing miracles, but they saw in Him, a political and military liberator. Instead of responding to his invitation to repentance, their reaction to his miracles was nationalistic.

They wanted to force Him to become the political king of Israel, to restore David's kingdom, He who issued of David's lineage. In fact, John, in his Gospel, tells us that the Jews, after the miracle of the multiplication of bread, believed in Jesus, since they said: "This is indeed the

prophet who is to come into the world". Yet their reaction to this miracle was not spiritual, since John adds:

> "Jesus, as He realized that they were coming to take Him by force and **make Him king**, fled away to the mountain alone." (John 6,14-15)

We must pay attention to this fact which often passes unnoticed: "They were coming to take Him by force and **make Him king** ... but He fled away". The Jews did not come to "solicit" Jesus, nor did they "offer" Him the Israeli kingdom, but to impose it on Him. He had no choice but to flee from what betrayed his mission. Had He not already refused such an Israeli empire from the devil's hand? (Matthew 4,8-10).

The tragedy of Jesus appears in these verses because, after Jesus' persistent refusal to restore the kingdom of Israel, in their turn, the Jews ended up rejecting Him as Messiah.

The nationalists were angry with Jesus and judged him unpatriotic because He had not put His miraculous power at the service of the nation and the throne. This is why they accused Him of "leading the people astray" (John 7,12). What the Jews were fed, by His acts and speeches, were false hopes of a national restoration: "We had hoped that He would be the one to liberate Israel", said two of his disciples after His death (Luke 24,21). Seeing that Jesus did not satisfy their political aspirations, the Jewish leaders concluded that His miracles were made by the power of the devil (John 10,20 / Matthew 12,24-28). They finally got Jesus crucified because, through his spiritual messianism that galvanized the masses, He had become an obstacle to the realization of their political and nationalistic goals (John 7,37-52 / 12,10-11).

And yet, Jesus is not the first Jew who had refused to establish an Israeli kingdom, knowing that this was contrary to God's Will. Gideon, Samuel and God Himself, had they not themselves spoken against the realization of such a kingdom, "God being the unique King"?

Jesus suffered greatly in explaining to his most intimate friends about His Spiritual Kingdom. On several occasions, He prepared his Apostles on his crucifixion; not on fighting Herod and the Romans. The Kingdom He spoke to them of never had anything to do with politics, and his language was never that of a nationalist. He never spoke of David's kingdom, but of the Kingdom of Heaven. They expected to hear Him say, for example: "People of Israel, you the proud descendants of Jacob and inheritors of the Land, follow me, do not hesitate to take up arms and liberate the land of your ancestors, etc..." However, his discourse was of this genre: "Happy are the poor in spirit, for the Kingdom of Heaven is theirs ... Happy are the meek ... Happy are the merciful... (Matthew 5,1-12) ... The Kingdom of Heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field... (Matthew 13,24) ... Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you..." (Matthew 5,43-45)

To the Pharisees who asked Him "when the Kingdom of God was to come" (according to them, the Davidic Kingdom), Jesus replies: "The coming of the Kingdom of God will not be observed and no one will say: 'Look, it is here! Look it is there!' for the Kingdom of God is within you" (Luke 17,20-21). Since this Kingdom is internal, it was no longer necessary to wait for another that is external. No one in Israel expected this type of kingdom, nor this messianism. The nationalistic wave had seduced all the Jews, including the Apostles.

In order to institute this Divine Kingdom, the idol of a political messiah had to be broken. Jesus knew that He could only succeed at the price of his blood. He therefore prepared his Apostles to this tragic outcome: "The Son of man is going to be delivered into the power of men and they will put Him to death". Hearing this "a great sadness came over them" (Matthew 17,22-23), because, still seeing in Him a nationalist Messiah, they could not imagine that Jesus be defeated, put to death, without restoring David's throne and dynasty.

The Apostles had a hard time grasping the spiritual dimension of the Kingdom, although Jesus stayed with them for three years. After his Resurrection, He had even shown Himself alive to them and, "for forty days he had continued to appear to them and speak to them about the Kingdom of God" (Acts 1,3). Despite this, they continued to believe that this kingdom is political and ask Him, just before the Ascension: "Will you at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?" (Acts 1,6). It is only after receiving the Holy Spirit, that they began to understand the Master's intention (Acts 1,7-8 / 11,15-18 / 15,7-11).

Jesus wanted to replace, in His Apostles' mentality, the notion of a zionist messiah with that of the spiritual and universal Messiah. It is a subtle exorcism He had to operate. He waited two years before starting this delicate operation. Firstly, He wanted to be sure that His Apostles indefectibly believed in Him as Messiah. He had to manifest his power through miracles to give the disciples confidence in Him (John 2,11 / 6,14). Only then, in effect, did they believe in Him. Only then, did He ask them: "You, who do you say I am?" And Peter, he alone, had the courage to answer: "You are the Christ". Jesus praised him, telling him that this revelation came to him from God (Matthew 16,15-17). The first step, to guarantee their faith in Him as Messiah, was thus overcome. Nevertheless, for Peter and the Apostles, the messianism of Jesus could only be nationalistic; He is the messiah, yes, but the warrior Messiah! Peter still carried his sword when Jesus was arrested! (John 18,10-11).

The second step to overcome, and the most delicate, was the revelation of his spiritual messianism; the apostles could not even imagine this. Jesus, after having secured from his disciples, for the first time, their recognition in his virtues as Messiah, could take this second step of presenting them His true face: a spiritual, non-nationalist Messiah. He did so by declaring to them, for the first time, that he would be shortly put to death. He declared this to them "from that day", whence they recognized Him as Messiah, not before, says Matthew (Matthew 16,21). It is to say: I am the Messiah, yes! But I will not restore a political kingdom. For you to understand this, I will be delivered to death.

The spontaneous reaction of Peter was to reject this unexpected declaration: "Taking Jesus aside, Peter started to remonstrate with Him: 'Heaven preserve You, Lord, this must not happen to you!'" But Jesus severely reprimanded Peter: "'Get behind me, Satan! You are an obstacle in my path, because the way you think is not God's way but man's.'" (Matthew 16,21-23). Peter's reaction is due, justly, to the fact that the disciples could not at that moment, conceive that the Messiah, the future king of Israel and the savior of the nation, ends up on a cross like a vulgar criminal, when they already imagined Him on Israel's throne, inaugurating the new dynasty of David. The Messiah, the King of Israel, dying on a cross?! Never! He who would dethrone Herod and expel the Romans! The Apostles "did not understand what Jesus said; it was hidden from them so that they could not understand the meaning of his words." (Luke 9,44-45)

This nationalist conception, anchored in the Apostles' mentality, appears in their intimate discussions. Arriving at Capernaum, Jesus asks them: "'What were you arguing about on the road?' They said nothing, because on the road they had been arguing which of them was the greatest." (Mark 9,33-34)

The Apostles' silence reveals their embarrassment facing this question. They understood, by the way it was posed, that "Jesus knew what thoughts were going through their minds" (Luke 9,46-47). And that, by His glance, the Master reproaches them. They realized the abyss which separates their Messianic conception from that of Jesus'. They were silent by shame.

Later, on His entry to Jerusalem, Jesus repeats for a third time of his placement on the cross. Immediately after its announcement, and far from sympathetic, James and John's mother "came with her sons to make a request of him, and bowed low... 'Promise that these two sons

of mine may sit one at your right hand and the other at your left in your kingdom'" (Matthew 20,20-21).

It should be stressed that this woman's approach came **immediately** after the third announcement of Jesus' Passion. In fact, He came to reveal to them: "Look, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man is about to be handed over to the chief priests and scribes. They will condemn Him to death and will hand Him over to the gentiles to be mocked and scourged and crucified; and on the third day He will be raised up again" (Mat 20,17-19).

The Evangelists reveal to us that these words of the Passion did not penetrate the opaque mentality of the Apostles: "but they did not understand what He said; it was hidden from them so that they should not see the meaning of it, and they were afraid to ask Him about it" (Luke 9,45 & Mark 9,31-32). To the extent that Luke even adds immediately after: "An argument started between them about which of them was the greatest" (Luke 9,46). The Master's sufferings were clouded by their temporal ambitions.

This misunderstanding of the Apostles reappears up until the moment of Jesus' Ascension. After having supported them "for forty days telling them about the Kingdom of God... they asked Him (*again*): 'Lord, has the time come for you to restore the kingdom to Israel?'" (Acts 1,3-6) If I insist on this point, it is because it is important. The abyss that separates the Apostles' mentality from Jesus' Spirit should be well understood. It was not until they received the force of this Holy Spirit that they understood. They were then worthy of being dignified witnesses of Jesus "in Jerusalem, throughout Judaea and Samaria, and indeed to the ends of the earth" (Acts 1,6-8).

Do believers still understand today, that the Messianic Kingdom is **in us**? It is neither in political States, nor in human glory. The Vatican, in proclaiming itself a State in 1929, following the example of other temporal States, initiated its betrayal, a betrayal confirmed by the recognition of the State of Israel in 1993.

It was necessary that the Apostles undergo a real brainwashing on the part of the Master, a "baptism". He could not change their mentality save on the cross. The concept of a zionist messiah in which they believed in had to die. Jesus had to die without restoring an Israeli kingdom. So, their faith in Him as Messiah - no longer nationalist, but spiritual and universal - should continue living in them; which they did understand, in fact, only later, after the crucifixion of Jesus.

Therefore, through the death of Jesus, the zionist idol crumbles in the spirit of His disciples. Through His death, Jesus triumphs over death, that is nationalism: "I have overcome the world", says Jesus on the eve of his crucifixion (John 16,33).

Effectively, after Jesus' death, the Apostles went on believing in Him as the Messiah. They thus discovered the spiritual and universal dimension of salvation. God is no longer a Jewish monopoly, but belongs to the whole world: "Is God the God of Jews alone and not of the pagans too? Of the pagans too, most certainly!" (Romans 3,29). On the contrary, the hardened nationalists, to whom Jesus was "a cause of falling" (Matthew 11,6) and a "stumbling-stone" (Romans 9,30-33), were shocked by his lack of "patriotism" and rejected Him.

It is necessary to distinguish between a culpable religious nationalism, created in the name of a faith - this is condemned by God - and a legal patriotism independent from faith.

Note that the Zionist Messiah represents any materialistic and domineering spirit. This spirit has seduced an innumerable number of Christians along the centuries. These have understood nothing of Christ's Cross. All the materialists follow the spirit of the Zionist Messiah and die in their sins. It is the case of the Jews who refuse, in the past, and who also refuse today, to believe in Jesus (John 8,21-24). Jesus also repeats today to all: "If you do not believe that I Am (***the Messiah***), you will die in your sins." (John 8,21-24)

5. Judas

As for Judas Iscariot, the so-called apostle who betrays Christ, he never followed Jesus by spiritual conviction, but by material interest. This comes out in the words of John about him: "He was a thief; he was in charge of the common fund and used to help himself from what was put therein" (John 12,6).

Judas believed that Jesus was the nationalist Messiah. His unique ambition was to see the restoration of the Davidic kingdom by Jesus, in order to have a prestigious position (minister of finance for example). Jesus' miracles and spiritual discourse left him spiritually indifferent. He only saw it as a means in re-establishing the political kingdom and to realize his proper materialistic ambitions.

His masked indifference vis-a-vis the words and works of Christ appears in Jesus' judgment on Judas after the miracle of the multiplication of bread and his discourse on the Bread of Life:

"'But there are some of you who do not believe.' For Jesus knew from the outset those who did not believe, and who it was that would betray Him... After this, many of his disciples left him went and stopped going with him. Then Jesus said to the Twelve: '... Do you want to go away too?' Simon Peter answered: 'Lord, who shall we go to? You have the Message of Eternal Life...' Jesus replied: 'Have I not chosen you, you Twelve? Yet one of you is a devil.' He meant Judas son of Simon Iscariot, since this was the man, one of the Twelve, who was going to betray Him" (John 6,64-70).

It would have been better for Judas to leave at this moment with the unbelievers like himself. If he stayed with the group, it was still, and uniquely, in the hope of realizing his material ambitions. When Judas had the certitude that it was not in Jesus' intention to establish a political kingdom, and that he could no longer draw anything out of Jesus, he decided to betray Him (John 13,2).

The materialist interest of Judas prevailed over all other considerations. It is self-evident in his desire to deliver Jesus by drawing, at least, a certain pecuniary profit. In fact, "he went to the chief priests (*who were looking for the occasion to arrest Jesus cunningly*) and asks them: "'What will you give me and I will deliver Him unto you?' And they agreed with him for thirty pieces of silver" (Matthew 26,14-15).

Judas is the concretization of the tragedy of Jesus.

6. The Apostles after the Cross

The pilgrims of Emmaus were dismayed after the crucifixion of Jesus, disappointed by his death as they said to themselves: "We hoped that He would be the one to **liberate Israel**" (Luke 24,21). They still awaited a political liberation.

At the Ascension, the Apostles, "when they saw Him, they fell down before Him, though some hesitated" (Matthew 28,17). What was the nature of this hesitation? They doubted Him as Messiah because He did not restore the Kingdom to Israel. This is why, at this moment, they asked Him again: "Lord, has the time come? Are you going to restore the kingdom to Israel?" (Acts 1,6).

7. The Jews of today

Today, the tragedy of Jesus renews itself with the resurgence of Jewish nationalism, incarnated in the State of Israel. This State has seduced the Christian masses to support it blindly. And this, despite of Jesus' warnings: "Take care that no one deceives you... When you see the abomination of desolation stand in the Holy Place (*Holy Land, Jerusalem*) ... do not follow them..." (Matthew 24,4-15 / Luke 21,7-8). And Yet, they follow!!

How is it possible to convince the Jews - and particularly the Zionists among them - that Jesus of Nazareth is the Messiah they are waiting for?

How to convince them that the reign of which they aspire to, is spiritual, and in favor of all humanity?

How to convince them of renouncing a political Zionist state, through which they want to rule the world?

Blessed are those among them who hear the voice of the crucified Messiah, the One and Only capable of giving them true Peace.

7

Christians and Israel

I.Shammout

Today, a problem of conscience poses itself to some Christians with regards to the current State of Israel. Some, sensitized by the "Hitlerian holocaust", feel compelled to recognize it; others - a small number - refuse to recognize the legitimacy of Israel for two reasons:

1. Because they are sensible to the injustice undergone by the Palestinian people, being chased out of their land by violence

2. By reasons related to faith in Jesus, and to the testimony that is due to Him.

As the subject of this study is delicate, and can arouse certain sensitivities, it is necessary, before addressing it, to say that it is not in an "anti-Semitic" spirit with which the problem is treated, but in a spirit of social and religious justice. We are for religious liberty for all and everywhere, even in Israel, where we hope that the millions of exiled Palestinians - Muslims and Christians - are repatriated, and whom the Israeli authorities refuse to reintegrate, **because they are not Jewish**. Is this not racism?!

To clarify the problem, we must ask ourselves the following question: "For a Christian, what is the recognition of the State of Israel?"

Is it to recognize its presence a fait accompli? Or to admit the legitimacy of this presence in Palestine today?

For the fait accompli camp, which is a historical phenomenon, we cannot but notice the existence, in Palestine, only since 1948, of a political entity that the United Nations, a laic institution, accepted to recognize as the State of Israel.

But what of the legitimacy of this Israeli presence on Palestinian soil?

For example: A man keeps a usurped object; we recognize that the object is in his possession; yet can we, without committing a grave injustice, approve the fact by recognizing **the legitimacy** of this possession?

Thus, the conscience problem that poses itself is the following: "Can we recognize the legitimacy of the State of Israel in Palestine?"

When we speak of the legitimacy of a State, we refer to a historical right on a given territory. In the sole case of Israel, we evoke a biblical right. We will therefore speak of the historical and biblical legitimacy of Israel.

1. The historical legitimacy

Not a single historical argument can be found that is sufficiently valid to justify, in the XXth century, an Israeli State in Palestine. It belongs to its Palestinian citizens in the same way as any other country is the property of its own people. Millions of Palestinians claim their legitimate, historical right over Palestine. These rights are pre-Biblical, and the Bible mentions Palestine and the Palestinians. The wars between the Palestinians and Jewish invaders are notorious (1 Samuel 28).

Before the coming of Christ, the Jews often attempted to form a State in Palestine. This took form as a kingdom around 1000 BC. But this kingdom split into two, less than a century later: a kingdom in the North in Samaria, and another in the South in Judaea, which disappeared one after the other. The first was destroyed in 722 BC, about two hundred years after its formation by the Assyrian invasion, and the second in 586 BC, about four hundred years after its formation, destroyed by the Babylonians who exiled the Jews to Babylon.

It was not until the 1st century BC that the Jewish kingdom was re-established under the Roman Empire, with king Herod the Great in the year 37 BC. Yet this kingdom was again destroyed by the Roman troops of Titus in 70 AD. The Jews then fled Palestine to the four quarters of the world. But the Palestinians remained in Palestine.

Two thousand years later, in 1948, a State of Israel reappears in Palestine, claiming their right on the country to the Palestinians' detriment, who have always lived there. The Jews rushed into the Holy Land from the four quarters of the world, by chasing out the Palestinians by violence. They had to leave their homes in tragic conditions, to live in exile in Arab countries, in tents and slums. The grand powers aided the Jews to settle themselves in Palestine, and

recognized the Hebrew State a quarter of an hour after its proclamation, the 14th of May 1948, as if Palestine and the Palestinians never existed.

And yet, the historical proofs of their existence are abundant. (Biblical: Numbers 13,21-33, social, cultural, folkloric, archaeological proofs: ancient and contemporary Palestinian money, etc...)

It should be noted that those who support Israel feel, in general, culpable towards the Jews; so they opted to lodge them in Palestine. But is it an act of justice to give to one what is torn away from others? Can we dispose of the other's property? An American, an English, or a French, for example, have the right to dispose of a Palestinian land that dœs not belong to him?

A question: why is it that those who want to satisfy their conscience by placing the Jews in a homeland, not give them a part of their own soil, American or European, since they can arrange it?

To this, the general response is in mentioning a biblical legitimacy: Israelis would have a biblical right over Palestine. Here, we are thus transferred from the historical plan, to the biblical plan, and most often by persons who are ignorant of the Bible.

It is therefore as Christians that the Jews ask us to recognize them a biblical right over Palestine. Today, Jesus Christ's people are solicited to render a testimony favorable to those who renounce Jesus. And this in the name of the Bible. Such is the test of faithfulness predicted by Christ for the end of Times. The Vatican itself has failed.

For Judaism is neither a race, nor a geographical land, but a religion which has found its perfect achievement in Christ Jesus. For a Christian, it is also absurd to recognize a Jewish State for Jews, or a Christian State for Christians as well.

2. The Biblical legitimacy

Many Christians support the State of Israel in good faith to help the "chosen people" on their "promised land". It is therefore important for us to recall what it means, in the light of the Gospel, by the notions of the Promised Land and the Chosen People.

2.1 The Promised Land

Palestine is not a land promised by the Bible to the Israelis of today, for the following two reasons:

1. The Promised Land is the symbol of a spiritual reality.
2. It was promised under condition.

2.1.1 The Promised Land is spiritual

God promised Abraham and his descendants a land. The notion of this Promise Land, as intended by God, was explained throughout the centuries by the Bible, to appear finally as a spiritual, and not, a geographical reality. It is why St. Paul says: "By faith he arrived, as a foreigner, in the Promised Land, and lived there as if in a strange country, with Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. They lived there in tents while he looked forward to a city founded, designed and built by God" (Hebrew 11,9).

The spiritual aspect of the land already has its roots in the Old Testament. Therefore, the tribe of Levi did not possess a land, God Himself being their stake. In fact, the Bible says:

> "To the tribe of Levi alone no inheritance was given; Yahweh the God of Israel was · their inheritance, as he had told them." (Joshua 13,14 & 33)

Similarly, Psalm 37 (36) says that it is the virtuous who will inherit the earth, and it dœs not state that all the Israelis in Palestine are virtuous. These virtues can be found all over. Finally, Jesus explains this fact by saying that the "Kingdom of God" is not a visible entity, but is found in a man's heart. To the Pharisees who ask him when the Kingdom of God is to appear, for them, meaning the universal Zionist empire, Jesus answers:

> "'The coming of the Kingdom of God does not admit of observation and there will be no one to say, 'Look, here! Look, there!' For, you must know, **the Kingdom of God is within you**'" (Luke 17,20-21).

Some rabbis are found today, within Judaism, who underline the spiritual dimension of the Promised Land. Here is this commentary of the great rabbi Jonathan Eybeschutz: "It is written: 'And you shall live in the land that I gave to your ancestors' (Ezekiel 36,28). The Eternal had promised to give Abraham the land of Canaan, yet when Sarah died, he did not even possess a land to bury her in. How then, is the Promise accomplished? It is that there are two lands that port the name Israel: there is the Heavenly land of Israel, and the terrestrial land of Israel below. The Holy Land is the Heavenly Land, where the Divine Palace resides, and from which the sources of Wisdom flow. It is this spiritual Land that was promised and given to our ancestors, and not the material land" ("Le Royaume de Dieu et le Royaume de César", by the rabbi Emmanuel Levyne, editions "Le Reveil", Beirut).

As for Abraham's descendants, the heirs of the Promised Land, this is also a spiritual notion. A Christian should not search for it in a historical or ethnic genealogy that passes the heritage from father to son, but according to the faith in Jesus' Messianism. Indeed, Saint Paul says: "Merely by belonging to Christ you are the posterity of Abraham, the heirs he was promised" (Galatians 3,29).

Thus for a Christian, any Jew who refuses to recognize Jesus as the Messiah, and is awaiting another, should not be considered as Abraham's descendant, nor heir of the Promised Land, whether spiritual or material.

2.1.2 The promise is conditional

God disinherited the Jews even before the coming of Jesus Christ because the land was promised **on the condition** of fidelity to the Covenant. This condition was not respected; the Covenant was thus **broken** by the Jews. God then announced a New Covenant, one established by Jesus, still refused by the Jews.

The condition

Suppose that the Promised Land is geographic, we should not forget that the promise was made under condition. Actually, Moses had said to the Jews: "**If** you do not keep and observe all the words of this Law... Yahweh will strike you down with monstrous plagues, **you and your descendants**..."

The conjunction **"if"** demonstrates that the promise is conditional. Moses continues: "For **not obeying** the voice of Yahweh your God, just as Yahweh took delight in giving you prosperity... so now he will take delight in bringing you ruin and destruction. You **will be torn from the land** which you are entering..." (Deuteronomy 28,58-64).

It is thus clear that in the case of treason, not only is it a question of land, but of painful punishments and expulsion from this land, for the Jews and their descendants. These are the terms of the Covenant.

The break up of the Covenant

The Jews did not respect the conditions of the Covenant. The Bible says frankly that they betrayed God by worshipping the idols of neighboring countries. They even offered their children in sacrifice, thus imitating pagan rites (See 1 Kings 16,30-34 / Jeremiah 7,30-32). Even Psalm 106 (105) addresses the outcome of the Jewish people's infidelities: "They defied the Most High... They made a (*golden*) calf at Horeb... They accepted the yoke of Baal... Serving the pagans' idols, they found themselves trapped into sacrificing their own sons and daughters to demons... offering them to the idols of Canaan..."

This is why God, speaking through the prophets, hurled his wrath against Israel:

"Now listen to this, you princes of the House of Jacob... you who loathe justice and pervert all that is right, you who build Zion with blood, Jerusalem with iniquity... and say: 'Is not Yahweh in our midst?' ... Because of this, since the fault is yours, Zion will become plowland, Jerusalem a heap of rubble..." (Micah 3,9-12).

God says again in the Book of Isaiah: "'I reared sons, I brought them up, but they have rebelled against me. The ox knows its owner and the donkey its master's crib, Israel knows nothing...' A sinful nation, a people weighed down with guilt, a breed of wrongdœrs, perverted sons. They have abandoned Yahweh..." (Isaiah 1,2-4).

Rupture and the New Covenant.

After having denounced Israel's infidelity, God declared through Jeremiah the rupture of the Covenant by the Jews. He announced the coming of a New Covenant, **that will not be like the first**, since a believer's share is not a land, but God Himself: "'See, the days are coming–it is Yahweh who speaks–when I will make a New Covenant with the House of Israel, but not a Covenant like the one I made with their ancestors... They **broke** that Covenant of mine... This is the Covenant I will make... Deep **within them** I will plant my Law, writing it **on their hearts**. Then I will be their God and they shall be my people" (Jeremiah 31,31-33).

It is evident that this New Covenant differs from the first, since "it will not be like it". One of the differences resides in the fact that it dœs not promise any geographical land, but in return, it is God who gives Himself to all those who believe in Jesus, Founder of the New Covenant.

The Jews still refused Christ's Covenant, because it did not promise them any geographical territory, nor dœs it grant them the "privilege", to establish the world Zionist empire that they wish.

2.2 The Chosen People

The divine election never had the objective of a Hebraic people as some still think. God's choice fell **on a man**, Abraham the Syrian, and not on a Jewish nation that did not exist before Abraham. It is therefore wrong to believe that Judaism is a race; it is why the Bible reminds the Jews that their ancestor Abraham is **Aramaean**, that is to say **a Syrian**. Moses insists on this point when he tells the Jews: "In the presence of Yahweh your God, you will then pronounce these words: "My father (*Abraham*) was a wandering Aramaean." (Deuteronomy 26,5)

The purpose of Abraham's choice was to form a social environment to welcome the Messiah. The aim was not therefore the people, but the Christ who "came to his own domain and his own people did not accept him" (John 1,11).

But to all those who have received Jesus as Messiah, independently of their race, He "gave power to become children of God" (John 1,12), and thus form the universal people of God. According to the Gospel, God's people are those of Jesus.

In the past, Jesus told the Jews:

> "If you do not believe that I am He (*the Christ*) you will die in your sins", and: "If God were your Father, you would love me..." He finally declares to them: "You are from your father, the devil, and you prefer to do what your father wants" (John 8,24-44)

Today, what do Christians tell them?... "You are our elder brothers", Pope John Paul II told them in the synagogue of Rome. How can a disciple of Jesus and His negator be brothers?

> "If anyone comes to you bringing a different doctrine, you must not receive him in your house or even give him a greeting. To greet him would make you a partner in his wicked work" (2 John 10-11).

For Jesus, to whom we bear witness, the true Jew is the disciple of Jesus. In the Apocalypse, dœs not Jesus denounce the Jews as "people who falsely claim to be Jews, but are really members of the synagogue of Satan?" (Revelation 2,9 & 3,9).

This is why Saint Paul says: "Merely by belonging to Christ you are the posterity of Abraham, the heirs he was promised" (Galatians 3,29). He therefore invites the Jews to believe in Jesus, so to be "grafted" onto the people of God (Romans 11,23).

It is then not a question of repelling the Jews as a people, but Israel as a State. The Jews, on the contrary, are invited to follow Jesus to become part of God's people. Love and Truth incite us not to sink them in their error, by letting them believe that they are still the Chosen People, in return to their Promised Land.

For we should understand that the Jews, who continue denying that Jesus is the Christ, port the specific characteristic of the Antichrist announced by St John: "Who is the liar if not the one who claims that Jesus is not the Christ? This is the Antichrist" (1 John 2,22).

All Christians and all Muslims recognize that Jesus is the Christ. We find some disciples of Jesus even in Buddhism and Hinduism. Gandhi often spoke of his admiration of Jesus, and did not hide his deception of Christians: "Give me Jesus, and keep the Christians for yourselves", he had said.

John's prophecy on the Antichrist cannot be applied on those who recognize that Jesus is the Christ, but on those who refuse his messianism. This characteristic is applied solely on the Jews who, explicitly, deny Jesus and await another Messiah. They are the Antichrist.

We should not be astonished of the fact that the Jews who do not believe in Jesus, are not the chosen people. Jesus had said with regards to a Roman officer who manifested his faith in Him:

> "'I tell you solemnly, nowhere in Israel have I found faith like this. And I tell you that many will come from east and west to take their places with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob at the feast in the kingdom of heaven; but the subjects of the kingdom (*of Israel*) will be turned out into the dark, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.'" (Matthew 8,10-12).

The opposition between the Kingdom of God and that of Israel's is at the center of the dispute between Jesus and the Jews. This opposition manifests in the words of Christ, when he denounces the subjects of the Israeli kingdom, and dooms them to external darkness (Matthew 8,11).

Thus, with the coming of Jesus, the concept of a chosen people transformed from a tribal and chauvinistic notion, to a universal one. It is why Jesus condemns the "subjects of the kingdom" of Israel who wanted to understand Judaism in a nationalist manner: "You are from your father, the devil, and you prefer to do what your father wants" (John 8,44). Those who have the devil as father, cannot be the "elder brothers" of those who have Jesus as Father.

It is also why Jesus always refused to be the king of a Zionist Empire: "My Kingdom is not of this world", He had said (John 18,36) (See the text: "The Tragedy of Jesus").

The prophets had already extended the election to peoples of all races. Isaiah, eight centuries BC, had not proclaimed this oracle of God: "I am coming to gather the nations of every language... And some of them I will make priests and Levites, says Yahweh." (Isaiah 66,18-21) Thus, the choice of ministers of cults amongst non-Jewish nations, as Christians practice, is a proof of the authenticity of Jesus' universal priesthood.

2.3 What to conclude then?

St Paul responds: "What follows? It was not Israel as a whole that found what it was seeking, but only the chosen few." (Roman 11,7)

Thus his elected are Jesus' disciples.

3. Israel, sign of the times

Since the Jews who are gathered today in Palestine from the four quarters of the earth are not the Chosen People on their Promised Land, then what dœs the re-apparition of Israel mean?

It's a sign of the times.

We often speak of the signs of the times, without specifying which times are concerned. This expression evokes the "end of times".

Speaking of these times, Jesus had said: "Jerusalem will be trampled down by the pagans (*the Israelis*), until their time is complete" (Luke 21,24). Israel therefore incarnates paganism by its refusal of Christ.

After the advent of Christ Jesus, the pagans are then those who deny that Jesus is the Christ; they are the symbol of paganism in its various aspects, the Antichrist "par excellence".

When the Jews forbade the Apostles to speak of Jesus, the latter, praying, said to God: "In this very city, Herod and Pontius Pilate made an alliance with the pagan nations and the **peoples of Israel against** your holy servant, Jesus, whom You anointed" (Acts 4,27).

The word **"against"** reveals the spirit of the **Anti**-Christ that dwells in "the people (goyim) of Israel"; "the people", which signifies the "Pagans of Israel" (See the text "The Antichrist Yesterday and Today").

The Jews want us to believe that their return to Palestine is a "great sign" and the prodigious accomplishment of the prophecies of the Old Testament. Now we know that the prophecies in question concern the return of the Jews from their exile in Babylon in the VIth Century BC. Let us not be fooled.

For it is rather time now, to understand the prophecies of the New Testament that tell us of the end of the Pagans. We can thus understand who these pagans are. Jesus told us that "the abomination of the desolation shall be in the Holy Places" (Matthew 24,15). On the other hand, the Apocalypse also reveals that the Antichrist will gather his subjects in the holy places, in Palestine, and specifically in the beloved City, Jerusalem, where they are assembled by Satan, and not by God, from the four quarters of the earth, for war, not for peace (Revelation 20,7-9). (See the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

4. The attitude of every true Christian

Finally, what should be the attitude of a Christian committed to Christ Jesus towards the current State of Israel?

This is a moment to meditate, to put into practice, these words addressed by the Book of Revelation to those who still want to be witnesses of Jesus:

> "You must prophesy **again** against many peoples. . . " (Revelation 10,11)

If the Lord commands his Apostles, in these Apocalyptic times, to **prophesy "again"**, it is because the majority among them have allowed themselves to be seduced by the Antichrist, whom they did not recognize. Instead of denouncing it, they establish good relations with it. The Revelation comes then, to remind them of their duty as Apostles and witnesses of Jesus; after having kept their silence, they must, today, witness **again**, against their enemy: Israel.

When Christ came, His own people did not accept Him. Today "his own people" welcome the Antichrist...

No Christian can recognize the legitimacy of a Jewish State in Palestine without denying their Christianity, for it would implicitly admit that the disciples of Jesus are not the prophetic Israel and that Jesus is not the Christ. Jesus had said: "No man can serve two masters"; we cannot serve the Kingdom of Jesus and that of Israel at the same time. We cannot safeguard the testimony to Jesus' Messianism without denouncing Israel's false messianism. The Jews know it, and the Christians ignore it.

For a matter of such importance, neutrality or silence denote a lukewarm stance: "I know all about you: how you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were one or the other, but since you are neither, but only lukewarm, I will spit you out of my mouth", says the Lord in Revelation 3,15.

A choice, therefore, should be made, and we will be judged according to our commitment: it is not by recognizing Israel that a Christian remains faithful to his testimony, but by inviting the Jews to recognize Jesus.

Pierre (1978)

Part II

The Messiah

Table of Contents

1 The Messiah Announced **43**

2 The Messianic Prophecies **53**

1

The Messiah Announced

Our Father has announced in the Books of the Old Testament, the Messiah's advent inspired by many prophecies on his Mission, his traits of life, and his way of being.

The apostles in contact with Jesus were conscious that he was the persona of whom Moses and the Prophets had spoken of:

> John 1,45: "We have found him the one Moses wrote about in the Law, the one about whom the prophets wrote: he is Jesus son of Joseph, from Nazareth."

And much later, after his resurrection, Jesus, Himself, explained to them the prophecies of the Old Testament concerning him:

> Luke 24,25-27: "Then he said to them: You foolish men! So slow to believe all that the prophets have said! Was it not necessary that the Christ should suffer before entering into his glory? Then, starting with Moses and going through all the prophets, he explained to them the passages throughout the scriptures that were about himself."
>
> Luke 24,44-45: "Then he told them, 'This is what I meant when I said, while I was still with you, that everything written about me in the Law of Moses, in the Prophets and in the Psalms, was destined to be fulfilled. He then opened their minds to understand the scriptures."

Of what prophecies did Jesus speak of to his Apostles?

1. Prophecies on the place of birth and occupation of the Messiah

> Micah 5,1: "But you (***Bethlehem***) Ephrathah, the least of the clans of Judah, from you will come for me a future ruler of Israel whose origins go back to the distant past, to the day of eternity."
>
> Isaiah 8,23 & 9,1: "As the past humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali (***Galilee***), so the future will glorify the Way of the Sea, beyond the Jordan, the territory of the nations. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light; on the inhabitants of a country in shadow dark as death light has blazed forth."

SUMMARY: According to the prophecies of the Old Testament, the Messiah will therefore be born in Bethlehem and operate in Galilee. At Jesus' birth, the high priests and the scribes knew this well, since they indicated to Herod, alarmed by the Magi, Bethlehem as the birthplace of the Messiah (Matthew 2,3-4; also see Matthew 4,12-16).

2. Prophecies of the moment of the Messiah's apparition

Daniel 2,1-49: The prophet Daniel interprets the vision of Nebuchadnezzar, the Babylonian king:

> "... You have had a vision, Your Majesty; this is what you saw: a stature, a great statue of extreme brightness, stood before you, terrible so see. The head of this statue was of fine gold (*Babylonian empire*), its chest and arms were of silver (*Median-Persian empire*), its belly and thighs of bronze (*Greek empire*), its legs of iron (*Roman empire*), its feet part iron, part clay (*Jewish-Roman alliance, see 1 Maccabee 8,17 / 1 Maccabee 15,15 +*)...
>
> **In the days of those kings**, the God of heaven will set up a kingdom which will never be destroyed, and this kingdom will not pass into the hands of another people (*Christ's Kingdom is a spiritual Kingdom*): it will shatter and absorb all the previous kingdoms and itself last for ever - just as you saw a stone, untouched by hand, break away from the mountain and reduce iron, bronze, earthenware, silver and gold to powder. The Great God has shown the king what is to take place..."

SUMMARY: The four announced empires are the Babylonian, Median-Persian, Greek and Roman. According to this prophecy of Daniel, the Christ should thus appear under the Roman Empire.

3. Prophecies on the Messiah's precursor

> Malachi 3,1: "Look, I am going to send my messenger **to prepare a way** before me."
>
> Malachi 3,23: "Know that I am going to send you the prophet Elijah **before my day comes, that great and terrible Day**."
>
> Isaiah 40,3-8: "A voice cries, **Prepare in the desert a way** for Yahweh. Make a straight highway for our God across the desert. Let every valley be filled in, every mountain and hill be laid low... then the glory of Yahweh shall be revealed... All flesh is grass... the grass withers, the flower fades, but the Word of our God remains for ever."

SUMMARY: A precursor must prepare the path for the Messiah. John the Baptist prepared the route for Jesus in calling the Jews to repentance. And Jesus Himself revealed to us that John the Baptist is this "Eli who has already come". (Matthew 17,11)

4. Prophecies concerning certain characteristics of the Messiah

> Isaiah 42,1-4: "Here is my servant whom I uphold, my chosen one in whom my soul delights. I have endowed him with my spirit, that he may bring true justice to the nations. He does not cry out or **shout aloud**, or make his voice heard in the streets. He does not break the crushed reed, nor quench the wavering flame ..." (*He does not act with in a public furor, or with wanting to make himself known, but with a lot of delicateness.*)
>
> Zechariah 9,9-10: "Rejoice heart and soul, daughter of Zion! Shout with gladness, daughter of Jerusalem! See now, your king comes to you; he is victorious, he is triumphant, **humble** and riding on a donkey... He will banish chariots from Ephraim and horses from Jerusalem; **the bow of war will be banished...**"

Isaiah 61,1-2: "The spirit of Lord Yahweh has been given to me, for Yahweh has anointed me. He has sent me to **bring good news to the poor**, to bind up hearts that are broken; to proclaim liberty to captives, freedom to those in prison; to proclaim a year of favor from Yahweh. . . "

Isaiah 35,5-6: "Then the **eyes of the blind will be opened**, the ears of the deaf unsealed, then the lame will leap like a deer and the tongue of the dumb sing for joy." (see Matthew 11,2-6)

Psalms 69,9: ". . . for I am eaten up with **zeal** for your house, and insults directed against you fall on me."

Isaiah 28,16: "See how I lay in Zion **a stone** of witness, **a precious cornerstone**, a foundation stone: the believer shall not stumble. And I will make justice the measure, and integrity the plumb line."

Psalms 118,22-24: "The stone which the builders rejected has become the cornerstone; this is Yahweh's doing, and we marvel at it. This is the day which Yahweh has made, a day for us to rejoice and be glad." (*This cornerstone is the Messiah, see Luke 20,9-19*)

Jeremiah 23,5-6: "Look, the days are coming, Yahweh declares, when I shall raise an upright Branch for David, he will reign as king and be wise, doing what **is just and upright** in the country."

Isaiah 53,3: "He was despised, the lowest of men. . . "

SUMMARY: The Messiah who will come will be humble and modest. He will suppress war and establish what is right and Justice. He will not do any propaganda, he will be discreet and heal the sick. He is characterized by his great zeal for the house of God. This image of the Messiah, given by the prophets of the Old Testament themselves, is opposed to the image of the warrior Messiah, conqueror, liberator from the Romans, which the Jews waited for. It is why they spurned and refused Jesus, as the prophecy itself announced: He will be rejected by his own.

5. Prophecies on the Messiah Prophet, King and Priest

Deuteronomy 18,18-19: "Yahweh tells Moses: '. . . I will raise up **a prophet** like yourself for them from their own brothers; I will put my words into his mouth and he shall tell them all I command him. The man who does not listen to my words that he speaks in my name shall be held answerable to me for it." (see John 5,45-46)

Genesis 49,10: "The **scepter** shall not pass from Judah, nor the mace from between his feet, until he come to whom it belongs, to whom the peoples shall render obedience. He ties up his donkey to the vine, to its stock the foal of his she-donkey. . . "

Numbers 24,17: "I see him—but not in the present, I behold him—but not close at hand: a star from Jacob takes the leadership, a **scepter** arises from Israel."

Psalm 2,2-7: "Kings on earth rising in revolt, princes plotting against Yahweh and his Anointed. . . Yahweh. . . in a rage he strikes them with panic, 'This is **my king**, installed by me on Zion, my holy mountain.'"

Isaiah 9,5-6: "For there is a son born for us, a son given to us, and **dominion** is laid on his shoulders; and this is the name they gave him: Wonder Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. Wide is his **dominion** in a peace that has no end, for the throne of David and for his power, which he establishes and makes secure in justice and integrity. From this time onwards and forever, the jealous love of Yahweh Sabaoth will do this."

Zechariah 6,12-13: "'Yahweh Sabaoth says this: Here is a man whose name is Branch; where he is, there will be a branching out and he will rebuild Yahweh's sanctuary. It is he who is going to rebuild Yahweh's sanctuary. It is he who is going to wear the **royal insignia**. He will sit on his throne as ruler...'"

Zechariah 9,9: "Rejoice heart and soul, daughter of Zion! Shout for with gladness, daughter of Jerusalem! See now, **your king** comes to you; he is victorious, he is triumphant, humble and riding on a donkey..."

Psalm 72,1-17: "God, give your own justice to **the king**, your own righteousness to the royal son, so that he may rule your people rightly, and your poor with justice... Like sun and moon he will endure, age after age... In his days, virtue will flourish, a universal peace till the moon is no more... The Beast will cower before him, and his enemies grovel in the dust... May every race in the world be blessed in him..."

Psalm 110,4: "Yahweh's oracle to you, my Lord (*the Messiah*), 'Sit at my right hand...' Yahweh has sworn an oath which he will never retract, 'You are a **priest** of the order of Melchizedek, and for ever.'"

Malachi 2,4-8; 3,1-4: "Then you shall learn that it is I who have given you this warning of my intention to abolish my covenant with Levi, says Yahweh Sabaoth. My covenant was with him... You have destroyed the covenant of Levi, says Yahweh... the angel of the covenant whom you are longing for, yes, he is coming, says Yahweh Sabaoth... **He will purify the sons of Levi** and refine them like gold and silver, and then they will make the offering to Yahweh as it should be made." (*This Angel of the Covenant, the Messiah, will institute a new Priesthood, no longer according to Levi, but according to Melchizedek; see Genesis 14,18-20 / Hebrews 5,5-7*)

Jeremiah 31,31-33: "See, the days are coming— it is Yahweh who speaks—when I will make a **new covenant** with the House of Israel (*through the announced Messiah*), but not a covenant like the one I made with their ancestors... They broke that covenant of mine, so I had to show them who was master. It is Yahweh who speaks... Deep within them I will plant my Law, writing it on their hearts. Then I will be their God and they shall be my people." (see Luke 22,19-20 / 1 Corinthians 11,23-25)

SUMMARY: The Messiah will be a prophet as great as Moses, that the Jews will have to listen to, otherwise God himself will render them account. He will be king and his reign will have no end. He will be Priest and will institute a new Priesthood.

6. Prophecies on the Messiah, Son of David, Son of God. The Messiah's Divinity

2 Samuel 7,12-16: God said to David through the prophet Nathan: "And when your days are ended and you are laid to rest with your ancestors, I will preserve the offspring of your body after you make his sovereignty secure. (It is He who shall build a house for my name, and I will make his royal throne secure for ever.) I will be a father to him and **he a son to me**; if he does wrong, I will punish him with the rod such as men use, with strokes such as mankind gives. Yet I will not withdraw my favor from him, as I withdrew it from your predecessor. Your House and your sovereignty will always stand secure before me and **your throne be established for ever**. Nathan related all these words to David and this whole revelation."

Psalm 2,2-7: "Kings on earth rising in revolt, princes plotting against Yahweh and his Anointed (*the Messiah*) ... Then angrily he (*Yahweh*) addresses them: This is my king,

installed by me on Zion, my holy mountain... Let me proclaim Yahweh's decree: He has told me: 'You are **my son**, today, I have become your father...'"

Psalm 110,3: "Yahweh declared to my Lord (*to the Messiah*): **Royal dignity was yours from the day you were born...** royal from the womb, from the dawn of your earliest days."

Isaiah 7,14-15: "The Lord himself, therefore, will give you a sign. It is this: the maiden is with child and will soon give birth to a son whom she will call **Immanuel**" (*Immanuel means: God with us*).

Isaiah 9,5-6: "For there is a child born for us, a son given to us, and dominion is laid on his shoulders; and this is the name they gave him: Wonder Counselor, **Mighty-God, Eternal-Father**, Prince-of-Peace. Wide is his dominion in a peace that has no end, for the throne of David and for his royal power, which he establishes and makes secure in justice and integrity. From this time onward and forever, the jealous love of Yahweh Sabaoth will do this."

Micah 5,2: "But you (*Bethlehem*) ... out of you will be born for me the one who is to **rule** over Israel; his origin goes back to the distant past, **to the days of azal** (***eternity***)."

Daniel 7,13-14: "I gazed into the visions of the night. And I saw, coming on the clouds of heaven, one like a son of man. He came to the One of great age and was led into his presence. On him was conferred sovereignty, glory and kingship, and men of all peoples, nations and languages became his servants. His sovereignty is an **eternal sovereignty**, which shall never pass away..."

Isaiah 11,1-9: "A shoot springs from the stock of Jesse (*David's father*), a scion thrusts from his roots: **on him the spirit of Yahweh rests**, a spirit of wisdom and insight, a spirit of counsel and power, a spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Yahweh..."

Jeremiah 23,5-6: "See, the days are coming—it is Yahweh who speaks—when I will raise a virtuous Branch for David, who will reign as true king and be wise... And this is the name he will be called: '**Yahweh-our-Integrity**'."

Psalm 110,1: "Yahweh declared to **my Lord** (*the Messiah*): Take your seat to my right hand, until I have made your enemies your footstool." (*In David's psalm, David calls the Messiah "my Lord". Then, how could he be his son? See Matthew 22,41*)

SUMMARY: The Messiah will be called "son of David", in other words he will be of David's descendance. God calls him his son. He will have an eternal reign and is called "Mighty-God, Eternal Father, Yahweh-our-Integrity." His origins go back to the day of Eternity.

7. Prophecies on the Messiah, Savior of all Nations: Universality of the Messiah

Isaiah 49,5-6: "And now, Yahweh has spoken, he who formed me in the womb to be his servant, to bring Jacob back to him, to gather Israel to him: '... I will make you **the light of the nations**, so that my salvation may reach the ends of the earth.'" (see John 8,12)

Isaiah 42,1 & 6: "Here is my servant whom I uphold... I have endowed him with my spirit that he may bring true justice to the nations... I, Yahweh, have called you by the hand and formed you; I have appointed you as a covenant of the people and **light of the nations**, to open the eyes of the blind..."

Isaiah 55,3-5: "With you I will make an everlasting covenant out of the favors promised to David (*The messianic graces*). See, I have made of you a witness to the peoples, a leader and a master to the nations. See, you will **summon a nation you never knew**, those unknown will come hurrying to you. . . "

Zechariah 9,9-10: "See now, your king comes to you; he is victorious, he is triumphant. . . the bow of war will be banished. He will proclaim **peace for the nations**. His empire shall stretch from sea to sea, from the River to the ends of the earth."

Malachi 1,11: "But, from farthest east to farthest west **my Name is honored among the nations** and everywhere a sacrifice of incense is offered to my Name, and a pure offering too (*through the Messiah's new Alliance*), since my Name is honored among the nations says Yahweh Sabaoth."

SUMMARY: The Messiah, who comes from the Jewish milieu, is the "light of the nations", and carries salvation and peace to all nations of the earth. It is so, that we better understand these words addressed by God in the debut to Abraham:

"**All the tribes of the earth** shall bless themselves by you." (Genesis 12,3)

This opening-up, of the "God of Israel" to all nations by the Messiah's advent, is implicitly found in many prophetic texts, such as Malachi 1,11 cited above. Another example is given to us in Amos 9,7 where God denies Israel any kind of privilege compared to other nations:

"Are not you and the Cushites all the same to me, sons of Israel?–it is Yahweh who speaks. Did not I, who brought Israel out of the land of Egypt, bring the Philistines from Caphtor, and the Aramaeans from Kir?"

Or also Isaiah 65,1-2: "I was ready to be approached by those who did not consult me, ready to be found by those who did not seek me. I said: 'I am here, I am here', to a nation that did not invoke my name. Each day I stretched out my hand to a rebellious people who went by evil ways, following their own whims." (also see Isaiah 19,22-25)

8. Prophecies on the suffering Messiah

The following verses from the Old Testament are a chronological description of the Passion of Christ. The verses are presented successively:

Genesis 49,10-11: "The scepter shall not pass from Judah, nor the mace from between his feet, until he come to whom it belongs, to whom the peoples shall render obedience. He ties up his donkey to the vine, to its stock the foal of his she-donkey. He washes his coat in wine, **his cloak in the blood** of the grape" (*First prophecy on the Messiah pronounced by Jacob, and who announces already, in a symbolic way, the suffering of the Messiah and the Bread of Life*).

Zechariah 11,12-13: "And they weighed out **my wages**: thirty shekels of silver. But Yahweh told me: 'Throw it to the smelter, this princely sum at which they have valued me.'"

Zechariah 13,7: "**. . . Strike the shepherd**, so that the sheep may be scattered. . . "

Isaiah 50,6: "I offered my back to those who struck me, my cheeks to those who tore at my beard; I did not cover my face **against insult and spittle."**

Isaiah 53,7: "**Harshly dealt with**, he bore it humbly, he never opened his mouth, like a lamb that is led to the slaughterhouse. . . "

Isaiah 52,14: "As the crowds were appalled on seeing him—**so disfigured** did he look that he seemed no longer human—so will the crowds be astonished at him. . . "

Isaiah 53,2-4: "... Without beauty, without majesty (*we saw him*), no looks to attract our eyes; a thing despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows and familiar with suffering, a man to make people screen their faces... **And yet ours were the sufferings he bore**, ours the sorrows he carried... we thought of him as someone punished, struck by God, and brought low."

Psalm 22,8: "All who see me **jeer at me**, they toss their heads and sneer, 'He relied on Yahweh, let Yahweh save him! If Yahweh is his friend, let Him rescue him!'"

Psalm 22,16-18: "They **pierce my hands and feet**... I can count every one of my bones."

Psalm 22,14-15: "... my bones are all disjointed... **my palate is dryer than a potsherd and my tongue is stuck to my jaw**."

Psalm 22,18: "They **divide my garments among them** and cast lots for my clothes."

Psalm 69,21: "They gave me poison to eat instead, **vinegar when I was thirsty** to drink."

Psalm 22,1: "My God, my God, **why have you forsaken me**?"

Isaiah 53,5: "He **was pierced through for our faults**, crushed for our sins. On him lies a punishment that brings us peace, and through his wounds we are healed."

Zechariah 12,10: "They will mourn over the one they have **pierced**."

Isaiah 53,10-12: "Yahweh has been pleased to crush him with suffering. If he offers his life in atonement... By his sufferings shall my servant justify many, taking their faults on himself... **For surrendering himself to death** and letting himself be taken for a sinner, while he was bearing the faults of many and praying all the time for sinners."

Isaiah 53,8: "... Yes, he was torn away from the land of the living; for our faults **struck down in death**."

Psalm 22,15: "You lay me down in **the dust of death**."

Isaiah 53,9: "They gave him a grave with the wicked, **a tomb with the rich** though he had done no wrong, and there had been no perjury in his mouth."

Even the intimate thoughts of the Jews who were condemning him were prophesied, just like in a mirror:

Wisdom 2,10-24: "As for the virtuous man who is poor, let us oppress him... Let our strength be the yardstick of virtue, since weakness argues its own futility. Let us lie in wait for the virtuous man, since he annoys us and opposes our way of life, reproaches us for our breaches of the law and accuses us of playing false to our upbringing. He claims to have knowledge of God, and **calls himself a child of the lord**. Before us he stands, **a reproof of our way of thinking**, this very sight of him weighs our spirits down; his way of life is not like other men's, the paths he treads are unfamiliar. In his opinion we are counterfeit; he holds aloof from our doings as though from filth; he proclaims the final end of the virtuous as happy and **boasts of having God for his father**. Let us see if what he says is true, let us observe what kind of end he himself will have. If the virtuous man is God's son, God will take his part and rescue him from the clutches of his enemies. Let us test him with cruelty and with torture, and thus explore this gentleness of his and put his endurance to the proof. **Let us condemn him to a shameful death since he will be looked after—we have his word for it...**"

SUMMARY: The Messiah must go through suffering and death to redeem the multitudes. He will be struck by death for our sins. All the details of Jesus' Passion, since Judas' treason, His

flagellation, and until His burial in the tomb of a rich man, had been announced by our Father in the Old Testament.

And Jesus, crying on the cross: "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me", refers to the Pharisees in Psalm 22, which contains the essence of the Messiah's Passion, this Passion that was taking place at that very moment under their very eyes. Even their sneering and defiant words towards him had been announced: "All who see me jeer at me, they toss their heads and sneer, 'He relied on Yahweh, let Yahweh save him! If Yahweh is his friend, let Him rescue him!" (Psalm 22,8)

And in the end, in front of the raging elements of nature guised as a sign, even the Roman centurion and the men who were with him, recognized Jesus' death: "In truth this man was son of God." (Matthew 27,54)

The following verses of the Old Testament anticipate the judgment of those who refuse the Just of God:

> Wisdom 5,1-7: "Then the virtuous man stands up boldly to face those who have oppressed him, those who thought so little of his sufferings. And they, at the sight of him, will shake with cowards' fear, amazed he should be saved so unexpectedly. Stricken with remorse, each will say to the other, say with a groan and in distress of spirit: 'This is the man we used to laugh at once, a butt for our sarcasm, fools that we were! His life we regarded as madness, his ending as without honor. How has he come to be counted as one of the sons of God¿. . . "

9. Prophecies on the Messiah's Resurrection

> Jonah 2,1-7: "Yahweh had arranged that a great fish should be there to swallow Jonah; and Jonah remained in the belly of the fish for **three days and three nights**. From the belly of the fish he prayed to Yahweh, his God; he said: 'Out of my distress I cried to Yahweh and he answered me; from the belly of Sheol, I cried, and you have heard my voice. . . The waters surrounded me right to my throat, the abyss was all round me. . . **But you lifted my life from the Pit**, Yahweh my God. . . '"
>
> (*These verses prefigure the death and resurrection of the Messiah; see Mat 12,40*).
>
> Hosea 6,1-3: ". . . He has torn us to pieces, but he will heal us; he has struck us down, but he will bandage our wounds; after a day or two he will bring us back to life, on **the third day he will raise us** and we shall live in his presence. . . "
>
> Isaiah 53,11: "His soul's anguish over **he shall see the light** and be content."
>
> Psalm 16,10: "For you will not abandon my soul to Sheol, **nor allow the one you love to see the Pit."**
>
> Psalm 18,5-6 & 16: **"The cords of Sheol girdled me**, the snares of death were before me. In my distress I called to Yahweh and to my God I cried; from his Temple he heard my voice, my cry came to his ears. . . He sends from on high and takes me, **he draws me from deep waters**. . . " (*the deep waters of death*)
>
> Psalm 110,7: "Drinking from the stream (*of death*) as he goes, he can hold his head high in victory."

SUMMARY: The Old Testament speaks in a veiled fashion about the Messiah's resurrection, as it was truly necessary that this event occurs to fully understand it. On the other hand, the Jews had been prepared by the fact that men sent by God, like the prophet Elijah for example, were capable by God's strength, to resurrect the dead (see 1 Kings 17,17-24). This was already a psychological and spiritual preparation to the Messiah's resurrection.

10. Conclusion

When Jesus of Nazareth (Galilee) was born in Bethlehem, he who was of David's progeny and who would during his life incarnate all the prophecies of the Old Testament, caused many Jews to believe in him and follow him. Many of the Jews, with the Pharisees in mind, refused to believe in Jesus as Messiah. Why?

It was that they were awaiting a military Messiah who would deliver them from the Romans. They preferred to cling to their Zionist mentality, ideally of an Israeli nation (John 11,50), rather than rise towards God's Mentality, who had foreseen a humble Messiah who carries spiritual salvation and internal peace to all nations of the earth.

In ending, we can remind ourselves of what Jesus had said to the Jews who refused him:

> "You pour over the Scriptures, believing that in them you can find eternal life; it is these scriptures that testify to me; and yet you refuse to come to me to receive life?" (John 5,39-47)

In the light of today's apocalyptic events (see "The key of the Apocalypse"), pray together and intensely supplement our Father that He enlightens all the hearts of good faith, thirsty for Truth and Love, of all peoples, of all races.

The hour of the Grand Pardon and the Grand Reconciliation around Jesus of Nazareth, the true Christ, Unique Savior of men, and of His holy Mother Mary is near, very near:

> "It is he who is coming on the clouds; everyone will see him, even those who pierced him, and all the races of the earth will mourn over him. This is the truth. Amen!" (Revelation 1,7).

Pierre (1985, reviewed in December 2008)

2

The Messianic Prophecies

1. Dialogue between a Priest and a Rabbi

The Jews refuse to recognize in Jesus the Messiah announced by the biblical prophecies. In the summer of 1972, the priest "P", wanted to have a frank and direct dialogue with the rabbi "R", to understand the possible biblical justifications for this refusal. He took an appointment with the rabbi and went to meet with a group. The rabbi warmly received them. Here are the essentials of the dialogue:

P: There are prophecies that confirm the messianic characteristics of Jesus. Chapter 53 of Isaiah, for example, presents the Messiah as misunderstood, rejected by his people and put to death.

R: I know what you think. Me, I don't interpret!

P: But I am just looking for an explanation, another possible interpretation. I am searching for the Truth. Between Judaism and us there is a man: this Jesus. If he is an impostor, this group and I myself would come and solicit you to become Jews.

The rabbi smiled and said jokingly: In this case, you should be circumcised!

The priest replies: Willingly! You can take off as much as you want!

R: No, really, I do not interpret!

P: Is it because the Jews expected, are expecting still, for a political Zionist Messiah?

R: No, really, I do not interpret! In any case, do not forget that Jesus, on the cross, confessed that God had abandoned Him. Didn't he say: "Elì! Elì! lamà sabachtani?", which means: "My God! My God! Why have you forsaken me?" If he was the Messiah, God would not have abandoned him.

P: You astonish me, Mr. rabbi! You indeed know the Bible! You know that it is with these same words that David begins his Psalm 22, which presents a righteous man persecuted by a mob that surround him and who "pierce his hands and his feet...", and put him to death etc... Jesus is referred to in this messianic Psalm and asks us to consult it. David did not speak of himself because he was not put to death, and did not have his hands and feet pierced.

R: I do not interpret it as you do.

P: How do you interpret it? Is it about the whole Jewish people? This dœs not apply to the Psalm.

R: I don't interpret.

P: There is also a prophecy by Micah, in the VIIIth century B.C. This prophet sees the Messiah arising from Bethlehem, specifying that he will come in the future, but "whose origin go back to the distant past, to the days of old" (Micah 5,1).

The priest read this text from the "Jerusalem Bible" (1955 Edition). He drew the attention on the fact that the text announces the Messiah for the future, yet his days go back to the past, from the days of old, and that this reveals the Messiah's **divine nature**. His interlocutor understood the priest's intention and, stood up suddenly, shouting: "Never! What you say here is false! You have falsified the Bible, you Christians! I am going to consult the Hebrew text!"

He returns after few minutes, calmer and rather resigned, in confessing: "Absolutely! What you have read is correct. In Hebrew, there is even more!"

P: More? The priest retorted, wrinkling his eyebrows.

R: Yes, more! It is written: "Whose origins go back to the ancient times (*or former days*), to the days of **Eternity** (*azal*)" and not the days of the past. Your Bible has mistranslated the Hebrew word "azal", which means **Eternity**.

(to note that the French Bibles of Segond, that of Darby and others also translate: "...to the days of eternity.")

P: I should understand then, that the Hebrew Bible gives me double reason! As **Eternity** applies only to divinity. It is for this that the prophet Isaiah, in addressing God, exclaims: "Oh, that you would tear the heavens open and come down!" (Isaiah 63,19). And God says through Ezekiel: "I am going to look after my flock **Myself**..." (Ezekiel 34,11).

R: I do not interpret, yet I congratulate you for your deep knowledge of the Bible.

P: Well, I allow myself to interpret from the events that correspond to the prophecies. But frankly, I would have preferred a good interpretation to the felicitation.

The biblical dialogue ended there, then the priest added jokingly: "I am not encouraged to undergo circumcision, because you have not convinced me. But do you have an objection to our presence during your Synagogue prayers on a Saturday?"

The group was invited the following Saturday to the Synagogue.

2. The Messianic prophecies

It was hard for Jesus to convince the Jewish people who expected a different Messiah. Jesus' death shook those who expected a political messianism. Also, Jesus had to appear to His disciples to explain to them His spiritual and universal messianism. Appearing to the two disciples, filled with sadness and disappointment on their way to Emmaus, He says: "You foolish men! So slow to believe the message of the prophets! Was it not ordained that the Christ should suffer and so enter into His glory? Then, starting with Moses and going through all the prophets, He explained to them the passages throughout the Scriptures that were about Himself" (Luke 24,25-27).

The prophecies present the Messiah to come under three forms: He is prophet, priest and king. It is difficult to reconcile among these three qualities because priests came from Levi's tribe, and kings from Judah's. As for the prophets, they were chosen independently of their tribal extraction. The prophecies that permitted to discern the Messiah's identity are those that present Him as a person rejected by his people and put to death. It is in these that we place, above all, our evidence. We succinctly present the others by starting, as Jesus did, with Moses who saw the Messiah as Prophet.

3. The Messiah as Prophet

Moses said to the people:

> "Yahweh your God will raise up for you a prophet like myself, from among yourselves, from your own brothers; to him you must listen..." Yahweh said to Moses: "... I will raise up a prophet like yourself for them from their own brothers; I will put my words into his mouth and he shall tell them all I command him. If a man does not listen to my words that he speaks in my name shall be held answerable to this man." (Deuteronomy 18,15-19)

The Jews asked John the Baptist if he were this Prophet: "I am not the Christ" he answered (John 1,21). A little while later, the apostle "Philip found Nathanael and said to him: we have found the one Moses wrote about in the Law and the prophets! It is Jesus..." (Joh 1,45)

After the miracle of the multiplication of bread done by Jesus "the people said: 'this is indeed the prophet who is to come into the world'" (John 6,14). Jesus finally said to those who refused to believe in Him: "you place your hopes on Moses, and Moses will be your accuser ... since it was I that he was writing about..." (John 5,45-46)

4. The Messiah as King and Priest

Several prophecies present the Messiah as King:

> God says: "I Myself have anointed my King on Zion, my holy mountain... Ask of Me and I shall give you the nations as your birthright, the whole wide world as your possession." (Psalm 2,6-8)

> Yahweh declared to my Lord: "Take your seat at my right hand, till I have made your enemies your footstool. Yahweh will stretch out **the scepter** of your power from Zion, you will rule your foes all around you... Yahweh has sworn an oath He will never retract, you are **a priest for ever** of the order of Melchizedek" (Psalm 110,1-4).

After having presented the Messiah as **king** whose **scepter** of power stretches till the ends of the earth, Psalm 110 also presents Him as **priest**. Two points are to be considered with regards to this Kingdom:

1. This kingdom is not political, but **spiritual**. It is not intended as a Zionist hegemony. Jesus explained it: "My kingdom is not of this world", that is to say the political world (John 18,36-37). This Kingdom is spiritual, and this is the reason why this king is also priest, but "of the order of Melchizedek", both priest and king, and who was not Hebrew (Genesis 14,18-20). Saint Paul comments on this fact in his letter to the Hebrews (Chapters 5 to 7). That is why the prophets declared that God rejects the Jewish political kingdom (1 Samuel 8,5-7 / Hosea 8,4 and see our texts "The Tragedy of Jesus" and "Christians and Israel").

2. To God, the Messianic kingdom is **universal**, in the interest of all men. The Messiah is the universal King of pure hearts of all races, nations and languages, and not only of Zionist Jews, who understand that the Messiah is fanatically Zionist, exclusive to them, to their political and material advantage. In fact, God, speaks of the Messiah "His Servant", expressing through the prophet Isaiah: "It is not enough for you to be My servant to restore the tribes of Jacob and bring back the survivors of Israel; I shall make you **a light to the nations** so that My salvation may reach the **remotest parts of earth**" (Isaiah 49,6 / Acts 13,47). This Messianic reign is that of God's on humanity, and not the Israeli people's.

The Jewish priests used to offer animal sacrifices to God. Yet, the sacrifice offered by the Messiah was that of his own person for the salvation of those who believe in Him. In doing so, He changed the notion of sacrifice and the priesthood, thus fulfilling the prophecies announcing him as priest according to an order and a rite, both **different from the Hebrew order and rites**: namely those of king-priest Melchizedek.

It is important to underline and to clarify this fact: the Jewish priesthood was according to Aaron's order. Aaron was Moses' brother and the founder of the Jewish priesthood, based on animal sacrifices (see Exodus 28). The fact that the announced Messiah, dœs not come invested in a traditional Jewish priestly order according to Aaron, but from a non-Jewish Melchizedek order, signifies a radical and upsetting changeset in Jewish traditions. This implies a renewal of the Jewish mentality and conception of the priesthood.

This new "order of Melchizedek" is characterized by the offering of "bread and wine" by Melchizedek to Abraham. Now, the bread and the wine are the symbols of the Messiah's Body and Blood offered in sacrifice to God: "This (*the bread*) is My Body... This (*the wine*) is My Blood, the Blood of the New Covenant poured out for many", Jesus said to His Apostles on the eve of his sacrifice (Mark 14,22-24 / Luke 22, 19-20). The most unbelievable messianic prophecies, distressing and incomprehensible, are those that present the suffering Messiah, rejected and put to death by his own people:

> "Who has given credence to what we have heard... He had no form or charm to attract us, no beauty to win our hearts... He was despised, the lowest of men, a man of sorrows, familiar with sufferings, despised for whom we had no regard. Yet ours were the sufferings He was bearing... while we thought of Him as someone being punished and struck with affliction by God. He was being wounded for our rebellions... and we have been healed by His bruises... having been cut off from the land of the living, at His having been struck dead for his people's rebellion. He was given a grave with the wicked, and His tomb is with the rich (*Jesus was buried in the tomb of the rich Joseph of Arimathea: Matthew 27,57-60*)... It was Yahweh's good pleasure to crush Him with pain. If He gives His life as a sin offering, He will see his offspring and **prolong his life** (*this is a prophecy on Jesus' Resurrection*), and through Him Yahweh's good pleasure will be done. After the ordeal He has endured, He will **see the light** and be content... (*by his Resurrection*)..." (Isaiah 53,1-12)

This was how Isaiah saw, centuries before, the Messiah's tragedy: the rejection by his people, his sacrifice offered to God by him being put to death and Resurrection. That is the nature of his priesthood, totally different from Aaron's.

David, in Psalm 22, already foresaw, before Isaiah, this tragedy of Christ. Speaking of the suffering Messiah, he sees him groaning, saying:

> "Eli, Eli, why have you forsaken me? ... a herd of bulls surround me... lions tearing and roaring... a gang of villains closes me in... they have **pierced my hands** and my feet and leave me lying in the dust of death..."

The prophet Zechariah predicted the Messiah's return to those who denied Him (*the Jews*) in these terms:

> "Over the House of David and the citizens of Jerusalem (*the Jews*) I will pour out a spirit of kindness and prayer. They will look on the **One whom they have pierced** (*Jesus*); they will mourn for him as for an only son..." (Zechariah 12,10)

The Book of Revelation, referring to Jesus, confirms this fact which will take place in the end of the times granted to the State of Israel:

> "Look, He (*Jesus*) is coming... everyone will see Him, **even those who pierced Him**, and all the races of the earth will mourn over Him." (Revelation 1,7)

These are the essentials of the Messianic prophecies that are applied to Jesus.

We would appreciate arguments contrary to ours, which are able to demonstrate the non-messianism of Jesus of Nazareth. Our faith in Him is open, non-fanatical.

Part III

The Antichrist and the Return of Christ

Table of Contents

1	**The Antichrist Yesterday and Today**	**61**
2	**The Antichrist and the Return of Christ**	**63**
3	**The Antichrist in Islam**	**71**
4	**The Signs of the Return of Jesus**	**77**
5	**The Return of Jesus**	**85**

1

The Antichrist Yesterday and Today

The name “Antichrist” was given by Saint John to the movement that **opposed** Christ: “The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ... he is the Antichrist” (1 John 2,22).

This adversary of Christ already existed in the past, Paul and John say, but he must also return with power, before the Return of Christ, but to then disappear forever. It has already appeared, and still found in the world. It will disappear, never to return. It is why, we cannot speak of the Antichrist of “tomorrow”.

1. The Antichrist of yesterday

> "You were told that the Antichrist must come (*in the future*), and now several antichrists have **already** appeared... Those rivals of Christ came out of our **own** number, but they had never really belonged; if they had belonged, they would have stayed with us..." (1 John 2,18-19)

We understand from John that these antichrists present in his time, were the Jews who, after having believed in Jesus and were joined into the Judaic-Christian community, defected and renounced Jesus as Messiah because He did not correspond to the **political** aspirations of the Jews (See the text "The Tragedy of Jesus").

John further confirms his thought in his second letter:

> "There are **many deceivers** about in the world, refusing to admit that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. They are **the Deceiver**; they are **the Antichrist**." (2 John 7)

These verses clearly prove that the Antichrist is a human group, opposed to Jesus. This group is "the deceiver, the Antichrist" (*in singular*), which was already "about in the world".

Saint Paul on the other hand, named this anti-Christ movement differently. He specifies that this "Enemy" of Christ must appear on the eve of the return of Christ; but that its activity was already at work during his time:

> "It cannot happen (*before the Return of Jesus*) until the Rebel, the Lost One, has appeared. This is the Enemy (*Antichrist*)... Rebellion is at its work **already**..." (2 Thessalonians 2,3-7)

To note: “Before” the Return of Christ, the Antichrist (the Enemy) has to appear before Jesus returns, but the “rebellion” was **already at work** in the past. These are "the Deceivers", the "antichrists" denounced by John in his second letter.

2. The Antichrist today

John explains who this Antichrist will be; who will **reappear** in the future: "... you were told that the Antichrist must come... The one who **denies that Jesus is Christ**, he is the liar, he is Antichrist" (1 John 2,18-22). He has already appeared in Palestine, striving to establish the Zionist "messianic" empire, contrary to the spiritual and universal Kingdom of Christ.

The Antichrist that was to come is now here. He is recognizable by his rejection of Jesus and its presence in Palestine. He shall disappear for eternity! The Christ has unmasked him: he is the “Beast” of Chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation. (See the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

His return sounds the Apocalyptical trumpet of the grand universal trial and the glorious Return of Christ: Jesus of Nazareth.

2

The Antichrist and the Return of Christ

1. A Message to Mankind

The Advent of Christ is profoundly related to that of the Antichrist. The Christians of today, contrary to their saintly predecessors, care less about one or the other.

And yet, the divine Master had recommended to stay awake so to recognize and combat his Enemy. Despite this, we see today Jesus' disciples applauding and protecting the Antichrist. They even raise "prayers" for the success of its plans.

> "The spiritual light will be darkened. The sun will lose its brightness" (Matthew 24,29 / Revelation 6,12). "The salt has lost its taste" (Matthew 5,13).

The misguided world runs freely towards its perdition. What is still left for us to grasp is the essential: spiritual salvation, in denouncing, before it is too late, the Antichrist who, at his coming fall, which is close at hand, will bring down his allies with him.

Therefore, we can be amongst those who, and with joy, prepare the Return, which is very close, of our Beloved Brother Jesus, the Messiah.

> "Let anyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. (*to all mankind*)" (Revelation 3,22)

2. The Return of Christ and the Antichrist

In the traditional churches, no one, by an incomprehensible human respect, dares to speak of the Antichrist or to preoccupy itself with its identity; or even less, run the risk of denouncing it.

The independent believers address this study to all believers: Jewish, Christian or Muslim. Our purpose is to make them aware of the phenomenon of the Antichrist. We demonstrate this through the prophecies of the Holy Scriptures, that the State of Israel is the State of the announced Antichrist due to appear in Palestine before the Return of Jesus; hence the importance of denouncing it.

3. The announcement of the Antichrist

The Antichrist was announced by Jesus and the Apostles John & Paul.

A clarification is needed before tackling the subject: some speak of the Antéchrist, which means precursor of Christ. Yet, it is about the Antichrist, the Enemy of Christ. In fact, the original text of the Bible, written in Greek by Saint John, speaks of the "ANTICRISTOS", and reveals us the specific characteristic of this Enemy of Christ Jesus:

> "The man who **denies that Jesus is the Christ**, he is the liar, he is Antichrist." (1 John 2,22)

So, the "liar" is neither evil in general, nor atheism (non-belief in God), nor antitheism (opposition to God), but a refusal and opposition to the teachings and the person of Jesus. The rejection of his Messianism.

The Gospel tells us that this "Liar" may be an individual, or a group of people, "many antichrists", individuals driven by the same spirit and having the same purpose contrary to that of Jesus.

Jesus, the first, has put us on guard against this Enemy by saying:

> "...'Take care that no one deceives you, because many will come using my name and saying, 'I am the Christ' and they will deceive many...' (Matthew 24,4) '... If anyone says to you, then, 'Look, the Christ is here', or 'He is there', do not believe it; for false Christs and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents, enough to deceive even the chosen, if that were possible. There; I have forewarned you'" (Matthew 24,23-24).

Pope John Paul II was himself deceived by those who denied Jesus as Messiah. He received the Israeli Prime minister Benjamin Netanyahu exclaiming "God bless Israel!" He even went as far as prostrating at the Wailing Wall.

All throughout history, several Jews, in Europe most notably, proclaimed themselves as the awaited Messiah by the Jews. But they did not have the quality of the Antichrist, as none could produce any "great signs" worthy of being recalled by history, and none was able to "deceive the elect" as is the case today.

In these days, several Zionists were mistakenly taken as the awaited Messiah by the Jews. For example, we cite some politicians: Menahem Begin and Ariel Sharon. Amongst the rabbis: Meir Kahana and Schnœrsen, the rabbi of Lubavitch.

The words of Jesus lead us to believe that the Antichrist could be a group of men who, in mutual agreement, deny him and proclaim another Messiah. This is the case of the Zionists, who managed to produce a considerably indisputable and prodigious sign of the return of Israel, or "resurrection" as they call it. This explains why Jesus had said: "**Many** will come using my Name" and this multitude will not say: "We are Christs", but "It is I **the Christ**". We should understand: "It is I (*the State of Israel*) the Christ, the savior of the Jews". The Zionist masses indeed consider the State of Israel as messianic for the political salvation of the Jews alone, and based on this, want world domination.

Now, God's salvation is not political. Jesus was sent for the spiritual salvation of all mankind, not just the Jews through an Israeli state. It is why this state is that of the Antichrist, because, to conceive it, one has to start by denying that Jesus is the Christ.

The Antichrist has to operate great works, capable of dazzling the masses, even amongst Jesus' disciples. Did this not happen with Israel? Numerous are those who, still marveled, forget

the violent Israeli injustices as well as their disavowal of Jesus, and let themselves literally be seduced by the "prodigious" victories of the Hebraic army, to the point that so many Christians have forgotten their testimony to Jesus in favor of the Zionists. Have we not seen Christian leaders of states bend the knee before the tombs of Zionist leaders? The world prostrates before the "Beast" (*the Antichrist*), as Saint John says in Revelation Chapter 13, "adoring it saying: 'Who can compare with the Beast? Who can fight against it?'" The former US president Jimmy Carter personally prostrated at the feet of Theodore Herzl's tomb, the founder of Zionism, paying homage to the State of Israel.

Remaining on the subject of the Antichrist, Saint John tells us that it should appear in the future, but that its spirit was already in the world during his time, and that **many** antichrists and false prophets had already appeared:

> "It is not every spirit, my dear people, that you can trust; test them, to see if they come from God; there are many false prophets (*the Jews who fight the Gospel*), now, in the world. You can tell the spirits that come from God by this: every spirit which acknowledges that Jesus the Christ has come in the flesh is from God; but any spirit which will not say this of Jesus is not from God, but is the spirit of Antichrist (*the anti-Christ Jews*), whose coming you were warned about. Well, now he is here, in the world. (*active through the Jews against Jesus*)" (1 John 4,1-3)

John goes on further in his second letter:

> "There are **many** deceivers about in the world, refusing to admit that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. **They** are **the Deceiver**; they are the Antichrist. Watch yourselves, or all our work will be lost and not get the reward it deserves." (2 John 1,7-8)

This text is indisputably in favor of the Antichrist who presents himself as a **homogenous group** renouncing Jesus. Speaking of "many deceivers", John straight away adds: "They are **the Deceiver**; they are the Antichrist".

John thus unites all those who deny that Jesus is the Christ into a single entity. This unique entity is the Antichrist. The spirit of this Enemy of Christ is itself incarnate today, in a visible political entity that the Zionists, to better camouflage their intentions, have chosen to mask by the spiritual name of Israel. Here lies the seduction. It is why the Messiah recommends to stay awake, and reveals to John, in the Apocalypse, that the Jews are "title usurpers" (Revelation 2,9 & 3,9). Because the real Jew and the true Israel are the disciples of Jesus (Galatians 3,29 & Colossians 3,11). In fact, St Paul says: "Not all born Israelites belong to Israel" (Romans 9,6). A Christian who acknowledges the Zionist State of Israel is alien to himself.

It is in this way that John warns us against the "Deceiver", the Antichrist, and explains that it will be formed by **many** deceivers who proclaim with one heart: "Jesus is not the Messiah; it is I, Israel, the Messiah". And John asks Jesus' disciples to keep their eyes wide open, to stay awake, "or all our work will be lost..." (2 John 8).

St Paul calls the Antichrist "the Apostasy", "The Wicked One", "the Lost One", "the Enemy" (*Antichrist*). He informs us that he will appear before Jesus' Return and warns us, as Jesus did before him, that this Enemy will manifest itself showing prodigious signs, "that he enthrones himself in God's sanctuary (*Vatican*)".

In fact, writing to the Thessalonians who believed in the imminent Advent of Jesus, Paul puts them on guard against all the false rumors on this subject:

> "Brothers, to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and how we shall be gathered around him: please do not get excited too soon or alarmed by any prediction or rumor or any

> letter claiming to come from us, implying that the Day of the Lord has already arrived. Never let anyone deceive you in this way.
>
> It cannot happen until the Great Revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Lost One, has appeared. This is the Enemy (*Antichrist*), the one who claims to be so much greater than all that men call "god", so much greater than anything that is worshipped (*we rise against God by refusing his plan in the Christ Jesus, who is God*), that he enthrones himself in God's Sanctuary, (*by infiltrating himself among the disciples of Christ-God up till the Vatican*), and claims that he is God (*which is to say that he is the Christ, the Christ is God*). Surely you remember me telling you about this when I was with you? And you know, too, what is still holding him back (*the powerful Roman Empire which prevents the Jews of founding the Kingdom of Israel*) from appearing before his appointed time (*when the political situation will be favorable*). Rebellion is at its work already (*by the Jews who refuse Jesus and persecute the Apostles*), but in secret, and the one who is holding it back has first to be removed (*the Roman Empire*) before the Rebel appears openly (*from 1948*). The Lord will kill him with the breath of his mouth and will annihilate him with his glorious appearance at his Coming.
>
> But when the Rebel comes, Satan will set to work (*"you are from your father, the devil", Jesus had said to the Jews who refused Him; John 8,44*): there will be all kinds of miracles (*Israel's "Resurrection"*) and a deceptive show of signs and portents (*military and other*), and everything evil that can deceive (*false peace based on the injustice with regards to the Palestinians*) those who are bound for destruction because they would not grasp the love of the truth which could have saved them. The reason why God is sending a power to delude them (*Israel*) and make them believe what is untrue is to condemn all who refused to believe in the truth and chose wickedness (*by supporting Israel*) instead." (2 Thessalonians 2,1-11)

All those who support the Antichrist take pleasure in injustice. To be satisfied with a deceptive peace made on the detriment of the legitimate rights of others and bear witness to Jesus, is to take pleasure in injustice.

Saint John's Book of Revelation was revealed to unmask the Antichrist that is called "The Beast". Chapters 13 and 17 speak of this at length: John sees the Beast that returns to existence after a period of disappearance. It is hit on the head with a fatal blow (Hitler's crime). The "Dragon" (Satan) gives it an immense empire on the world. The "Beast" heals from its wound and man is marveled at its resurrection and adores it exclaiming: "Who can compare with the Beast? Who can fight against it?" Only the chosen resist it. The Beast, supported by a powerful nation that John calls "the second Beast", will even triumph on the saints themselves for a certain time, but will end with its defeat. It will assemble its subjects from the four quarters of the earth in Palestine, and in Jerusalem itself, before going to its final destruction (Revelation 20,7-9). After its fall, many will believe in Jesus and prepare themselves to receive him, drawing Him with the cry "Come, Lord Jesus" (Revelation 22,20).

4. The Antichrist, sign of the Return of Christ

The attentive reader notices that the advent of the Antichrist is intimately linked to the Return of Christ Jesus and, as a fact, announces it. Hence the importance of recognizing the Enemy, to prepare to receive the Friend.

The Antichrist appears at the end of times to purify God's people by entraining, in its wake, all lovers of lies and injustice. After the definite disappearance of the Antichrist, a purified humanity will remain, open to the Spirit of Jesus and ready to welcome him.

5. Return of the Messiah

At the Ascension of Jesus, the assembled Apostles watched him rise when two angels appear to them and tell them:

> "Why are you men from Galilee standing here looking into the sky? Jesus who has been taken up from you into heaven, this same Jesus **will come back** in the same way as you have seen him go there" (Acts 1,11).

Jesus Himself, had spoken of his Return:

> "Therefore, you too must stand ready because the Son of Man **is coming** at an hour you do not expect." (Matthew 24,44)
>
> "But when the Son of Man **comes, will he find** any faith on earth?" (Luke 18,8)
>
> "... the disciples came and asked him privately: 'Tell us, when is this going to happen, and what will be **the sign of your coming** and of the end of the world?' And Jesus answered them, 'Take care that no one deceives you; because many will come using my name and saying: 'I am the Christ'..." (Matthew 24,3-4)

These verses demonstrate indeed, that **the most evident** sign of Christ's Return, is the apparition of the Antichrist. Jesus also gave other signs:

> "'And when you hear of wars and revolutions, do not be frightened, for this is something that must happen first but the end is not so soon'... 'When you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you must realize that she will soon be laid desolate'... Jerusalem will be trampled down by the pagans until the age of the pagans is completely over." (Luke 21,9-24)

This is thus about the end of the times of the Pagans. The modern Pagans are represented by the men of the Antichrist who "deny that Jesus is the Christ". Their armies today occupy Jerusalem, on which they will tread until the end of the period of time accorded to them. The circulating rumors of peace should not "deceive" us, and are fulfilled but to accomplish the overall picture of the prophecies that concern the Return of Christ. St Paul, writing to the Thessalonians with regards to this Return, tells them:

> "You will not be expecting us to write anything to you, brothers, about 'times and seasons,' since you know very well that the Day of the Lord is going to come like a thief in the night. It is when people (*Jews*) are saying: 'How quiet and peaceful it is that the worst suddenly happens, as suddenly as labor pains come on a pregnant woman; and there will be no way for anybody to evade it." (1 Thessalonians 5,1-3).

Damnation will fall on the Antichrist and his allies. These severe words are not addressed to the faithful of Christ, since soon after, St Paul continues by saying to the same faithful:

> "But it is not as if you live in the dark, my brothers, for that Day to overtake you like a thief. No, you are all sons of light and sons of the Day: we do not belong to the night or to darkness, so we should not go on sleeping, as everyone else does, but stay wide awake and sober." (1 Thessalonians 5,4-6)

There is but one way to stay awake: recognize the Antichrist! A single way permits us today to remain sober: not to let ourselves be exhilarated by the false feats or wonders of the Impious One, all based on injustice. It is these false portents "that can deceive those who are bound for

destruction" (2 Thessalonians 2,10). Their refusal of the evident Truth and their scorn for the evangelical prophecies rendered them blind, "suppressing the Spirit" (1 Thessalonians 5,19-22).

Jesus did not fix the date of his return, but asks us to recognize the signs. Those who think that they cannot know this time, base themselves on the words of Jesus: "But as for that day and hour, nobody knows it, neither the angels of heaven, nor the Son, no one but the Father only." (Matthew 24,36) Now here, Jesus speaks of a fixed date which is not his mission to reveal. Yet this dœs not mean that He dœs not ask us to **explicitly** recognize the signs of the times. Indeed so, since He tells us that at the end of the world, the Son of Man "will send his angels with a loud trumpet to gather his chosen from the four winds..." (Matthew 24,31) He even recommends his chosen to discern the signs of His Return:

> "'Take the fig tree as a parable: as soon as its twigs grow supple and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near. So with you when you see all these things: **know** that he is near, at the very gates.'" (Matthew 24,32-33)

6. The role of the Apostles of the end of times

The first Apostles had as a mission to reveal that Jesus is the Messiah, to explain, by the Scriptures, "that the Christ should suffer and rise from the dead" (Acts 17,2-3).

Jesus also says, that at the end of times, "He will send his angels with a loud trumpet to gather his chosen from the four winds..." (Matthew 24,31). These "angels", in prophetic language are envoys, Apostles "of the end of times". The role of these last Apostles is double:

1. To reveal the identity of the Antichrist, starting from the Holy Scriptures.
2. To prepare the faithful for the close Return of Christ, in explaining the signs of the times

The first Apostles came up against many difficulties in preaching Jesus to the Jews, who did not await a crucified Messiah, and who was crucified by them. In their mission, the Apostles of the end of times come up against much more difficulties than their predecessors, because the Christians do not expect a glorified Antichrist, and which is glorified by them.

Although announced by the Apostles, the Antichrist is neither expected, nor denounced by the regular hierarchies of the Churches, who even neglect talk of this subject and to place on guard their respective faithful.

The Antichrist, the experienced false prophet, knows how to present itself as a persecuted lamb, and hides its numerous crimes and Machiavellian designs: "Beware of false prophets who come to you disguised as sheep but underneath are ravenous wolves", Jesus says (Matthew 7,15). Despite all the recommendations of the Master, not a single leader expects to see it appear under its present form.

Master of seduction, the "Deceiver" presents itself in the name of peace: "shalom!" It is this way that many let themselves be deceived, instead of staying awake and reminding it that real Peace comes from the One whom the prophets call "The Prince of Peace", Jesus, the Unique true Messiah, beyond which any peace is illusory. The mission of the Apostles of the end of times is to proclaim and remind people of this divine Truth.

The Antichrist, unsuspected and encouraged by all those it has deceived, penetrates everywhere. It is received with dignity, even in the Vatican, in God's enclosure, without speaking to it about the demands of faith to Jesus and Justice. Instead of reproaching it with regards to the millions of Palestinians that they have violently exiled, they congratulate it because of its

"pacific" initiatives and pray for the success of its projects. Was not St Paul right by saying that the Deceiver "will enthrone himself in God's sanctuary?!" (2 Thessalonians 2,4)

The Christians allowed themselves to be deceived. They still take the persecutor Antichrist for a persecuted lamb. Rare are those who are perceptive and who recognize in it the "ravenous wolf", the persecutor, the expan-sionist, which dreams of the "Greater Israel", and against whom we should defend ourselves.

Christians who support Israel are not justified, as the prophecy is clear: The Antichrist is "the man who denies that Jesus is the Christ" (1 John 2,22). Christians are not ready to establish the link between John's prophecy and the historical manifestation of the "Wicked One". Moved by the Hitlerian holocaust, and fooled by the "miraculous" Israeli victories, Christians refuse to recognize Israel as the announced Antichrist "who denies that Jesus is the Christ". And yet, only prophecy can lighten up the watchful eye.

The "Deceiver" knows how to make the Western consciences feel guilty, particularly with Auschwitz and the four crematoriums. Yet, nobody makes it feel guilty because of its crimes towards the millions of Palestinians in Palestine and exiled Palestinians. Moreover, as monstrous as it was, Hitler's crime dœs not exceed in horror that of Hiroshima and Nagasaki for example, and dœs not allow us, in any way, to give to the Antichrist Deceiver another name and another face, other than already attributed to it by Christ himself and his Apostles after him.

The Christian must not forget, finally, that the most heinous crime in history remains the putting to death of Jesus.

There are Christians who refer to St. Paul's epistle to the Romans (Romans 11,1-32), to take Israel's defense. It is important to reveal that Paul speaks of the Jews, and not of a Jewish "State". Paul's aim is to invite the Romans to not consider all the Jews, once and for all and without distinction, as excluded from faith in Jesus. It is why he tells them: "I, an Israelite, descended from Abraham through the tribe of Benjamin, could never agree that God had rejected his people, the people he chose specially long ago..." (Romans 11,1-2). But, to be "grafted" among God's people, Paul submits the Jews to a condition: to believe in Jesus. In fact, he says: "**If they give up their unbelief**, (*by their rejection of Jesus*), they will be grafted back in their place." (Romans 11,23) The condition of their salvation is clear.

Additionally, when thinking of Romans 11,1-32, we should not omit to mention, what the same Apostle, Paul, tells the Thessalonians with regards to the Jews: "... suffering the same treatment from your own countrymen as they have suffered from the Jews, the people who put the Lord Jesus to death, and the prophets too. And now they have been persecuting us, **and acting in a way that dœs not please God**, and makes them **enemies of the whole human race**..." (1 Thessalonians 2,14-15). They are anti-Christ and anti-mankind.

The Christian's attitude towards the Jews should be like Paul's: testimony and an appeal. But no one in the Church should support a Jewish "State", whose spirit is contrary to that of Christ Jesus. Love for the Jews incites us to invite them to Salvation by believing in Jesus. The worst anti-semitism is to let the Jews rot and persevere in error.

The Jews who, yesterday, prevented the Apostles from preaching that Jesus is the Messiah, "are disliked by God, and made themselves the enemies of man". Likewise, today, those who prevent to reveal that the Antichrist is Israel, are the enemies of God and men.

Some Christians refuse to oppose Israel because of the 2nd Vatican Council. According to them, the Council dœs not permit them. It is misunderstanding the Council's intentions. These Christians refer to the declaration "The Church and Non-Christian Religions" divulged on November 5 1965, soon after the mentioned Council, which deals with the relationship of the Catholic Church with the various religions. Article 4 of this declaration is reserved to the

Jewish religion. There is nothing in this declaration that can prevent a Christian from inviting the Jews to Salvation by believing in Jesus. Nothing prevents a Christian from saying what was said here. Moreover, we emphasize that our attitude is not towards Jews as a people - because we believe in religious freedom - but with regards to Israel as a State that wants to be biblical and messianic. In addition, we pick up in the same declaration that "the Church condemns all persecutions against all men, whœver they are"; the Church **must** therefore remind Israel of its obligations towards the Palestinian People.

The Christian of the XXth century is ready to see the Antichrist in atheist communism, in the society of consumption, in the atomic bomb, in Islam (who by the way recognize Jesus as Messiah), and even in Christian rites other than their own, but jump to say whenever Israel is designated: "You are talking politics!!!" It is odd that Christians do not consider it politics when they think that the Antichrist is communist Russia. "It is that Russia is atheist", they answer. Russia could even be anti-theist without having the specific characteristic of the Antichrist. It is Israel, that is manifestly the anti-Christ.

Every true Apostle would be sorry to see that, amongst Christians, all lies are absorbed. Solely the truth is blocked and justice is rejected; often by the most instructed and the most responsible, who let themselves be convinced by the “seductions of injustice”.

The Virgin Mary appeared in 1846, in La Salette (France). She denounced the clergy’s treason, qualifying them as "cesspools of impurity", and that "the devil has bedimmed their intelligence". She reveals the apparition of the Antichrist, the Beast, in the near future. It will be born "of a Hebrew nun, a false virgin (*false Jews*); its father will be bishop" (*allusion to the collaboration of the Christians with the Antichrist*). (See the text "The Explanation of Mary’s Message in La Salette").

Jesus has promised to send his angels, the Apostles of the end of Times, to gather his elect from the four quarters of the earth against the Antichrist. We are convinced that the Breath of the Holy Spirit will inflame their hearts and arouse their enthusiasm, so that they will stand up as one man in defense of faith and justice. They will prepare the believers after the fall of the Antichrist, to the reception of Christ Jesus at the time of his near Return.

> "Oh yes come, Lord Jesus!" (Revelation 22,20)

3

The Antichrist in Islam

These teachings of the Prophet Muhammad on the Antichrist in Islam are taken from the "Spiritual Discussions", commonly known in Arabic as "Al-Hadith". The Qur'an dœs not mention the Antichrist, but speaks of "Gog and Magog", symbol of the Antichrist.

In Islam, the Antichrist is known as the "Imposter Christ" (Al Massih al Dajjal).

We relate the explanation and numbering of these Hadiths from the Arabic book of the late Sheikh Sobhi Saleh "Manhal al Waridin". This book is a compilation of the Hadiths drawn from Sheikh Muhyîddine Al Nawawî's book "The Gardens of Piety" (Riyad el Sâlihine), XIIIth century of the Christian era.

Sheikh Sobhi Saleh reports these Hadiths trustworthily while numbering them differently.

Here are the principal points revealed by the Prophet Muhammad on the subject of the Antichrist:

From Adam until the day of the resurrection of the dead, there is no matter greater than that of the Impostor (*Antichrist*)" (n ° 1812):

In spite of this verse, some believers consider that the Antichrist is but of marginal importance, not even deserving mention. Such an attitude dœs not suit a zealous Muslim, because Muhammad placed it at the summit of the powers of Evil to fight. This is all the more viable as this Imposter lives among us today.

Discussion n ° 204 reports that Muhammad spoke at length of the Impostor:

"The prophet praises God then mentions the Imposter Christ (*the Antichrist*) and speaks at length about him. He said (*among other things)*: He will appear among you, and (*then*) what was unknown to you regarding him will no longer be unknown".

Here, Muhammad draws attention on the fact that the Impostor's identity remains obscure until the moment of his apparition.

But how will the identity of the Antichrist be discovered?

Discussion n ° 1813 tells us:

"The Impostor will manifest itself and a believing man will direct himself towards him and say: Oh men, here is the Impostor whom the prophet spoke of."

Thus, Muhammad informs us that God will send a believing man to designate the Antichrist. This man has already appeared and, under divine order, designated the Impostor, indicating Israel saying: "Here is the Antichrist". This confirms the prophecy of the Gospel on the Antichrist in John's second letter:

> "The Antichrist is the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ" (2 John 2,22).

It is the case of the Zionists.

How was this man able to detect the identity of the Antichrist?

This is due to a series of successive apparitions of the Messiah, Jesus, to this man to prepare him for his mission. The most important apparition was on 13 May 1970, during which Jesus tells him: "Open Chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation: the Beast is Israel" (See the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

From these apparitions, a meticulous and conscientious research on the prophecies related to the Antichrist was undertaken. It is Heaven then, which took the initiative of revealing the identity of the Antichrist.

The Biblical and Islamic prophecies lead us to discover the Antichrist in the Zionist world:

We make a distinction between Zionists and Jews of good faith. Muhammad links the Impostor (*the Antichrist*) to the Jews in Discussion n ° 1810 in saying: "70,000 Jews of Isfahan (*Iran*) will follow the Impostor."

Now Isfahan, is the most populated Iranian city with Jews. After the fall of the Shah of Iran, a large emigration of Iranian Jews to Israel occurred. The number 70,000 is symbolic and represents a universal totality: the influx of the Jews from the whole world to Palestine.

In Discussion n ° 1818, Muhammad also says: "The resurrection of the dead will not take place before the Muslims fight the Jews. The Jew will hide behind the rocks and the trees, which will say: "Oh Muslim, a Jew hides behind me, come and kill him, except the 'gharkad' (*who do not say this. The 'gharkad' is the name of a succulent plant*) because it is a tree of the Jews."

The Arab-Israeli wars, provoked by the Zionist occupation of Palestine, are a sign of the presence of the Antichrist in the Holy Land. Dr Sobhi Saleh, in his book, interprets the 'gharkad' as so (p 992): "A thorny tree species in Palestine where the Impostor and the Jews will perish".

Two important points are to be underlined in this interpretation:

1. The intimate link between the Impostor and the Jews.
2. The Impostor appears in Palestine, and in Jerusalem itself, where he will perish with the Zionist Jews.

This is the reason for which a lot of interpreters have understood that the expression "Impostor Christ", represents a group of homogeneous people, characterized by deceit and by lies. Moreover, in the same book of Sheikh S. Saleh (p 608), it is said: "The Impostor Christ is the name of a class of those who augment lies and deceit, because the Discussions (*of the Prophet*) report that at the end of times, there will be many **impostors**". Thus, we understand that the Impostor represents a group of impostors, and not a single individual. This is also the Gospel's view:

> "There are many deceivers... who refuse to admit that Jesus is the Messiah... They are the Deceiver; they are the Antichrist" (2 John 7).

Why are the Zionists described as the Impostor Christ? It is because they reject Jesus and announce another christ, a racist messiah with Zionist ambitions like Ariel Sharon today (1 John 2,22). Such is the Antichrist, because the true Christ is none other than Jesus. In other words, the Antichrist is the Zionist person and society, which form the Imposter entity, known under the name of Israel.

After having exposed the narrow link between the Jews and the Imposter Christ, we pass on to another point:

The relation between the Zionist Jews, the Imposter Christ, and "Gog and Magog"

We demonstrate that these three denominations form but a single and identical reality. The Zionists and "Gog and Magog" form a unique moral person also known as the Imposter Christ. The Prophet Muhammad says in Discussion n ° 1808:

"Wœ to the Arabs of an evil that approaches: today, a breach like this (and the prophet joined the tips of his thumb and his forefinger) was opened in the barrier of Gog and Magog."

Some interpreters think that Gog and Magog are related to Alexander the Great. However, Alexander (IVth century BC) precedes Muhammad approximately a thousand years. The Prophet speaks of Gog and Magog in the future, not in the past, since he says: "Wœ to the Arabs of an evil that approaches", not of an evil which has passed during the days of Alexander.

The confusion between "Gog and Magog" and Alexander the Great results from the fact that the Arabs qualify Alexander, because of his power, as 'Dhu'l Qarnayn', which means 'The Double Horned', he who has two horns:

> "They said: 'O Dhu'l Qarnayn, Gog and Magog are working corruption on earth. Shall we pay you a wage in return for your building us a barrier between us and them?" (Qur'an XVIII; The Cave,94)
>
> (*The numbering of the verses can vary from one Qur'an to another.*)

Alexander the Great was known as the "Double-Horned" because of Daniel's prophecy (Daniel 8). But the above-mentioned verse points, in fact, to the second Beast (USA) of John's Revelation: it has 'two horns' and is at the service of the first Beast (Israel), which represents modern paganism: "Gog and Magog" (Revelation 13,11-17 & 20,7-9). The research around Gog and Magog in the Qur'an should be done in this direction. Here again, emerges the necessity of resorting to the Gospels in order to understand certain passages of the Qur'an.

The link between "Gog and Magog" and the Antichrist explains the reason for which Muhammad had said in one of his Discussions that the recitation of the Sura XVIII, The Cave, which is the only Quranic Sura to mention Gog and Magog, protects against the Antichrist. (This is mentioned in the Qur'an translated in French by Muhammad Hamidullah. Published by Hilàl Yayinlari - Ankara 1973)

Discussion 1806 equally reports that the hoard of "Gog and Magog" will fall on Palestine from all over the world because the prophet says:

"God will send 'Gog and Magog' who will surge from everywhere, and their pioneers will cross the lake of Tiberius (*in Palestine*)".

Note indeed, that here too, Muhammad did not say: "God sent Gog and Magog", but "God will send Gog and Magog who will surge from everywhere". He is therefore speaking of an event occurring after Muhammad.

The Qur'an confirms this massive and international assembly in Palestine, at the end of times, by saying in chapter XXVII; The Ants,82-83:

> "A Day (*at the time of the apparition of a Beast; see verse 82*) shall come when We (*God*) shall herd from every nation a group who cried lies to Our revelations, all led in strict order (*to Palestine*)".

Who are these people who disbelieve in God's Revelations, and who God allows their assembly?

The Qur'an designates the Jews, described as infidels, because of their infidelity to the Covenant, their denial of Christ Jesus, and the slanders hurled against the Virgin Mary:

> "Therefore, by renouncing their covenant, by blaspheming against the revelations of God, by killing prophets unjustly... they believe not... and their terrible words of slander against Mary..." (Qur'an IV; The Women,155-156)

The persons indicated in this verse, in our modern times, are the Zionists gathered from all the nations into Palestine. Their blasphemies made Muhammad say in Discussion 1815 that "the letters K, F, R (*in Arabic*) are inscribed between the eyes of the Impostor Christ". These letters form the word "kufr", which means "blasphemy", a word characterizing the Antichrist (Revelation 17,3).

Muhammad also described this Impostor as the "one-eyed liar":

All his words concerning the divine Truths and dialogues with men are lies. He disfigures God's signs and prophecies, especially in announcing another Zionist messiah. He is one-eyed because he sees things with only one eye, with egoism and according to his personal interests. In Discussion 1815, Muhammad says: "He is one-eyed and your God Almighty is not one-eyed".

Muhammad puts us on guard against the Antichrist's power of distraction and seduction by saying in Discussion 1806:

"What I most fear for you is the Impostor... He will present himself before the people and will invite them; they will believe in him and will answer to him."

Israel has, indeed, solicited the Arabs, and the Palestinians themselves. Most of them have, implicitly or explicitly, answered his call. (Camp David, Oslo, etc...)

Muhammad asks the believers to calculate the period of existence of this dreadful enemy:

"We asked: How long will he last on earth? He answered: 40 days. A day is like a year, a day is like a month and a day is like a week... We answered: Oh Messenger of God, in this day that is like a year, will it be sufficient for us to pray one whole day? He answered: No. Calculate his delay". (The Discussion n° 1806)

The interpreters agree on the significance of these words. It means to count his days mathematically, as the book "Manhal el Waridin" (p 978) reports.

Muhammad therefore recommends the believers to scrutinize the coming of the Antichrist, and to calculate its temporal duration, making this commandment an obligation more important than the prayer of a whole day, for a year long.

But how can we calculate this approximate duration of 40 years or 40 days? This count is impossible if we have not first discovered the Impostor's identity. For this, two facts are important:

a) To believe in the message of this Believer announced by Muhammad, the man sent by God to unmask the Imposter, the Antichrist, as mentioned above (Discussion n° 1813).

b) To have recourse to the prophecies on the Antichrist in the Gospel, because complementary enlightenments are given on this subject. It reveals therein that a powerful nation will support the Antichrist. Evidently, we recognize this nation as the United States of America. The beginning of the fall of Israel has taken place since 1983, at the time of its first retreat from Lebanon, putting an end to the expansionist dream of Greater Israel, 35 years after its foundation as a State. Its second defeat was in May 2000, when Israel fled from the South of Lebanon. At the time of its near and definitive disappearance, all the prophecies will become clear. (See the text: "The Key of the Apocalypse").

How will the Antichrist perish?

The Prophet Muhammad says in Discussion n ° 1806:

"God will send Jesus, Son of Mary, who will pursue him and reach him at the gate of Lod (*close to Tel Aviv*) ... Then Jesus will raise up a people whom God will make invincible with respect to him (*the Antichrist*) ... and God will send Gog and Magog who will surge from everywhere... "

Notice that it is Jesus, the Christ, who is sent against the Antichrist and against Gog and Magog. Also notice that it is through a people made invincible that the Christ leads his war against his enemies. In this same Discussion, God says of this invincible people which he gives rise to: "I sent out (*to combat*) some of my devotees, whom no one has hands to fight against".

This people that is sent out against the Antichrist, are inspired in their struggle by the Spirit of Christ Jesus. They annihilate the Antichrist.

Let us recall that it is at the gate of Lod, close to Jerusalem (where the Israeli international airport is found today), where the Antichrist must perish. This demonstrates that it is in Palestine where the Antichrist is found. This is why Muhammad says in Discussion n ° 1808: "The Impostor will appear in my nation. He will remain 40 - I do not know if - 40 days, 40 months, or 40 years. But God will send Jesus, Son of Mary, who will pursue him and will annihilate him; then men will live for seven years (*symbolically*) without animosity, even between two people".

Conclusion

It is at the end of times that "Gog and Magog" appear. The Surat of "The Cave" speaks of the final Judgment in mentioning these pagans. Their assembly means that the trumpet of the end of times has sounded:

> "On that day, We shall abandon them, to swarm one against another. And the Trumpet shall be sounded, and We shall herd them all together (*in Palestine*). On that day, We shall open Hell to the unbelievers' view, all in one view. It is they whose eyes were veiled from My remembrance, and who were incapable of hearing." (Qur'an XVIII; The Cave,99-101)

In the Surat "The Ants", God also says:

> "A Day shall come when the Trumpet shall be blown, and all who are in the Heavens and earth shall be filled with fright, save those whom God wills... Praise be to God! He shall show you His wonders and you shall recognize them..." (Qur'an XXVII; The Ants,87-93)

What are these signs that God will show and that only the true believers will recognize? Among these signs, firstly is the apparition of the Antichrist in the Holy Land. The second sign, is the apparition of this Believer who points out and unmasks this Impostor.

Wise believers must know that the Christ Jesus, Son of Mary, is today at work amongst us, inviting the pure consciences to fight the Zionist Impostor and his allies. The good news of their victory was announced by God's prophecies. Jesus' soldiers hear the trumpet that is being sounded already.

Let us end with a word of the Prophet Muhammad who, zealously covering the believers, wanted to refute himself, the Impostor's arguments:

"I fear not for you except the Impostor. If he appears and that I am amongst you, it is I who will shatter his arguments. But if he appears and I am not amongst you, it is then to each one to argue for their-self. And God is my successor next to every Muslim."

The Antichrist has appeared and Muhammad is not amongst us. His unique successor therefore, is God Himself. It is the Creator who, today, pushes us to fight the Antichrist. The moment has come, for no one to claim the title of the Caliph anymore, God being the only Caliph, Successor of Muhammad. No religious chief should thus prevent this combat, and that every true believer prepares their right arguments, as the Prophet prescribes, and launch themselves into battle without letting the obsolescent traditions stop so. It is time to remember the words of Prophet Muhammad in Discussion n ° 184:

"Whœver fights them (*God's enemies*) with his hand is therefore a believer, whœver fights them with his heart is therefore a believer, whœver fights them with his tongue is therefore a believer, apart from this, there is not a mustard grain of faith".

Pierre (1978 / Revised 2002)

4

The Signs of the Return of Jesus

"Gives us, Oh Creator of all marvels, Oh Healer of the creation, eyes to see and ears to hear what the Spirit says".

"If anyone has ears to hear, let him listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. . . " (Revelation 2,11)

1. Introduction

Jesus reveals to us the evident precursor signs of his Return. The Apostles handed down to us these important prophecies in writing. Luke the Evangelist says about this:

"For this is the time of vengeance when all that scripture says must be fulfilled." (Luke 21,22)

The Gospels had already been written, but not the Apocalypse, yet. Today, we should take into consideration the prophetic words concerning Christ's return in the Gospels and the Apocalypse, this final book which is specifically consecrated to the prophecies that concern Jesus' Return. It is why we should be attentive to the prophetic words as Peter strongly advises: "So we have confirmation of what was said in prophecies; and you will be right to depend on prophecy and take it as a lamp for lighting a way through the dark until the dawn comes and the morning star rises in your hearts." (2 Peter 1,19) The Morning Star is the symbol of the Messiah, Jesus (Numbers 24,17 / Revelation 2,28 / 22,16). It is in our hearts where His Return already operates. Some have already recognized Him.

Jesus also recommends us "have our lamps lit" (Luke 12,35), by our referral to and ceaselessly, the prophetic words in order to recognize the signs of the Times: "When you will see all these things: know that He is near, at the very gates" (Matthew 24,33). To neglect the prophecies, or not to recognize their accomplishment, means that we are mortally asleep like the foolish bridesmaids (Matthew 25). Those who comprehend the prophecies realize that Jesus "is at the very gates", as He had announced Himself in Luke 12,36 / Revelation 3,20.

Of which gates is He speaking of? That of the heart of course!

Why is Jesus at the gates? So that we open to Him, because He desires to enter.

For what purpose? Jesus answers Himself:

"I will come in **to share Supper**, side by side with him (*or her*)." (Revelation 3,20)

> "... Happy those servants whom the Master finds awake when He comes! I tell you solemnly, He will put on an apron, **sit them down at Table** and wait on them." (Luke 12,35-37)

"Happy the man who reads this prophecy, and happy those who listen to him, if

they treasure all that it says, because the Time is close." (Revelation 1,3). This time is already here. It was "close", 2000 years ago because, as Peter explains "With the Lord, a day is like a thousand years and a thousand years are like a day" (2 Peter 3,8).

The first Christians used "to study the Scriptures to check whether it (*what the apostles said of Jesus*) was true" (Acts 17,11). Do the same, stay up by examining the Scriptures: "You, brothers, you are not in darkness, so that this day surprises you like a thief. You are children of light, of the day. We are not of the night, of darkness. Therefore, let us not sleep as do others, but let us stay wide awake and sober" (1 Thessalonians 5,4-7). To stay awake, the Holy Scriptures must be consulted.

Understand that Jesus is already here, at the gates. Open to Him.

The principal prophetic signs of the presence of Jesus are the following:

2. Apparition of the Antichrist: Israel

> Matthew 24,4-5: "Many will say: I am the Christ..." (*the Zionist Messiah: in Israel today, many claim that the Zionist Messiah is at the door, that he is even already in Israel; they claimed that he was Menahem Begin, then Ariel Sharon or other Rabbis*)
>
> Matthew 24,23-25: "False christs and false prophets will arise."
>
> Mark 13,5 / 21-22 / Luke 21,8: "Many will come using my name and say: I am He (*the Messiah*)."

The characteristic of the Antichrist: he denies that Jesus is the Christ (1 John 2,18-22 / 1 John 4,2-3 / 2 John 7-11). The demons are therefore not the Antichrist because they confess that Jesus is the Christ. They deny it not (Matthew 8,29 / Mark 1,34 / Luke 4,41).

Paul announced the Antichrist's apparition whom he qualified as: "the apostasy, the Wicked One, the Lost One, the Enemy, the mystery of Impiety" (2 Thessalonians 2,2-9).

The Book of Revelation announced the apparition of "the Beast" (Revelation 13 & 17). It is the Antichrist.

The Virgin, in La Salette (1846), announced the apparition of the Antichrist in the near future.

3. Apparition of false prophets

These false prophets speak in favor of Israel:

> Matthew 24,11: "Many false prophets will arise; they will deceive many..." (*The abuse perpetrated by the media, etc...*).
>
> Matthew 24,24-25: "for false christs and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents... There, I have forewarned you." (*The military prodigies of Israel*).
>
> Matthew 7,15-20: "They come disguised as sheep" (*Hitlerian holocaust: Revelation 13,3*).
>
> Mark 13,22: "False christs and false prophets will arise... I fully warned you." (*sects*)

The Book of Revelation designates these false prophets as "The false prophet" (Revelation 19,20 / 20,10) and "the other Beast" (Revelation 13,11), or more so, "the ten kings" (Revelation 17,12), at the service of "the Beast", who is the Antichrist (Revelation 13,12 / 17,13 / 19,20).

What are the wonders that the Antichrist will accomplish with the false prophet's aid? The "Miraculous" return of the State of Israel and its stupendous victories thanks to American support (*at its service*): "The demons of the air (*aviation*) together with the Antichrist will perform great wonders on earth and in the atmosphere", says the Virgin in La Salette (see our text "La Salette").

What methods do the Antichrist and the false prophet use to seduce? The "pernicious sects that renounce the Master..." (2 Peter 2,1-3), the mockery of faith (2 Peter 3,3-7), debauchery (2 Timothy 3,1-5).

There will be false perspectives of peace (1 Thessalonians 5,1-3). In La Salette, Mary also speaks of a "false peace".

4. Wars, nations against nations

Matthew 24,6-7 & 24,21 / Mark 13,7-8 / Luke 21,9-10.

5. Famines

Matthew 24,7 / Mark 13,8 / Luke 21,11: Plagues and famines.

6. Earthquakes

Matthew 24,7 / Mark 13,8 / Luke 21,11: "... great earthquakes."

7. Treasons

> Matthew 24,10-13: "Many will fall away, people will betray one another and hate one another... with the increase of iniquity, love in most people will grow cold". We find that love for God and for the spiritual has been extinguished with the greater number in iniquity and modern perversity. That is why Jesus asked:
>
> "When the Son of Man comes, will He find any faith on earth?" (Luke 18,8)

In La Salette, the Virgin says: "Rome will lose faith and will become the seat of the Antichrist." Rome, the Vatican, has already lost the authentic faith.

8. Universal propagation of the Gospel

Matthew 24,14 / Mark 13,10.

The Gospel is translated into more than 3000 languages. It is already spread all over the world.

9. Signs in the sky

> Luke 21,11: "... there will be fearful sights and great signs in the sky (*planes, satellites*)."
>
> Luke 21,25-27: "... men dying of fear as they await what menaces the world (*nuclear war*) ... And then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud... " (see 2 Peter 3,10-13)

The planes ("the locusts" of Revelation 9,1-11) and the conquest of space are great signs in the sky, and the nuclear menace that terrifies man.

There are also visible signs in the spiritual sky:

9.1 Mary's apparitions

Mary's apparitions were predicted by St. John in the Book of Revelation: "A great Sign appeared in the sky: It is a Woman! ..." (Revelation 12,1-2). This marvelous sign manifested:

- In La Salette (1846), where Mary denounced the treason of the clergy, and the close-approaching apparition of the Antichrist, the Beast of the Apocalypse. She announced of punishments, which will be followed by the renewal of all things.
- In Lourdes (1858), Mary revealed that she is "the Immaculate Conception".
- In Fatima (1917), She briefly brings back the message of La Salette and revealed a secret: the Antichrist's identity. This fact was never revealed by the popes; a sign of the Vatican's treason predicted in the Gospels and by Mary in La Salette.

9.2 The announced coming of the Messenger of Revelation

He has already manifested himself after 2000 years, coming "from the East" (Revelation 7,2).

9.3 The opening of the Book of Revelation

This Messenger came with the "small Book" open (Revelation 10,2), to seal the "Apostles of the end of Times" (Revelation 7,2-3); those who must "prophesy again, this time against many different nations and countries, and languages and emperors" (Revelation 10,11).

10. The Greatest distress of all Time

Matthew 24,21 / Mark 13,19-20 / Revelation 7,14 / 16,18-21 / Daniel 12,1.

11. Spiritual darkness

Mark 13,24-25 / Matthew 24,29: "Sun will be darkened, the moon will lose its brightness" (Revelation 6,12).

Luke 21,26-34: "Debauchery, drunkenness, worries of life" (2 Timothy 3,1-5).

The sun and the moon which become obscure symbolize spiritual darkness due to apostasy and immorality:

Matthew 24,29: "... the powers of heaven (*spiritual powers*) will be shaken."

Matthew 24,37-39 / Luke 17,26-30: "... as in the days of Noah and Sodom."

Revelation 13,5-6: "... the Beast was allowed to mouth its boasts and blasphemies... against God... to make war against the saints and conquer them..."

1 Thessalonians 5,1-8: Difference between the children of light and children of darkness.

12. Jerusalem

The prophecies draw our attention on what will happen in the Holy Land, and in Jerusalem in particular, in the end of Times, of the Antichrist:

Matthew 24,15-16: "... 'the disastrous abomination... set up in the Holy Place... in Judaea'..." It is so that we say: "'... here is the Christ'... or 'He is there'" (Matthew 24,23-24). The Israelis believed that some of their military leaders, political or religious, were the Messiah.

Daniel spoke of the Abomination of desolation (Daniel 9,27 / 12,11) but it was revealed to him that "these words are closed and sealed until the time of the End" (Daniel 12,4 & 9).

Mark 13,14: "... the disastrous abomination set up where it ought not to be... in Judaea..."

Luke 21,20-24: "When you will see Jerusalem surrounded by armies (*the Israeli army and settlements*)..."

Revelation 11,2: "... they will trample the Holy City (*Jerusalem*)..."

Revelation 11,8: "... where their Lord was also crucified (*Jerusalem*)..."

Revelation 20,9: "... they besieged the camp of the saints, the beloved City (*Jerusalem*)..."

13. The Light returns from the East

Matthew 24,27-28: "... like lightning striking in the East and flashing far into the West."

Revelation 7,2: The angel comes from the East

Song of Songs 4,8: "Come from Lebanon (*the East*) my beloved..."

Isaiah 29,17-18: "Lebanon will become a productive ground... That day the deaf will hear words of the Book (*of Revelation*)..."

Ezekiel 17,22-24: "A branch of the cedar (*symbol of Lebanon*) planted by God on the high mountain of Israel, will become a magnificent cedar tree to shelter the birds..."

At the end of Times, the light comes from the East, through the book of Revelation, opened by Jesus in Lebanon, the 13th of May 1970.

14. The Apocalyptic Messenger

Revelation 7,2-3: He comes "from the East, carrying the seal of the living God... 'Wait before you do any damage... until we have put the seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God.'"

Revelation 10,1-11: He is "powerful" and comes down from Heaven, "wrapped in a cloud, with a rainbow over his head". The rainbow is the sign that he holds the sacerdotal covenant founded by Jesus. He holds "in his hand a small Book (*of Revelation*) open (*revealed*). He must "shout out so loud" (*after the fall of the Beast*) and "must prophesy again, against many different nations and countries, and languages and emperors."

Revelation 8,3-5: He "offers the prayers of all the saints **on** the golden altar..." These saints who were slaughtered by the Beast "**underneath** the altar who had been killed on account of the Word of God, for witnessing to it..." (Revelation 6,9-11)

"The angel took the censer and filled it with the fire from the altar, which he then threw down on to the earth" (Revelation 8,5), which means that he prays that God promptly executes justice, and pours his wrath against the Beast and its allies on earth. The Angel "in charge of the fire (*of the divine wrath*)" of Revelation 14,18, is the same angel of Revelation 8,5.

> Revelation 19,17-21: He must invite "all the birds in the sky to rally to God's great feast and eat the flesh of kings etc...", which means that he incites believers to fight through prayer, witnessing, and by arms if necessary, against the Beast and its allies.
>
> Revelation 22,10: He must reveal "the secret prophecies of the Book of Revelation because the time is near". This time has arrived.
>
> Revelation 22,16: He is sent by Jesus Himself: "I, Jesus, have sent my Angel to declare these revelations to you concerning the Churches."
>
> Revelation 19,10: This envoy of Jesus must impose humility, which is not practiced by the clergy: "I prostrated to his feet to adore him, but he said to me: no, do not do that, I am a servant like you and your brothers who possess Jesus' testimony. It is God whom you must adore."

He must also explain that "Jesus' testimony is also the Spirit of prophecy", which means that the faithful believer should "prophesy again, against many different nations..." (Revelation 10,11). This prophecy is the explicit testimony against the Beast and its allies. It announces their destruction. The Christian clergy fears witnessing to such prophecy.

> Matthew 25,6: He is the one who awakes the sleeping bridesmaids, "the cry of midnight: Here is the Bridegroom (*Return of Jesus*)".

15. The Apostles of Christ's Return

Jesus announced the sending of His Apostles of the end of times to His first Apostles: "He will send his angels (*his envoys*) with a loud trumpet (*the Apocalyptic trumpet*) to gather his elect from the four winds" (Matthew 24,31 / Mark 13,27).

> Matthew 13,40-43: "... at the end of time, the Son of Man will send his angels who will gather out of his Kingdom all things that provoke offences..." (Revelation 21,8 / 22,14-15).

Speaking of "his angels" to his first Apostles, it is clear that he was not referring to them, but to other Apostles He will send in the future, at the end of Times. These will be chosen, marked, by God's seal whom only the Apocalyptic Messenger possesses (Revelation 7,2). It is he who marks the elect through the "small open" Book (Revelation 10,2).

The Virgin spoke of these Apostles of the end of Times in La Salette and Marienfried.

16. Commentary

Jesus returns "on the clouds of Heaven", which means in the souls of his faithful (Matthew 24,30 / Mark 13,26 / Luke 21,27 / Revelation 1,7 / Daniel 7,13). All is internal, in the heart. Some have already seen Him (John 14,7) because He will only appear "to those who are waiting for Him" (Hebrews 9,28). This vision will be obvious and widespread after the fall of the Beast, because "every eye shall see Him, even those who have pierced Him" (Revelation 1,7).

Luke 21,15: Jesus, Himself, will give his Apostles of the end of Times "an eloquence and a wisdom that none of your opponents will be able to resist or contradict". This wisdom is the coherent, evident, and irrefutable interpretation of the prophecies of the end of Times, those of the Book of Revelation in particular.

17. Conclusion

And you, have you seen the fulfilling of all these events? "When you will see all these things, realize that He is at the very gates" (Matthew 24,33), at your door, and desires to enter and dine with you in intimacy (Luke 12,36-37 / Revelation 3,20). (See the text : "Jesus restores the priesthood")

The Apostles asked Jesus where the events of the Last Days were to take place. He answers them: "Where the body is, there too will the vultures gather." (Matthew 24,28 / Luke 17,37) The Body of Christ is found today in the homes of the Apocalyptic families, those who have the courage, the intelligence and the subtlety of the spirit to "calculate the number of the Beast" and recognize its identity. They could therefore have the force to answer without shame, head high, to the invitation of the wedding of the Lamb (Luke 21,36); after having resisted the Beast and its allies, reducing them to corpses, and bestowed upon by encouragement from the Angel of the Apocalypse (Revelation 19,17-18). In order to merit the Body of Christ, one must devour the corpses of one's enemies.

To hear the call to combat launched by the Angel of the Apocalypse, one must be able to "come up here in order to see what is to take place in the future", which is, today, already taking place (Revelation 4,1). Happy are those who hear the invitation of the wedding host: "My friend, move up higher. They will be honored in front of all the others guests" (Luke 14,10). Because Jesus, through his Angel, opens a new door (Revelation 3,8). Happy are those who succeed in entering through it, despite its narrow appearance, as this door is spiritual and internal and one can only enter through the testimony of Jesus (Revelation 4,1).

Today, Jesus desires independent believers, liberated of the treasonous and impious clergy. His Apocalyptic "Angel" is sent to liberate those who have “eyes to see and ears to hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches” (Revelation 2,11).

5

The Return of Jesus

Jesus had announced to his Apostles, several times, that He will return, in the end of times, to set order in his Household. The Apostles, and the first Christians, called the day of the Return of Jesus "The Day of the Lord" or "The Advent of the Lord" (2 Thessalonians 2,1-2).

How does this Return happen? And why does Jesus return? Here are two questions that need to be clarified.

In summary: How does this Return happen? This Return will not be in a body, physically visible and perceptible. Jesus returns with His **Resurrected** Body, immaterial, imperceptible by men. He will be perceptible through the heart.

And why does He come back? To put order in His Household. He returns to unmask the Antichrist and evict its allies during "The trial of the end of times", which precedes His apparition. With those who have stood firm against this universal trial, Jesus leads a "Universal Restoration", and renews God's Household on earth. A new spiritual era is thus established in the world for all mankind.

We are going to follow this Return of Jesus in four steps:

1. The announcement of the Return of Jesus
2. How does this Return of Jesus happen?
3. The motivations behind the Return of Jesus
4. The date of the Return of Jesus

1. The Announcement of the Return of Jesus

Jesus repeated many times, and under different forms, that He would return **on earth** for a judgment:

> "... When the Son of man **comes**, will he find any faith **on earth?"** (Luke 18,8)
>
> "...When the Son of man **comes** in his own glory..." (Luke 9,26)
>
> "Be like people waiting for their Master **to return** from the wedding feast..." (Luke 12,36)
>
> "... what will be the sign of **your Coming** and of the end of the world?" (Matthew 24,3)
>
> "... they will see the Son of man **coming** on the clouds of Heaven..." (Matthew 24,30)

> "As it was in Noah's day, so will it be when the Son of man **comes**." (Matthew 24,37)
>
> "Happy that servant if **his Master's arrival** finds him at this employment" (Matthew 24,46)
>
> "...you will see the Son of Man seated at the right hand of the Power and **coming** on the clouds of Heaven." (Matthew 26,64)
>
> "If I want him (*John*) to stay behind till **my return**, what does it matter to you?" (John 21,22)
>
> "... Grace and peace to you from Him who is, who was, and who is **to come**... It is He who is **coming** on the clouds; everyone will see Him..." (Revelation 1,4-7)
>
> "But hold firmly on to what you already have until my **Return**." (Revelation 2,25)
>
> "... If you do not wake up, **I shall come** to you like a thief, without telling you at what hour to expect me... Soon, **I shall be with you**..." (Revelation 3,3 / 3,11)
>
> "Look **I am standing** at the door (*of the heart*) knocking..." (Revelation 3,20)

The Apostles, and the first Christians after them, expected an imminent Return of Jesus, believing that this will take place in their time. It is why Paul put them on guard about this, explaining to them that the "wicked one" (the Antichrist) must first appear:

> "... to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ... please do not get excited too soon or alarmed by any prediction... claiming to come from us, implying that the Day of the Lord has already arrived... It (*the Return*) cannot happen until the Great Revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Wicked One, has appeared. This is the Enemy (*Christ's enemy: the Antichrist*) ... The Lord will destroy him with the breath of his mouth and will annihilate him with the glory of his Coming..." (2 Thessalonians 2,1-8)

These inspired verses clearly indicate that Jesus will return, that the Antichrist will precede Him, only to be destroyed forever by Christ's glorious Return.

2. How will the Return of Jesus occur?

Saint Paul enlightens us in his letter to the Hebrews. After having confirmed the second apparition of Jesus, he explains how this will occur:

> "So Christ, **too**, offers Himself only once to take the faults of many on himself, and when he appears **a second time, it will not be to deal with sin** but to reward with salvation those who are waiting for Him." (Hebrews 9,28).

This prophecy is clear: It is "**after**" having offered Himself on the cross a first time, that the Christ will appear "**a second time**". But this second manifestation of Christ will be:

1. "Away from sin"
2. Exclusively "to those who are waiting for Him..."
3. "In order to bring them salvation"

Let us examine each of these 3 points more closely:

2.1 "Away from sin"

For Paul, "sin" here signifies the human body, because, through the flesh, man is exposed to sin. He could have said: "The Christ will appear a second time **out of the body"**. In fact, in 2 Corinthians 5,21, Paul writes: "For our sake God made the sinless one (*Jesus*) into **sin**..." It is to say that He made Him flesh in order to render him accessible to man. This means that Jesus assumed a body that, just as all human bodies, is subject to sin. Yet having never sinned, and having accomplished - up till the sacrifice of the Cross - the Father's Will, He triumphed over sin in his body.

Paul explains his thought in this way: "God dealt with sin by sending his own Son **in a body as physical as any sinful body**, and in that body, God condemned (*by the impeccability of Christ*) sin" (Romans 8,3). To the Galatians, Paul also writes: "Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by being **cursed** for our sake... so that in Christ Jesus the blessing of Abraham might include the pagans..." (Galatians 3,13-14). Jesus became "cursed" for us in taking on a human body, thus exposing Himself to physical dangers, the most obvious of which was that he could be caught, physically, and crucified. This fact is considered by the Jews a malediction: "... We thought of Him as someone punished, struck by God (*accursed*) ...", says Isaiah (53,4). Many contemporary Jews still believe that Jesus is accursed by God because He was seized and crucified.

Christ's Return will not be like His incarnation. He will appear outside the flesh. It will be in one's conscience, "**away from sin**", without a human body, physically elusive to his enemies this time, that He will manifest Himself: "The Lord Jesus appears **from Heaven** with the angels of His Power (*the Apostles of the end of times*)", says Paul (2 Thessalonians 1,7).

Jesus returns without making any noise, "like a thief". Only those who look out for His Return will see Him. He had warned us: "I return like a thief" (Revelation 3,3). The Apostles had indeed this and have warned us (1 Thessalonians 5,2 / 2 Peter 3,10 / Revelation 16,15). This blessed return is unearthly; it will take place in the consciousness.

Thus, Jesus will no longer be subject to vicissitudes and bodily dangers. This spiritual dimension of Christ's Return was already revealed by Daniel who saw the Son of Man coming "on the **clouds of heaven**" (Daniel 7,13), then by Jesus Himself (Matthew 26,64). The clouds well-express the immaterial dimension of this Return. It is here, in the soul and consciousness, that the Christ "comes down from heaven" to manifest Himself to his chosen: "At the trumpet (*Apocalyptic*) of God, the voice of the Archangel will call out the command and the Lord Himself will **come down from heaven...**" (1 Thessalonians 4,16). It is by his **spiritual** invulnerable body that God sends again Jesus, his Messiah, to complete, in our days, through the Book of Revelation, the Restoration initiated by the Gospel 2000 years ago.

2.2 "To those who are waiting for Him"

The Christ first returns to "those who are waiting for Him", the "sensible bridesmaids" (Matthew 25,5-7). He makes of them his Apostles of the end of times. Who are they?

They are people thirsty for Love, Truth and Justice; they wait for Him... often without their knowledge. They may be some poor sinners, as were some of the first Apostles (Luke 5,8), but who regain life with the opening of the Book of Revelation, this "Book" qualified as the Book of Life (Revelation 20,12). It restores spiritual life to those who are capable of identifying the Beast and who resist it. No one could have identified this "Beast" if Jesus Himself had not revealed its identity, the 13th of May 1970 (refer to our text the "The Key of the Apocalypse").

In these Apocalyptic times, Jesus carries "a new name" (Revelation 3,12). Those who discover this new name, as well as the name of the beast (Revelation 13,18) and fight it, are those who await Jesus. It is to them alone that He begins, already, to manifest himself; to save them from the Antichrist's seduction, who is none other than "the Beast" of the Apocalypse...

Already as in the past, the Christ did not reveal Himself save to an elite (Acts 10,40-41). At the Transfiguration, He only manifested Himself to Peter, James and John (Matthew 17), and, resurrected, He first appeared to Mary Magdalene, followed by the Apostles. He then appeared to Paul to make him his Apostle. Yet He never manifested to the members of the Sanhedrin for example, nor separately to Caiaphas to convince him. Did he not say: "... the world will no longer see me; but **you will see me**... anybody who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I shall love him and show Myself **to him"** (John 14,19-21). "Happy the pure in heart: they shall see God." (Matthew 5,8).

Also today, Jesus will only manifest Himself again to those who love him and "**wait for him**". However, the Book of Revelation says: "Everyone will see Him, **even those who pierced Him"** (Revelation 1,7). His enemies will therefore see Him too. In turn, they will finally understand - confound and ashamed - that the One they rejected, fought, and crucified, was none other than the only true Messiah. After His resurrection and spreading of His Gospel, the Sanhedrin and all the Jews who opposed Him will see Jesus, **deep down in their hearts of hearts**, and judges them by His triumph (Matthew 26,64). In our days, the Antichrist and his allies will see Him, they too, after their defeat; condemning them in their conscience: "All the races of the earth will mourn over Him." (Revelation 1,7) This lamentation is the share of all those who, consciously or unconsciously, had fought Jesus in allying themselves with the Antichrist.

It is often without their knowledge, deep in the subconscious, that Christ's friends and enemies, act for or against Him. This great lesson is given to us by Jesus in the parable of Matthew 25,31-36 concerning the judgment: Neither the good nor the bad knew that their behavior towards their fellow man, was in fact towards the Christ Himself.

Jesus' true friends are those who will have proven their love to Him during the Apocalyptical trial, that has already befallen "every living man on the face of the earth" (Luke 21,34-36 / Revelation 3,10).

2.3 "To bring them Salvation"

What dœs this salvation entail?

It consists of succeeding in the universal trial under the Antichrist's reign. In fact, God permits this enemy of Christ to appear with power, in this end of times, to test the believers and reveal the hearts. Paul explains this by saying: "But when the Rebel comes (*the Antichrist, the 'Beast'*), Satan will set to work: there will be all kinds of miracles and deceptive show of signs and portents, and everything evil that can deceive those who are bound for destruction because they would not grasp the love of the truth which could have saved them. The reason why God is sending a power to delude them and make them believe what is untrue is to condemn all who refused to believe in the truth and chose wickedness instead." (2 Thessalonians 2,9-12).

Salvation is the result of Christ's support during this final trial: "Because you have kept my commandment to persevere, **I will keep you safe** in the time of trial which is coming for the whole world, to put the people of the world to the test. I am coming soon: hold firmly to what you already have and let no one take your crown from you" (Revelation 3,10-11). This trial is raging on in the world today by the appearance of the Zionist state.

Our crown is preserved by keeping our unwavering "testimony to Jesus" (Revelation 19,10). This testimony is "No to Israel", because recognizing this State, which refuses Jesus and awaits another Messiah, is denying that Jesus is the unique Messiah.

A very "great number", held no account whatsœver, to the recommendations of vigilance: "take care that no one deceives you... and with the increase of lawlessness, love in a **great number** of people will grow cold but whœver stands firm to the end will be saved", Jesus had warned

(Matthew 24,4-13). In spite of this, the majority of Jesus' "disciples", at the helm, have rallied to the Antichrist's cause: The signing of the accord between the Vatican and Israel, the 30th of December 1993, perfectly illustrates this "Love growing cold in a great number of people", foreseen by Jesus (Matthew 24,12), and "Himself" repeating in the Apocalypse (Revelation 2,4): "I have this complaint to make; you have lost your formal love". This is why, Jesus, not without bitterness, had asked: "But when the Son of Man comes, will he find any faith on earth?" (Luke 18,8). The so-called disciples of Christ become accomplices of the Antichrist! They will lament together after Jesus' triumph, realizing their shameful "finale" (Matthew 12,43-45). It is to these renegades that Jesus addresses Himself to in the Apocalypse: "... You are reputed to be alive and yet are dead... I found your life empty... I shall come to you like a thief, without telling you at what hour to expect me."

3. The motivations for Jesus' Return

The Christ comes back for two reasons:

1. To unmask the Antichrist, the Beast of Revelation.
2. To establish the Universal Restoration announced by Peter.

3.1 To unmask the Antichrist, the Beast of the Apocalypse

We have seen that Paul had announced the apparition of the Antichrist, whom he named "the Lost One", "enemy", etc... (2 Thessalonians 2,3-12). From his side, John, him too, warned of the Antichrist (see 1 John 2,22 / 2 John 1,7-11). He speaks more of it in the Apocalypse, where it is symbolized by "the Beast" (Revelation 13 & 17).

The Christ appeared on May 13 1970 to a priest, to reveal to him the identity of this Beast. This apparition is a form of the Return of Christ. It inaugurates this Return by unmasking the Antichrist (refer to our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse").

3.2 The Universal Restoration

In the past, addressing himself to the Jews, Peter says:

> "Now you must repent and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, and so that the Lord may send the time of comfort. Then He will send you the Christ he has predestined, that is Jesus, whom heaven must keep till the time of the **Universal Restoration**..." (Act 3,19-21)

Two points are important in this text:

God "**will then send** the Christ": the wording is in the future. He will therefore send him again. He is talking of the Return of Jesus.

Heaven must guard the Messiah for a time; He must return for a well-defined purpose: after having unmasked and annihilated the Antichrist, He will fulfill the **Universal Restoration** on earth.

For more information, refer to the text: "The Universal Restoration".

4. The date of the Return of Jesus

This date, Jesus says, is unknown. It will be preceded, therefore, by warning signs: "the Signs of the Times". Jesus invites us to recognize these signs:

The date is unknown. Jesus in fact says:

> "But as for that day and hour, nobody knows it, neither the angels of heaven, nor the Son, no one but the Father only." (Matthew 24,36)

The Warning Signs:

> **"When you see** all these things (*these events*): know that He (*the Son of Man, Jesus*) is near, at the very gates." (Matthew 24,33)

See the text "The Signs of the Return of Jesus".

The Apostles believed that this Return was imminent because Jesus had said:

> "Before this generation has passed away, all these things will have taken place." (Matthew 24,34)

Yet Jesus was referring to the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem, of which He had already predicted:

> "... His disciples came up to draw His attention to the Temple buildings. He said to them in reply: 'You see all these? I tell you solemnly, not a single stone here will be left on another: everything will be destroyed.'" (Matthew 24,1-2)

This Temple was indeed destroyed in 70 A.D. by Titus, about 35 years after the prophecy.

Saint Paul himself awaited Christ's Return in his time:

> "We can tell you this from the Lord's own teaching, that any of us who are left alive until the Lord's coming..." (1 Thessalonians 4,15)

This "Lord's own teaching" to which Paul is referring to is:

> "before this generation has passed away, all these things will have taken place." (Matthew 24,34)

The Believers were impatient to see the Christ already in return amongst them during their time. Saint Peter reprimands them:

> "The Lord is not being slow to carry out His promises, as anybody else might be called slow; but He is being patient with you all, wanting nobody to be lost and everybody to be brought to change his ways. The Day of the Lord will come like a thief..." (2 Peter 3,9-10)

For his part, Paul corrects himself and nuances his words in telling the Believers that before the Return of Christ, His Enemy must appear, the Unholy one whom John calls the Antichrist:

> "... to the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ... please do not get excited too soon or alarmed by any prediction or rumor or any letter claiming to come from us, implying that the Day of the Lord has already arrived... It cannot happen until the Great Revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Lost One has appeared. This is the Enemy (*the Antichrist*)..." (2 Thessalonians 2,1-4)

The Book of Revelation is consecrated to the Return of Christ and the apparition of the Antichrist. Its mystery, as the "Day of the Lord", is known but to God alone:

> "There was no one, in Heaven or on earth or under the earth, who was able to open the Book and read it", to unravel its mystery (Revelation 5,3).

The first sign of the Return of Christ was the 13th day of May 1970, in which He appeared to reveal the identity of the Beast, the Antichrist. (See the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

The "Day of the Lord" is already here. His Return is underway. He is recognizable by the opening of the Book of Revelation and by the events prophesied, and which are actually unfolding in the World. Happy are those who stay up to receive Him.

Part IV

The Apocalypse

Table of Contents

1	**The Key of the Apocalypse (Revelation)**	**95**
2	**The Explanation of Mary's Message in La Salette**	**131**
3	**Mary's Message of Fatima**	**137**
4	**Mary's Apparitions in Marienfried**	**145**
5	**The Key of the prophecies**	**149**
6	**Open letter to Pope John-Paul II**	**153**

1

The Key of the Apocalypse (Revelation)

The Christ unmasks the Antichrist

TO JESUS

THE LIVING MESSIAH

BACK AMONG US

The 13th of May, 1970

Jesus reveals the Apocalypse (Revelation) in Lebanon.

"Come with Me from Lebanon, my promised bride,

come with Me from Lebanon, make your entry."

(Song of Songs 4,8)

"In a short time, a very short time,

shall not Lebanon become fertile land

and fertile land turn into forest?

The deaf, that day,

will hear the words of a book

and, after shadow and darkness,

the eyes of the blind will see...

for the tyrant shall be no more, the scoffer vanished,

and the malicious will be destroyed."

(Isaiah 29,17-20)

1. Introduction

The Apocalypse, or St. John's Revelation, is a prophetical Book related to the events and protagonists of the XXth and XXIst centuries. This tumultuous period is that of the reappearance and end of a "Beast": the Antichrist, on the eve of Christ's Return.

This Book was revealed to John, the Apostle of Jesus, in 95 A.D. It is a "closed Book, sealed by seven seals" (Revelation 5,1). This signifies that it is perfectly secret. No man can claim to unravel its message (Revelation 5,3). Only Jesus possesses the key to interpret the enigmas entailed therein (Revelation 5,5-7). It is Him, Jesus, who will send His messenger with this "small Book **unrolled or open**" (Revelation 10,1-2); to reveal its content during the accomplishment of the announced apocalyptic events (Revelation 22,10 / 22,16).

This interpretation of the Book of Revelation is not the result of a personal effort. It would have no value whatsœver. It is the consequence of a series of upsetting revelations made by Jesus to a Lebanese priest. Jesus revealed to him the unsuspected identity of "the Beast" of chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation, in order to enlighten all those **of good faith**, all **true** believers.

The Revelation predicts the **return** of this "Beast" that already existed before (Revelation 17,8).

Jesus **returns**, He too, to unmask it, to annihilate the Beast, and to restore the Kingdom of God (Revelation 1,7 / Revelation 22,20).

This "Beast" is the Antichrist, the same one mentioned by John in his letters (1 John 2,22 / 2 John 7). The revelation of its identity is the **Key** that opens the "small, closed book" of the Revelation and, by deduction, explains all the Apocalyptic symbols.

The author of these pages is the priest to whom the Lord Jesus entrusted this Key. The revelation of this message has had as a consequence insidious persecutions and threats from numerous Lebanese Christians - bishops, priests, laymen - who are at the Beast's service. Seduced by the Beast's approach and fearing its power, they serve it. By doing so, they sacrifice their noble Mission and betray the testimony owed to Jesus (Matthew 24,10-12).

The holder of the Apocalyptic Message had to dissociate himself from the Church as a result of the latter's commitment to the Beast. Peter, Jesus' Apostle, had to act in the same way in the past towards the Synagogue; so as to "obey God rather than men" (Acts 5,27-29).

This was a moral liberation and a spiritual restoration for the priest and those who believe in his Message. They "judge for themselves what is right", as Jesus prescribes in Luke 12,56-57. These pioneers in the spiritual liberation come from several religions and backgrounds. They will launch, by their indefectible faith to the apocalyptic message and the love and union that reigns amongst them, the Universal Restoration prophesied by Peter in Acts 3,20-21.

This liberation, makes of them **independent believers** and authentic witnesses of the true Messiah, Jesus of Nazareth.

2. The Key-Enigma

The Revelation holds an enigma: a mysterious Beast which is mentioned in chapter 13: "I saw a Beast emerge from the sea: it had seven heads and ten horns... etc...", St. John says.

Who is this Beast? This is the principal Apocalyptic enigma. Man is called to identify it. Only the wise and the intelligent will be able to do so (Revelation 13,18):

> "There is need for **shrewdness** here: if anyone is **clever** enough, he may interpret the number of the Beast; it is the number of a man, the number 666"

This principal enigma is the **key** to all the Apocalyptic enigmas. Whence discovered, all other symbols become clear.

"Apocalypse" comes from the Greek "Apocalypsé". Written in Greek, this Book commences with this word, hence its name. In Greek, "calypsé" means to cover, to veil or to hide. On the other hand, "Apocalypsé" means to uncover, **to unmask**, or to reveal what is hidden.

It is the identity of the Beast that is hidden, concealed in the book of Revelation. For twenty centuries - since the Revelation was revealed to John in the year 95 A.D. - many have tried to unravel the mystery. Yet all these human efforts were in vain. Finally, on the 13th of May 1970, Jesus Himself unveiled the Apocalyptic mystery. Before this date, certain people thought that the Beast represented the Roman Empire, others saw that it was the Devil, others also said communism, Hitler or the atomic bomb. But none of these explanations correspond to the descriptions of the Revelation given to the Beast. No man can discover the identity of this Beast. The Revelation itself teaches us that not a single being "in Heaven, nor on Earth" can reveal its mystery by a personal effort. Jesus only has this power. In effect, St. John says in chapter 5,1-5:

> "I saw that in the right hand of the One (*God*) sitting on the Throne there was a scroll that was written on back and front and was **sealed with seven seals** (*perfectly secret*). Then I saw a powerful angel who called with a loud voice, 'Who is worthy to open the scroll and break its seals'? But **there was no one**, in Heaven or on the earth or underneath the earth, **who was able** to open the scroll and read it (*understand it*). I (*John*) wept bitterly because nobody could be found to open the scroll and read it (*for twenty centuries nobody could explain the Revelation*), but one of the elders said to me, there is no need to cry: the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, the Root of David (*Jesus*) has triumphed, and **He will open** (*interpret*) the scroll and its seven seals".

Therefore, only Jesus can reveal the secret of the Revelation. It is the reason why this book is sealed with **seven** seals. In the prophetic language, seven is the symbol of perfection. This means that its secret is perfectly guarded (refer to Isaiah 29,11).

The pages of the book are written on the 'front and back', which signifies that no one is authorized to add anything, under penalty of obtaining an eternal punishment:

> "This is my solemn warning to all who hear the prophecies in this book: if anyone adds anything to them, God will add to him every plague mentioned in the book; if anyone cuts anything out of the prophecies in this book, God will cut off his share of the tree of life and of the holy city, which are described in the book!" (Rev 22,18-19).

That is why this sacred book is sealed with seven seals because no one else but the Christ can touch it.

The Revelation also informs us of an important fact: Jesus opens this book, that is to explain it, by revealing its secret to a special envoy. St. John sees this man coming into the world in

the form of an "Angel" carrying in hand a "small scroll **unrolled**" (Revelation 10,1-2). This "**small** unrolled scroll (*or open book*)" is the book that God held **closed**, since it is "sealed with seven seals"; and here it is now, "**open**", "**unrolled**", in the "Angel's" hand, because it is explained and accessible to human intelligence. The Revelation, indeed, in volume, is a "**small** Book". The words "coming down from Heaven" mean that it is the **explanation** of the Book that comes down from heaven.

Thus, Jesus demands John in the Revelation to address the messages to the leaders of the seven Churches - who are men - in these terms: "Write to **the Angel** of the Church of Ephesus... (Revelation 2,1) ... to **the Angel** of the Church in Smyrna write... (Revelation 2,8)". These "Angels" are men.

Jesus sends his messenger **to explain** the Revelation: "I, Jesus, have sent my Angel (*messenger*) to make these revelations to you for the sake of the churches" (Revelation 22,16). Therefore, there are two Apocalyptic messengers: St. John and the "Angel" who is sent afterwards.

John received the Apocalyptic message in incomprehensible symbols, and the Lord explicitly asked him not to clarify them: "**Keep** the words of the Seven Thunderclaps (*the words of the Revelation*) **secret** and do not write them down (*do not explain them*)" (Revelation 10,4). Twenty centuries later, when the Beast appeared, Jesus also appeared to explain the Revelation, and sends his **second messenger** with the contrary order to precisely explain the enigmas:

> "**Do not keep** the prophecies in this book **a secret**, because **the Time** (*of Christ's Return*) is close (*the Beast having already appeared*)" (Revelation 22,10).

My duty, in conscience, is to faithfully inform and make public the reasons that pushed me to publish this message.

ADVICE

It is not enough to read this text, to comment on it favorably or unfavorably. One must refer themselves to the text of the Book of Revelation. It's a small Book, not long to read... and reread several times, with an open heart to the evidence and to the Truth.

3. How Jesus revealed the Enigma

On the 13th of May 1970, Jesus appeared to me in Beirut (Lebanon) to reveal to me the identity of the Beast. But before this vision - during many years - many other visions had prepared me for this upsetting revelation. Here are some of the most important:

Jesus appeared to me in 1968 and asked me:

"I have a secret to reveal to you that will raise many enemies against you: For my sake, do you accept?". I answered spontaneously: "Yes". He hugged me tenderly, then disappeared.

A few months later, He appeared again and said:

"But first, I want to know if you are a fanatic". At that instant, I did not know what to answer. Finally, I stammered: "If to be fanatic is to believe in You blindly, this is not the case. I know why I believe in You. It is with full knowledge that I follow You". He stared at me, did not reply, then disappeared.

However, some years later, I understand that Jesus was referring to the fanaticism of the Christians towards Islam and Muslims in particular.

A few months later, Jesus tells me:

"Many of those who do the sign of the cross on the face will refuse my biblical prophecies. They claim to believe in the Bible, but don't even take it into account. And you, you will make the masks fall". At that moment, I didn't understand what Jesus wanted to say by this.

The 28th of April 1969, the Lord tells me:

"Tell them: Whœver will say Holy, Holy, Holy is the Almighty God, blessed is He who comes in the Name of the Lord - will see in his soul Him who will reveal the truth"

(refer to Isaiah 6,3 and Matthew 21,9)

The 4th of May 1969, I was in the Convent of the Holy Saviour, near Sidon, in the South Lebanon. I had the following vision during my siesta: The Bible was open at chapter 10 of the Book of Revelation, and the following verse clearly emerged in the French language:

> "You are to prophesy **AGAIN**, this time against many different nations, and countries and languages and kings" (Revelation 10,11).

The word "AGAIN" appeared in capital letters and twinkled brilliantly with every beat of my heart, as if synchronized. Then, an arm (the right) of light appears, powerful, with its index finger pointing at my chest, and a very powerful voice tells me in Arabic: "This mission is entrusted to you!" At this moment, I hear the phone ringing. The Voice tells me: "This call is for you; and asking about you from Beirut. Let this be a sign that it is I who is speaking to you". I did not get up to answer. As a host in this Convent, it is up to one of the monks to answer. The phone continued to ring for a while.

I ignored everything of the Revelation, having read it twice, a long time ago, and without understanding anything. I had retained nothing of its content, nor did it attract me. It was up to others with the knowhow to explain it. The Books of the Old Testament sufficed, messianic prophecies, the Gospels, and Jesus' clear speeches found therein. Like most people, even amongst the priests, I was not attracted to the Book of Revelation because of the mysterious symbols it mentioned, and that discouraged most readers.

Nevertheless, this vision moved me deeply. I immediately opened the Bible at chapter ten of Revelation. I was profoundly moved to find this verse in the same place that I just saw in the vision; the only difference being that the word "again" was not in capital letters. I did not know what to think: "Perhaps it is the Devil who wants me to think that I am someone of

importance", I said to myself. I got scared, and grabbing my rosary, I addressed myself to the Virgin: "You are my Mother; enlighten me". I then hurried to the garden to pray the Rosary. As I was passing through the garden's gate, the doorman calls me: "Father, where were you? Why didn't you answer the phone? Someone was asking about you from Beirut!" Seized by this exclamation, I explained that it was up to a monk to answer, and not to me. The doorman's intervention augmented my perplexity even more. It was also another evident Sign of a celestial intervention.

At this period, I did not understand why one should "prophecy **again** against...". This vision made up my first profound contact with this small Book. Yet, the vision still left me detached from it and decided to ignore it.

The 19th of April 1970, Jesus asked me:

"Why did I send Mary, our Mother, to appear in Fatima and not elsewhere? If you have wisdom, answer me".

Unsettled, I did not know what to answer. After a moment's reflection, I confessed timidly: "I don't know".

Jesus then continued gently: "Reflect more". Seeing me paddling for an answer, He tells me smiling: "To baptize her".

"Baptize Fatima?! That's the name of the Prophet Muhammad's daughter. Could this be the conversion of the Muslim?" I thought to myself.

"Fatima" is a Portuguese village where the blessed Virgin appeared in 1917, to present an important message considered secret until today. This "Secret of Fatima", non-disclosed by the Popes, and the secret of the Revelation are the same. In the summer of 2000, Pope John Paul II maintained to reveal its content, but what was "revealed" was evidently not convincing to the clairvoyant.

The name of this village comes from "Fatima", the daughter of a Muslim Emir, who was baptized in Portugal in the 12th century, amidst the Christian "Reconquest" of Spain and Portugal. Dead shortly after her marriage, her Christian husband, Prince Gonzalo Herminguez, names this village after her; where the Holy Virgin chose to appear. This village, therefore, is the symbol of an important baptism. Fatima is also the name of the Prophet Mohammed's daughter. She is particularly venerated by the Shiites who consider her the "Mother of Shiite Muslims". So, Fatima represents the Muslims, notably the Shiites, who are dear to God because of their legitimate struggle against the Beast of the Revelation. Fatima's baptism operates through this struggle, the symbol Muslims. Our Mother, Mary, appeared in Fatima so that the whole world understands that the Muslim engagement against the Beast is blessed by Heaven. The Christians themselves should pass through this baptism to be saved.

Subsequently, the Virgin appeared to me to say: "My son, bring them to me by the Qur'an". This incited me, much later on, to write my book: "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an".

On the 12th of May 1970, the Lord appeared to me at the entrance of my room's balcony in Beirut. I was in bed. He fixated a wrathful gaze, chest protruding, head held high towards the South of Lebanon; and says in Arabic: "I will not remain silent to your abominations, o Israel!"

Vision of Jesus

On May 13, 1970, Jesus revealed, ultimately, the proclaimed secret in the following way: at dawn, as I'm waking up, I see Him like a man of Light sculptured from a radiant, white marble stone, standing at my bedside. A profound peace, an assurance, and an invincible power emanated from Him.

He tells me, speaking through me to the world in its entirety: "Today is the 13th of May, day of Our Mother's apparition in Fatima (in 1917). Open chapter 13 of the Apocalypse: **The Beast is Israel**!"

He disappears right after entrusting me with the key of the Revelation's mysteries. I was all alone, and felt myself all alone facing this distressing revelation; ... especially since I was pro-Israeli!

"The Beast is Israel?!" ... My God, what a Declaration!!

Whilst Jesus was speaking, an infernal brouhaha attempted to cause interference in the message, which nevertheless seeped in like a buzz in my ears. However, this satanic intervention stopped suddenly, and I heard **clearly** and distinctly the words: "Open chapter 13 of the Revelation: The Beast is Israel". This vision barely lasted a minute, but it transformed my whole life... like with Paul long ago on the road to Damascus (Acts 9).

After the vision, I got up stunned and opened the Bible to chapter 13 of St. John's Revelation. I hoped not to find mention of a beast therein, especially since I had sympathy for Israel. I considered them saviors of Christians against Muslims.

I was actually shocked to find "a Beast with seven heads and ten horns". The Beast received an "immense authority ... It had a **fatal wound** but that this deadly injury had healed, and after that, the whole world had marveled and followed the Beast..." (Revelation 13,3), judging that no one could measure up to it: "Who can compare with the Beast? Who can fight it?" (Revelation 13,4). Only God's chosen will fight it, those whose "names are written in the book of life of the sacrificial Lamb (*Jesus*)" (Revelation 13,8). I knew well that Israel had such immense power, that the "fatal wound" in question applied to the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., and, all

evidently, Hitler's crime. The grand majority of men - me included - are effectively seduced by Israel, assuming that no one can attack this State. Only Fatima's Children resist it.

A bit further, in the same chapter, I read that there is a "**second Beast**... servant to the first Beast, and extended its authority everywhere, making the world and all its people worship the first beast, which had had the fatal wound and had been healed... and none could buy or sell anything unless he had been branded with the name of the beast" (Revelation 13,11-17). I deduced then that the first Beast being Israel, the second Beast that supports it cannot be but the U.S.A. who protects and arms Israel. I better understood who were these "enemies that I would draw to myself", and who were the "many peoples, nations, languages and kings against whom I will have to prophesy **again**"", since the testimony against Israel today, is no longer practiced as the prophets and Jesus did in the past (for example Isaiah 1,2-4 / Jeremiah 2,26-37 / Micah 3,9-12 / Matthew 23,33-37 / John 8,44).

The second Beast at the service of the first

Facing these details, I was stupefied; I felt the reality of the message and its importance. Fear threatened me. But why is it I receiving all this? I am powerless in the face of such enemies! After this vision and this reading, I felt myself as if isolated in a world of silence. An impression of gravity befell me. I felt the need to pray, a great deal, and profoundly.

A fracas of thoughts then ensued in me: "I am a priest, and as such, I do not have to occupy myself with politics", I thought. Yet, on the other hand, I realized that the Israeli phenomenon was not restricted to politics, since Israel refuses to recognize Jesus as the real and unique Messiah, and despite the rupture of the first Covenant (Jeremiah 31,31-33), Israel still claims to have a divine right over Palestine, under pretext that it is the land promised to the Jews.

Thus, I understood that to recognize any biblical right to Israel over Palestine meant betrayal to Jesus, and represented a counter-testimony to his spiritual and universal messianism. The problem was then well in the spiritual sphere. One should have discernment and subtleness to recognize the Beast: "There is need for **shrewdness** here: if anyone is clever enough he may interpret the number of the beast: it is the number of a man, the number **666**" the Revelation states (13,18).

All these thoughts greatly embarrassed me because of the opposing current, powerful and dangerous, one should face. I understood then that this was the secret that Jesus had to reveal to me, and which would attract enemies unto me.

In my heart, I heard Him asking me anew: "For my sake, do you accept?" I then reconfirmed my acceptance, fully realizing, this time, why “I should prophesy **again** against a multitude of peoples, nations, languages and kings".

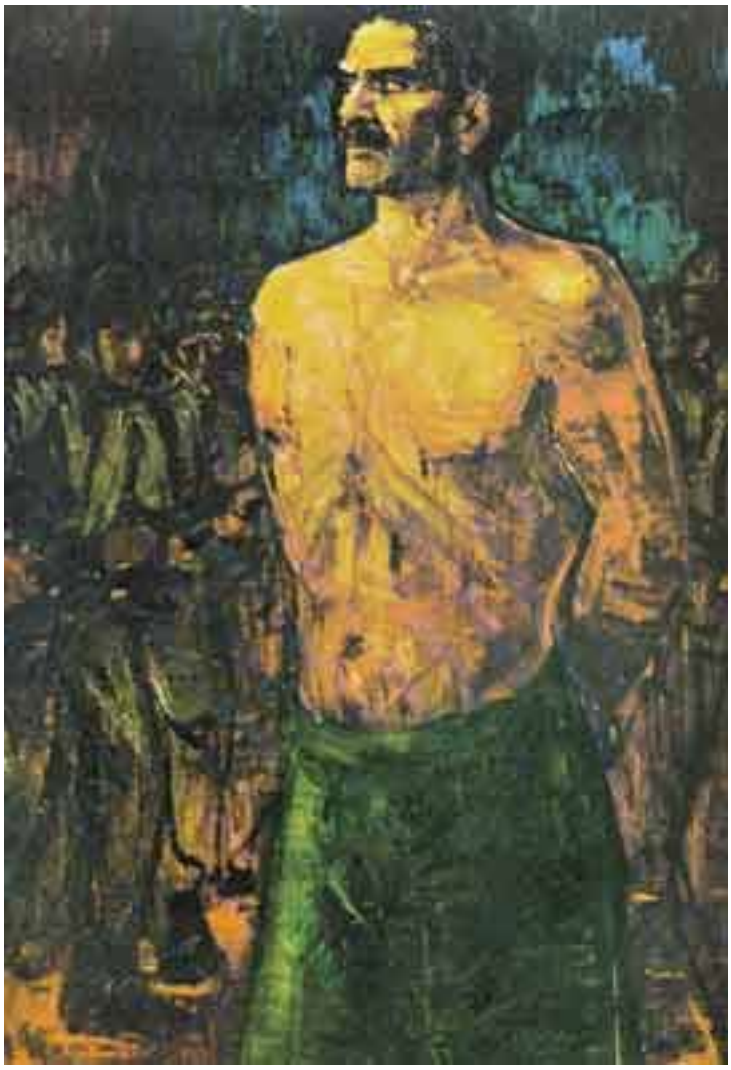
Those of my entourage, my proper family, to whom I opened up to, stood up against me, especially those who were closest and dearest to me. This came to confirm Jesus' warning, and made me meditate on what He said to the Apostles: "A man's enemies will be those of his own household" (Matthew 10,36).

I ignored that these difficulties would be but the beginning of a long struggle. In fact, their hatred grew towards me when I revealed what the Lord told me in Arabic on the 15th of May 1970: "Beware of defiling your hands with the blood of the Palestinian: he and I are one, I who is, like him, rejected by the Israelis".

Then, drawing a man towards Him, tells me: "Don't you see the resemblance?" Both faces, in fact, looked perfectly alike.

Since then, I took it upon myself to read, and re-read the Book of Revelation many times with a renewed interest; fortified with this new Light. The more I progressed and reread, the mysterious symbols became clear one after the other. I thus understood, amongst other things, and not without stupefaction, that "the new name" of Jesus today is "Palestinian": "Those who prove victorious ... I will inscribe on them the Name of my God ... and my own **new name** as well”, says Jesus (Revelation 3,12). And this amidst a grand scandal of “many different nations and countries and languages and emperors.” Christians and religious chiefs understand!

On Pentecost Sunday of the same year, the 17th of May, I was invited by Palestinian members of my parish to an exhibition for the Palestinian Painter Ismail Shammout. I accepted the invitation to make a first step into the Palestinian world, of which I completely ignored. There, I was strongly struck by a painting: A Palestinian fedayin, with a face proud and strong, a chest broad and naked, eyes blazing in purity and justice, standing proudly and furious, hands tied behind the back, with light reflecting on his face and chest. He is surrounded by Israeli soldiers, standing in the dark around him, their weapons fearfully aimed at him; they had a mean appearance.



The palestinian Fedayin – Ismail Shammout

Everything in this painting is paradoxical: he is prisoner, yet victorious; they think themselves triumphant, but appear defeated; he is judge and they condemned. For a long while, I stared at the man: It was the face of Jesus that I saw on my balcony who was gazing with wrath towards the South, menacing Israel. It is also the same face I had seen two days before next to that of Jesus, identical to His. At once, I heard the Master's voice:

"As such I stood, I too, in front of the High Priest when, defying Me, asked whether I really was the Messiah, the Son of God. Having answered him affirmatively, with force and certitude, as in this painting, he became red with anger with his like, and they condemned Me to death".

I immediately wanted to know more details about this painting. The painter tells me: "This man represents Mahmoud Hejazi, the first of the "fedayin" who was imprisoned. Actually, he is still held prisoner in Palestine, in the Israeli jails".

Two years later, I had the grace in meeting Mahmoud, who had just been liberated. We warmly embraced each other. This reminded me of the Lord's affectionate embrace after having accepted the revelation of the secret at the price of persecutions.

Again, the 20th of May 1970, Jesus tells me:

"Yes, the Palestinian is the stumbling block."

I was, to this point, totally indifferent to the Palestinian tragedy; but as soon as my interest was awoken, I sought to better know this people, and make deep sense of their agonizing cry.

This is the way I learned to love them, as they are, because of the great injustice done to them, and who identifies them to Jesus.

Many other divine initiatives allowed me to understand the Apocalyptic message that I am called on to reveal today. What has been mentioned is suffice for a person of good will who desires to have accurate facts. I hope, therefore, to be able to contribute in giving the reader the understanding of the situation **spiritually**, as revealed by Jesus, and not by interpreting it politically according to men's point of views and the complicit media.

Thus, was handed over to me the **the Key** of the Apocalypse. I am called today to explain this "Small Book", shrouded in mystery for so long. Also, one must have, as the Revelation states, "wisdom and intelligence" (Revelation 13,18) to accept this **Divine Revelation**, which is so clear, and so simple. One should also have faith, love for truth and justice, as well as the courage to go against the tide of the pro-Israeli policy of a "multitude of peoples, languages, countries, and kings".

With this "Key", we can finally open the "7 seals of the small Book" and understand all the symbolism in the Book of Revelation. As **the Time** announced by the Revelation is at hand, Jesus reveals the mystery in order to save **men of good will** - of all races and religions - and the Jews themselves from Israel's spell.

It is of utmost importance to take note of two points that, sooner or later, should be admitted by everyone:

1. The Book of Revelation, this obscure Book, was not given to us to remain vague and incomprehensible. We would neither have a practical, or salutary use from it.

2. The interpretation of this small holy Book cannot be a work that is strictly human. It cannot but reach us by the means through which its symbolism was given to us, to know by divine revelation (Revelation 5,1-5). This is explained further down.

This is why I do not want to appear as those who still offer another personal interpretation of the Apocalypse. He asked me **to be an informant** and a faithful **witness** of a **divine Revelation**.

Finally, Jesus tells me, what was said previously to the prophet Ezekiel:

> "Speak and reveal these things to my people. Whether they listen to you or not, you, speak." (Ezekiel 2).

4. Presentation of the Book

The Revelation holds the prophecies that pertain to the return and final fall of Israel. This State will never reappear again. It is the end of its time. This is what Jesus called "the age of the pagans is completely over" in Luke 21,24; which means the end of the Antichrist's time, and, according to St. Paul, the end of "Rebellion is at work already, but in secret" (2 Thess 2,7-8). It was to warn **his like**. "His like" **today** are those who believe in Him. In fact, this Book begins as so:

> "This is the Revelation (*Apocalypse*) given by God to Jesus Christ (*gives it to Jesus*) so that HE could tell **His servants** (*believers*) about the things which are now to take place very soon; he (*Jesus*) sent His angel to make it known to His servant John (Revelation 1,1)...
>
> Happy the man who reads this prophecy, and happy those who listen to him, **if they treasure all that it says**, because the Time is close" (Revelation 1,3).

Like many Christians, St. John was exiled to the island of Patmos in 95 A.D. by the emperor Domitian. It is on this island that he received numerous Apocalyptic visions:

> "I, John... was on the island of Patmos on account of the Word of God and of witness to Jesus" (Revelation 1,9).

He reveals, at two reprisals, to have received the order from Christ to write his visions in a book: "Write down all that you see in a book, and send it to the seven Churches" (Rev 1,11). "Write down all that you see of **present happenings** followed by what **is still to come**" (Revelation 1,19). This book that John wrote is the Apocalypse. It should be well established that there are two different periods here: "the present happenings", followed by "that are still to come". The second period concerns a particular time in the future. It is our time.

Thus, this Book, which is composed of 22 chapters, is divided into two well distinct parts: a premier part that concerns John's period, "the present happenings", and a second part that concerns a future period, "that are still to come". The mission of the second Apocalyptic messenger, the Angel of the Apocalypse (Revelation 10,1-2), is specific: to explain the prophecies that concern this second period, "the future", now accomplished and actual.

4.1 The first part

It is composed of chapters 1 to 3 and is addressed to the seven principal Churches of Asia Minor (Turkey) founded by John. It comports of exhortations to faith.

This first part, contrary to the second, is well structured. We note its logical sequence, well-ordered and rather understandable. We will not stop on these three chapters, which are not the purpose of our study.

4.2 The second part

It gœs from chapters 4 to 22. It sharply contrasts from the first part, and starts as follows: "Then, in my vision, I saw a door open in heaven and heard the same voice speaking to me ... saying: 'Come up here: I will show you what is to come **in the future**" (Revelation 4,1). Here then, it is about **future** events already mentioned in Revelation 1,19.

Some think that the chapters of the second part are like those of the first. That is, that they are applicable for all times and places, and speak of the struggle against evil in general. This is not the case, since God designates **a particular time** after John, and **a well specified place**, Palestine, as shown in the verses below:

4.2.1 A particular time and a well-specified place

1. "This is the revelation given by God to Jesus Christ so that he could tell his servants about what **will arrive soon**" (Revelation 1,1).

2. "Now write down all that you see of **present happenings**, and things that **are still to come** (*the return of the Beast*)" (Revelation 1,19).

3. "Come up here: I will show you what is to take place **in the future** (*also about the return of the Beast*)" (Revelation 4,1).

4. "An Angel (*Jesus*)... with an enormous chain in his hand... overpowered the devil, Satan, and chained him up for a thousand years. He hurled him into the Abyss, and shut the entrance and sealed it over him... until the thousand years had passed. **At the end of that time**, he must be released, but only for a short while" (Revelation 20,1- 3). "When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and **will come out to lead astray** all the nations..." (Revelation 20,7).

5. "The Beast you have seen **once was** and now **is not**; he **is yet to come up** from the Abyss, but only to go to his destruction" (Revelation 17,8).

We ascertain three important points here:

- The "Beast" existed in the past ("once was"), before the writing of the Revelation. This applies neither to Communism, nor to Islam, nor to Hitler, nor to nuclear weapons too
- The "Beast" no longer exists in John's time ("now is not"). We cannot therefore say that it symbolizes evil in general, as this exists always; nor to the Roman Empire, as some interpreters claim, because this empire still existed in 95 A.D.
- It returns after John, since it "**is yet to come up** from the Abyss" (*in the future*). Its return coincides with the liberation of Satan (Revelation 20,7). Both come out from "the Abyss" (Revelation 11,7 / 20,1-3).

6. "Seven angels were bringing the seven plagues that are the last of all, because they exhaust the anger of God" (*against the Beast, putting an end to its existence*) (Revelation 15,1)

7. "Ten kings who **have not yet been given** their royal power but will have (*in the future*) royal authority... **with the beast**" (Revelation 17,12).

8. "Four angels that are chained up at the Great River Euphrates (*Iraq*) who had been put there ready for this **hour** of this **day** of this **month** of this **year**..." (Revelation 9,14-15).

It is about a well-specified place and historical moment: the Euphrates. This applies perfectly well to the international war against Iraq. Indeed the U.S.A., presided by George W. Bush senior, and their European allies had threatened this country in 1990, to intervene militarily, fixing a deadline: **midnight** (the hour), **15th** (the day), **January** (the month), **1991** (the year). Effectively, this threat was immediately executed after midnight of the day announced. The international war against this country of the Euphrates is an indisputable Apocalyptic sign for all those who have a spirit of prophecy. It is the unique war in the History of the world that was fixed, in advance, "to the hour, the day, the month and the year" (Revelation 9,15). It's a well-sounded Apocalyptic trumpet whom only the deaf cannot hear.

In highlighting the importance of this event, the Revelation mentions the Euphrates a second time as well: "The sixth angel emptied his bowl over the Great River Euphrates ..." (Revelation 16,12). This second mention of the Euphrates refers to the second war launched by the United States on the 19th of March 2003 against Iraq, on the Euphrates. These two wars were launched

by two American Presidents, father and son of the same name: George W. Bush (father), and George W. Bush (son).

The first, George Bush senior, is one of the "10 kings at the Beast's disposal who have not yet been given their royal power" at John's time (Revelation 17,12), (see next chapter about these "10 kings"). His son, George Bush Jr. - who providentially, carries the same name - is therefore the 11th king. Yet, he is one of the ten predecessors (among those whose matching name is already found), because it is his father's work that he aspires to complete. He is therefore one of the ten kings in the same prophetic spirit by which the 8th king of the Beast is called "at the same time one of the seven", because he strives to fulfill the works of the previous seven (Revelation 17,10-11).

9. The second war against Iraq thus comes to accomplish the 2nd prophecy concerning the Euphrates (Revelation 9,14 / 16,12). It is the war of Armageddon (Revelation 16,16). The crossing of the Euphrates by "the kings of the East" will be understood at the time of its accomplishment (Revelation 16,12).

10. "The Lord God who inspires his prophets has sent his angel to reveal to his servants what **is soon to take place**. I (*Jesus*) am Coming soon" (Revelation 22,6-7).

It is clear that these events are the signs of the Time of Christ's Return. Understand, those who can!

11. The three verses that follow indicate that the consequent Apocalyptic events are essentially of a spiritual nature: it is about the final battle between the Christ and his like versus the Antichrist and his like. This decisive battle unfolds in a specific geographical location, namely Palestine, notably Jerusalem:

> "The pagans will trample on the **Holy City** (*Jerusalem*) for forty-two months" (Revelation 11,2).
>
> "... the Beast that comes out of the Abyss is going to make war on them and overcome them and kill them. Their corpses lie in the main street of the **Great City**... **in which their Lord was crucified**" (Revelation 11,7-8). It is in Jerusalem where Jesus was crucified.
>
> "When the **thousand years are over**, Satan will be released from his prison, and will come out to lead astray all the nations in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, and mobilize them for war... over the entire country (*Palestine*) and besiege the camp of the saints, which is the **Beloved City** (*Jerusalem*)" (Revelation 20,7-9).

4.2.2 The Beast is the Antichrist

All the biblical interpreters recognize that the Beast is the Antichrist whom John wrote of, and the Wicked One or the Enemy (of Christ: the Antichrist) foreseen by Paul. He must appear on the eve of Christ's Return: John says: "The man who **denies that Jesus is the Christ**, he is the liar, he is the Antichrist!" (1 John 2,22).

Solely the Israelis deny that "Jesus is the Christ", God's Messiah. Islam proclaims this Truth. Even more so, the Qur'an recognizes that Jesus is the "Word of God and the Spirit of God" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45).

Paul says: "About **the Coming** (*the Return*) of our Lord Jesus Christ... it cannot happen **until** has appeared the Wicked One, the Lost One, has appeared. The enemy (*the Antichrist*)... Surely you remember me telling you about this when I was with you?" (2 Thessalonians 2,1-5).

The Apocalyptic times are thus recognized by the reappearance of the Antichrist in Palestine, in the very heart of Jerusalem, to lead the final battle against the Christ. The latter will

defeat it and the Antichrist will disappear forever (Revelation 17,8). This confirms what Jesus had already revealed to his Apostles concerning the End of Times: " When you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you must realize that she will soon be laid desolate" (Luke 21,20). Let us also consider that it is the Hour of Christ's Return.

In the parable of the fig tree, Jesus exhorts us to recognize this Time when the Beast will appear, and which precedes His Return:

> "Take the fig tree as a parable: as soon as its twigs grow supple and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near. So with you when you see all these things (*the Beast in Palestine*): know that He (*the Son of Man, Jesus*) is near, at the very gates" (Matthew 24,32-33).

It is therefore imperative! One should discover the identity of the Beast to realize that the Hour of Jesus' Return has struck.

4.2.3 The Revelation: A Book of Judgment

The Book of Revelation is a book of judgment: It condemns the Beast and its allies (Revelation 14,9-11), but accords Eternal Life to those who unmask it and fight it. The judgment is presented in the following way:

> "Then I saw a great white throne and the One who was sitting on it... The Books (*the Holy Scriptures*) lay open! And **another Book** (*the Revelation*) was opened, which is the Book of Life, and the dead were judged from what was written in the Books" (Revelation 20,11-12).

These "dead" represent the whole of humanity, plunged in the mortal darkness of ignorance; they are not the souls who left this earth for the Hereafter. All those who, from here on, hear the Message of this open Book and put it in practice, come back to spiritual Life: "Happy the man who reads this prophecy, and happy those who listen to him, **if they treasure all that it says**..." (Revelation 1,3). In the past, Jesus employed the same language: "The hour is coming - indeed it is already here - when the **dead** will hear the Voice of the Son of God, and all who hear it **will live**" (John 5,25). It is, of course, to retake life spiritually. It is the "1st Resurrection", which the Revelation speaks of (Revelation 20,5). The "Small Open Scroll" comes to give this Life - to those who hear it, people of the whole world who "hear what the Spirit is saying" (Revelation 3,22).

So, this "other Book", opened **after** the first, is the Revelation. It was kept closed, "sealed with seven seals in the hand of the One (*God*) sitting on the Throne" (Revelation 5,1). It is **opened to our intelligence** after the other Biblical Books, for it is the last one that has been understood. Today, as in the past with the first Apostles, Jesus **returns** to His new Apostles "**to open their spirits** to understand the Scriptures", and particularly to the Revelation (Luke 24,45).

It should be pointed out that "the One sitting on the white Throne" (Revelation 20,11) no longer holds in His hand this Book that He kept closed in chapter 5,1 of the Revelation. The reason being that "The Lamb (*Jesus*) came forward to take the Scroll from the right hand of the One sitting on the throne" (Revelation 5,7), to handover to the Angel who "had in his hand a small scroll, unrolled" (Revelation 10,2), as was previously explained in chapter I. This Book (scroll) is the Apocalypse, small in volume, yet grand in Wisdom.

From the instant this "Small Book" opened (Revelation 10,2), the judgment of the world is in course: Those who take sides for the Beast, the Antichrist, be they Christians, oppose Christ; and those who fight it, be they pagans, join Christ's spiritual army. The Divine Judgment is brought about by the Jesus' triumph and his like, and by the definite defeat of the Beast and

its allies: "The ten horns which you saw are ten kings ... They are all of one mind in putting their strength and their powers at the Beast's disposal, and they will go to war against the Lamb ... but He will defeat them, He and his followers, the called, the chosen, the trustworthy ... (Revelation 17,12-14) ... Then I saw the Beast, with all the kings of the world and their armies, gathered to fight the Rider (*Jesus*) and his army. But the Beast was taken prisoner, together with the false prophet who had worked miracles on the Beast's behalf... These two were hurled alive into the fiery lake of burning sulphur" (Revelation 19,19-21).

So, we take notice of two opposing camps: that of the Beast versus that of the Rider. The protagonists of the first camp are: the Dragon, the Beast, the ten kings and their armies.

The protagonists of the 2nd camp: the Rider, His army, the Woman, the two Witnesses, the Angel. In the following chapter, we give more ample details on the protagonists.

5. Summary of the Story

The Apocalyptic events and their protagonists are presented symbolically in a manner that is interwoven, and of a disorderly fashion so that all is only understood at the time the small Book is opened. Here are the protagonists and a summary of the narrative.

5.1 The protagonists allied to the Antichrist

5.1.1 Satan

Jesus, at the time of his first advent, chained up the devil:

> "Now sentence is being passed on this world; now the prince of this world is to be overthrown", Jesus had said in John 12,31.

The Revelation predicted the release of the devil after a thousand symbolic years:

> "I saw an Angel (*Jesus*) come down from Heaven... He overpowered the Dragon... and chained him up for a thousand years... When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will come out to deceive all the nations in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, and mobilize them for war... they will come swarming over the entire country and besiege the camp of the saints, which is the City that God loves" (Revelation 20,1-9).

The devil, after having been chained by the Christ, is freed from the Abyss by the Antichrist, the Beast, given the symbol of the Star (of David). The Revelation says:

> "Then the fifth angel blew his trumpet, and I saw **a star** that had fallen from Heaven onto the earth (*the fallen Beast*), and the angel was given the key of the Abyss (*the hell*). When he unlocked the shaft of the Abyss, smoke poured out of the Abyss like the smoke from a huge furnace so that the sun and the sky were darkened..." (Revelation 9,1-2).

This refers to, of course, the Sun of Justice and of Truth. It is the spiritual Light gœs out on earth. It is because of this that "the sun gœs black" (Revelation 6,12 / Matthew 24,29). The complicity between Satan and the Beast is perfect. The latter frees the devil who in turn, brings it back to the "Promise Land". The Christ rejected collaboration with the devil. The Antichrist, on the contrary, searches for it. The satanic clan, thus formed, is supported by the second Beast with the aim of implanting the Beast in Palestine to base, against the explicit Will of God, a Zionist kingdom (see 1 Samuel 8 and the text "The Tragedy of Jesus").

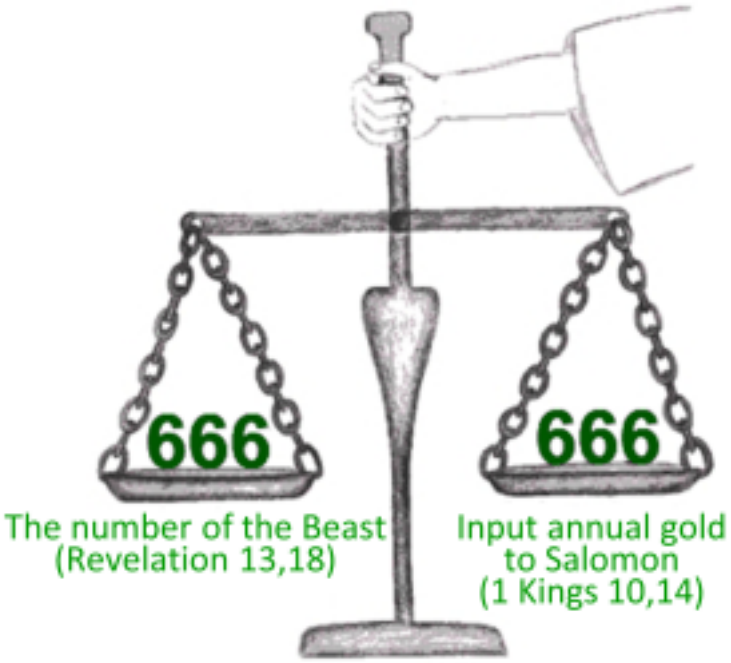
5.1.2 The Beast

A "Beast" existed in the past, no longer existed in the year 95 A.D., the date the Revelation was written. John sees its resurgence **in the future**, but to disappear forever:

> "Then I saw a Beast emerge from the sea: it had seven heads and ten horns with a coronet on each of its ten horns ... (Revelation 13,1) ... It is the number 666 ... (Revelation 13,18) ... This Beast you have seen **was once alive** (*in the past, before 95 A.D.*) and **is alive no longer** (*in 95 A.D.*) it **is yet to come** up from the Abyss, but only to go to its destruction (Revelation 17,8)... Never to be seen again" (Revelation 18,21).

Israel is the unique State that existed in the past (before 95 A.D.) as a Kingdom, and no longer so in the year 95 A.D., having been destroyed by Titus in the year 70 A.D.

Under Solomon, this Kingdom had reached the crux of its glory and became the famous Solomonian Empire. Nothing but "the weight of gold received annually by Solomon amounted to **666** talents of gold..." (1 King 10,14 / 2 Chronicles 9,13). To discover the Beast's identity, one should compare its "number **666**" to the gold (666 talents) that entered Solomon's coffers. Because the Beast dreams of re-establishing Solomon's Empire, "Greater Israel", in which the number "666" becomes its symbol. To note, as "**it is a number of a man**" (Revelation 13,18), this means that this Beast is the symbol of a human group.



666, symbol of the Beast and "the Great Israel"

In 587 B.C., Nebuchadnezzar put an end, for the first time, to the Jewish kingdom. This Kingdom was then re-established by the Romans in 37 B.C., with Herod the Great as king. Jesus announces the coming end of this second Israeli kingdom: "His disciples came up to Him to draw his attention to the Temple buildings. He said to them in reply, 'You see all these? In truth I tell you, not a single stone here will be left on another: everything will be pulled down" (Matthew 24,1-2). In fact, Rome, who had re-established the Kingdom in Israel, put an end to it a second time, a hundred years later. In destroying Jerusalem and the Temple in the year 70 A.D., the Roman General Titus accomplished, without his knowledge, the prophecy of Christ. The Revelation predicts the return of the Beast, a third time, but to go definitely to its destruction: "Never to be seen again" (Revelation 18,21 / 19,19-21).

The power of the Beast

At the time of its third apparition, The Beast returns to the world armed with great power that is conferred to it by "the Dragon" and its ally "the other Beast" (Revelation 13,11):

> "The **Dragon** had handed over to it his own power and his throne and his immense authority" (Revelation 13,2).

It should be underlined that it is Satan - and not God - who supports the Beast, and that it is still he who assembles his subjects from "the four quarters of the earth" to Palestine (Revelation 20,7-8).

> "Then I saw a **second Beast**, emerging from the earth... and he exercised all the power of the first Beast on its behalf..." (Revelation 13,11-17).

The "Injury" of the Beast

The Beast was fatally wounded at the head, but its deadly wound was healed: "I saw that one of its heads seemed to have had a fatal wound but that this deadly injury had healed" (Revelation 13,3).

This deadly injury is the symbol of the two destructions sustained by Israel in the past, and evokes also Hitler's crime. The prophet Jeremiah employed this expression at the time of Jerusalem's destruction by Nebuchadnezzar:

> "May my eyes shed tears, night and day, unceasingly, since the daughter of my people has sustained a fearsome wound" (Jeremiah 14,17).

The Beast, healed from its fatal wound, reappears glorious, powerful, seductive and well supported by its allies: the "Dragon" and the "second Beast". The world admires Israel's "resurrection".

The Beast's power of seduction

The world is in admiration in front of this healed Beast who reappears with glory and power. Everyone declares that no one is capable of fighting it:

> "The whole world had marveled and followed the Beast... They prostrated themselves in front of the Beast, saying: 'Who can compare with the Beast? Who can fight against it?' (Revelation 13,3-4) ... And the people of the world, whose names have not been written since the beginning of the world in the Book of Life, will be marveled when they see how the Beast (*was*), and is no more..." (Revelation 17,8)

As a matter of fact, no one dares to pretend to defeat the State of Israel. The great power of this small State resides over a set of diverse and important plans (military, social, media, finance, international lobbies, etc ...). This gives it an international empire that intimidates, even paralyses the majority of men. Willingly or by force, the world follows Israeli policy. Even the Vatican dares not to oppose it, or even to testify of the Messiah, Jesus, in face of this State's power. No one expects the tragic outcome that Israel will undergo, a conclusion prophesied by the Revelation.

Duration of the Beast and its fall

The Beast is given a **symbolic** period of "42 months", to triumph, to implant itself through war, all over Palestine, and to occupy Jerusalem, before its sudden disappearance (Revelation 11,2):

> "The pagans (*the Beast's subjects*) will trample on the Holy City (*Jerusalem*) for **forty-two months**."

They are considered "pagans" (*pagans*) because of their refusal of Jesus.

> "When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will come out to lead astray all the nations (*the pagans already mentioned*)... Gog and Magog (*symbol of the pagans*), and mobilise them for war (*not for peace: 'shalom'*)... They came swarming over the entire country (*Jewish settlements*) and besieged the camp of the saints, which is the beloved City (*Jerusalem*). But fire rained down on them from heaven and consumed them" (Revelation 20,7-9).

The Zionist Jews, false Jews according to Revelation 2,9 / 3,9, pushed by Satan, not by God, come to Palestine from the four quarters of the world. "Seduced", they rushed there fueled by the myth of the "Promised Land". There they settled, **by war**, and not by peace, all over the country, until they proclaimed Jerusalem as their capital. John foresaw the sudden and certain destruction of the State of Israel in the form of a "fire that came down from heaven".

5.1.3 The Second Beast (The Ten Kings)

Following the first Beast, John sees "another Beast", which works to establish the empire of the first Beast by imposing it on all nations, by any means necessary. This second Beast is also qualified as "the False Prophet" (Revelation 19,20), because it speaks in favour of the first Beast and falsely prophesies its success (the true prophecy, on the contrary, predicts its defeat). It is also represented by the "ten horns" on the first Beasts' heads, which represent the "ten kings" at its service:

> "Then I saw a second Beast... it exercised all the power of the first Beast on its behalf... and to have anyone who refused to worship the image of the beast put to death... it made illegal for anyone to buy or sell anything unless he had been branded with the name of the Beast..." (Revelation 13,11-17).
>
> "**The ten horns** which you saw **are ten kings** who have not yet been given their royal power, but will have royal authority only for a single hour in association with the Beast. They are all of one mind in putting their strength and their powers at the Beast's disposal" (Revelation 13,1 / 17,3 and 17,12-13).
>
> "But the Beast was taken prisoner, together with the **false prophet** who had worked miracles on the Beast's behalf..." (Revelation 19,20) "... Then the Devil who led them astray, was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the Beast and the false prophet are..." (Revelation 20,10).

One should underline that these ten kings appear at the same time as the Beast. The unconditional support of the United States of America to Israel reveals the identity of the second Beast. The "ten kings", are the ten presidents of the USA since the foundation of Israel in 1948, from Truman to Clinton who is the tenth: Truman, Eisenhower, Kennedy, Johnson, Nixon, Ford, Carter, Reagan, Bush Sr, Clinton.

George W. Bush Jr is the eleventh, and yet one of the ten, because of his father, who carries an identical name.

If it were not for these ten American kings, Israel neither would have existed, or survived...

In the end, disappointed by their work, the "ten kings" (starting from the reign of the eleventh: Bush Jr) and the Beast itself will destroy Israel, by striking "Jerusalem", its heart. It will be a sort of auto-destruction: "But ... the ten horns and the Beast will turn against the Prostitute (*Jerusalem*)... and burn the remains in the fire" (Revelation 17,16). When this happens, we will better understand by which means the living Christ will destroy the Antichrist.

The Prostitute is "the woman riding a scarlet Beast" (Revelation 17,3-5). John explains that "the woman you saw is that Great City (*Jerusalem*) which has authority over all the rulers on earth" (Revelation 17,18). She rules over the "10 kings" and, through them, on the other heads of States and respective armies. John saw her "split into three parts": Jewish - Christian - Muslim (Revelation 16,19), putting an end to the Zionist dream.

"I saw that she was drunk, drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus" (Revelation 17,6)

Those who collaborate with the Beast have their names forever blotted out of the Book of Eternal Life; the chosen are those who fight it:

> "All people of the world will worship it, that is, everybody whose name has not been written down since the foundation of the world in the sacrificial (*crucified*) Lamb's (*Jesus'*) Book of Life" (Revelation 13,8-9).

"In the arms of this father filled with sorrow, a Palestinian child victim of Israeli violence" (Photo Reuters – L'Orient le Jour - 05.20.2004)

5.2 The protagonists allied to the Christ

5.2.1 "The Rider"

The Rider of the Apocalypse is Jesus, the "Word of God. He makes war in justice against the Antichrist, the Beast of the Revelation and its allies":

> "And now I saw heaven open, and a white horse appear; its Rider was called Trustworthy and True; in uprightness he judges and **makes war**... the name written on Him was known only to Himself (*Palestinian*), his cloak was soaked in blood (*martyrs of the Beast*). He is known by the name, The Word of God. The armies of Heaven (*Hezb Allah, etc...*) rode on white horses" (Revelation 19,11-16).

The mysterious name, "known only to Himself" means that Jesus will assume a new appearance known only to Him, and to those to whom He wishes to reveal (Revelation 3,12). It is thus that He returns "like a thief" (Revelation 3,3 and 16,15 / 1 Thessalonians 5,4 / 2 Peter 3,10).

5.2.2 "The Woman"

In the centre of the Revelation, a radiant Woman appears:

> "Now a great sign appeared in Heaven: a woman, robed with the sun, standing on the moon, and on her head a crown of twelve stars" (Revelation 12,1)

This Woman is Mary, the Messiah's Mother:

> "The Woman was delivered of a boy, the son (*Jesus*) who was to rule all the nations with an iron scepter" (Revelation 12,5)

The devil wages a war against the Woman and her children:

> "As soon as the Dragon found himself hurled down to the earth, he sprang in pursuit of the Woman, the Mother of the male Child... (Revelation 12,13) ... Then the Dragon was enraged with the Woman and went away to make war on the rest of her children, who obey God's commandments and have in themselves the witness of Jesus (*against the Beast*)" (Revelation 12,17)

It is this Woman, the Virgin Mary, who appeared in La Salette (France) in 1846 to denounce the clergy's treason, and announce the following apparition of the Antichrist, supported by the 10 kings. She also predicted the coming of the Beast (see the text "La Salette"). Mary again appeared in Fatima (Portugal) in 1917, to warn the world of Apocalyptic cataclysms, and leaving the Popes with the task of divulging a secret in 1960. They never revealed it.

Pope John-Paul II, **claimed** to have revealed it in the summer of 2000, yet this secret remains buried by the Vatican mafia. We believe that this secret puts the world on guard against the Antichrist and even its Vatican infiltration. The Virgin had explicitly revealed, in La Salette, that it will be born "of a religious Hebrew woman" (*Zionism*), and that "his father will become Bishop" (*Israeli-Christian collaboration*). She also revealed, that "Rome will lose the faith and become the siege of the Antichrist". Although the secret of Fatima reveals the **identity of the Antichrist** to the world, the Pope had not the courage to do so. Jesus Himself unmasks His Enemy by revealing the identity of the Beast on the 13th of May, 1970.

The Virgin's Apparition in our era is an undeniable Apocalyptic sign.

5.2.3 The "Two Witnesses"

God arouses His "two witnesses" to prophesy against the Beast. This latter will triumph over them and kill them. The world rejoices and congratulate each other over their death:

> "I shall send my two witnesses to prophesy (*against the Beast*)... The Beast that comes out of the Abyss is going to make war on them and overcome them and kill them... The people of the world are glad about it and celebrate the event by giving presents to each other, because these two prophets have been a plague to the people of the world" (Revelation 11,3-10).

Accused of "terrorism", the two witnesses of God are scorned by the whole world. These "two witnesses" are two peoples: the Palestinians and the Lebanese, of South Lebanon mainly, who struggle against the Beast, and not those who collaborate and submit to it. These two categories of men are mentioned moreover in St. John's Revelation, who sees "the souls of all the people (*the Palestinians, the 1st Witness*) who had been killed on account of the Word of God, for witnessing to it (*this witnessing is the resistance against Israel*). They cried out loudly (*with all their hearts*), 'Holy, True Master, how much longer will you wait before you pass sentence and take vengeance for our death?...'" God's response is "to be patient a little longer, until the roll was completed of their **fellow-servants** and brothers (*the Lebanese, the 2nd Witness*) who were still to be killed **as they had been**" (Revelation 6,9-11).

These two witnesses "have the power **to lock up the sky** so that **it dœs not rain** as long as they are prophesying; they have the power **to turn water into blood** and strike the whole world with any plague as often as they like..." (Revelation 11,6).

These symbolic verses go in the following sense: these two witnesses have the power to stop, through military actions, that any peace process in the making, is to its detriment (a "false peace" as the Holy Virgin said in La Salette). In fact, "the sky" and "rain" symbolize the peace and prosperity blocked by the resistance of the two witnesses against the Beast.

The "power to turn water (*of baptism*) into blood", means that the witness' blood that is shed in their resistance against the Beast, is a testimony for Jesus that makes them worthy of baptism; not by water, but by blood (the baptism of Fatima). God even considers them "crucified" like Jesus: "The Beast that comes out of the Abyss is going to make war on them and overcome them and kill them... in which (*Jerusalem*) **their Lord** (*the Christ*) was crucified" (Revelation 11,7-8). This baptism by blood renders them disciples of Christ, since He is **their Lord**.

5.2.4 The "Angel" of the Revelation

This "Angel" sent from Heaven is a man, as explained in the first chapter.

The Beast having appeared, Jesus revealed the Apocalyptic mystery to his "Angel". He then sends him, "in his hands a Small Scroll Unrolled" (Revelation 10,1-2), so as to explain its contents: "Do not keep the prophecies in this Book a secret, because the Time is close" (Revelation 22,10).

One characteristic of this messenger is that he comes from the East (in relation to Patmos); he is therefore, an Oriental. In fact, John says: "Then I saw another angel rising where the sun rises (*the East*), carrying the Seal of the living God..." (Revelation 7,2).

It is from the East, from Lebanon - here where the Messiah revealed to him the Mystery of the Book of Revelation - where this man is sent to explain the contents of this Book. The "Seal of the Living God" is this same "Small Book". Those who believe in this Message are automatically "marked" chosen by God. This chosen selection is made before the great and universal cataclysm (nuclear war) that will put an end to the two Beasts' hegemony over the world:

> "... He (*the Angel*) called in a powerful voice to the four angels... 'Wait before you do any damage on land or at sea or to the trees until we have put the Seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God'" (Revelation 7,2-3).

Jesus had already predicted this dreadful day that precedes His Return and changes the face of the world:

> "... on earth nations in agony... men dying of fear as they await what menaces the world (*the nuclear weapons threaten the whole world*)... And then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with Power and great Glory", but He hastens instantly to reassure his like, those who are marked by the Seal of the Living God: "When these things begin to take place, stand erect, hold your heads high, because your liberation is near at hand" (Luke 21,25-27).

6. The Reasons for Hermeticism: The sealed Prophecy is explained at its Time

The Apocalypse remained a hermetically sealed Book for several reasons. The main reason is that the prophecies therein had not yet been accomplished. Moreover, every prophecy cannot be well understood but after its historical accomplishment. Likewise, the prophecies concerning the Messiah's Advent in the Old Testament could not be fully understood until the coming of Jesus. For example, no one expected that the Messiah would be put to death by those who so eagerly waited for him. Also, chapter 53 of Isaiah, which speaks of the Messiah put to death by his people, was incomprehensible before Jesus' crucifixion.

In the same way, the Apocalyptic prophecies concerning the Beast were totally obscure. As soon as the Beast appeared, the Christ Himself then intervened to clarify the prophecies in which the Beast had been revealed. Without this divine intervention, these prophecies would have remained hermetically secret.

In the past, Jesus appeared to the disciples of Emmaus after his Resurrection: "Then, starting with Moses and going through all the prophets, he explained to them the passages throughout the Scriptures that were about Himself (Luke 24,27)... He then **opened their minds** to understand the Scriptures, and He said to them: 'So it is written that the Christ would suffer and on the third day rise from the dead'" (Luke 24,45-46). If Jesus had not explained the prophecies that concerned Him to His disciples, their spirit - and indeed our own - would not have been opened "to the intelligence of the Scriptures". Likewise, had Jesus not explained the Revelation, this "small Book" would have remained closed, inaccessible to our intelligence.

With regards to the biblical prophecies, St. Peter says:

> "We must recognize that the interpretation of scriptural prophecy is never **a matter for the individual**. For no prophecy ever came from human initiative. When people spoke for God it was the holy Spirit that moved them" (2 Peter 1,20-21).

The explanation of the Revelation given here, should be highly stressed, is not a "personal explanation", but a **divine revelation made by Jesus Himself**. If, before the 13th of May 1970, the Apocalypse was still obscure, was because the Holy Spirit had it not yet explained. Men had tried to give a personal explanation, but on their own initiative. They were not mandated by God.

Two factors contributed in guarding the secret of the Revelation hermetically for so long:

1. The Apocalyptic prophecies were not yet accomplished: Many people, with regards to these prophecies, "tried to find out at what time and in what circumstances all this was to be expected", as Peter said (1 Peter 1,11). Yet all these human researches ended up in vain, because neither "the time" nor "the circumstances" were yet fulfilled. Ever since 1948, the date of the Beast's apparition, the Apocalyptic times and circumstances have become evident in the world. Therefore, the Christ appeared, the 13th of May 1970, to reveal their prophetic dimension in opening the "Small Book".

2. The text of the Revelation presents the events in a particularly complicated manner. This maintained its message perfectly secret, even after the Beast's return. If Jesus had not given "the Key", the Revelation would have remained hermetic because of the three following factors:

1. The entanglement between events and protagonists
2. The varied repetitions of the same event
3. The different symbols for a same reality

6.1 The Entanglement

The events and the protagonists are confusing. They do not appear in an organized manner, nor in a chronological order of events. In reading the Revelation, do not expect a sequence of events that are related. There is such an entanglement between protagonists and events, that we lose the thread of ideas. Like the Beast for example, is all of a sudden mentioned briefly in chapter 11,7 - nothing but one passage - without prior presentation, as if the reader is supposed to know its identity. It passes thus, totally unnoticed. It is then spoken of again at length in chapters 13 and 17, where it is presented in detail, pointing out its ferocious character, its prior existence, its disappearance, and finally, its reappearance with force in a vague place, before disappearing forever. But it also takes the "key" to understand all this. It is through the explanation revealed by Jesus that we reach this, a force of patience, to place the pieces of the Apocalyptic "puzzle" together; each one in its place. Without this "Key", the readers will find themselves lost in the meanders of this Book.

6.2 Varied Repetition

The story of the same event is repeated under different forms. Such is the case with the book of Genesis, about the two dreams of the Pharaoh interpreted by Joseph: the dream of "seven ears of corn" and that of the "seven cows". Both dreams had the same interpretation: they announced the seven years of famine that follow the seven years of abundant harvest. Joseph explained to Pharaoh that "the reason why Pharaoh had the same dream twice is that the event is already determined by God, and God will shortly bring it about" (Genesis 41,17-32).

In the Revelation as well, there is repetition under different symbols because God decided adamantly to act against the Beast at the time of its return, and will destroy it forever, once and for all ...

1. A first presentation of the events run from chapter 4 till chapter 8,1: The Lord is on his Throne to judge humanity by a Book closed by 7 **seals** He holds in his hand. In chapter 5, the Lamb (Jesus) comes forward to take the Book (Revelation 5,7), and in chapter 6, He breaks the seals, one after the other. Four horses (it is the Beast) appear with their riders to provoke war and famine (Revelation 6,1-8). Witnesses of God are executed by these four riders "under the altar" (Revelation 6,9-11). Finally, God answers the prayers of these martyrs (Revelation 6,9) and manifests His anger against the Beast (Revelation 6,12-17). After its fall, a new era opens in the world (Revelation 21 & 22).

2. A second presentation of the same story immediately follows with different symbols. It gœs from chapter 8,2 up till the end of chapter 9. Here, the 7 seals are replaced by 7 **trumpets** held by 7 angels.

   Between this second presentation and the third that follows it - from chapter 10 till chapter 15,4 - in symbols, tangled up, jumbled up, the **protagonists** of the Story appear: The Angel, the two Witnesses, the Dragon, the Woman, the Beast, the Second Beast, the Chosen.

3. A third presentation of these events is repeated from chapter 15,5 till chapter 16. The symbolism also differs from the others: it is 7 Angels who carry 7 **bowls** filled with God's anger.

At each **seal** that is broken, at each **trumpet** that is sounded, and at each **bowl** that is emptied on earth, these are the same events repeated under different symbols.

6.3 The varied form of symbols

The same protagonists are presented under different symbols:

The Beast of chapters 13 and 17 is also represented by:

- The "four horses" of devastation (Revelation 6,1-7)
- The mountain (of Zion) hurled into to the sea (Revelation 8,8)
- The star (of David) that falls from heaven onto the earth (Revelation 9,1)
- The "Pagans who will trample on the Holy City" (Revelation 11,2)
- "Babylon the Great" (Revelation 18,2)
- The "nations" (*pagans*), "Gog and Magog" gathered from the four quarters of the earth to Jerusalem, the "Beloved City" (Revelation 20,7)

The symbols most difficult to understand - and here one should pay attention - are in chapter 17,9-11: The "seven heads (*of the Beast*) are seven **hills**" on which the famous prostitute sits (they are the seven hills upon which Jerusalem is found on: Mount Zion, Mount Moriah, etc ... Revelation 17,9). It is also the "seven emperors" (Revelation 17,10). These emperors represent Israel's past history as a **kingdom**: the 5 emperors who **have already passed** represent the Beast that "**was**". He who still lives represents the Jews who were secretly striving to restore the kingdom of Israel under the Roman Empire. Paul names them "the mystery of impiety already at work" (2 Thessalonians 2,7). The seventh emperor who "is yet to come; once here, he must stay for a short while" represents the Beast who comes back in the world, and who "must stay for a short while... **is at the same time** the eighth **and one of the seven**". Israel, back, but not under the form of a kingdom as in the past, "is at the same time the eighth and one of the seven", because it represents these "seven emperors" of Israel's past and incarnates the whole of Israeli History. The Israelis still hope to restore the **Kingdom of David** and the Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem; they still proclaim Jerusalem as capital and **City of King David**.

This variety of symbols is also applied with the numbers:

The "42 months" (Revelation 11,2) are the "1260 days": 42 months = 1260 days (Revelation 11,3 / 12,6).

This same period is called "a year and twice a year and half a year" (Revelation 12,14). More explanations are given in the next chapter.

7. Explanation of Numbers and Symbols

7.1 The number "666"

7.1.1 666 talents of gold

We have seen that the number "**666**", the number of the Beast, indicates to the **666** talents of gold that Solomon received annually from neighboring countries (1 Kings 10,14 / 2 Chronicles 9,13). Israel today, dreams of having in its coffers, annually, an identical entry that would be equivalent to more than 17,000 kgs of gold (17 tons!). Such wealth that can be taken from the Arabs by Israel (oil etc...), would not only considerably raise Israel's economy, but signify Israel's moral hold over the Arab nations... even the whole world. The number 666 symbolizes thus, the zionist pretense: Greater Israel.

7.1.2 Symbol of failure

The number 6 is the symbol of failure. It is the fate of the 6-pointed Star, symbol of Israel. Prophetically speaking, the number 6 is the symbol of Evil and imperfection, in contrast to the number 7, symbol of good and perfection. When Jesus asks to forgive "7 times or 77 times" (Matthew 18,21), it should be understood that forgiveness must be granted fully to those who ask for it sincerely, not only the number of times (7 times), but far beyond this, until the symbolism of the number 7, to forgive perfectly, with all one's heart. Likewise, the "7 seals" of the Book signify that its secret is perfectly guarded. The "7 horns of the Lamb" indicate his Omnipotence, and his "7 eyes", his perfect vision of the soul (Revelation 5,6).

In the context of the Revelation, the number 6, one degree below 7, is thus the symbol of a work that is fruitless, aborted, which flows in an eternal torment, instead of leading to the rest of the "7th Day". God created the Universe in 6 days, but "rested on the 7th day" (Genesis 2,2). The man under the sign of "7" enters into God's Repose. St. Paul says that the "rest of the 7th day" is reserved to Jesus' disciples. This is why he invites the recalcitrant Jews to believe in Jesus: "none of you must think that he has come too late for it (*to God's Rest*)... There must still be, therefore, a place of rest reserved for God's people, the seventh-day rest (*Jesus disciples*)... We must therefore do everything we can to reach this place of rest" (Hebrews 4,1-11).

Jesus, Himself, invites all men to enter this Rest: "Come to me, all you who labor and are overburdened, and I will give you rest. Shoulder my yoke and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls" (Matthew 11,28-29). We pray that the Jews answer to this invitation by the Messiah. They will then understand that the zionist plan reserves for them neither peace, nor security, and that the only true Rest is found in the faith in Jesus. Those who refuse to go to Him are themselves condemned to an eternal exhaustion; they are marked by the devil's seal: the "6": they will never penetrate the "7th day" of eternal Rest. This is why God says in the Apocalypse (Revelation 14,11):

> "The smoke of their torture will go up forever and ever. There will be no respite, night or day, for those who worshiped the Beast or its image"

As for those who combat the Beast, they are those who, maybe not known to them, practice the "resistance in the Saints who keep the commandments of God and faith in Jesus" (Revelation 14,12). They will be introduced into God's eternal repose:

> "Happy are those who die in the Lord! Happy indeed, the Spirit says; now they can rest for ever after their work, since their good deeds go with them." (Revelation 14,13)

7.1.3 The alliance of the three protagonists of evil

The triple repetition of the number 6 (666), represents the alliance of the three protagonists of evil: "the Dragon", "the Beast", and "the second Beast". These three allies are marked by the number 6 and are united under one number: 666, as they work together to build the Empire of the Beast. In one hand, "the Dragon had handed over to it his own power and his throne and his immense authority" (Revelation 13,2), and in the other, the second Beast, it as well, "exercised all the power of the first beast on its behalf" (Revelation 13,11-12), with its "ten kings, who are all of one mind in putting their strength and their powers at the beast's disposal" (Revelation 17,12-13). It indeed is, an evil tripartite alliance.

The world press reports ceaselessly that the leaders of the two Beasts continually cover the earth to assemble the kings of the whole world - especially Arab leaders and kings - so to rally them onto the American position and impose peace with Israel. This "false peace" will end up as a war symbolically called "Armageddon". John says: "I saw three foul spirits come... they were demon spirits... going out to all the kings of the world to call them together for the war of the Great Day of God the Almighty... They called the kings together at the place called, in Hebrew, Armageddon" (Revelation 16,13). The Apocalypse stresses that this name is **in Hebrew**. In this language, this means Mountain of Megiddo (Ar, in Hebrew, means mountain). Megiddo, near Haifa, is the place of the Israelis' troops total defeat against Egypt in 609 B.C. (2 Kings 23,28-30 / 2 Chronicles 35,19-25). The Pharaoh Neko killed king Josiah, in whom the Israelis had put all their hopes. This was the beginning of the collapse of Israel. In fact, about twenty years later, Nebuchadnezzar invaded Jerusalem and destroyed the Temple of Solomon, putting an end, for the first time, to the Israeli kingdom. Since then, to the Jews, Megiddo became the symbol of defeat and extermination of Israel. A new Megiddo, as great as a mountain (Ar), is reserved for the Beast... and its allies.

7.2 The "42" months

"For 42 months the beast was allowed ... to do whatever it wanted" (Revelation 13,5), and "the pagans (*the Beast*) will trample on the Holy City (*Jerusalem*) for 42 months" (Revelation 11,2). This means that the Beast and the pagans are one and the same. However, God will raise against them his "two witnesses to prophesy for those 1260 days" (Revelation 11,3), which is to say that they will prophesy against the Beast during the whole period of its occupation of Palestine, as the "42 months" equal "1260 days" (42 x 30).

During this same period, the "Woman", symbol of the Apocalyptic Apostles, flees "away from the Serpent into the desert, to the place where she was to be looked after (*by the Apocalyptic Message*) for a time, two times and half a time (*three times and a half*)" (Revelation 12,14). These three times and a half are the "42 months", or "1260 days", that are equivalent to three years and a half. This same period is also symbolized by "three **days and a half**" (Revelation 11,9), period of the persecution of God's two Witnesses, on whom "Men out of every people, race, language and nation will stare at their corpses, for **three-and-a-half days**" (Revelation 11,9). Television has showed "to the peoples" of the whole world, the Palestinian and Lebanese victims persecuted by Israel. They were, and always still, killed, imprisoned, and expelled from their demolished homes and lands, to be replaced by Israeli settlements.

Since the prophet Daniel, this period of "three times and half a time" has become the **symbolic** duration of all injustice and persecutions in general (see Daniel 7,25).

This period, which is presented differently every time in the Revelation, misleads the reader, and contributes in making the text impossible to comprehend. Here is the explanation: The Beast must occupy Palestine for "42 months". During this time, which equals "1260 days", God's "Two Witnesses" resist it, and the Apostles of the Apocalypse, the "Woman's" children, are chosen and isolated, as in "a desert", to "be looked after" by the Book of the Revelation

(Revelation 12,14). They are invited "to take" this Book from the Angel's hand who holds it open, and "eat it in order to be able to prophesy AGAIN", them too, with the Two Witnesses, "against many different nations and countries and languages and kings" allied to the Beast (Revelation 10,8-10).

7.3 The "horns"

The horns symbolize power. Satan appears in the Revelation in the form of a "huge red Dragon (*sign of fury*) with seven heads and ten horns, and each of the seven heads crowned with a coronet" (Revelation 12,3). The Beast also has "seven heads and ten horns, with a coronet on each of its ten horns, and its heads were marked with blasphemous titles" (Revelation 13,1).

An important detail passes unnoticed: The Beast has "seven heads and ten horns"; the crowns are not on its heads, but on its ten "**horns**", symbol of the "ten kings", who put **their power** at the Beast's disposal. As for the Dragon, who bears his crowns on "**each of the seven heads**", as he draws his power from himself. He is the crowned king of Evil.

7.4 The "4 horses" and their riders

The 4 horses of chapter 6,1-7 are the same entity: The Beast. They oppose the "4 Living Animals" around the throne (Revelation 4,6-8) who represent the 4 Evangelists. Each Evangelist allows one of the 4 horses to come into the world with its rider in shouting: "Come!" The 4 Evangelists have given life to the world. On the contrary, the power given to these 4 riders is "to kill by the sword, by famine, by plague and through wild beasts" (Revelation 6,8). These wild beasts are the two Beasts of the Revelation, which are allowed to "come" and put man to the test.

7.5 The Apocalyptic weapons

St. John saw three types of weapons that were nonexistent at his time: the planes, the bombs and the tanks. These are the Apocalyptic weapons that make up the Beast's power.

7.5.1 The "locusts" (planes and helicopters)

John saw apparitions of strange "locusts" of war. They are planes and helicopters:

> "... locusts dropped on the earth... these locusts were like horses armored for battle (*these are weapons of war*)... and faces that seemed human (*they are conducted by men*)... They had body-armour like iron breastplates (*the plane's metallic body*), and the noise of their wings sounded like the racket of chariots with many horses charging (*the din of the motor engines in the wings*)" (Revelation 9,3-11)

Air battles are a new dimension of war and signal the apocalyptic times. The warplanes are Israel's principal military power, conferred to them by the U.S.A.

Israeli aircrafts

7.5.2 The "Hail" (the bombs)

Bombs are represented by "great hailstones" predicted in the Revelation, and that was never before seen in the world. Each piece weighs "a talent" (the size of modern bombs). This dreadful hail causes terrible disasters on the earth: "And hail, with great hailstones weighing a talent each, fell from the sky on the people... it was the most terrible plague" (Rev 16,21).

Israeli missiles

This disastrous hail appears at the same time as the "locusts" of war. The bombs, including fragmentation, napalm, and nuclear, used by the two Beasts and their allies, are powerful weapons against all those who resist them. This scourge was announced by the prophecies to signal the Apocalyptic times.

7.5.3 The "horses" (the tanks)

John says: "In my vision I saw the horses, and the riders with their breastplates of flame color, hyacinth blue and sulphur yellow; the horses had lions' heads, and fire, smoke and sulphur were coming out of their mouths" (Revelation 9,17).

Israeli tank

The prophecies on the Apocalyptic arsenal could not be understood before the appearance of predicted weapons, which was unthinkable in John's time, and even till the beginning of the XX century.

7.5.4 The geographical place

Palestine is the principal centre of the Apocalyptic events. Two texts draw our attention to this country, and especially towards Jerusalem, the "Holy City", and the "Beloved City". It is here that the Beast's appearance is prophesied:

> "The pagans will trample on the Holy City for 42 months" (Revelation 11,2)
>
> "Satan leads astray all the nations in the four quarters of the earth... for war... They came swarming over the entire Country (*Israeli settlements on the whole expanse of Palestine*), and besieged the Camp of the Saints, which is the Beloved City (*Jerusalem, particularly longed for by Israel as the capital*)" (Revelation 20,7-9).

The country, where Satan assembles his men, is recognizable by the citation of the "Beloved City".

7.6 The characteristics of the Beast

1. It existed in the past, disappeared, and must reappear.
2. It reappears in Palestine with power and it seems invincible.
3. It had a deadly wound, but recovers.
4. It holds a great international power.

5. It represents a group of men.
6. A powerful nation supports it and imposes it on the world.
7. It appears with airplanes, bombs and tanks.
8. It will shed a lot of innocent blood.
9. It denies that Jesus is the Christ.
10. It will be destroyed by the Armageddon.

The appearance, in 1948, in Palestine, of the State of Israel supported by the US, a State formed by Jewish colonists who flocked in from the 4 corners of the earth, to settle themselves on the **whole extent of the country** in order to proclaim Jerusalem as capital, is a sign that the Apocalyptic Time is here.

8. After the Fall

8.1 The Restoration: a new Heaven and Earth

After the definite fall of the Beast, God will inaugurate a new era in the world. John sees "a New Heaven and a new Earth" (Revelation 21,1), and says that: "The One sitting on the Throne spoke: 'Look, I am making the whole of creation new'" (Revelation 21,5). This New Universe had already been prophesied by St Peter: "What we are waiting for, relying on His promises, is the New Heavens and the New Earth, where uprightness will be at home" (2 Peter 3,13). (See text: "The Universal Restoration").

Such is the story of the Revelation recounted simply and methodically. It was not revealed to John in a clear and consistent manner, God wanting to keep the content secret (Revelation 5,1 & 10,4) until the moment of the Beast's appearance, on the eve of Christ's Return. He sends, then, his messenger to explain all: "Do not keep the prophecies of this Book a secret, because the time (*of Jesus' Return*) is close" (Revelation 22,10). This secrecy was desired by God "to put the people of the world to the test" before Jesus' Return (Revelation 3,10-11).

It is in this way the Christ actually probes the hearts: "It is I who search hears and loins", says Jesus (Revelation 2,23). The chosen are those who side with Justice in fighting with courage and determination against the Beast, even at the cost of their own lives. They establish - by their resistance to the Antichrist - the Kingdom of God and of His Christ on earth:

> "Salvation and power and empire for ever have been won by our God, and all authority for his Christ, now that the accuser (*the Beast*), who accused our brothers (*the two witnesses*) has been brought down. They have triumphed over him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word to which they bore witness, because even in the face of death they did not cling to life" (Revelation 12,10-11).

The Revelation relates the story of the return of Israel, the Beast, the Antichrist, and its final definitive condemnation. Its fall will manifest the power and the glory of the Messiah, Jesus of Nazareth, who's Kingdom will remain forever.

8.2 The Kingdom of God on earth

The seventh trumpet resonates: it announces the Kingdom of God and of Jesus on earth after the fall of the Antichrist:

> "Then the seventh angel blew his trumpet, and voices could be heard shouting in Heaven calling, 'The kingdom of the world has become the Kingdom of our Lord and his Christ, and He will reign for ever and ever" (Revelation 11,15)

The Divine Light, extinguished by the Dragon and the Beast, will shine again in the hearts thirsty for Love and Truth. They will live with God in them and become the Temple of God:

> "To those who prove victorious I will give the hidden manna and a white stone* - a stone with a new name written on it, known only to the man who receives it" (Revelation 2,17)

*Certain Bibles use the translation "white pebble" instead of "white stone". "Pebble" is translated from the Greek word "psyfon", the language with which the Revelation was written. Now in Greek, this word means "pebble" or "stone". It is the word "stone" that should be translated (as correctly translated in the Bible TOB, Traduction Œcuménique de la Bible), because the word "pebble" cannot be used to build a construction.

The word "stone" has a resonance that is prophetic and evangelic, which the word "pebble" dœs not evoke. In telling Peter: "You are Peter and, on this rock, I will build my community"

(Matthew 16,18), Jesus consecrated this word. He reuses it in the Revelation so to build His immaterial Church of the End of Times. This is not a material building, but represents the Apostles of the Apocalypse, building stones of the Spiritual Temple that is formed of them and all those who believe in the Apocalyptic message revealed by Jesus to His messenger. Indeed, these are considered "living stones" of the Spiritual Temple, non-material, of the Heavenly Jerusalem, of which Jesus is the "corner stone" (read 1 Peter 2,4-5: "So that you, too, may be living stones...", 1 Corinthians 3,16 / 6,13-20 / 2 Corinthians 6,16 / Ephesians 2,10).

In the Revelation, Jesus also qualifies the victorious believer a "pillar in the Sanctuary of My God" (Revelation 3,12). The Apocalypse confirms this new world order:

> "Then I saw a New Heaven and a New Earth, the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now, and there was no longer any sea (*death of the soul*)... I will give water from the well of Life free to anybody who is thirsty... I will be his God and he will be my son... I could not see any Temple in the City since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb were themselves the Temple... There will be no night there..." (Revelation 21).
>
> "Let all who are thirsty come: all who want it may have the Water of Life, and have it free" (Revelation 22,17)

Father, may your Kingdom come, Your Will be done, on earth as it is in Heaven. Amen!

"O yes, come Lord Jesus! Amen!"

> "... Let anyone who can hear, listen what the Spirit is saying to the Churches" (Revelation 2,7)

Pierre (1978 / Revised 2005)

2

The Explanation of Mary's Message in La Salette

The Holy Virgin appeared in La Salette, on the 19th of September 1846, to a 15-year-old humble shepherdess named Melanie Calvat, together with her 12-year-old friend - a younger shepherd Maximin Giraud. La Salette is a small village in the Dauphine Alps, at an altitude of 1800 meters, in the south-east of France, near Grenoble.

The message given by Mary is symbolic and is an enigma. It cannot be understood until the prophesied events unfold. Today, these events are unfolding before our eyes. The protagonists announced herein are here. In order to understand the ***Apocalyptical*** *language of Mary and to recognize the identity of the Antichrist and the Beast, which She speaks of in this message, we refer the reader to the text "The Key of the Apocalypse".*

In Her message, Mary refers ceaselessly to the Gospels and St. John's Book of Revelation. She speaks of the "Beast" (Revelation 13 / 17), who is the Antichrist (1 John 2,22); it will present itself as "savior" and mislead many Christians. That is why Our Lady expresses with force, Her deception with regards to the religious chiefs, whose "intelligence was bedimmed by the devil". They are incapable of discerning the Antichrist announced in the Bible, leaving it to act freely and mislead the people.

The Blessed Virgin thus lances an appeal to all her ***true*** *children, the "Apostles of the End of Times", to combat this enemy of Jesus. We reveal their identity by identifying in parenthesis the necessary clarifications.*

Melany published her message, the extended version, in 1879 with the approval of bishop Zola (of the village of Lecce, Italy). Rome officially recognized it on June 6, 1922. La Salette is currently an active center of pilgrimage.

Everything commenced on September 19 1846. Melany and Maximin were in the fields with their flock. They were frightened when they saw appear, a few meters away, a luminous sphere, and radiating from its center, a Woman sat, crying, her face in between her hands. The Lady then stood up, with much dignity, and approached the children. Her face was sad, but serene. She tells them:

> "Come, my children, fear not, I am here to proclaim great news to you... If my people do not wish to submit themselves, I am forced to let go of the hand of my Son. It is so heavy and weighs me down so much I can no longer keep hold of it. I have suffered all of the time for the rest of you! If I do not wish my Son to abandon you, I must take it upon myself to pray for this continually. And the rest of you think little of this. In vain you will pray, in vain you will act, and you will never be able to make up for the trouble I have taken over for the rest of you... If the harvest is spoiled, it is only because of you..." etc...

The Holy Virgin, after having briefly expressed her deception, gave Melany a secret message, asking her to reveal it later. Today, the clergy refuses to publish it because this message accuses them and announces the treason of the Vatican.

We reproduce the full text with biblical explanations and references indicated in parentheses.

Here is what Our Lady said to Melany:

"Melany, what I am about to tell you now will not always be a secret... The priests, ministers of my Son, the priests, by their wicked lives, by their irreverence and their impiety in the celebration of the holy mysteries, by their love of money, their love of honors and pleasures, and the priests have become cesspools of impurity. Yes, the priests are asking vengeance, and vengeance is hanging over their heads. Wœ to priests and those dedicated to God who by their unfaithfulness and their wickedness are crucifying my Son again! The sins of those dedicated to God cry out towards Heaven and call for vengeance, and now vengeance is at their door, for there is no one left to beg mercy and forgiveness for the people. There are no more generous souls, there is no one left worthy of offering a stainless sacrifice to the Eternal for the sake of the world.

God will strike in an unprecedented way. Wœ to the inhabitants of the earth! God will exhaust His wrath upon them, and no one will be able to escape so many afflictions together.

The chiefs, the leaders of the people of God have neglected prayer and penance, and the devil has bedimmed their intelligence (*they are not capable of discerning the identity of the Antichrist).* They have become wandering stars which the old devil will drag along with his tail to make them perish *(Revelation 12,4).*

God will allow the old serpent to cause divisions among those who reign in every society and in every family. Physical and moral agonies will be suffered. God will abandon mankind to itself and will send punishments which will follow one after the other for more than thirty-five years (*the '42 months', symbolic of Revelation 11,11*). The Society of men is on the eve of the most terrible scourges and of greatest events (*Mark 13,19 / Revelation 16,18*). Mankind must expect to be ruled with an iron rod and to drink from the chalice of the wrath of God (*Revelation 14,9-10*).

May the curate of my Son, Pope Pius IX never leave Rome again after 1859; may he, however, be steadfast and noble, may he fight with the weapons of faith and love. I will be at his side.

May he be on his guard against Napoleon: he is two-faced, and when he wishes to make himself Pope as well as Emperor, God will soon draw back from him. He is the master-mind who, always wanting to ascend further, will fall on the sword he wished to use to force his people to be raised up.

Italy will be punished for her ambition in wanting to shake off the yoke of the Lord of Lords. And so, she will be left to fight a war; blood will flow on all sides. Churches will be locked up or desecrated. Priests and religious orders will be hunted down, and made to die a cruel death. Several will abandon the faith (*in solidarity with the Antichrist*), and a great number of priests and members of religious orders will break away from the true religion; among these people there will even be bishops (*Vatican-Israeli accord signed on 30 Dec, 1993*).

May the Pope guard against the performers of miracles (*false 'miracles' of the Antichrist, based on injustice and military violence*). For the time has come when the most astonishing wonders will take place on the earth and in the air (*airpower*).

In 1864, Lucifer, together with a large number of demons, will be unloosed from hell (*Revelation 20,7*). They will put an end to faith little by little, even in those dedicated to God. They will blind them in such a way, that, unless they are blessed with a special grace, these people will take on the spirit of these angels of hell. Several religious institutions will lose all faith (*by*

standing in solidarity with the Antichrist for fear of being accused of anti-Semitism) and will lose many souls.

Evil books will be abundant on earth, and the spirits of darkness will spread everywhere a universal slackening of all that concerns the service of God (*2 Timothy 3,1-5*). They will have great power over nature. There will be churches built to serve these spirits (*the satanic cult in the world*). People will be transported from one place to another by these evil spirits, even priests, for they will not have been guided by the good spirit of the Gospel which is a spirit of humility, charity, and zeal for the glory of God.

On occasions, the dead and the righteous will be brought back to life (*the Israelis claim that the current State of Israel is a resurrection of Biblical Israel and compare certain Israeli figures to Biblical figures: Ben Gourion as a new Moses, Golda Mair as a new prophetess Deborah etc...*) That is to say these dead (*in spirit, today's Zionists*) will take on the form of righteous souls that had lived on earth (*Moses, Deborah etc...*), in order to lead men further astray. These so-called resurrected dead - who will be nothing but the devil in this form (*human*) - will preach another Gospel (*Zionism*) contrary to that of the true Christ Jesus, denying the existence of Heaven; that is also to say, the souls of the damned. All these (*satanic*) souls will appear as if fixed to their bodies (*their bodies are possessed by the devil*).

Everywhere there will be extraordinary wonders, as true faith has faded and false light brightens the people (*prodigies due to the progress of science: conquest of space etc... these are not miracles of the spiritual order*).

Wœ to the princes of the Church who think only of piling riches upon riches to protect their authority and dominate with pride.

The Vicar of my Son will suffer a great deal (*under communism*), because for a while the Church will yield to large persecution, a time of darkness, and the Church will witness a frightful crisis.

The true faith to the Lord having been forgotten, each individual will want to be on his own (*neglecting the warnings of Heaven*) and be superior to people of same identity, they will abolish civil rights as well as ecclesiastical, all order and all justice would be trampled underfoot and only homicides, hate, jealousy, lies and dissension would be seen without love for country or family.

The Holy Father will suffer a great deal. I will be with him until the end and receive his

sacrifice. The mischievous would attempt his life several times to do harm and shorten his days, but neither him nor his successor will see the triumph of the Church of God.

All the civil governments (*under control of Free-masonry*) will have one and the same plan, which will be to abolish and do away with every religious principal, to make way for materialism, atheism, spiritualism, and vice of all kinds.

In the year 1865, there will be a desecration of holy places (*Matthew 24,15; the first efforts of Zionist settlements in the Holy Land*). In convents, the flowers of the Church will decompose and the devil will make himself like King of all hearts. May those in charge of religious communities be on their guard against the people they must receive, for the devil will resort to all his evil tricks to introduce sinners into religious orders (*Judeo-masonic infiltration*), for disorder and the love of carnal pleasures will be spread all over the earth.

France, Italy, Spain, and England will be at war. Blood will flow in the streets. Frenchman will fight Frenchman, Italian will fight Italian. A general war (*world war*) will follow which will be appalling (*nuclear*). For a time, God will cease to remember France and Italy because the Gospel of Jesus Christ has been forgotten. The wicked will make use of all their evil ways. Men will kill each other, massacre each other even in their homes.

At the first blow of his thundering sword, the mountains and all nature will tremble in terror, for the disorders and crimes of men have pierced the vault of the heavens. Paris will burn and Marseilles will be engulfed. Several cities will be shaken down and swallowed up by earthquakes (*Revelation 16,18-19*). People will believe that all is lost. Nothing will be seen but murder, nothing will be heard but the clash of arms (*wars all over, Matthew 24*) and blasphemy (*immorality*).

The righteous will suffer greatly; their prayers, their penance, and their tears will rise up to Heaven (*Revelation 6,9-10 & 8,3*), and all of GOD's people will beg for forgiveness and mercy, and will plead for My help and Intercession.

And then Jesus Christ, in an act of His justice and His great mercy will command His Angels to have all his enemies put to death (*Luke 19,27 & Revelation 19,17-20).*

Suddenly, the persecutors of the Church of Jesus Christ and all those given over to sin will perish, and the earth will become desert-like (*after the nuclear war).*

Then peace will be made, and man will be reconciled with God. Jesus Christ will be served, worshipped and glorified. Charity will flourish everywhere. The new kings will be the right arm of the holy Church, which will be strong, humble, pious in its poor but fervent imitation of the virtues of Jesus Christ. The Gospel will be preached everywhere, and mankind will make great progress in the faith, for there will be unity among the workers of Jesus Christ, and man will live in fear of God.

This peace amongst men will be short-lived: 25 years of plentiful harvests will make them forget that the sins of men are the cause of all the troubles on this earth.

A forerunner of the Antichrist (*Communism created by Marx, Lenin etc... Zionist Jews*), with his troops gathered from several nations, will fight against the true Christ, the only Savior of the world. He will shed much blood and will want to annihilate the worship of God to make himself be looked upon as God *(2 Thessalonians 2,3-4).*

The earth will be struck by calamities of all kinds in addition to plague and famine, which will be wide-spread (*Aids etc...*) There will be a series of wars (*world wars and wars that will multiply in the Middle East since the proclamation of the State of Israel*), until the last war, which will then be fought by the ten Kings of the Antichrist (*3rd world war which began on Iraq by the U.S.A. and their allies: Revelation 17,12-14*), all of whom will have one and the same plan (*full support of Israel: Revelation 17,13*) and will be the only rulers of the world (*supremacy of the U.S.A.).*

Before this comes to pass, there will be a kind of false peace in the world (*the Arab-Israeli peace accords of Camp David, Oslo...*) People will think of nothing but amusement. The wicked will give themselves over to all kinds of sin. But the children of the holy Church, the children of my faith, my true followers, they will grow in their love for God and in all the virtues most precious to me. Blessed are the souls humbly guided by the Holy Spirit! I shall fight at their side until they reach a fullness of years (*spiritual maturity*).

Nature is asking for vengeance because of man and she trembles with dread at what must happen to the earth stained with crime (*3rd world war: Luke 21,25-26).*

Tremble, earth, and you (*clergy*) who proclaim yourselves as serving Jesus Christ, and who, on the inside, only adore yourselves. Tremble, for God will hand you over to His enemy (*the Antichrist*), because the holy places are in a state of corruption (*Revelation 11,2 & 20,9*).

Many convents (*in solidarity with the Antichrist*) are no longer houses of God, but the grazing grounds of Asmodeas (*the demon of impurity*) and his like.

It will be during this time that the Antichrist (*'he who denies that Jesus is the Christ': 1 John 2,22; Israel, born in 1948*) will be born of a **religious Hebrew** nun (*international Zionism*),

a false virgin (*symbol of the false Jews mentioned in Revelation 2,9 & 3,9, who became a 'synagogue of Satan', having 'the devil as father': John 8,44, because of their refusal of Jesus*), who will communicate with the old serpent, the master of impurity, his father will be **Bishop** (*symbol of Christian solidarity with Israel. The Christian world greatly contributed in giving birth to the State of Israel*). At birth, he will spew out blasphemy (*Revelation 13,5*); he will have teeth (*symbol of moral monstrosity: Israel has aggressively shown its teeth to its enemies since its birth*). In a word, he will be the devil incarnate. He will scream horribly (*threatening his enemies*), he will perform wonders (*Israel's military victories*), he will feed on nothing but impurity (*crimes, lies, injustice*). He will have brothers (*the ten kings*) who, although not devils incarnate like him, will be children of evil (*as they support him*).

At the age of twelve, they will draw attention upon themselves by the gallant victories they will have won (*1948 + 12 = 1960: concealing the message of Fatima that was to be revealed in 1960; Vatican Council II that renders the Jews innocent of the death of Jesus; Tripartite war against Egypt in 1956, six-day war in 1967, etc...*). Soon, each will head armies (*they will order military interventions in Israel's favor: the Iraq war, etc...*) aided by the legions of hell.

The seasons (*the world situation*) will be altered, the earth will produce nothing but bad fruit (*natural and spiritual*), the stars (*religious chiefs and state leaders*) will lose their regular motion (*control of their nation*), and the moon will only reflect a faint reddish glow (*the spiritual light fades: Matthew 24,29 etc...*). Water and fire will give the earth's globe convulsions and terrible earthquakes which will swallow up mountains, cities, etc...

Rome (*the Vatican*) **will lose faith and become the seat of the Antichrist** (*2Thessalonians 2,4*)

The demons of the air, together with the Antichrist will perform great wonders on earth and in the atmosphere (*Israel's military power on earth and in the air*), and men will become more and more perverted.

God will take care of His faithful servants and men of good will. The Gospel will be preached everywhere, and all peoples of all nations will get to know the truth.

I make an urgent appeal to the earth.

I call on the true disciples of the living God who reigns in Heaven. I call on the true followers of Christ made man, **the only true Savior of men** (*Jesus is the only and unique Messiah. The Messiah expected by the Israelis is the Antichrist).* I call on my children, the true faithful, those who have given themselves to me so that I may lead them to my divine Son, those whom I carry in my arms, so to speak, those who have lived on my spirit.

Finally, I call on the **Apostles of the Last Days** (*Matthew 24,31*), the faithful disciples of Jesus Christ who have lived in scorn for the world and for themselves, in poverty and in humility, in scorn and in silence, in prayer and in mortification, in chastity and in union with God, in suffering and unknown to the world. It is time they came out and filled the world with light. Go and reveal yourselves to be my cherished children. I am at your side and within you, provided that your faith is the light which shines upon you in these unhappy days.

May your zeal make you famished for the glory and the honor of Jesus Christ. Fight (*against the Zionists and their allies*), children of Light, you, the few who can see (*the truth with regards to the Antichrist*). For now is the Time of all times, the End of all ends.

The Church will be eclipsed (*it is already so*), the world will be in dismay. But now Enoch and Eli (*symbol of the Two Witnesses of Revelation 11,3*), will come, filled with the Spirit of God. They will preach with the might of God, and men of good will believe in God, and many souls will be comforted (*by the Message of John's Revelation*). They will make great steps forward through the virtue of the Holy Spirit and will condemn the devilish lapses of the Antichrist.

Wœ to the inhabitants of the earth!

There will be bloody wars and famines, plagues and infectious diseases (*Aids etc...*). It will rain with a fearful hail of animals (*the apocalyptic "hail", the bombs: Revelation 16,21, launched by the "locusts", the warplanes: Revelation 9,3-11*). There will be thunderstorms which will shake cities (*bombardments*), earthquakes which will swallow up countries. Voices will be heard in the air (*planes*); men will beat their heads against walls, call for their death, and on another side, death will be their torment. Blood will flow on all sides.

Who will be the victor if God dœs not shorten the length of the test?

All the blood, the tears, and prayers of the righteous, God will relent (*Matthew 24,22*).

Enoch and Eli will be put to death. **Pagan Rome will disappear**. The fire of Heaven will fall and consume three cities. All the universe will be struck with terror and many will let themselves be led astray (*by the Antichrist*) because they have not worshipped the true Christ (*Jesus*) who lives among them.

It is time; the sun (*spiritual*) is darkening; only faith will survive.

Now is the time! The Abyss is opening (*Revelation 9,1-2*). Here is the king of kings of Darkness.

Here is the Beast (*Revelation 13,1-10 & 17,1-9*), with his subjects, calling himself the Savior of the world (*the Zionist Messiah*). He will rise proudly into the air (*Israel's air prowess*), to go to Heaven. He will be smothered by the breath of the Archangel Saint Michael (*1 Thessalonians 4,16*). He will fall, and the earth, which will have been in a continuous series of evolutions for three days (*Revelation 11,9-11*), will open up its fiery bowels, and he will have plunged for all eternity with all his followers, into the everlasting chasms of hell (*Revelation 12,16 & 19,19-20 & 20,9-10*).

And then water and fire (*the faith and zeal of the Apostles of the End of Times*) will purge the earth and consume all the works of men's pride and all will be renewed. God will be served and glorified (*Revelation 21,1 & 11,13*).

... And so, my children, you will pass this (*message*) on to all my people."

Melanie fulfilled her task, in revealing the message at her time. But afterwards, and in spite of the fact that La Salette is a center of (economic) pilgrimage encouraged by the Church, the bishops and priests do all to conceal the message, just as they have also done with the message of Fatima. The reason is none other than the Vatican's solidarity with the Antichrist, and that the clergy have become cesspools of impurity.

It is incumbent to the true children of Mary, the Apostles of the End of Times, the independent believers, to convey the message of their Holy Mother.

3

Mary's Message of Fatima

Message of Mary of Fatima given to Lucy, the 13th of October 1917

The Holy Virgin Mary appeared in Fatima (Portugal) 6 successive times, from the 13th of May 1917 till the 13th of October 1917 to three shepherds: Lucy dos Santos (11 years old), and her cousins Giacinta (8 years old) and Francesco (11 years old). The Virgin Mary revealed to them three secrets, the first of which concerns a vision of hell, and the second on the consecration of Russia to Mary's Immaculate Heart. Mary's message of Fatima also included a third secret. This secret deals with the identity of the Antichrist, which appeared in 1948, in Palestine. The Popes had to reveal this secret of Fatima in 1960, so to unmask the identity of the Antichrist.

But, starting from John XXIII, they all broke with this sacred duty, from fear of this powerful Antichrist.

This identity was revealed by the Christ Himself to a priest on the 13th of May 1970. Appearing to him at dawn, Jesus tells him: "Today is 13 May, commemorative day of Our Mother's apparition in Fatima. Open Chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation: The Beast is Israel!" (see text "The Key of Apocalypse").

This light illuminates the whole Apocalyptic message, and so dœs the secret of Fatima, and Mary's message of La Salette.

To really understand these two messages of the Virgin, it all comes down to the revealing of the Antichrist's identity, this Beast of the Book of Revelation. This is what the popes omit to reveal since 1960, for fear of being accused of anti-Semitism. It is because they know that it is about the State of Israel! This Zionist State, obstinately opposed to Christ Jesus, proclaims and still awaits another political-military Christ, whose fanatical and "expan-sionist" spirit is totally against the universalist, divine, and non-political Spirit of Jesus of Nazareth. So, it has nothing to do with anti-Semitism, since a good number of Jews are Christian converts and denounce the State of Israel.

We understand thus, the real reasons that reduced the popes John XXIII, Paul VI and John-Paul II to this mysterious silence, and unjustifiable, concerning the secret of Fatima which reveals the identity of the Antichrist, as well as the Vatican's bankruptcy. If they had not broken with this sacred duty by their muteness, and seen by their complicity, the Popes would have saved millions of souls... including their own.

As for Karol Wojtila, he has seriously lied by revealing a pseudo-secret. Here, we present you the indisputable argument concerning his lie. As he had said in the year 2000, the secret of Fatima was concerned with the attempt against his person on the 13th of May 1981. However, our Mother had asked that the secret of Fatima be revealed in 1960 in order for it **"to be understood"**. If it had been revealed at this date, in 1960, it CERTAINLY would not have

been a question of a future event, having taken place 21 years later, and in which **nobody would have understood**. It is CERTAINLY an event PRIOR to 1960, to be understood in 1960, and not about an event that would occur after 1960. This event took place in 1948... in Palestine: The official proclamation of the State of Israel!!!

1. Sister Lucy speaks of the Message in 1958

The following text was transmitted by Lucy on May 22, 1958 to reverend Father Augostino Fuentes, postulant for the beatification of Francesco and Jacinta of Fatima:

"Father, the Madonna is very discontented because we have not taken Her message of 1917 into account. Neither the good nor the bad took it into account.

'The good', walk their path without thinking of themselves. They do not follow the heavenly norms. 'The evil', take the wide way of perdition, taking no account at all of the punishments that I threaten them with.

Believe me, Father; the Lord will punish the world very soon. The punishment is imminent, the material punishment will soon come. You can imagine Father; how many souls will end up in hell!

And this will arrive because we do not pray and do not do penitence.

This is the cause of our Mother's sadness. Father, it is necessary to inform everyone what the Madonna told me several times: many nations will disappear from the face of the earth. The **Nations without God** will be the whip chosen by God Himself to castigate humanity if we do not obtain, by means of prayer and sacraments, the Grace of their conversion.

Tell them Father, that the devil is fighting the decisive battle against the Madonna, and what afflicts the Immaculate Hearts of Mary and Jesus. It is the fall of the religious and ministerial souls. They (*the devils*) know that the religious and the priests, in abandoning their vocation, drag many souls into hell. We barely have any time to stop Heaven's punishment. We have at our disposal two very efficient means: Prayer and Sacrifice.

The devil dœs all to distract us and to remove our desire to pray. We either save ourselves or damn ourselves together.

Nevertheless, Father, it must be said to the people not to wait for an appeal to penitence from the Pope, or to prayer, neither from the part of bishops, nor the priests, nor from superiors in general. **It is time for each person, by their own initiative**, to accomplish holy deeds, and reform their life according to the Madonna's demand!

The devil wants to be master of the consecrated souls. He tries to corrupt them, so to induce others to the final impenitence. He uses all the tricks to insinuate one to postpone religious life... This results with sterility in inner life and coldness in seminaries, where they have given up the joy of offering oneself totally to God.

It should be said Father, that two things sanctified Jacinta and Francesco: the affliction of the Madonna and the vision of hell...

The Madonna finds Herself between two swords: on one side, She sees a humanity that is obstinate and indifferent in front of the punishments that threaten. On the other, She sees us trampling the Sacraments and belittling the punishment that approaches, by remaining incredulous, sensual and materialistic.

The Madonna expressly said: "We are approaching the end of times."

She told me **three times**:

1. First, She affirmed that the devil has engaged in a decisive struggle, ie final, from which we shall come out either victorious or vanquished.

2. The second time, She repeated to me that the last remedies given to the world are: the Holy Rosary and the devotion to Mary's Immaculate Heart. "Last", means that there will not be any others.

3. The third time, She told me that having exhausted the other means, disregarded by men, She gives us, **while trembling**, the last means of salvation, which is the Very Holy Virgin in person, signs of tears, message of various seers around the world. The Madonna says that if we do not listen and that we still offend, we will no longer be forgiven.

Father, Lucy tells me, it is urgent that we render count to the terrible reality. We do not wish to fill the souls with fear, it is just an urgent appeal to the reality.

Since the Very Holy Virgin gave a great efficacy to the Holy Rosary, there is no material problem, spiritual, national, or international problem that She cannot resolve without the Holy Rosary and our sacrifices.

The recital with love and devotion will console Mary and wipe away the many tears of Her Immaculate Heart."

NB: For the interview above, the priest Fuentes obtained the permission of the then reigning Pope (Pious X).

2. Apparition of July 13, 1917

On July 13, after the vision of hell, the Virgin told Lucy and her two companions (pages 176 and 177 of "Memoirs of Sister Lucy"): "You have seen hell, where the souls of poor sinners go. To save them, God wants to establish the devotion to my Immaculate Heart in the world. If you do what I tell you, many souls will be saved, and we will have peace. The war will end, but if we do not cease in offending God, a far worse one will commence under the reign of Pious XI. When you will see a night that is illuminated by an unknown light [this occurred on January 28, 1938], know that it is the grand sign God gives you that He will punish the world of its crimes by the way of war, famine, and persecutions against the Church and the Holy Father. To prevent this, I will come to ask Russia's consecration to my Immaculate Heart, and the restorative communion of the first Saturday of each month. If you listen to my requests, Russia will convert and we will have peace; if not, she will spread her errors throughout the world, provoking wars and persecutions against the Church. The good will be martyred, the Holy Father will have much to suffer, and several nations will be annihilated. **In the end, my Immaculate Heart will triumph**".

3. Distressing Warnings

The famous third secret of Fatima was published in the journal "**Neues Europa**" (*New Europe*) of Stoccarde, the 15th of October 1963, under the title "The future of humanity", signed by L. Einrich.

The article presented an "**excerpt**" of the secret of Fatima from which we expected the full disclosure in 1960. The document, known for diplomatic indiscretion, would have been sent by the Vatican's authorities with the headlined information, to Washington, London and Moscow, rendering it necessary, even indispensable, for the treaty of the cessation of nuclear testing. The authenticity of such a document has never been denied by the Vatican.

4. Article from the "Neues Europa" Journal

October 13 1917, after a series of apparitions, the Very Holy Virgin appeared one last time to the children of Fatima, Lucia, Jacinta and Francesco. After the event of the "miracle of the sun", the Mother of God revealed a special message to Lucia which, amongst others, said:

"Don't worry dear child, I am the Mother of God, who is speaking to you and is asking you to proclaim in my Name, the following message to the whole world.

You will draw to yourself, by doing so, fierce hostilities. Listen, and retain well what I tell you:

Men must become better. They must implore for the remission of the sins that they have committed, and that they continue to commit; that they pray the Rosary... there is not a single problem: personal, familial, national or international, which I cannot resolve if asked of me through the Rosary.

You ask of me a miraculous sign, so that everyone understands my words, which, through you, I address to mankind. This miracle, you have just seen at this instant. It was the great miracle of the Sun! Everyone saw it, believers and non-believers, from the countryside and from the city, scientists and journalists, laymen and priests.

And now proclaim in My Name:

Upon all humanity, a grand punishment will arrive, not yet today, nor even tomorrow, but in the second half of the XXth century.

What I already made known in La Salette through the children Melanie and Maximin, I repeat today before you.

Humanity has been sacrilegious and tramples underfoot the Gift it has received.

Order no longer rules anywhere. Even at the highest positions, it is Satan who rules, and decides the course of affairs. He will even introduce himself into the uppermost summits of the Church.

He will succeed in sowing confusion in the minds of great scientists who invent weapons with which the half of humanity can be destroyed in a matter of minutes.

He will submit the powerful to his authority and drive them to mass manufacture these weapons.

If humanity will not defend itself, I will be forced to let go of my Son's arm.

If those who are at the head of the world, and of the Church, do not oppose these schemes, it is I who will do so, and I will ask God my Father to bring forth His justice upon men.

It is so, that God will punish men more harshly and severely than He did by the Flood.

And the great and the powerful will perish, just as the small and the weak.

But also, a time of the hardest trials will come to the Church. Cardinals will be against cardinals, and bishops against bishops. Satan will place himself in the midst of their ranks.

In Rome also, there will be great changes. Rome will be destroyed. What is rotten falls, and what falls must not be maintained. The Church will become obscure and the world plunged into disarray.

The great, great war will occur in the second half of the twentieth century (*The world war started in 1991 against Iraq. Now, it still continues, leading to disastrous international situations*).

Russia will be the whip of God, and in the end, it will convert. That America not believe itself invulnerable.

Fire and smoke will fall from the sky, and the waters of the oceans will turn into vapor, hurling its foam towards the sky, and all that is standing will be overturned.

And millions upon millions of men will lose their lives from one hour to the next, and those who live still at that moment will envy those who have died. There will be tribulations everywhere, and wherever one looks. There will be misery on the entire earth, and desolation in all countries.

It is here, the time gets closer still, the abyss deepens more and more, and there is no longer a way out; the good die with the bad, the big with the small, the princes of the Church with their faithful, the sovereigns of the earth with their peoples; everywhere death will reign, elevated to its triumph by men gone astray and by Satan's servants who will be, thus, the only sovereigns on earth.

It will be a time that no single king nor emperor, no single cardinal nor bishop await, yet it will come according to my Father's plan to punish and avenge.

Much later however, whence those who survive everything will still be alive, they will invoke God again and his magnificence, and will serve God again as in the past, when the world was not as corrupt.

I call all the true imitators of my Son Jesus Christ, all the true Christians and the Apostles of the End of Times!

The Time of Times, and the End of Ends is coming if humanity dœs not convert, and if this conversion dœs not come from above: from the leaders of the world and the leaders of the Church.

But misfortune if this conversion dœs not come, and if all remains as is, yes, if all becomes worse still.

Go my child and proclaim it!

I will always stand for this by your side, aiding you".

5. Text of Radio Vatican

"Neither John XXIII, nor Paul VI, found it appropriate to reveal the third part of the mystery of Fatima to the world. When it was published in the journal 'Neues Europa', the 15th of October 1963, it was neither confirmed, nor directly denied...

We have the certitude that the third part of the secret hides a particular gravity, confirmed by the tragic reality that the world as a whole, is living in.

Has the End of Times arrived?

Are we living the Apocalypse prophesied by Saint John?

If Christians testify with love to the hope in God's mercy, they should also cry out with courage for the Truth of God's Justice.

We do not have the illusion of being saved. Anyway, the time has come where words no longer suffice. One must act, and immediately, if we want that humanity, that each one amongst us may see... apart from the fire... the Light".

(*Text recorded from Radio Vatican on May 13, 1977 at 21h00-23h00*)

6. Article of "Vox Fidei"

When Pope John Paul II found himself in Fula during his journey in Germany (15 to 19 November 1980), in the presence of a small group of persons, some questions were posed to him, one in particular on the secret of Fatima.

Here is the text that appeared in 'Vox Fidei' N ° 10 of 1981:

"What is the secret of Fatima that had to be revealed in 1960?"

Response of the Holy Father:

"By its impressive content, and in order not to drag the global force of Communism into certain interferences, my predecessors preferred a "diplomatic attitude" *(in relation to 'the secret').*

However, it should be sufficient for every Christian to know the following: we read (*in the secret*) that the oceans will inundate continents entirely, that men will all of a sudden die from one minute to the next, suddenly, and this by the millions... when one knows this, it is not really urgent to publish this secret.

Many want to know solely by curiosity and by sensation, but forget that 'knowledge' carries with it also a responsibility... They simply want to appease their curiosity. This is dangerous when, in these times, the nonchalance of people will use it as an excuse that 'this serves to nothing'!"

The Pope, on this subject, took the Rosary while saying:

Here is the remedy against this evil! Pray, pray, and in the future, do not ask any more questions. All the rest, recommend it to the Madonna!"

7. Excerpts of the Book in French: 'Frère Michel de la Sainte Trinité'

From the little brothers of the Sacred Heart:

THE WHOLE TRUTH ON FATIMA

THE THIRD SECRET

Excerpts of the Book in French of Frère Michel de la Sainte Trinité: "Toute la Vérité sur Fatima. Le Troisième secret" (Renaissance Catholique, 10260 Saint-Parres-Les-Vaudes. France).

Introduction:

At the end of an exhaustive investigation, we managed to discover a certain content. It is a tragic, but salutary Secret of decisive importance, for the faith and hope of today's Catholics.

p.8: On the subject of Lucy: ... because soon, in 1948, she will bury herself behind the bars of the Carmel...

p.36: Having received the formal order to write the Secret in and around mid-October, two months later, she still had not yet done so. This says how much the writing of this text made her tremble to such a point that, taking the pen, she found herself incapable of writing. In fact, she added... that, several times, she had wanted to obey, that she had sat down to write, not capable of doing so. This mysterious obstacle lasted still, till the 24th of December 1943, where she specifies, in a letter to don Garcia, 'that this phenomenon was not due to natural causes.'

... It should be seen without a doubt: Satan's final rampage against the messenger of the Immaculate, guessing what a terrible weapon this great prophecy, once fixed on paper, could

constitute on his domination over the souls, and of his pretension to infiltrate up till the heart of the Church.

p.39: Besides, writes Father Alonso, how can one comprehend Lucy's great difficulties in writing this Secret, when she had already written other things, already very difficult? If it had been a question of prophetically announcing anew and of great cataclysms, we are certain that Sister Lucy would not have experienced such difficulties, given that victory requires a special intervention from Heaven.

p.271: Why this date of 1960 to disclose the Secret: "Because then it will appear clearer".

p.273: It was also towards this time that sister Lucy found herself surveilled so much more closely, nearly reduced to total silence (1951).

p.373: According to cardinal Ottaviani, John XXIII put back the Secret himself in another envelope, sealed it and deposited it in one of his archives that is like a deep well, black, dark, to the bottom of which the papers fall, and nobody can no longer see...

p.386: Vatican City, February 8, 1960, Press release of the ANI agency:

It is likely that the Secret of Fatima will never be rendered public. The decision of the Vatican authorities base themselves on the following reasons:

1. Sister Lucy is still alive.
2. The Vatican already knows the content of the letter.
3. Although the church recognizes the apparitions of Fatima, it dœs not desire to take the responsibility to guarantee the veracity of the words the three shepherds said, that the Virgin had addressed them.

P.420: It is why nothing is more important, more necessary, more urgent, than to make known to the world this ultimate Secret, buried in the Vatican, like a confined truth, by the successive popes, since more than a quarter of a century!

The Virgin Mary wanted its disclosure in 1960, and Sister Lucy, her messenger, continued to desire so, in urgently demanding for it to be revealed; we know this. The depository of the truth, and dreaded more than ever, Lucy is reduced to the strictest silence on this most salutary message, to the point that they practically forbade her to make the slightest allusion to it.

The bishop of Leiria and the chaplains of the sanctuary, they too, seemed to have received orders of silence.

p.477: Since then, the question arises: Until when will our pastors choose to please the enemies of the Virgin Mary by remaining faithful to the 'directives of the Council', to which they claim to belong to - and which led the Church to its ruin - rather than humbly relying on the prophecies of the Queen of Heaven, incontestably contrary to the innovators? Until when, will they linger to obey the very urgent demands of their Mother and Mistress, the Queen of the Apostles, the Almighty Mediator of graces, and of mercy for the Church and the world?

p.533: "It has been given to our century to see once more this marvelous Sign. This Lady appeared in the sky of Fatima, it is clearly the same Woman of the vision of Patmos. To be this engaged by the events of our human history during the Apocalyptic times, captures emotion and fright. The chapter written by Our Lady of Fatima is of a limpid simplicity, even in its grandeur. It rejoins that of Saint John. It throws it in actuality, and makes it heard again by Christians. The two, mutually enlighten each other, to the point of leaving nothing in the dark, that which concerns the great tragedy of our twentieth century". (Abbot Georges de Nantes - Lettre à mes amis (Letter to my friends) - N ° 247, June 5, 1947).

We cannot say it better. Sister Lucy herself firmly recommends to read, to study, to meditate the Apocalypse. We have said it; interrogated on the content of the third Secret, she replies: "It is in the Gospel and in the Revelation, read them!" We even know that, she indicated one day, **the chapters 8 to 13 of St. John's Revelation**.

8. Commentary

The Vatican was infiltrated by Judaic-Masonry. We know that the Antichrist, the Beast of chapter 13 of the Apocalypse, is Israel. We understand then, that the Vatican cannot reveal the 3rd secret, which unmasks the Antichrist, the Beast of the Apocalypse, of whom the Virgin Mary had already spoken of in La Salette, in 1846.

In the year 2000, the Vatican revealed a *pseudo* message of Fatima that disfigures the Message in favor of the Antichrist. This is how Satan governs at the highest levels of the Church, as the Virgin has said. (See our text: "Mary's Message in La Salette").

4

Mary's Apparitions in Marienfried

The Virgin Mary appeared in 1946 in Marienfried (Germany), parish of Pfaffenhofen, close to Neu-Ulm, to Bärbel Ruess, aged then 22 years. There were three apparitions: April 25, May 25, and June 25 in 1946. Our clarifications are written in parentheses and italic font when comparing Mary's Message to that of St. John's in the Book of Revelation.

The extract that we report is taken from the translated brochure by Nicole Rœlli-Senez of the original German version written by Maria Hepp: "The Message of Marienfried", printing Paul Geiselmann, Laupheim, 1969 (Germany).

1. First Vision: April 25, 1946

Mary tells Bärbel:

"Wherever the greatest confidence reigns, and wherever it is taught to men that I can do all, there I will spread peace. Then, when all men believe in my power, there will be peace. I am the Sign of the Living God. I mark my sign on the forehead of my children. The star (*of David, symbol of Zionism; see Revelation 9,1*) will pursue my sign, but my sign will prevail over the star".

To the question: "Who are you?" Bärbel received the answer: "If I didn't have a veil, you would recognize me". As she was leaving, the Lady added:

"May Christ's peace be with you and with all those who pray here."

This place was later named "Marienfried" (*fried = peace*), because the Holy Virgin Mary had said there: "I give you the Peace of Christ".

2. Second Vision: May 25, 1946

Mary says:

"I am the Great Mediator of Graces. As the world can find no mercy next to the Father but through the sacrifice of the Son, likewise, you will not be heard by the Son but through my intercession. If the Christ is so unknown, it is because I am not known. This is why the Father will pour **his cup of wrath on the peoples** (*Revelation 11,18 / 14,19 / 15,1 / 16,19*) because they rejected his Son (*rejection of Christ by the Antichrist and those who support him*). The world was consecrated to my Immaculate Heart, but the consecration became for many, a terrible responsibility. I ask that the world live the consecration. Have an infinite confidence in my Immaculate Heart! Believe that I can do all with the Son! Put in place of your heart-filled sins, my Immaculate Heart, then I will draw the strength of God, and the Father's love will again form in you the Christ up till perfection. Accomplish my demands so that the Christ can soon reign as the King of Peace (*Revelation 11,15-17*). The world must drink the chalice

of wrath up till the dregs because of the innumerable sins that offended His Heart. The star of the abyss (*already mentioned in the first vision: Revelation 9,1*) will rise more furiously than ever, and will cause terrifying devastations (*"the abomination of desolation in the Holy Land": Matthew 24,15 / Daniel 9,27*) because it knows its time is short (*Revelation 12,12*), and because it sees that many have already lined up under my sign. Over these, it has no power, even though it kills many in the flesh (*Revelation 6,9 / 11,3-9*). But, of these sacrifices made for me (*unknown to these people martyred by the star*), comes my power to lead the legion that remains, to victory for Christ. Some have already allowed themselves to be marked by my sign, and they will always increase in number. To you, my children, I want to say: In the bloodiest days, do not forget that justly, this cross is a grace, and thank the Father always, and continuously for this Grace!

Pray and offer sacrifices for sinners! Offer yourselves, as well as your deeds, to the Father through me. Put yourselves entirely at my disposal! Pray the Rosary! Do not pray much for external goods! Much more matters today. Don't wait, either, for signs or miracles! I want to operate in secret, as the Great Mediator of Graces. If you fulfill my requests, I will give you peace of heart. It is only with this peace, that peace with people can be constituted. Then, will the Christ reign on the peoples as the King of Peace. Take care that my will becomes known, I will give you the necessary strength".

With regards to those who the mission is conferred, Mary adds that the devil will have such great power in the world, that all those who do not become firmly established in Her, will let themselves be led astray. As they become like blind men, even the best will allow themselves to be seduced (*the leaders of the churches, at its head the Pope mislead by the star*). Wherever men do not have confidence in Her Immaculate Heart, the devil will have control, but those who put Her Immaculate Heart in the place of their sinful hearts, here the devil will have no authority. He will persecute Her children (*by the star and its men*) and they will be despised, yet he can do nothing against them.

3. Third Vision: June 25, 1946

Mary says:

"I am the Great Mediator of graces. The Father wants the world to acknowledge this position of His Handmaiden. Men must believe, attributed as the ever-constant Bride of the Holy Spirit, I am the faithful Mediator of All Graces. My sign arrives (*the Angel of the Apocalypse: Revelation 10,1-2; see text: "The Key of the Apocalypse"*). God wants it so. My children alone (*the Apostles of the End of Times of whom She spoke of at La Salette*) recognize him, because he has made himself known to them in secret, and for this they render glory to the Eternal. I cannot yet demonstrate my power to the world. I must retire with my children (*The Woman of Revelation 12,1-6 / 12,13-17*). I want to operate miracles secretly in the souls, until the number of sacrifices is complete. It is up to you to shorten the days of obscurity. Your prayers and sacrifices annihilate **the image of the Beast** (*the Beast of Revelation 13,1-8 / **13,14-16** / 17,1-9*). Then, I will be able to reveal myself to the world for the glory of the Almighty. Embrace my sign, so that all may soon adore and honor God in three persons. Pray and offer through me! Pray continually! Pray the Rosary! Ask everything from the Father, through my Immaculate Heart! If what you ask for is for his glory, He will give it to you. Do not supplicate for perishable things, but ask for graces for individual souls, for your communities, for the peoples, so that all will love and render glory to the Divine Heart. Consecrate Saturdays to me, as I have desired.

Offer me lots of sacrifices! Make of your prayers a sacrifice! Be selfless! Nothing else matters today but to give glory and expiation to the Eternal. If you consecrate yourselves entirely to this, I will occupy myself with all the rest. I want to charge my children with crosses, deep and

heavy as the sea, because I love them in my sacrificed Son. I beseech you, be ready to carry your crosses, so that soon peace may reign. Embrace my sign, so that soon the Holy Trinity is glorified.

I am asking men to fulfill my wishes as soon as possible, for this is the will of the Heavenly Father and because this is necessary for His Greatest Glory and for his magnificence, now and forever. The Father announces an appalling sufferance for those who do not want to submit to His Will".

The Holy Virgin added that She had a **new message** for the world. The external circumstances and details were not to be reported. "The opinions will be divided with regards to this message, **a great number will be shocked**, yet a small legion will understand it well and make it known. These will recognize my will and rejoice. This legion has, in many countries, its representatives and will be in charge of spreading my message. Many amongst them have already been able to see my secret miracles. They have recognized that I am the **"Admirable Mother”**, and glorify me by this title". (*This **shocking message** is indeed that of the Apocalypse, which has outraged people who are at the service of the Beast. On the title of "Admirable Mother", see footnote*).

Bärbel asked for an obvious sign so that men believe in her message. Mary answered that she would not give a sign, unless men would have accomplished her will. She would then do miracles greater than ever, miracles in the souls. The Holy Virgin added:

"I have already given so many signs and spoken so often to the world, but men did not take it seriously. Great masses have come because of external signs, but not for the essential. We are on the eve of a time, in which all those who believe in me solely because of visible miracles will be confused. The external signs will bring many people much greater responsibilities, because they will not have drawn the conclusions from them. There are many souls, who wait for nothing but my children’s prayers. My children should praise and honor the Eternal more and more, and thank Him. Did He not create them for His Glory?"

The persons in charge of the website visited Marienfried in 1984. They met the priest in charge and a small group. They exposed to them the message of the "Apocalypse". They were impressed and allowed us to meet Bärbel herself in her dormitory. She revealed nothing of that "other message that Mary had to reveal" because, says she, her bishop had forbidden her to do so. It is incumbent to the Apostles of the Apocalypse, to break this wall of silence on the identity of the Star, the Beast of the Book of Revelation.

4. Prayer to “Mater Admirabilis”

A prayer to "Mater Admirabilis" (Admirable Mother) was composed in French, on October 20 1945, by a young "Doris Toutounji", born June 24 1930. She was suddenly taken to Heaven on December 10 1945, forty days after having composed this beautiful prayer inspired by the Holy Spirit. The Apostles of the Apocalypse like to recite this prayer, and please their "Admirable Mother" by offering it to her every day. They recognize themselves as the “small legion” of her children who "glorify Her under this title". Note that Mary’s apparition in Marienfried began in April 1946, four months after Doris’ ’disappearance’ to rejoin this Admirable Mother, to whom she had dedicated this prayer with love.

"Hail Mary, full of grace, brilliant light in which reflects the Divine Trinity. Your name, O Mary, is a widespread balm, and, for us, sinners, an aid always awaiting.

The Lord is with You, as You, Oh Mary, is with us, to enlighten, guide and console your children, poor pilgrims who walk in the Valley of tears, their eyes fixed on You, their tender Star.

Blessed are You among all women, because the Lord has chosen You to be the Mother of the Word Incarnate, without ever allowing sin to tarnish your ravishing whiteness.

Jesus, the Fruit of your womb is blessed, because through You has He been given to us, the Unique Savior, who redeems us from death and reopens the gates of Heaven to us.

Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us who combat now on earth. Be our refuge at all times, so that, at the blessed moment of our death, we may contemplate your sweet face in the splendor of Eternity. Amen.

5

The Key of the prophecies

> "So we have confirmation of what was said in prophecies; and you will be right to depend on prophecy and take it as a lamp for lighting a way through the dark. . . " (2 Peter 1,19)

The "Key" that opens the Apocalyptical mysteries that were kept sealed till now, and also opens all the preceding Biblical prophecies, Old and New Testaments. With this Key, the symbols are clarified, as we will demonstrate further down:

- "Gog and Magog" (Ezekiel 38,2 / 38,9 and 38,15 / Revelation 20,7-8)
- "The Abomination of Desolation" (Daniel 9,27 / 11,31 / 12,11 / Matthew 24,15)
- "The End of Times" (Ezekiel 38,8 / Matthew 24,14-15)
- "The Greatest Tribulation in history" (Daniel 12,1 / Matthew 24,21 / Revelation 7,14)

In addition, the following are also clarified:

- "The first Resurrection" (Daniel 12,2 / John 5,29 / Revelation 20,5-6)
- "The two olive trees" (Zechariah 4,4 and 4,14 / Revelation 11,3-13)
- "The Measuring of the Sanctuary" (Ezekiel 47,3 / Revelation 11,1-2)

More ample information can be found in the text "The Key of the Revelation".

In order to understand chapters 38 and 39 of Ezekiel, we have to recall Ezekiel's historical context. The Hebrews were in exile in Babylon and the Temple was destroyed. They all awaited, with anxiety, for their return from exile, and the reconstruction of the temple, as is still the case today. Consider Daniel's state, who waited anxiously for the temple's reconstruction (Daniel 9). Ezekiel sees the return of the Hebrews to Palestine in a strange manner: it is "Gog and Magog" who invade the country, with the aid of many nations (Ezekiel 38 and 39 / Revelation 13,2- 3 / 13,12 and 20,7-9). He also sees the "measure" of the new Temple, a measure that dœs not correspond, however, to the second Temple. God clarifies this by saying that the message is for "**the end of times**", which is none other than the Apocalyptical times, this period that will witness the end of times accorded to Israel as a state. Note the exaggerated borders of Israel in Ezekiel 47,13-23, which, in my opinion, is an addition of the "lying pen of the scribes" (Jeremiah 8,8).

1. The Revelation explains all the Biblical prophecies

By the opening of the Apocalypse, that is to say, by its explanation as revealed by Jesus, all prior biblical prophecies regarding the period of the end of times are clarified.

The "Key" of the Book of Revelation thus opens all the prophecies that are found in the Bible (Old and New Testaments) regarding these years of the end of times, and explains them all: "Books were opened (*the Book of Revelation*), which is the Book of Life" (Revelation 20,12). It talks of, of-course, Eternal Life: it is the first Resurrection mentioned in Revelation 20,6. The Resurrection is **awarded to those who believe that Jesus has already opened the Book of Revelation**.

Considering the importance of this Key, three prophets of the Old Testament, foresaw the opening of the Book of Revelation:

1. Isaiah saw it coming from **Lebanon**: "Is it not true that, in a very short time, Lebanon will become a productive ground... that day the deaf will hear the words of **the Book** and, delivered from shadow and darkness, the eyes of the blind will see..." (Isaiah 29,17-20). It is the return to spiritual life through the opening of the Book of Revelation.

2. Ezekiel 2,8-3,11: "Open your mouth and eat ... a Book ... and it tasted sweet as honey". Compare with the open Scroll in Revelation 10,2-11. This Book Scroll was rolled, sealed, and Christ alone can open it (Revelation 5).

3. Zechariah sees a book of judgement "flying" (Zechariah 5,1-4). It is, once again, the open Book of Revelation, "flying" on the internet, penetrates everywhere and judges the consciences.

2. The Prophecies that concern the "End of Times"

One should understand the period of the end of times permitted to the State of Israel:

> Ezekiel 38,8: "Many days will pass... in the final years to come..."
>
> Ezekiel 38,16: "I myself am going to bring you (*Israel*) in the final days to come to attack my country (*Palestine*)".

Compare with:

> Revelation 1,1 and 1,3: "The time is near..."
>
> Revelation 20,7-9: "When the thousand years are over... Satan will gather Gog and Magog from the four quarters of the earth and mobilize them for war... They came swarming over the entire country (*Palestine*) and besieged the camp of the saints, the Beloved City (*Jerusalem*)..."

See also:

> Daniel 12,4-13: "Daniel, keep these words **secret and sealed** (*today opened, explained by the Revelation*) until the time of the End (*Apocalyptic time*)... you will rise for your reward at the end of time (*through the explanation of his message, which has become clear*)."
>
> Matthew 24,14-15 and Luke 21,20-36.

3. The Divine Purpose

God's purpose - **by allowing** the Jews to return to Palestine from all over the world - is to show the whole world His Glory and Omnipotence, as well as of His Messiah's: Jesus. In particular, those who have rejected Him, and have "pierced" Him (Ezekiel 38,23 / 39,21-29 / Zechariah 12,10-14 and compare to Revelation 1,7 and 18,9).

4. Gog and Magog are assembled in Palestine, from the four quarters of the earth for war

- Ezekiel 39,2 (from the extreme borders of the North: Ukraine, Russia, etc...)
- Ezekiel 38,5 (from Persia: Iran, and Ethiopia: the Falasha, African Jews of Ethiopia who settled down in Israel). Compare with Revelation 20,7-9 / Zechariah 2,10.
- Ezekiel 39,17-20 compare with Revelation 19,17-18.
- Zechariah 12,9-11 compare with Revelation 16,16.

The unexpected and very disturbing conclusion:

Gog and Magog today, is none other but... Israel itself. "You are that man(*criminal*)", says the prophet Nathan to king David (2 Samuel 12,7). The prophet Nathan of today is the Angel of the Book of Revelation who tells Israel: "You are this Beast and Gog & Magog, you are the Babylon of today and the Abomination of Desolation". The State of Israel has deceived Jews and Christians, even their almighty leaders, and the whole world. Its unexpected end is near, distressing, just as the Megiddo of yesteryears (2 King 23,29-30 / Revelation 16,16).

5. A clarifying addition

1. Torrents of rain and hail...: Ezekiel 38,22 / Revelation 16,21. It is the modern shelling and bombings.
2. Measure of the Temple: Ezekiel 40,3 / Zechariah 2,5-9 / Revelation 11,1. The measure is the Apocalyptical message.
3. The Water Source: Ezekiel 47,1-2 / Revelation 22,1. This Water of Life is Jesus Himself: John 4,13-14 and 7,37-39.
4. The doors of the Temple: Ezekiel 48,30 (only 12 doors: the 12 tribes) Revelation 21,12-14 adds 12 foundation stones (12 doors, the 12 tribes + the 12 foundation stones, Jesus' apostles). Ezekiel's Temple lacked the 12 foundation stones, the 12 apostles of "the Corner Stone", the Messiah, Jesus. This is why Ezekiel could not cross the River of Life at his time, the Messiah had not yet come (Ezekiel 47,5).
5. The name of the City: "Yahweh is here" (Ezekiel 48,35). The Book of Revelation expresses itself in these terms: "Here God lives among men. He will make his home among them; they shall be his people, and he will be their God; his name is God-with-them." (Revelation 21,1-3)

The Book of Revelation is that of the new Spiritual Life, a spiritual life regenerated (Revelation 20,12 / Revelation 22,17) from the new Heavenly Jerusalem, that of the Emmanuel, "God-with-them" (Matthew 1,23 / Revelation 21,1-3), in which no material temple is found (neither church, nor mosque etc...): "I could not see any temple in the city, since the Lord God Almighty and

the Lamb were Themselves the Temple" (Revelation 21,22). The true Temple desired by God, therefore, is not material, but the heart of true believers:

> "Do you not realize that you are God's temple and that the Spirit of God **lives among you**? ... the Temple of God is sacred; and **you are** that Temple" (1 Corinthians 3,16-17 / see also 1 Peter 2,4-6 and John 4,21-24).

See our text: "Worship and Place of Worship".

6

Open letter to Pope John-Paul II

By not revealing the TRUE content of the third secret of Fatima, you and your two predecessors have betrayed the Christ Jesus and his Holy Mother Mary.

Thus, the Words of Our Mother Mary at La Salette have been accomplished:

"Rome will lose the faith and becomes the seat of the Antichrist".

The TRUE secret of Fatima, revealed by Jesus Himself to a priest in Lebanon in 1970, contains, in substance, the two following dramatic elements that you have dissimulated through fear and diplomacy. You have thus sacrificed the testimony that you owe to Christ and to Mary the Immaculate:

1. The Antichrist, this Beast of the Apocalypse (Revelation 13) will appear. It is the State of Israel. (It is why the Virgin Mary asked that the secret be revealed in 1960. It would not have been understood before this date, considering that this State was just proclaimed in 1948.)

2. The Vatican will renounce the faith by siding with the Antichrist. (This is what you have done, “Mr. the Pope”, in proclaiming “God bless Israel”, whilst lamenting, in Jerusalem, in front of the Wailing Wall. What you have done, from fear of men and them accusing you of anti-Semitism, is contrary to what was ordained to you by Heaven.)

She is right indeed, the Immaculate Virgin, our Mother, to have revealed in La Salette that the Antichrist "will be born of a religious Hebraic woman, from a false virgin...(*symbol of Israel*); her father will be bishop”, She had also specified, to denounce the Vatican’s complicity.

In fact, John explains that "the Antichrist is the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ" (1 John 2,22). You know well that such is the case of the Zionist State of Israel, which denies that Jesus is the Christ, and still awaits a political-military messiah to establish the Greater Israel of King Solomon. This king annually received "royalties from the merchants and from all the foreign kings, 666 talents of gold" reveals the Bible (1 King 10,14-15). This is why the symbolic number of the Apocalyptic Beast "666", refers to the weight of the gold received by Solomon. And the one who has "shrewdness and intelligence will understand the number of the Beast", the Apocalypse adds (Revelation 13,18), ie, recognizing its identity (for more details see the text “The Key of the Apocalypse (Revelation)”in www.pierre2.net).

You have lost the faith, courage, and intelligence at the Vatican!

The State of Israel, as John also explains, is “this Beast who once was (*in the past)*, and now is not (*when John wrote the Revelation, having been destroyed by Titus in the year 70*), is yet

to come up from the Abyss, but only to go to its destruction." Here it is, arisen, this Beast that has seduced you, "and the people of the world, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life, will think it miraculous..." (Revelation 17,8), like you.

By recognizing the identity of the first Beast in Revelation 13, it becomes easy to recognize the second Beast that supports it, and imposes it on the world (Revelation 13,11- 17).

We denounce the bankruptcy of the hierarchy of the Catholic Church and its clergy, who have become "cesspools of impurity" according to the Immaculate Virgin in La Salette. Jesus is already in Return among the faithful believers, these sensible bridesmaids who awoke at the Cry of Midnight: "Look! The Bridegroom! Go out (*of this Church*) and meet him (*by denouncing the Antichrist*)" (Matthew 25,6). Consequently, it is Jesus Himself who directs his people. His are those who recognize the identity of the Antichrist, the first Beast of chapter 13 of Revelation. Having forgiven their sins, Jesus Himself makes of them the priests of his New Priesthood (Revelation 1,6), that of the celestial Jerusalem, in which the material temple is no longer found, "since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb were themselves the temple" (Revelation 21,22). Jesus is already back. He enters to have supper with all those who hear him knocking at their door, and open to Him at once, to have Supper with Him, and Him with them, in the intimacy of their homes, far from the ecclesiastical worship that the Savior rejects from henceforth (Luke 12,35-40 / Revelation 3,20). Such is the Universal Restoration prophesied by Peter (Acts 3, 19-21).

Yet you scorn the evangelical and Marian prophecies, contrary to Paul's precepts: Do not "suppress the Spirit, or treat the gift of prophecy with contempt!" (1Thess 5,19-21)

The Apostles of the End of Times, announced by Mary at La Salette, are already at work to retake the torch of testimony for Jesus, the Only Messiah, and the Immaculate Heart of Mary, both spurned by you and your accursed hierarchy, overtaken from hereon.

We appeal to all true Believers to rally behind Christ by disassociating themselves from you and the treacherous Clergy, "these cesspools of impurity" and engage themselves against the Antichrist which, with your "blessing", continues to crucify Jesus today, under your watch, by rejecting Him in obstinacy as the Messiah. They thus mislead Jews, Christians and Muslims.

It is necessary to have the courage, faith and love for Jesus, as prescribed in Revelation, "to prophesy AGAIN against many nations, languages and kings" (Revelation 10,11), this corpus at the head of which you are placed, you, Mister the Pope John-Paul II, disguised as a martyr.

We defy you, Mister the Pope, as well as you, the "cesspools of impurity", his collaborators at the Vatican and elsewhere, yes, we defy you in the Name of the Living Christ. We defy you to contradict, through the Holy Scriptures, and the recent revelations of the Immaculate Mother of God, in their Holy Names, what we address to you.

Pierre (05.03.2005)

Part V

The Universal Restoration

Table of Contents

1	**The Universal Trial**	**157**
2	**The Universal Restoration**	**159**
3	**Worship and place of worship**	**165**
4	**The true Baptism**	**169**

1

The Universal Trial

The Christ had predicted that the whole of humanity will be submitted, before His Return, to a great trial, the most painful of all times. Its aim is to probe the hearts, to test the secret intentions. He asks everyone to stay awake in order that this difficult and subtle trial dœs not overtake them by surprise:

> "Then there will be a **great distress** such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, nor ever shall be... (Matthew 24,21) ... Take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with debauchery, drunkenness and worries of this life, and so that day come upon you unexpectedly, like a trap. For it will come down on all those living on the face of the earth..." (Luke 21,34-35)

In spite of the multiple warnings of the Messiah, men have gone astray in debauchery, drunkenness, drugs, worries of life and all sorts of impiety. Paul predicted it:

> "In the last days there will be difficult times. People will be selfish, avaricious, boastful, arrogant and rude, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, heartless, intractable, slanderers, profligates, savages and enemies of everything that is good, treacherous, reckless and demented by pride, preferring their own pleasure to God, having the appearance of religion but rejecting the inner power of it..." (2 Timothy 3,1-5)

Jesus promised to protect those who will remain faithful during this deceitful and pitiless trial:

> "... If that time had not been shortened, no human being would have survived; but that time shall be shortened **for the sake of those who are chosen**." (Matthew 24,22)
>
> "Because you have kept my commandment to endure trials, **I will keep you safe** in the time of trial which is going to come for the **whole world**, to test the people of the world." (Revelation 3,10)

Paul confirms that Jesus will save those who are His, those who wait for Him with love and fidelity during this trial:

> "... Christ will manifest Himself a second time **to those who are waiting for Him** to bring them salvation." (Hebrews 9,28)

This elect is chosen one by one, man and woman. Jesus says:

> "I tell you, on that night (*of trial*) when two are in one bed, one will be taken, the other left; when two women are grinding corn together, one will be taken, the other left." (Luke 17,34-35)

The signs of this Universal Trial are here. This trial in itself, is a sign that the Return of Jesus is near:

> "When you will see all these things happening, know that I am near, right at the door... (Matthew 24,33) ... Look I am standing at the door, knocking..." (Revelation 3,20)

The most evident sign is the apparition of the Antichrist in Jerusalem.

The Universal Trial is followed by a Universal Restoration. Blessed are those who take part.

(See texts "The Universal Restoration", "The Signs of Christ's Return", "The Key of the Apocalypse").

2

The Universal Restoration

"... The reality is the Body of Christ!" (Colossians 2,17)

Addressing the Jews in the past, Peter said: "Repent and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, and so that the Lord may send the time of comfort. Then He will send you the Christ he has predestined, that is Jesus, whom heaven must keep till the **universal restoration** comes which God proclaimed, speaking through his holy prophets" (Acts 3,19-21).

We must underline some of Peter's important points, and meditate on them well:

"God **will send** Christ Jesus." He will send Him in the future, therefore **again**, as He had already sent Him a first time. The phrase "will send" is in the future. Heaven must then keep the Christ for a period, then the Lord will send Him, again, at the time of the "**universal restoration**". Jesus came the first time to regenerate the spiritual life, hindered by human cults, and which were never prescribed by God. He praised his Apostles for supporting Him in this work of regeneration: "... I tell you solemnly, **when all is made new** and the Son of Man sits on his throne of glory, you will yourselves sit on twelve thrones to judge the twelve tribes of Israel." (Matthew 19,28)

If a general, **universal** restoration imposes itself **after His first advent**, it is so that the Christ finishes his work of "Regeneration" at his Return. He returns thus, with a well defined mission: to regenerate, to re-put in order, "to restore", once and for all, his work, disfigured by the clergy and their eccentric cults.

"Restoration" was a well known expression of the Jews. But this, to them, always took a **political** dimension: the reestablishment of the Kingdom in Israel, from a dynasty of David with a universal Zionist empire, "Greater Israel". According to them, this restoration, of a strictly political order, should be run by the awaited Messiah. This is the reason why the Apostles themselves, did not always understand the **spiritual** restoration of Jesus, even asking him before the Ascension: "Lord, has the time come? Are you going to **restore the kingdom to Israel**?" (Acts 1,6). They still thought of restoring the Jewish **political** kingdom.

The prophet Zephaniah, on behalf of God, had already announced this restoration. Yet for Zephaniah, as for all the Jews, prophets and Apostles included, it represented nothing other than, as we have seen, the return of the Jews from exile and the restoration of David's throne: "... when that time comes, I will gather you in; I will give you praise and renown among all the peoples of the earth when I **restore** your fortunes under your own eyes" (Zephaniah 3,19-20).

In the divine intention however, this restoration is **spiritual and universal**: It is neither **political**, nor **limited** to the Israelis alone. To benefit from it, God poses a condition on the Jews, as we have noted in Peter's words: to repent and convert by believing that Jesus is the Messiah.

In reading Peter's words attentively, we conclude that God restores man through the Messiah in two steps: the first, at the physical coming of the Messiah historically 2,000 years ago, and the second at his Return. This Return is not physical, but spiritual, in the consciousness, and by specific apocalyptic events that precede it and announce it. (See the text "The Signs of the Return of Jesus").

In fact, Peter explicitly says, and this **after** the advent of Christ, that God "will send you (in the future) the Christ He has predestined, Jesus, whom Heaven **must keep** till the universal restoration comes". We must realize then, that after his resurrection, Jesus ascended to Heaven, to be "kept" until the time of the universal restoration. When this time comes, God will send him once again. But how? Again in the flesh? Off-course not! (See the text "The Return of Jesus").

1. The purpose of the Return of Christ

The purpose of this second manifestation of the Messiah, is "the Universal Restoration" (Acts 3,19-21). Now, if we talk of a **restoration**, it is because there has been a period of decadence. It is clear that Jesus' message has been disfigured over the centuries. A general restoration is needed; the initiative can only be divine. This is the purpose of Jesus' Return: He returns to entrust to some **new Apostles** - called "**angels**" in Matthew 24,31 - the task of revealing His true Face, jagged by the treasons of his ilk and the cults - so-called "Christians" - inspired by paganism.

The Return of Christ was announced by the prophecies as a certain fact. Jesus Himself had said: "I shall return..." (John 14,3). It is an absolute certitude: "For the Son of Man **is going to come** in the glory of His Father with his Angels (*the new apostles*) ..." (Matthew 16,27) He returns in the end, to restore everything in freeing the believers from the cults imposed by a mercenary clergy.

This restoration concretizes itself by the sharing of Jesus' Meal **with the family**, in simplicity, as Jesus had instituted, and as the first Christians practiced, without rites, informal, with a lot of love: "They went as a body (***with one heart***) ... they met every day **in their houses** for the breaking of bread (*the Body of Christ*); they shared their food (*the Body & Blood of Christ*) with joy and **simplicity**..." (Acts 2,46). It is for this reason that Jesus asks of us to look out for his Return: His **ardent** desire is to place us **at Table, with Him**, to share **his** Mystic Meal. This is evident where Christ says: "Look, I am standing at the door, knocking. If one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in **to share supper**, side by side with him" (Revelation 3,20). This sharing, **in intimacy**, is **ardently desired** by Him; he had said to his Apostles: "I have **longed** to eat this passover with you..." (Luke 22,15) This ardent desire has remained hidden over the centuries, just to be revealed in our time, by He Himself, in view of a universal spiritual restoration.

At the time of His first Advent, Jesus was "the revelation of a mystery kept secret for endless ages, but now so clear that it must be broadcast... This is only what scripture has predicted...", Paul wrote to the Romans (Romans 16,25-26). Today, Jesus comes back to clarify what is left of "the mysteries kept secret for endless ages" in the Book of Revelation (Revelation 10,7). It is time to consult, again, the Holy Scriptures to put a full light on God's mysterious plan (Romans 16,25 / Revelation 20,12).

The Scriptures foretell that Jesus will manifest Himself **again to explain God's ultimate designs** that remain in mystery. These designs concretize themselves in one word: Restoration. This restoration has to be done through the explanation of the Holy Scriptures. Those who do not want to bother themselves to scrutinize and understand these scriptures, will not go far. In fact, Paul wrote to Timothy: "... the Holy Scriptures–from these you can learn the wisdom that leads to **salvation** through **faith** in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is inspired by God and

can profitably be used for **teaching** (*to restore*), refuting error, for guiding people's lives and teaching them to be holy" (2 Timothy 3,15-16).

It was thus announced by the Scriptures: The Christ must manifest himself a second time. But before this happens, "The Lost One, the Enemy" must reveal itself (2 Thessalonians 2,3-4). Jesus returns to annihilate it and then **subsequently restore**, and definitively, with the aid his new Apostles, His Kingdom on Earth: "... before the Rebel (*the Antichrist*) appears openly. The Lord will kill him with the Breath of His Mouth and will annihilate him with His glorious appearance at His Coming" (2 Thessalonians 2,8). This restoration is based on the permanent Presence of Jesus Himself through the Mystic Meal in the family.

Through this new Restoration, Jesus establishes a new priesthood. All the believers, men and women, are priests and able, if they are willing, to share the Lord's Supper in their homes with Jesus because "He loves us and has washed away our sins with His blood, and made us a line of kings and **priests** to serve His God and Father..." (Revelation 1,5-6) "... with your blood you bought men for God of every race, language, people and nation and made them a line of kings and **priests**, to serve our God and **to rule the world**" (Revelation 5,9-10). (See the text: "Jesus restores the Priesthood")

This new concept of the priesthood is called "the New Heaven and the New Earth". It was ardently awaited: "What **we are waiting for** is what he promised: the New Heavens and New Earth", Peter said (2 Peter 3,13). John perceived this in a vision after the fall of the Antichrist: "Then I saw a New Heaven and a New Earth; the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now..." (Revelation 21,1). Such is the Kingdom of God on earth.

This divine Kingdom **on earth** means the cohabitation of God **with his children from hereon**. In Hebrew, this is given the word "Immanuel", which means "God with us", the symbolic name given to Jesus (Matthew 1,23). The Apocalypse, signifying the restored people, says: "Here **God lives among men**. He (*God*) will make His home **among them**; they shall be His people, and He will be their God, his name is God-with-them (*Immanuel*)" (Revelation 21,3).

Thus, God's dwelling place should no longer be understood as the Temple of Jerusalem, nor as Saint Peter's Basilica, nor as Mecca's Mosque, nor as any other religious centre in the world, Pagoda or other.

The true Temple is an assembly of believers, an international spiritual community, fervent, united by the links of love around Jesus' Table: "I **saw that there was no** temple in the city since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb were themselves the Temple" (Revelation 21,22). Paul had already said 2,000 years ago: "Do you not realize that you are a temple of God with the Spirit of God living in you? God's Temple is holy and **you are this Temple**" (1 Corinthians 3,16-17). Jesus has already commenced his Restoration in us and through us, as "The Most High dœs not live in a house that human hands have built" (Acts 7,48 / 17,24). Jesus returns to restore everything by reminding us of it.

The world destined to disappear is the so-called religious world of all forms, with their rites and cults impregnated from paganism. This old world dœs not reflect the true face of God. It will be replaced by the "New Heaven", a new and authentic spiritual concept, a better comprehension of God in his simplicity, linking man intimately and spontaneously to his Creator, as Adam before his fall.

It is a "new Earth", as it is "on the earth" that all will be renewed. All homes, all families, are invited today to become temples of God, God inhabiting the **heart of man**. In the Old Covenant, Jeremiah had already prophesied: "Within them I shall plant My law, writing it **on their hearts. Then** I shall be their God and they will be my people" (Jeremiah 31,33).

God renews the believers through the Return of Christ who opens to them a new door of salvation: "Look, I have opened in front of you a door that no one will be able to close" Jesus says (Revelation 3,8). This new door is a liberator from the futile yoke of the strictly human ritual practices. Christ's "yoke" is simple and light (Matthew 11,29-30). He is not embarrassed by the fruitless complications imposed by men, but that displease God (Matthew 15,8-9). St. Paul had warned us: "Make sure that no one **traps you and deprives you of your freedom** by some secondhand, empty, rational philosophy based on the principles of this world instead of on Christ... **why do you still let rules dictate to you**, as though you were still living in the world? 'It is forbidden to pick up this, it is forbidden to taste that, it is forbidden to touch something else'; all these prohibitions are only concerned with things that perish by their very use–an example of **human** doctrines and regulations! It may be argued that true wisdom is to be found in these, with their self-imposed devotions, their self-abasement (*false humility*), and their severe treatment of the body; but once the flesh starts to protest, **they are no use at all**." (Colossians 2,8-23)

"Reduced to slavery"; we were so by these religious, theatrical, and skimpy ceremonies. "Human reasoning" was built to justify them and to guard the fearful believers, incapable of reaching spiritual maturity. Men have complicated faith with rituals, and each with its well-defined and proper rules and gestures. The worship of God passes through some narrow forms: hands clasped or held out, stand or kneel, even crawling on the ground, special clothing, different signs of the cross, varied ways of fasting, hand kissing, etc... These religious expressions, disapproved by God, satisfy those whose faith is immature and unstable. They need such rules like a guardrail to secure them. If their faith had been mature and unshakeable, they would have understood that God desires to be **known and loved**, not "adored".

Several biblical texts urge **true believers** to reject these novice practices:

> Hosea 6,6: God says: "What I want is **love**, not sacrifice; **knowledge** of God, not holocausts."
>
> Micah 6,6-8: "'With what gift shall I come into Yahweh's presence and bow down before God on high? Shall I come with holocausts?...' What is good has been explained to you, man; this is what Yahweh asks of you: **only this**, to act justly, **to love tenderly**, and to walk humbly with your God."

Jesus declared:

> "'Believe me, the hour is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain, nor in Jerusalem... **true worshippers** will worship the Father in spirit and truth: that is the kind of worshiper the Father wants. God is spirit, and those who worship **must** worship in **spirit** and **truth**." (John 4,21-24)

Jesus also declared:

> "And eternal life is this: **to know** you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent." (John 17,3)

Vain are the various sumptuous cults:

> "This people honors me only with lip-service, while their hearts are far from me. The worship they offer me is worthless; the doctrines they teach are only human regulations..." (Matthew 15,8-20)

To restore, useless cults and endless speeches should be abandoned, non-felt by the heart. Only at this price will Christ's disciples succeed in renewing spirituality on earth, as God asks of

them. Faith, and the courage to break human taboos, are needed to "mount up higher", as is asked of us in the Apocalypse (Revelation 4,1). Cowards will not be able to free themselves from human traditions. The majority has still not yet understood what it is to worship in spirit and suffices itself with the corporal cult. As a matter of fact, true believers are those "who worship in accordance with the Spirit of God... without having to rely on a physical operation (*diverse rituals*)." (Philippians 3,3)

Those who are attracted by the cult in spirit, free themselves of the religious ceremonies "modeled by the world" (Romans 12,2). On the contrary, those who hold on to these human rites "desert the faith and choose to listen to deceitful spirits" (1 Timothy 4,1-2), which drag them "away from Jesus":

> "Live in Christ... so that if he appears, we may have full confidence, and **not turn from him** in shame at his Coming." (1 John 2,28)

We are given the choice between following the hypocrite religious chiefs, or the Christ who "knocks at our door", even today, to come in and "have supper" with us (Luke 12,36 / Revelation 3,20).

Today, each family is invited to become a spiritual Temple, this Temple "which nothing unclean may come into it" (Revelation 21,27). "Those who commit abomination and evil" exclude themselves by "choosing to listen to deceitful spirits and doctrines that come from devils" (1 Timothy 4,1-2). They thus refuse to be part of the "new spiritual Universe" (Revelation 21,5). Today, the true Passover (Easter), the crossing of the Red Sea, the passage from death to Life takes place through the Paschal meal with Jesus in the family.

The Apostles asked Jesus **when** and **where** the events of the last times should take place (Matthew 24,3 & Luke 17,37). He answered them: "Where the **body** is, there too will the vultures gather". The Body of Christ is now in the families. It is there where the hungry "vultures" gather (Revelation 19,17) to share this "wedding feast" (Matthew 22,1-14). The one who has eyes and ears, will see, will hear, and will understand the words of the Spirit (Revelation 2,11) and will live eternally (John 6,51-54).

Jesus' Meal, shared in familial intimacy, far from the fracas of the material cult and from the distraction of the rituals, was prophesied by Jesus. Believers who watch out for his Return, will open to Him the door at the first signs of his approach:

> "Be like men waiting for their master to return from the wedding feast, ready to open the door, **as soon as** he comes and knocks... He will sit them down at **table** and wait on them." (Luke 12,35-37)

It is through the Bread of Life that Jesus "passes from one to the other" at Table.

We are already at **Table** with Jesus, all of us who have already opened the door wide open to Him **as soon as** we heard his footsteps, "to **share supper**, side by side with Him" (Revelation 3,20).

The grand visible sign of the start of the Universal Restoration is, paradoxically, the reappearance of the Beast. Its Return sounded the death knell of the old world. Since then, for us, it is no longer any ritual which **restores** the **original** link with the Creator, but the sharing of the Bread of Christ in the family. Just as Jesus and the Apostles (Luke 22,14-20 / Acts 2,46), it is with simplicity and sobriety that we take this Bread of Restoration **in our homes with Jesus**, Him close to each one of us.

The Mystical Table is already served! It is a divine grace offered to the whole of humanity. It is welcomed only by hearts thirsting for truth and love. It is to them that Christ manifests

Himself. It is Her, the "Lamb's Wedding Feast Banquet", the Banquet of Life to which only the chosen answer (Matthew 22,1-14). It is the moment to wake yourself up, to do yourself violence, so to seize the Kingdom of God: "The Kingdom of God has been preached, and by **violence** everyone is getting in." (Luke 16,16 / Matthew 11,12) There is no room for the hesitant (James 1,6-7).

This is the Universal Restoration practiced

by all independent believers.

The Time to renew all has arrived.

Finished on 19 March 1994

Feast of Saint Joseph

Pierre

3

Worship and place of worship

Along the centuries, from paganism to Judaism to Christianity and Islam, men have invented cults and places of worship - pagodas, temples, churches, mosques - to worship the multitude of gods or the Unique God. The monotheists adopted pagan cults in their veneration of the Unique God: the Jews in the Temple of Jerusalem with sacrificial cults of diverse animals, incense, etc... and in the synagogues with ritual gestures; Christians in the churches, and Muslims in the mosques do the same. Buddhists, Hindus, etc... practice their cults in their various high places, pagodas etc...

When God revealed Himself to man, He repeated many times, through the prophets, that the unique cult that is dear to Him is love, the seat of this cult being a man's heart. This rendered the materialistic cults and their practice in the various places of worship - and still is today - void. Man, is still not able to detach himself from the material cult offered in stone buildings. And this, is due to different reasons, most important of which being the prestige and money they offer the religious leaders of the different cults. They like this, so to keep their "faithful" in a state of submission and ignorance, which renders them immature and dependent on various religious hierarchies.

Here are some divine interventions through which the Creator rejects the places and offerings of material cults, specifying that the unique place of worship that He agrees to, is a man's heart and the offering of his love:

1. When David wanted to construct a temple to God, God sent him the prophet Nathan: "'Go and tell my servant David, 'Thus Yahweh speaks: Are you the man to build me a house (*temple*) to dwell in? ... did I say to any one of the judges of Israel... Why have you not built me a house of cedar?' ..." (2 Samuel 7,4-13). Also, when this temple was constructed by Solomon, it was destroyed two times.

2. When Jesus came, He foretold the destruction of the temple of Jerusalem, so that the Spiritual Temple be built: "'Destroy this sanctuary (*the temple of Jerusalem*), and in three days I will raise it up.' ... He was speaking of the Sanctuary that was his Body", resurrected after three days (John 2,19-22).

3. To the Samaritan that said to Jesus: "'Our fathers worshiped on this mountain (*mount Garizim in Samaria*), while you say that Jerusalem is the place where one ought to worship.' Jesus said: 'Believe me, woman, the hour is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem... But the hour will come–in fact it is here already–when **true worshipers** will worship the Father in spirit and truth; that is the **kind of worshipers the Father wants**. God is Spirit, and those who worship must worship in spirit and truth.'" (John 4,20-24)

These words deserve a meditation: "Believe me woman", Jesus said. As it is difficult to believe in spiritual worship, this one is practiced neither in Jerusalem, nor in Rome, nor in Mecca, etc... "**True worshippers**" offer this cult in their hearts; here are "the kind of worshipers the Father wants", not man. Jesus revealed this 2,000 years ago. His disciples have not yet understood the depth of this revelation, and continue to worship God by dressing themselves in purple and practicing material worship in ignorance, in disregarding the Holy Scriptures and the biblical prophecies therein. Now, here lies the essence of worship in spirit as desired by God: a cult through knowledge and love for what God has revealed. Those who seek to educate themselves and instruct - with prudence and discernment - others (their children, their entourage, the ones who wish to listen), offer the Almighty a true adoration in spirit and truth.

4. The prophet Micah (VIIIth century B.C.) had already revealed that the unique cult desired by God is the spiritual one: love. In fact, He says: "'With what gift shall I come into the Lord's presence... with burnt holocausts, with calves one year old? Will he be pleased with rams by the thousand, with libations of oil in torrents? Must I give my first-born for what I have done wrong? ... What is good has been explained to you, man; this is what God asks of you: **only this**, to act justly, **to love** (*God*) tenderly, and to walk humbly with your God" (Micah 6,6-8). God also revealed through the prophet Hosea: "what I want is **love**, not sacrifice; **knowledge** of God, not holocausts" (Hosea 6,6).

5. The Creator also expressed Himself through the mouth of the prophet Amos: "I hate and despise your feasts, I take no pleasure in your solemn festivals. When you offer me holocausts, I reject your oblations, and refuse to look at your sacrifices of fattened cattle. Spare me the din of your chanting, no more of your strumming on harps. But let justice flow like water, and integrity like an unfailing stream" (Amos 5,21-24).

6. Jeremiah, after Micah, revealed that God had never prescribed sacrificial worship: "For when I brought your ancestors out of Egypt, I said nothing to them, gave them no orders about holocaust and sacrifice. These were my orders: Listen to my voice, then I will be your God and you shall be my people... But they did not listen, they did not pay attention... they have grown stubborn and behaved worse than their ancestors..." (Jeremiah 7,21-28).

Then, where do all these prescriptions of the Law (Torah) in the Books of Exodus, Numbers, Leviticus, and Deuteronomy come from? God answers through Jeremiah that He is not for nothing: "How dare you say: We are wise, and we possess God's law? But look how it has been falsified by the **lying pen** of the scribes!" (Jeremiah 8,8). It is therefore the biblical scribes of the past, plus the different religious chiefs of all confessions, who imagine and impose prescriptions of worship to satisfy, in the name of God, their proper pride and material interests. And this still continues today...

Jeremiah additionally reveals that God will establish **a New Covenant with His true worshippers**, of which the center is man's heart: "The days are coming–it is God who speaks–when I will make a New Covenant... Deep within them I will plant my Law, writing it **on their hearts**... There will be no further need for one to try to teach each the other, to say: 'Learn to know God!' No, they will all know Me..." (Jeremiah 31,31-34).

This New Covenant was instituted by Christ's sacrifice: "This cup is the New Covenant in My Blood..." Jesus had said (Luke 22,20).

Thus, the only worship that pleases God is the one inspired by this New Covenant. It is practiced freely today by the independent believers, in the intimacy of their homes and in simplicity, just as the first disciples of Christ did in the past (Acts 2,42-47).

It is for this purpose that Jesus, in our Apocalyptical times, himself chooses a non-traditional "kingship of priests" (Revelation 1,6 & 5,10). This category of the faithful, is formed from those who hear Jesus knocking on the door of their hearts and open to Him, so that He can

enter and share the matrimonial Meal with them (Revelation 3,20 / Luke 12,35-37). This is the best of the best worship that is desired by the Father.

7. God, in the Gospels, invites us to take conscience of the fact that the place of worship is not a building of concrete and stones, in a specific geographic place, but the heart of the believer himself:

> "Do you not realize that you are a Temple of God with the Spirit of God living among you?... God's Temple is sacred, and **you are that Temple**." (1 Corinthians 3,16-17)
>
> "The Temple of God has no common grounds with idols, and that is what we are—the Temple of the living God. We have God's word for it: 'I will make My home among them and live among them; I will be their God and they shall be My people." (2 Corinthians 6,16)
>
> "... you are citizens like all the saints, and part of God's household. You are part of a building that has the apostles and prophets for its foundations, and Christ Jesus himself for its main cornerstone. As every structure is aligned on him, all grow into one holy temple in the Lord; and you too, in Him, are being built into a house where God lives, in the Spirit." (Ephesians 2,19-22)

8. Thus, the worship to offer God is a spiritual act. It is totally different from material worship: animal sacrifices, incense, etc... St. Paul "worships spiritually by preaching the Good News of His Son" (Romans 1,9).

The Holy Scriptures reveal a new time defined as being "the New Heaven and the New Earth, and the New Jerusalem, coming down from Heaven" in which "there was **no temple in the city**, since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb **themselves were the Temple**" (Revelation 21,1 and 21,22).

9. The Holy Qur'an, in its turn, invites true worshippers to that of the spirit, and to renounce animal sacrifices in favor of piety. Speaking of sacrifices, we read:

> "Their flesh and their blood shall not reach up to God; rather, it is your piety that will reach Him." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,38)

In conclusion, the unique worship desired by God is **man's attitude**: to grow in knowledge and love of God and of man. He desires worshipers with no complexes of different rites. The unique place of this worship is the heart of the man who expresses himself around the Divine Table of Jesus in the intimacy of the homes. The Bible and the Qur'an invite us to it (see the text "Jesus restores the Priesthood").

> "When you pray", recommended Jesus, "go to your private room shut yourself in, and so pray to your Father who is in that secret place, and your Father who sees all that is done in secret will reward you." (Matthew 6,6)

The writer of these verses, as well as the readers who impregnate themselves with it, render a spiritual worship to the Eternal Father in the Temple of their souls.

> "These are the kind of worshipers the Father wants." (John 4,23)

4

The true Baptism

A young practicing Christian couple asks us to baptize their 3 months old son.

Our response:

We have stressed on the uselessness, nowadays, in this end of times predicted by Jesus, of baptism by water, in favor of that in Spirit prescribed by Jesus Himself.

In History, the ritual that preceded the baptism was circumcision for the Jews. This practice is still and in vigor with them. It is unthinkable to a Jew, just as a Muslim, to not be circumcised. Therefore, it was not easy for the Jews who believed in Jesus as Messiah to renounce this useless practice for salvation. St Paul, after believing in Jesus, had trouble convincing the Jews of the uselessness of circumcision. He teaches the Galatians: "It dœs not matter if a person is circumcised or not; what matters is for him to become an altogether **new creature**." (Galatians 6,15). "If I were still preaching circumcision, why should I still be persecuted (*by the Jews*)" (Galatians 5,11). And to the Romans: "... Circumcision is more than a physical operation. The real Jew is the one who is **inwardly** a Jew, and the real circumcision is **in the heart** –something not of the letter but of the spirit. A Jew like that may not be praised by man, but he will be praised by God." (Romans 2,28-29)

Well before Paul, the prophet Jeremiah (VIth century B.C.) had invited the Jews to the spiritual understanding of the circumcision: "Circumcise yourselves... apply circumcision to **your hearts**" (Jeremiah 4,4). And what about women who are not subject to circumcision? Do not they have a right to Eternal Life?

Circumcision, from the get-go, like baptism, is thus a spiritual notion, not physical, a symbol. It represents the purification of the soul, of the spirit, our conception of life and our spiritual engagement. And yet, can we move ahead without knowledge? Blindly thrust ourselves by ignorance? Faith is not inherited, but a personal choice due to knowledge of the Truth. The ignorance of Christ led the Jews to the physical circumcision, and the Christians to be self-satisfied with baptism by water, ignoring the spiritual dimension uniquely acquired by knowledge: "And eternal Life is this: to **know you**, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent" (John 17,3). Can we honestly believe that all the baptized are automatically saved, no matter what they have done?!

The Advent of Jesus made us pass from circumcision to baptism, because water symbolizes purification. Those who believed in Him as Messiah, evolved towards the baptism by water. And yet, Jesus had already said to Nicodemus: "... no one can enter the Kingdom of God without being born through water **and Spirit**; what is born of human nature is human; what is born of the Spirit is spirit" (John 3,5).

Through Jesus, we have evolved towards a spiritual understanding of the soul's purification.

It is true that Joseph and Mary submitted Jesus to the circumcision. But they were not yet instructed by their Son. It is also true that Jesus said to the Apostles: "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Go, therefore, make disciples of **all nations**; baptize them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and **teach them** to observe all commands I gave you. And look, I am with you always; yes, to the end of time" (Matthew 28,18-20). Jesus dœs not prescribe baptism by water but to "teach them", therefore, by the teachings that accord knowledge, as "eternal Life is this: **to know** you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent" as Jesus says (John 17,3). The clergy is suffice with catechism, a false science that dœs not carry the solid spiritual nourishment of the true knowledge by the Bible. We have known catechists who were even ignorant of how many Gospels there were, the names, and their authors.

Today, we are invited to go beyond the baptism of water, to pass from it to that of **a personal choice through knowledge**. Christians no longer know how to respond to this simple question: "Why are you a Christian (born)?" They do not really know the Christ. Would they have freely CHOSEN to be Christian if they were born in a non-Christian family? Their baptism by water is of no salutary value whatsœver in their nonchalant spiritual life; and there are of the non-baptized who lead a pure life, who will judge them. Hence, Paul said to the Jews of Rome: "The man who, in his native uncircumcised state, keeps the Law, is a condemnation of you, by your concentration on the letter and on the circumcision, actually break the Law" (Romans 2,26-29). Likewise, we say, in this same spirit, that the one who, while not being baptized, accomplishes God's precepts, will judge the baptized who fails to accomplish them.

To this young, practicing Christian couple who ask me to baptize their 3 months old son, I say:

"It is up to you to baptize him by knowledge as he grows up. Look at little 7 year old L. who holds his little Bible in his hands. He was able to find Jeremiah, the Gospel of St. John etc... He read with us. This is the real baptism working in him through his parents, the Baptism (*with 'B'*) to which the Book of Revelation invites us to recognize the Beast's identity, the Antichrist: 'There is need for shrewdness here (*of spirit, of discernment*)! If anyone is clever enough, he may interpret the number of the beast...' (Revelation 13,18). This baptism of discernment renders the spiritual death powerless over us: '... those who refused to worship the beast or his image... reigned with Christ... This is the first resurrection... the second death has no power over them but they will be **Priests of God** and of Christ...' (Revelation 20,4-6). There are therefore no more distinction between man and woman: all men, and all women who have understood the signs of the times and the Antichrist's identity, become priests capable of welcoming the Divine Savior in their homes around his Holy Table (Revelation 3,20)."

Baptism today is in spirit. As those who struggle against this Apocalyptical "Beast", the Antichrist, "have the power to turn water (*of baptism*) into blood (*of their martyrs by witnessing against the Beast*)" (Revelation 11,6). Baptism is an adult's choice, to pass onto their children through the knowledge of biblical prophecies announcing the Advent of Christ, and then, that of his enemy: the Antichrist. A commitment of one's whole earthly life to merit LIFE eternal.

But how can one get to know the Bible? The Apostle Philip, seeing the Ethiopian reading the Bible, asked him: "'Do you understand what you are reading?'" The latter replied: "'How can I, unless I have someone to guide me?' So he invited Philip to get in and sit by his side..." (Acts 8,31-39). It is after having been instructed that the Ethiopian asked to be baptized. It is incumbent therefore, to the baptized in spirit, to assume their commitment by teaching as Jesus prescribed (Matthew 28,19-20).

John the Baptist's testimony should also be added: "I baptize you with water... He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and Fire" (Luke 3,16).

It is underlined that Jesus dœs not baptize. It is his disciples who practice this rite: “though in fact it was his disciples who baptized, not Jesus himself” (John 4,2). This demonstrates that Jesus did not want to entertain the idea of a baptism of water, alien to our Father’s Spirit.

“Peter”, after his discourse at Cornelius’ house (a non Jewish Roman), “was still speaking the Holy Spirit came down on all the listeners. Jewish believers who had accompanied Peter were all astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit should be poured out on the pagans too (*without being baptized*), since they could hear them speaking strange languages and proclaiming the greatness of God. Peter himself then said, ’Could anyone refuse the water of baptism to these people, now they have received the Holy Spirit **just as much as we have**?’ He then gave orders for them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Afterward they begged him to stay on for some days.” (Acts 10,44-48) It should be noted that the Holy Spirit was already spread on Cornelius and his like, **before** they were baptized! So, what did the following baptism with water serve? Had they not already received the Holy Spirit?

The Baptism in Spirit, in this end of times, was announced by the Holy Scriptures. In his discourse, Peter reverts to Jœl’s prophecy (Acts 2,17-21 and Jœl 3,1-5): “In the last days –it is the Lord who speaks– I will pour out my Spirit on all mankind. Their sons and daughters shall prophesy... Even on my slaves, men and women (*no distinction between men and women*), in those days, I will pour out my Spirit... The sun will be turned into darkness and the moon into blood before the Day of the Lord dawns, that great and terrible Day (Matthew 24,29 / Revelation 6,12). All who call on the name of the Lord will be saved.” Who invokes the Lord, in the Spirit of the Lord, is already baptized, without passing through water, as were Cornelius and his people.

Jesus revealed this spiritual baptism when speaking to Nicodemus: “unless a man is born from above, he cannot see the Kingdom of God... what is born form the flesh is flesh; what is born of the Spirit is spirit... You must be born from above... That is how it is with all who are born of the Spirit.” (John 3,3-8)

To be born of the Spirit, is whœver:

1. recognizes in Jesus the Messiah.
2. sits themself at his Table to answer to the divine invitation (Matthew 22)
3. recognizes the signs of Christ’s Return and the identity of the Antichrist

These represent the true circumcision, and the true baptism, today.

“You are pruned (*purified, baptized*) already, by means of the word that I have spoken to you”, said Jesus to his Apostles (John 15,3). The authentic baptism, the unique valid one, is the welcoming of the Divine Word. “Let us leave behind us then”, says Paul, “all the elementary teaching about Christ and **concentrate on its completion**, without going over the fundamental doctrines again: the turning away from dead actions... **the teaching about baptisms**...” (Hebrews 6,1-3).

While we were talking, our friend D. (new among us), a baptized Christian since childhood, shows up to listen to what we had to say with regards to the baptism in Spirit. She interrupts us to tell us: “This night, I had a dream that shook me. I saw a person of light telling me: ’You have to be baptized’. I answered: ’But I have already been baptized!’ Then she saw that someone grabbed her head and plunged it into a big basin”. She understood, and we all understood that, through this dream, the Holy Spirit confirmed our teaching. The baptism of water that she had received has no spiritual valor. She has to pass through the authentic baptism: that of knowledge and personal choice.

We however baptized the child with a pedagogical spirit, especially because of the presence of certain persons among us. And this, in the same Spirit that Jesus himself submitted to at

John's baptism; He, who had no need of baptism. Peter too, baptized Cornelius and his people, who already had just received the Holy Spirit.

Henceforth, the baptism for the forgiveness of sins, is to welcome Christ who is knocking at the door of the heart as He had announced (Luke 12,35-37 / Matthew 24,33 / Revelation 3,20). He desires that we open to Him the door, to let Him in and share his Supper with his people. Jesus had said:

> "This is my Body **for the forgiveness of sins**... Drink from this, all of you, for this is my Blood, the Blood poured out for you and for many **for the forgiveness of sins**" (Matthew 26,26-28 / Luke 22,14-20 / John 6,53-58).

And here is the authentic baptism which forgives our sins and gives Eternal Life.

Part VI

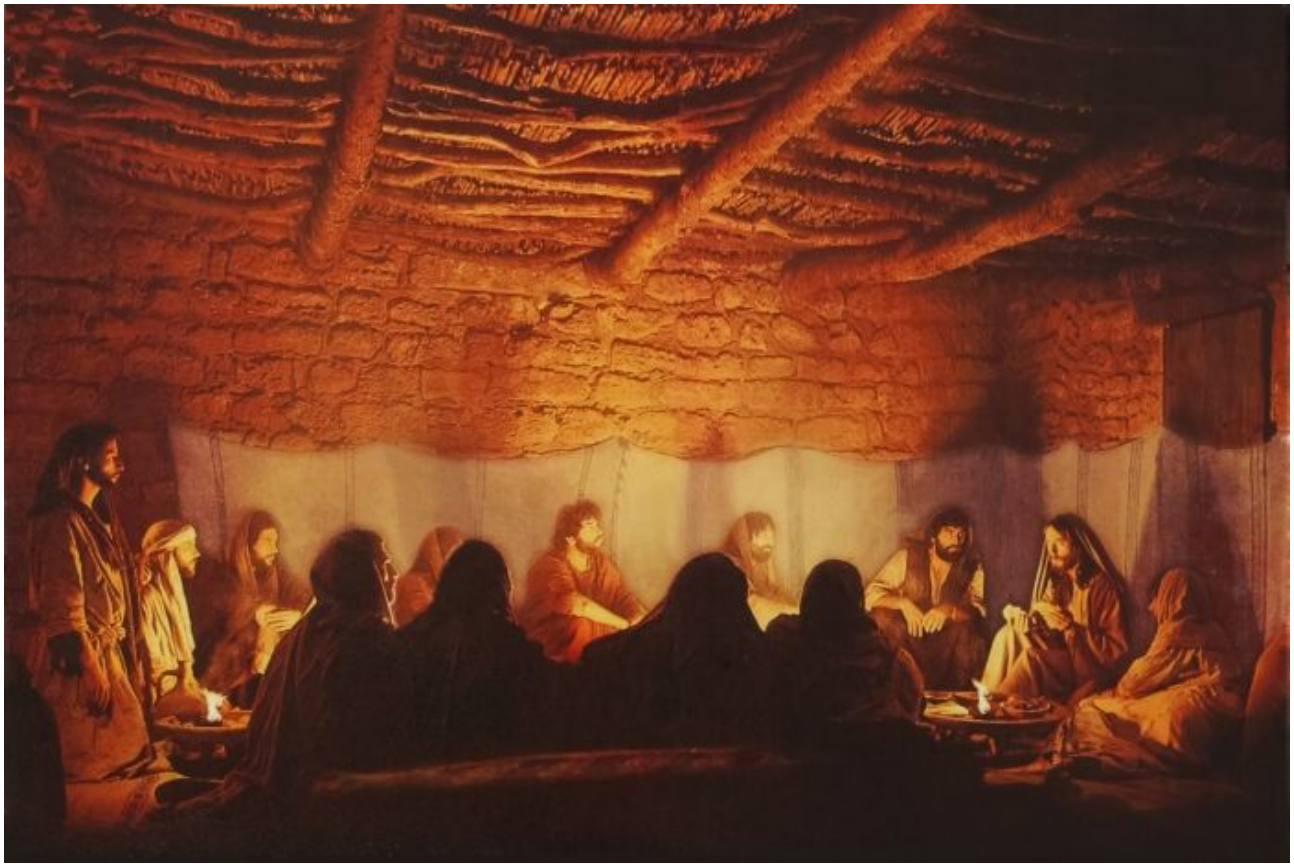
The new priesthood

Table of Contents

1	**Jesus restores the Priesthood**	**175**
2	**Bread of Life and new Priesthood**	**179**
3	**The Golden Censer**	**187**

1

Jesus restores the Priesthood



The Last Supper of Christ (from the movie "Jesus of Nazareth" by F. Zeffirelli)

Christians recur to priests in order to be nourished with the Body and Blood of Jesus. In these Apocalyptic times, Jesus returns to restore all. He institutes, in our days, an independent priesthood accessible to men and women who believe in the Apocalyptic message revealed the 13th of May 1970. In our Apocalyptic times, it is Jesus Himself who chooses his priests:

> "... He (*Jesus*) loves us and has washed away our sins with His Blood, **and made us a line of kings and priests** to serve His God and Father..." (Revelation 1,5-6)
>
> "... You are worthy to take the Scroll (*the Book of Revelation*) and break the seals of it, because you were sacrificed, and with your blood you bought men for God of every race, language, people and nation and made them **a line of kings and priests**, to serve our God and rule **the world**." (Revelation 5,9-10)

This new priesthood is open to all men and women who hear Jesus knocking at the door of their hearts:

> "Look, I am standing at the door, knocking. If one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in **to share a meal at that person's side**." (Revelation 3,20)

Already in the Gospels, Jesus had announced that at His return, He will come in and "sit down at the table" with those who open to Him the door: "Be like people waiting for their master to return from the wedding feast, ready to open the door **as soon** as he comes... I tell you solemnly, he will put on apron, **sit them down at table** and wait on them" (Luke 12,36-37).

"To share a meal" and "sit them down at table" point to the Mystic Meal of the Body and Blood of Christ. In these New Times, this Meal is taken, no longer exclusively in religious buildings, but in families who become "priests" by opening the door to Christ with love "as soon as He knocks".

This new priesthood is absolutely not convenient to traditional priests!

It is Jesus, and He alone, who has the power to transform the bread and the wine into his Body and his Blood. No man, be it a traditional priest, has this power. This latter, currently, is but an instrument of Christ. It is Jesus who, through the priest, makes himself present in the bread and in the wine, transformed, by His Power, into his Divine Body and Blood. Now, what Christ can do through the priests -often unworthy-, He can accomplish too with the Apocalyptic priests of His choice. The sole condition is to have faith in what they do, and that they do it with love.

The first Christians already shared Jesus' Meal **in the family**, with simplicity, as Jesus had instituted, without rites, without show, with a lot of love: "They went as a body to the temple **every day** but met **in their houses** for the breaking of bread (*the Body of Christ*); they shared their Food (*the Body and Blood of Christ*) joyfully and generously" (Acts 2,46).

Throughout the centuries, the different Christian Confessions have unfortunately complicated this simple practice by instituting rules, conditions, rites, worships and sacerdotal clothing **contrary to the Spirit of Christ**. The moment has come for Jesus to restore everything (see the text "The Universal Restoration").

Jesus already desires, **ardently**, to share this Meal with us, as He had in the past with his Apostles. He had said to them: "I have **longed** to eat this Passover with you" (Luke 22,15). Through this Meal, Jesus establishes and reinforces an intimate, internal relationship with his new priests: "He who eats my Flesh and drinks my Blood **lives in Me and I live in him**." (John 6,56)

It is left to each person to choose, with complete freedom and responsibility, to answer or not, to this final and divine invitation: "Everyone is to recollect himself before eating this bread and drinking this cup; because a person who eats and drinks without recognizing the Body (*of Christ*) is eating and drinking his own condemnation." (1 Corinthians 11,28-29).

With this direct link with Him, Jesus makes of us believers and priests who are independent. He thus liberates us from the clerical chains that clutch us away from Him.

How is one to proceed in order to take this spiritual Meal with Jesus?

What Jesus Himself did during the Last Supper with his Apostles should be reproduced, and to repeat the words that He had pronounced.

> He took some bread and brought it to them saying:
>
> "Take this and eat it; **this is my Body**, offered for you and for many, for the forgiveness of sins."

Then, He took a cup of wine, and brought it to them saying:

"Drink from this, all of you, for **this is my Blood**, the Blood of the Covenant, poured out for you, and for many, for the forgiveness of sins. Do this in remembrance of me." (Matthew 26,26-28 / Luke 22,19-20 / Mark 14,22-24 / 1 Corinthians 11,23-26)

The essential words are in bold font.

We take part in this Heavenly Table, at the Lamb's Wedding Feast (Matthew 22,1-14), every day in the following manner:

Gathered around a table, we place a piece of bread per person on a plate and a little bit of wine in a small cup. We reserve them for this purpose. We pray the "Our Father" and honor the Virgin Mary, our Mother, with the angel's salutation "Hail Mary..." (Luke 1,26-38) We read a text from the Holy Scriptures regularly. We make an effort to take conscience of what we are doing. (Where there is no wine, we can replace it with a fruit juice -grape juice for example- or even just water. The important factor is not the material, but the Spirit and intention).

We are putting ourselves in the presence of Our Heavenly Father, with the Messiah and all our heavenly and terrestrial families. We then pronounce the words of the above text. We take the Body and the Blood of Jesus with love and emotion, by passing the plate, followed by the cup between us. We then take the cup and rinse it with care with some water, then which one of us drinks. We then dry the cup with a special napkin (washed from time to time).

We then thank our Father for this daily gift, which confers on us the Holy Spirit. We pray to Him to keep us united in His love and service, so to spread His Light and inflame the hearts who thirst to Know Him. We pray for all those who are persecuted for the sake of Justice. Each one is free to pray for their proper spiritual needs, the sanctification of oneself and of others, for the deceased, etc...

The Holy Qur'an dœs not fail to signal the spiritual importance of this "Table" that comes down from Heaven (see the text "A look of faith at the Qur'an", chapter 5.3; The Heavenly Table).

It is a good thing that, during the day, we do some communions with the intention, or the desire, to have the Body and Blood of Jesus.

Day by day, in love and meditation, our soul drinks from this source of Divine Life:

"**Let all those who are thirsty come close**

and let all men of desire receive

the Water of Life freely."

(Revelation 22,17)

Prayer of the monk Hermann Cohen:

"May the divine Eucharist be your light, your warmth, your strength and your life!

I want that you live fully by the Eucharist; in that all your thoughts, affections, words, and actions are inspired by It."

"Jesus Christ today is the Divine Eucharist... today I am weak, I need a strength that comes to me from above to support me, and Jesus, comes down from Heaven and becomes Eucharist, this is the Bread of the strong.

Today I am poor... I need a shelter to take cover, and Jesus makes Himself a home... it is God's home, it is the gate of Heaven, it is the Eucharist...

Today I am hungry and thirsty, I need food to satiate my spirit and my heart, a beverage to quench my longing, and Jesus makes Himself wheat, makes Himself wine of the Eucharist...

Today I am sick... I need a balm, beneficent to dress the wounds of my soul, and Jesus spreads like a precious ointment on my soul by giving Himself to me in the Eucharist...

I am discouraged, He raises me; I am saddened, He rejoices me; I am lonely, He comes to stay with me until the consummation of centuries; I am in ignorance, He instructs me and enlightens me; I am cold, He warms me of a penetrating fire, but above all that, I need love and no love on earth had satisfied my heart, and it is then that He is made Eucharist. And He loves me, and His love satiates me, fills me up and makes me dive into an ocean of charity. Yes, I love Jesus, I love the Eucharist. Jesus, Jesus today, is Jesus with me... This morning, at the altar, He came, He gave Himself, I have Him, I hold Him, I adore Him. He has incarnated Himself in my hands... He is my Immanuel, He is my love, He is my Eucharist."

Hermann Cohen

Below, is an excerpt of the French book: "L'étonnant secret des Ames du Purgatoire" (The astonishing secret of the Souls of Purgatory) by Sister Emmanuel Maria Simma, "Editions des Béatitudes", 1998:

"I would like to present here, the testimony of Hermann Cohen, a Jewish artist converted to Catholicism, who deeply venerated the Eucharist.

It happened in 1864. He had left the world, and entered a very austere religious order. He worshiped, very frequently, the Holy Sacrament for which he had great veneration. During his prayers, he implored the Lord to convert his mother whom he loved so much. But his mother died without converting. Hermann grew mad with pain. He prostrated before the Holy Sacrament and, giving free course to his complaints, prayed in this way: 'Lord, I owe you all, it is true, but what did I refuse you? My youth, my expectations in the world, well-being, the joys of the family, a probable legitimate rest? I sacrificed everything as soon as you called me. My blood? I would have given it just the same; and You Lord, You, Eternal Goodness who had promised a return of a hundredfold, you have refused me my mother's soul... My God, I succumb to this martyr, the murmur is going to exhale from my lips.' Sobs stifled this poor heart. All of a sudden, a mysterious voice struck his ear and says: 'Man of little faith, your mother is saved, know that your prayers have absolute power beside me. I received all the prayers you addressed to me for your mother and my Providence took account of it at her last hour. At the moment of her death, I presented myself to her, she saw me and exclaimed: 'My Lord and my God!' So, raise up your courage, your mother has avoided damnation, and your fervent supplications will soon deliver her soul from the prison of purgatory."

We know that Father Hermann Cohen, a very short time later, learned by a second apparition, that his mother was going up to Heaven."

2

Bread of Life and new Priesthood

The “Bread of Life”

The “Bread of Life” is God, the Creator Himself! To eat this Bread, is **to introduce God into oneself, and for oneself to live in Him**. Under what form can we nourish ourselves? Jesus of Nazareth, the Messiah, explains it to us:

> “‘I am the Bread of Life. He who comes to me will never be hungry; he who believes in me will never thirst... I am the living Bread which comes down from Heaven. Anyone who eats this Bread will live for ever; and the Bread that I shall give is my flesh, for the life of the world’. Then the Jews started arguing with one another: ‘How can this man

> give us his flesh to eat?' They said. Jesus replied: 'I tell you most solemnly, if you do not eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you will not have Life in you. Anyone who does eat my flesh and drink my blood has eternal Life, and I shall raise him up on the last day... He who eats my flesh and drinks my blood **lives in me and I live in him**...' After hearing it, many of his followers said, 'This is intolerable language!' ... Jesus said: 'Does this upset you? What if you should see the Son of Man ascend to where he was before? It is the Spirit that gives Life, the flesh has nothing to offer. The words I have spoken to you are Spirit and they are Life. But there are some of you who do not believe...' After this, many of his disciples left him and stopped going with him" (John 6,35-66).

The defection of these incredulous disciples did not discourage Jesus; He pursued his plan. During the Last Easter Supper which He had with his apostles, He answers the question the Jews had asked: "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?" In fact, He took some bread, then a cup of wine and offered them:

> "As they were eating he took bread, and when he had said the blessing he broke it and gave it to them: 'Take it,' he said, '**this is my body**'. Then he took a cup, and when he had returned thanks, he gave it to them, and all drank from it, and he said to them: '**This is my blood**, the blood of the **New Covenant** poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins... Do this in memory of me...'" (Mark 14,22-25 / Matthew 26,26-29 / Luke 22,15-20 / 1 Corinthians 11,23-25).

This new Passover Meal was instituted by Jesus on the eve of his crucifixion, in the form of Bread and Wine which incarnate his Body and Blood, and consequently his Soul and Divine Spirit too. This Meal, because of its simplicity, deceived a great number of Jews who expected a royal messianic Meal, triumphant and extravagant, at the scale of an ambitious earthly Zionist kingdom. This deception was predicted by the prophet Hosea:

> "Neither **threshing-floor** nor **wine-press** will nourish them, the **new wine** will disappoint them" (Hosea 9,2).

The threshing-floor -where wheat was battered in the past- is the symbol of the Bread of Life. The vat -where grapes were left to ferment into wine- is the symbol of the Wine of Life. Those who turn their backs on Jesus, nourish themselves neither from the heavenly produce of the threshing-floor, nor the vat. As a consequence, they deprive themselves of Eternal Life. Such is Jesus' Divine Message to the world; a Message permanently valid, and will remain so until the end of the world.

The Qur'an comes, in its turn, to invite believers to this heavenly Table:

> "The Disciples, said: 'O Jesus son of Mary, can your God send down upon us a Table (*served*) **from Heaven**?' Jesus said: 'Fear God, if you are true believers.' They said: 'We wish to eat from it so that our hearts are at peace, and we know that you have spoken the truth to us, and we be **witnesses** (*witnesses of the Table*) thereof.' Jesus son of Mary said: 'O God our Lord, send down upon us **a Table from heaven** (*served*), and it shall be a feast-day **for first and last among us**, and a miracle from You, and grant us Your bounty (*nourish us*) - You are the best of providers.' God said: 'I shall send it down **upon you**. Who among you disbelieves hereafter, I shall torment him with a torment the like of which I shall torment no other human being.'" (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115)
>
> "The Righteous are in Bliss, upon couches, watching. On their faces you would discern the radiance of Bliss. **They are given to drink from a Wine, sealed**, whose

seal is musk - for this let contenders contend - and whose mixture is from Tasním: A fountain, from which those **intimate shall drink**. Sinners (*those who refuse to drink from this sealed Wine*) would once laugh at the faithful..." (Qur'an LXXXIII; Those who Shortchange,22-29)

(See the text "A look of faith at the Qur'an", chapter 5.3; The Heavenly Table).

The Lord Jesus ascribes so much importance to this Bread of Life, that He Himself appeared to Paul in order to reveal to him the Institution of the Eucharist and its Content. It is not through the apostles that Paul learned this vitally important fact, but by the Lord Himself, as he declared to the Corinthians:

"For this is what **I have received from the Lord**, and in turn passed on to you: that on the same night that he was betrayed, the Lord Jesus took some bread, and thanked God for it and broke it, and he said, 'This is my body, which is for you; do this as a memorial of me.' In the same way he took the cup after supper, and said, 'This cup is the new covenant in my blood. Whenever you drink it, do this as a memorial of me.' Until the Lord comes, therefore, every time you eat this bread and drink this cup, you are proclaiming his death, and so anyone who eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord unworthily will be behaving unworthily toward the body and blood of the Lord. Everyone is to recollect himself before eating this bread and drinking this cup; because a person who eats and drinks without recognizing the Body is eating and drinking his own condemnation." (1 Corinthians 11,23-29).

This Heavenly Bread and Wine initiated a new priesthood which required a new generation of priests. In fact, under the Torah, priests slew animals which they then offered to God. They were, so to say, "sacred butchers", a worship that was repeatedly and explicitly denounced by the prophets as being detested by God, rejected by Him:

Psalm 51 (50),16-17: "Sacrifice gives You no pleasure, were I to offer holocaust, you would not have it. My sacrifice is this broken spirit, you will not scorn this crushed and broken heart."

"For when I brought your ancestors out of the land of Egypt, I said nothing to them, gave them no orders, about holocaust and sacrifice." (Jeremiah 7,22).

"With what gift shall I come before the Lord, and bow down before God on high? Shall I come with holocausts, with calves one year old? Will he be pleased with rams by the thousand, with libations of oil in torrents? ... What is good has been explained to you, man; this is what Yahweh asks of you: only this, to act justly, to love tenderly and to walk humbly with your God." (Micah 6,6-8)

"Since what I want is love, not sacrifice; knowledge of God, not holocausts." (Hosea 6,6)

"Provide yourself with words (*of repentance*) and come back to God. Say to Him: 'Take all iniquity away so that we may have happiness again. Instead of bulls we will offer you our words of praise'..." (Hosea 14,3).

"I hate and despise your feasts, I take no pleasure in your solemn festivals. When you offer me holocausts, I reject your oblations, and refuse to look at your sacrifices of fattened cattle... But let justice flow like water, and integrity like an unfailing stream." (Amos 5,21-24)

The Qur'an too, confirms the futility of animal sacrifice and stresses rather on prayer and submission to God:

> "Their flesh and their blood shall not reach up to God; rather, it is your piety that will reach Him" (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,37).

Jesus, **by the sacrifice of his own body**, instituted a new generation of priests edified by the offering of his person on the cross. In order to be affiliated to his priesthood, one must no longer slay and sacrifice animals, but to succeed in sacrificing one's own vices, in slaughtering egoism and materialism:

> "Jesus said to his disciples: 'If anyone wants to be a follower of mine, let him renounce himself and take up his cross and follow me.'" (Matthew 16,24), "Go and learn the meaning of the words: What I want is mercy, not (*animal*) sacrifice." (Matthew 9,13)

Thus, as we have already seen, it is during the Last (Passover) Supper in which Jesus instituted his new priesthood, that of the **New Covenant** announced by the prophets, by Jeremiah in particular:

> "See, the days are coming—it is God who speaks—when I will make a **New Covenant** with the House of Israel (and the House of Judah), but not a covenant like the one I made with their ancestors... Deep within them I will plant my Law *this New Covenant*, writing it **on their hearts**." (Jeremiah 31,31-34)

This messianic Meal was already -and prophetically- symbolized two thousand years before the Messiah, with the bread and wine offered to our Patriarch Abraham by Melchizedek. This latter was, at one and the same time, "king and priest of the Most High God", all when not being part of, nevertheless, Abraham's family (Genesis 14,17-20). This is the reason why David, under divine inspiration, announced, a thousand years before the Advent of Jesus, that the Messiah will be, at the same time, king and "priest for ever", but "according to the order (*non-Jewish*) of Melchizedek" (Psalm 110,1-7), and no longer according to the Jewish order of Aaron, the brother of Moses.

St Paul, in his letter to the Hebrews (chapters 5-7), explains this revolution in the Jewish priesthood; he summarizes it as so:

> "But any change (*by Jesus*) in the priesthood must mean a change in the Law as well. (*the Jewish religious Law*)" (Hebrews 7,12)

This change in the priesthood was concretized in the Bread and Wine of Life offered by Jesus at his mystical Table. The first Christians did not fail to share their Meals in simplicity. There was no ostentatious worship, but on the contrary: ample Biblical knowledge and prophecies concerning the Messiah's Advent, a profound faith in Jesus, and genuine fraternal love. They shared this Heavenly Meal around the spiritual Table in the intimacy of their respective homes:

> "These remained faithful to the teaching of the apostles, to the brotherhood, to the **breaking of Bread** (*the Bread of Life*) and to the prayers... **met in their houses** for the **breaking of Bread** (*the Bread of Life*); they shared their food (*spiritual*) gladly and generously." (Acts 2,42-46)

In the current Apocalyptic era, which we have already entered into, because of the Antichrist's apparition, this messianic priesthood -disfigured by the traditional churches along the centuries- is restored in order to regain its original purity, free from all pagan-folkloric rites. Hence appears the beating Heart of the Christian faith: the Body and Blood of the Messiah present in the Bread and Wine. This "reality is the Body of Christ." (Colossians 2,17-18)

The Book of Revelation invites us to restore the priesthood as it was practiced by the first Christians: in simplicity and with the family. Jesus Himself invites us to do so:

> "Look, I am standing at the door, knocking. If one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in to **share Supper**, side by side with him." (Revelation 3,20)
>
> "He (*Jesus*) loves us and has washed away our sins with his Blood, and made us a line of kings, priests to serve his God and Father" (Revelation 1,5-6) ... "You (*Jesus*) bought men for God of every race, language, people and nation, and made them a line of kings and priests, to serve our God and to rule the world." (Revelation 5,9-10)

So, Revelation invites us to restore Jesus' Priesthood. The Apocalyptic priests are thus, they too, of the order of Melchizedek. They are therefore independent and liberated of the traditional churches, just as Melchizedek was independent of the Jewish Community. Such is the Spirit of liberty and independence to which Jesus invites us to in the Revelation. The practice of the Apocalyptic priesthood was already revealed by Jesus in the Gospel as a sign of his Return:

> "Be like people waiting for their Master **to return**... ready to open the door as soon as He comes and knocks... I tell you solemnly, He will put on an apron, **sit them down at Table** and wait on them..." (Luke 12,35-40)

This "Table" is the "Tree of Life set in God's Paradise" and this mysterious "Hidden Manna", that Jesus promises to offer his faithful in the Book of Revelation (2,7 & 2,17). In order to benefit of this Holy Manna, one must imperatively believe in the interpretation of Revelation as revealed by Jesus Himself in 1970 (See the text: "The Key of the Apocalypse").

The invitation to the restored priesthood is addressed to men as well as to women, married or single, young or old. Women are entitled to this priesthood on the same basis as men are. In the Kingdom of God inaugurated by Jesus, there is neither man nor woman; all are equally called upon to be children and priests of God, without any discrimination, be it gender, racial or other. Those who prevent married men of entering the priesthood, and priests from getting married, are "hypocrites" condemned by God Himself. This prevention shows the **necessity for a restoration**. It is one of the evident signs of the end of times. Paul says indeed, that the Holy Spirit firmly condemns these "hypocrites" who, during the last times will forbid marriage:

> "**The Spirit has explicitly said** that during the **last times** there will be some who will desert the faith and choose to listen to deceitful spirits and doctrines that come from the devils; and the cause of this is the **lies told by hypocrites** whose consciences are branded as though with a red-hot iron: **they will say marriage is forbidden**..." (1 Timothy 4,1-5).

Four important points should be revealed in this text:

1. It is the **Holy Spirit** Himself, and not Paul, who reveals this renouncement of faith; and He reveals it **clearly**.

2. This abandonment of faith occurs during the last times. It is an important sign which confirms what Jesus had already predicted of this unfortunate period of the last times (see Matthew 24,3-25). In fact, at the dawn of Christianity, priests and even bishops got married. Paul said: "A bishop should be blameless, **the husband of one wife**..." (1 Timothy 3,2 / Titus 1,5-6)

3. Those who forbid marriage are the same "who desert the faith and choose to listen to deceitful spirits". It is these hypocrites who often fall into the traps of various vices and immoralities, which are clearly self-evident today.

4. The restoration of the monastic vocation is an inevitable consequence of what has just been exposed. This vocation belongs to the past, though it produced souls that were authentically

holy, and who had joined it in good faith. However, it is not in line with God's plan. In fact, Jesus, at the eve of his crucifixion, addressed the Father in front of his apostles in this way:

> "Father... I passed your word on to them... **I am not asking You to remove them from the world**, but to protect them from the evil one... As You sent Me into the world, **I have sent them into the world**" (John 17,14-18).

We are sent **into the world**, not on the sidelines in the world, not in its outskirts. Life "in the world" with the faith is a challenge; dare to face it! It is among our brothers and sisters in the world that we, believers, can be of help, the souls of good faith who are placed in our paths by Divine Providence. "You are the light of the world", Jesus says, "No one lights a lamp to put it under a tub, but on a lamp-stand where it shines for everyone in the house..." (Matthew 5,14-16) Those who, on the contrary, hide themselves from the world are similar to the bad servant of the parable, a coward who, from fear of the master, hid his only talent instead of having the courage to multiply it by having faith in God. His fate was being rejected by the Master (Matthew 25,14-30).

The messenger of the Book of Revelation, this "**powerful** Angel... with a rainbow over his head" (Revelation 10,1-2), is sent with the **power** to invite believers to the Table of Jesus, without the resort to any ecclesiastical authority. God Himself confers this power to him through the "Small Open Scroll (Book)", the Book of Revelation that he presents to mankind, **open**, ie clearly explained by Jesus. The "Rainbow" in fact, is the sign of the Covenant between God and man (Genesis 9,12-17). This means that this "Angel" has a sacred mission of proclaiming on behalf of God, **the restoration** of the New Covenant. This restoration is already under way; it had been prophesied by Peter; it is directed by Jesus Himself, who is already on his Return, spiritually:

> "Then He (*God*) will send you the Christ he has predestined, that is Jesus, Whom Heaven must keep till the **universal restoration** comes..." (Acts 3,21)

This "Restoration" is "the New Heaven and New Earth", the "New Jerusalem", in which John sees no material temple (Revelation 21,22). The reason for this is that the priesthood has evolved towards the interior of families, and that the true notion of the temple is none other than the faithful themselves. Any other material, religious building becomes thus obsolete and useless to true believers.

(See the texts: "Worship and Place of Worship", "Jesus restores the priesthood", "The Universal Restoration").

Finally, the purpose of the different churches is to gather the faithful around the Body of Christ, the "Eucharist" as some call it, this Bread of Life. And yet, God wants to introduce it today into the familial or the personal intimacy. May His Holy and Divine Will be done!

Humanity in its entirety is invited to take part in this restored priesthood. All those who believe in the Apocalypse revealed by Jesus on the 13th of May, 1970 -men or women of all races, languages, and color- have only to say "yes" to become priests of Jesus. This consecration to the priesthood is undergone spontaneously and in intimacy between the Christ and the person who answers positively to His Call. It is in this way therefore, put simply, that we have access to this holy priesthood and respond to the invitation of Jesus' Wedding Feast (Matthew 22,1-14). The ones who deprive themselves of this are those who do not believe and who deliberately refuse to respond to the call; or "those without a wedding garment". It is therefore no longer needed to pass through any religious hierarchy whatsœver, neither through the rite of imposition of hands. The Authority who confers this priesthood is the Living Christ Himself who lays his blessed hands on his believers, since it is He Himself who has "washed us from our sins and made of us a line of kings **and priests** to serve his God and Father" (Revelation 1,6 & 5,9-10).

For those who have a mature faith, unique true worship embodies itself today in the Bread of Life Whom, we can freely access in our homes. Such are the Restoration and the First Resurrection of which the Book of Revelation speaks. “Happy and blessed are those who share in the First Resurrection; the second death cannot affect them but they will be priests of God and of Christ...” (Revelation 20,6). Paul is quite right by saying:

> “The reality is **the Body of Christ**... Let no one deprive you of it...” (Colossians 2,17-18)

3

The Golden Censer

My beloved, this is so that you become aware of your spiritual dimension.

I would like to share with you a thought around chapter 8 of the Apocalypse concerning the Angel "who had a golden censer, came and stood at the altar (*of sacrifices*). A large quantity of incense was given to him to offer with the prayers of all the saints on the golden altar (*of God*) that stood in front of the throne; and so from the angel's hand the smoke of the incense went up in the presence of God..." (Revelation 8,3-4)

You know that in chapter 6 of the Apocalypse, John sees, "**underneath** the altar the souls of all the people who had been killed on account of the Word of God, for witnessing to it (*in favor of God*)." (Revelation 6,9) These souls were slaughtered **underneath** the altar, therefore in secret.

To understand these altars, we should remember that there are two altars in the Temple:

1. A big altar, that of the holocausts, on which sacrificed animals are offered, then burnt (Exodus 27,1-8 / 1 Kings 8,64).

2. A much smaller altar on which perfume or incense is offered (Exodus 30,1-10 / Revelation 9,13).

It is underneath the large altar of holocausts that John sees the slaughtered souls. On this altar, the priests offer the flesh, the beastly grease offerings that were denounced at many reprisals by the prophets. Arrogantly, the Jews offered them anyway despite everything because it was lucrative.

Today, on this mysterious altar, human victims who bear witness to God are offered: the **martyrs** whom we know.

The Angel comes and places himself at this sacrificial altar with a **golden** censer:

> "Another Angel, who had a **golden censer**, came and stood at the altar. A large quantity of incense (*so that he offers them to God*) was given to him to offer with the prayers of all the saints on the **golden altar** that stood in front of the throne; and so from the angel's hand the smoke of the incense went up in the presence of God and with it the prayers of the saints." (Revelation 8,3-5)
>
> The prayer is compared to the incense that rises towards God: "My prayers rise like **incense**...", demands the psalmist to God (Psalm 141,2).

Therefore, the smoke of incense which rises towards God, means that the Angel's prayers are granted by God, but on the altar of incense. Today, you know that these slaughtered souls underneath the altar are those whom you are acquainted with. And we, we take the prayers of these saints and we offer them on the altar of incense with a **golden censer**.

A detail to note: the utensils of the temple should have been manufactured in bronze, not gold (Exodus 27,3). Bronze is an inexpensive mixture of copper and bronze. And yet, the Apocalyptic censer is precious gold. This Golden Censer is **the Body of Christ** that we receive in communion every day. It is on this living Altar that we offer all our prayers for these souls, our brothers.

Yesterday, during the Lord's Meal, I say to Jesus: "I confide all these prayers to You, speak Yourself to the Father, You know how to speak to Him better than us, better than I, You know what to tell Him. We know that He will grant it to You." Then I see, the frozen face of the devil, with an expression of pure dissatisfaction, pinching his lips, glaring at me hatefully.

In order for a prayer to be granted, it is necessary that our request is in view with our Father, according to the desire of the Holy Spirit, according to His Will. We cannot ask the Father to answer a prayer that is in opposition to his Will. We cannot pray for the triumph of the Beast.

Our prayers should, firstly, be **in conformity to the Will** of our Father, and secondly, that they are **in Christ**:

> "I tell you most solemnly, anything you ask from the Father he will grant **in my name**.", Jesus says (John 16,23).

This is where our participation becomes explicit: all our brothers who resist against the Beast do it in justice, but do not fight in the name of Jesus. It is therefore a half-run path. We, **we fight** with prayers and **in the name of Jesus**. We ask the Father for victory against the Beast **in the name of Jesus**. Such is the fight -the prayer- that the Virgin invites us to in La Salette: "Fight, children of Light, you, small number that see; because the Time of times, the End of ends is here!"

We are therefore not discouraged, even when our enemy seems triumphant. It is but an illusory victory, a false momentary triumph. Those who resist till the end, they alone will be saved (Matthew 24,13 / Revelation 22,6). It is on the cross that Jesus triumphed! I am ready to die, me too, like the two Witnesses of Revelation, knowing that, by my death, I vanquish death imposed by the satanic plan of the Beast in this world (Revelation 11,7-11 / 12,11).

Our prayer is not necessarily granted on the battlefield in Palestine, but elsewhere maybe, in us already and around us, in our respective families, in our professional and social lives, at all levels: political, media, artistic, musical, moral, scholar, fashion, drug-related, etc... (read "The Protocols of the Elders of Zion"). In Marienfried (Germany 1946), the Virgin says: "I want to do miracles in the souls, in secret, until the number of sacrifices is complete. It is given to you to shorten the days of darkness. Your prayers and yours sacrifices will annihilate the image of the Beast. Then I will be able to reveal myself to the world for the Glory of the Almighty... Ask graces for individual souls, for your communities, for the people".

Our prayers sanctify us personally, unite our respective families in love, and purify our societies. They are an individual and collective exorcism. We prayed for the fall of Mitterrand's socialism in France. This regime legitimized immorality, drugs, wild music, etc... I estimate that with Lionel Jospin's fall, for example, our prayers against the Beast were granted as one of their international ramifications. This is already a victorious struggle, till death, against the Beast. It is here where God waits for us, and this is our holy mission. Here, we are almighty because, as Paul says: "**There is nothing I cannot master** with the help of the One who gives me strength." (Philippians 4,13) We can, we must ask all with confidence. It suffices to want what

God wants to be like Him, almighty. I am almighty because **I want what God wants**. If I ask Him to accomplish whatever He wants, if my will is in conformity with the one of our Father's, and if I ask in the name of Jesus, then I am a man, almighty. Yes, solemnly, there is **nothing I cannot do** with the One who fortifies me.

We have had the first fruits of our prayers granted by what occurred on October 16 in Lebanon, with regards to the waters of the Wazzani. Our Mother, the Virgin, had asked me, a few years ago, to pray for water. I had not understood at that time what She wanted to say. A certain number among you know this. When the problem arose, when the Israeli defiance manifested, we prayed together, as I had asked of you. We were heard because, thereafter, we had understood that "water" designated what went on in the South of Lebanon, in the Wazzani River. Lebanon assumed the challenge, and water was pumped in spite of all the Israeli threats. Our prayers were beneficial for something. One should know how to face the challenge. But one should face it in the Name of God, by His power, according to His will, according to His will and His plan, and in the Name of Jesus. It is precisely what you and I did together:

> "If two of you on earth agree to ask anything at all, it will be granted to you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three meet **in my name**, I shall be there with them", says Jesus (Matthew 18,19 -20).

And we were, you and I, more than two persons. This is our "Golden Censer!"

> "There is no personal, familial, national or international problem that I cannot resolve if it is asked of me by the rosary", Mary said in one of her apparitions.

We are, in this world, a mustard seed, as Jesus says (Matthew 13,31). God's Kingdom is a mustard seed, but this seed will produce its fruit, and the birds of the sky will one day come and take shelter under the light that we emanate. We are buried here in this world, and those who "seek shall find". It is not for us to run right and left, we are like a hidden treasure (Matthew 13,44), a hidden pearl in a field and those who search, find, because it is God who is going to make them find it.

Our Father wants to fulfill the prayers of men. But furthermore, man must be worthy of asking according to His desire, according to God's plan! God wants goodness, we must desire what is good in Jesus Christ. Then, we become worthy of offering the Sacrifice of the Son to the Father.

The Virgin, in La Salette, had said: "There are no more persons worthy of offering the Stainless Sacrifice to the Eternal for the sake of the world". We, the Witnesses of the Apocalypse, by divine grace, are worthy. Do you believe that the pope is worthy of offering the sacrifice? The pope prays, asks, wants it to be granted. He said "God bless Israel!" That God not grant him! And He will not grant it! Here is someone who dœs not pray according to the will of God. He, the pope, wants that Israel be blessed, yet this is contrary to God's plan. The pope can even ask this in the name of Jesus Christ; he would not be granted because such is not God's will. Our role, on the contrary, is to ask for the fall of the Beast; and we ask this in the Name of Jesus Christ. Here, then, God intervenes, and here, God is Almighty. Therefore, we, by our prayer, we are, also, almighty.

I saw the demons taunting God because the majority of mankind follows the Beast. And **no one** asks for its fall **in the Name of Christ**. Here we must intervene with our prayers against the Beast in the Name of Christ. The Father had told me for a long time, and at two reprisals: "Joan (*Joan of Arc*) liberate your Land" (*Free your Homeland*). Our homeland is the whole earth: God's Kingdom on earth.

We already thank the Father for the water, yet this is but the first step. It is necessary for us to continue to pray for water because the Israelis do not want to stop solely on water. They want their empire. For me, I see a sign that our prayer is being fulfilled by the simple news that we heard yesterday about North Korea, which declared that they possess the nuclear weapon. This declaration upset and unsettled the Americans, the "almighty" allies of Israel. We are going to see how far this is going to affect the political-military situation concerning Iraq and how the Beast will fall by God's power: "The Lord God has condemned her, and he has great power." (Revelation 18,8)

It is here where our role fits in. We take the Golden Censer, filled with the prayers of the saints on the altar of holocausts, and pass from this altar onto that of the incense, to offer our prayers perfumed with Christ's Holy Name, and the prayers of the saints martyred at Jennine, Raffah, in Nablus, etc... by Sharon who "was drunk, drunk with the blood of the saints, and the blood of the martyrs of Jesus" (Revelation 17,6-8). And this perfume of our prayers rises up towards the Father. Every time I see destroyed homes, and mutilated children, massacred by the Israeli army, I offer on the altar of the Eucharist, the prayers and the cries of these souls, our brothers. I offer them in **Jesus' Holy Name** because I know that this is in Our Father's plan. If I think that Israel's triumph is in Our Father's plan, I would never do such a prayer, well to the contrary, I would pray like the pope: "God bless Israel". But I cannot ask God to glorify Israel. It would be against His Plan, even if I do it in the Name of Jesus Christ.

This blind man who God heals at Jesus' demand, answered the Jews and Pharisees who did not want to believe in Jesus:

> "Now here is an astonishing thing! He has opened my eyes, and you do not know where He (*Jesus*) comes from! We know that God doesn't listen to sinners, but God does listen to people who are devout and **do his will**." (John 9,30-31)

We should be religious, that is to say spiritual, to believe, to have faith; and if, more so, we want to accomplish God's Will, that we ask it in the Name of Christ, then God will certainly grant it to us. Jesus Himself said:

> "Whatever you ask for **in my name** I will do, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son." (John 14,13)

We ask the Father, in the name of Christ, for the end of this injustice on earth. We know that we will obtain it and that we will re-establish God's Kingdom on earth, so that the Father is glorified in the Son. We are for Hezbollah; and yet, they do not ask in the name of Christ, but only in the name of Justice. These militants ignore that it is Jesus who, through them, make war against the Beast "with Justice" (Revelation 19,11). Our part, in this holy war, is to submit their prayers, daily, in "the golden censer... on the golden altar that stood in front of the Throne" (Revelation 8,3). This Altar is the Body and Blood of Christ, Jesus Himself in the Bread of Life.

Jean says:

> "We are quite confident that if we ask him for anything, **and it is in accordance with his will**, he will hear us; and, knowing that whatever we may ask, he hears us, we know that we **have already been granted** what we asked of Him." (1 John 5,14-15)

One should have the faith to **already** possess what was asked for. As long as it is made in faith and in our Lord Jesus. This is our mission, and from it, the importance of our selection in this world. You must become aware of your importance, of the importance of this small mustard seed, unknown in the world.

Our celestial mission is symbolized by the Angel who "took the censer and filled it with fire from the altar, which he then hurled down onto the earth; immediately there came peals of thunder and flashes of lightning, and the earth shook." (Revelation 8,5) The fire from the altar is God's wrath against the two Beasts. It is at the Angel's request that this Holy and Divine Wrath descends upon the world. I implore the Father, in Jesus' Holy Name, to release his just anger on this world rendered wicked by the two Beasts. Join me.

This overflowing Anger which will fall on the earth at the request of the Angel who stands at the Golden Altar is also symbolized elsewhere:

> "I heard a voice come out from the four horns of the **golden altar** in front of God... 'Release the four Angels that are chained up at the great river Euphrates'." (Revelation 9,13-14)

> "And the angel **in charge of the fire left the altar** and shouted aloud to the one with the sharp sickle, 'Put your sickle in and cut all the bunches off the vine of the earth; all its grapes are ripe.' So the angel set his sickle to work on the earth and harvested the whole vintage of the earth and put it into a huge winepress, the winepress of **God's anger**..." (Revelation 14,17-20)

The voice which comes "from the four horns of the golden altar" in the first text, is that of "the Angel in charge of the fire who left the altar". These two angels represent the same angel who invokes God's Anger. In the first text, the Angel asks that the fire of Divine Wrath is released on the Euphrates; in the second text, the sickle of Divine Wrath for the harvest, always at the request of the same Angel, of the earth. You realize that all this is happening around the Euphrates, twice mentioned in Revelation 9,14 and 16,12.

Our prayers were granted for the water in Lebanon. Our prayers will also be granted for the fall of the two Beasts, who, in adventuring on the Euphrates, ignore that "God influenced their minds to do **what he intended**, to agree together to put their royal powers at the beast's disposal until the time when God's words should be fulfilled." (Revelation 17,17) God's words will be fulfilled in the definitive fall of the Beast, which "will be **burned** right up. The Lord God who has condemned her, he has great power." (Revelation 18,8)

The Euphrates has already taken place on January 16-17, 1991. History continues and the two Beasts menace it a second time. You can already recognize the "three foul spirits come; they looked like frogs... going out to all the kings of the world to call them together for the war of... Armageddon" (Revelation 16,12-16). Do you not recognize Sharon-Bush-Blair?!

Let us all thus unite together in prayer around the Golden Altar and offer our most beautiful incense to our Father; ask, in the Name of Jesus, the destruction of the two Beasts, so that Christ's Kingdom is finally, re-established on earth (Revelation 11,15-18). Beware of false humility which can make you believe that you are unworthy to ask our Father. Now, it is no longer a question of worthiness. It is a question of making war, of **triumphing in the Will of God** to make his Name triumphant, to glorify his Name with our prayers. And God will fulfill our demands, as Revelation 10,7 says:

> "At the time when the seventh angel is heard sounding his trumpet, God's secret intention will be fulfilled, just as he announced in the Good News told to his servants the prophets."

We are these servitors of God, today's prophets.

And in Revelation 11,18:

> "The nations were seething with rage and now the time has come **for your own anger**, and for the dead to be judged, and for your servants the prophets, for the saints and for all those who worship you, small or great, to be rewarded. The time has come to destroy those who are destroying the earth."

The time has come to reward these servants, the prophets: us in this case! We must know this.

> "Now heaven, celebrate her downfall, and all you saints, apostles and prophets: God has given judgment **for you** against her." (Revelation 18,20)

Yes, it is **our cause**, to judge in condemning this Beast. Our cause is that of Gods'. So, we will soon rejoice; on the other hand, there will be weeping and mourning:

> "Mourn, mourn for this great city, Babylon (*Jerusalem*), so powerful a city, doomed as you are within a single hour. There will be weeping and distress over her. . . " (Revelation 18,10-11)

I feel very honored by the fact that my cause (which is yours too) is that of God's. I am very honored and very proud. I continue to pray; pray with me and we will triumph, we know this already, as we ask it **in the name of Christ, in the Father's will and for His divine glory**.

It is incumbent upon us to resound on earth, the Triumphant Clamor (Revelation 10,3) of the seventh angel after the definitive defeat of the forces of evil, incarnate in the two Beasts:

> "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever." (Revelation 11,15)

The Kingdom of God will be established by us on this earth, thanks to our prayers, **thanks to the Golden Censer**, thanks to the incense which we offer on the Golden Altar of God: the Body of Christ.

Let us take our role **very seriously**, it is very effective; God our Father counts on us! Here is why Christ also tells us:

> "When these things **begin to take place**, stand erect, hold your heads high, because your liberation is near at hand." (Luke 21,28)

It has already begun! Feel strong! Hold your heads up high!

It is we who throw the fire from the Altar onto the earth poisoned by the two raging Beasts and Satan (Revelation 20,7). This fire of Divine Wrath will soon devour, very soon, the Antichrist and its satanic plans.

We are here, well installed! Jesus already triumphs through us!

PS: Recommendation to meditate John 16,24:

> "Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and so **your joy will be complete**."

*God is in need of our explicit, **well-targeted** prayers. He relies on us; we will not abandon Him! Our prayer is targeted against the plan of the "Protocols of the Elders of Zion." We will triumph and will establish the Kingdom of our beloved Jesus on earth: we are already at its commencement. Our joy will soon be perfect! Blessed be Our Father. Amen!*

Part VII

Unity of the Bible and the Qur'an

Table of Contents

1	**A Look of Faith at the Qur'an**	**195**
2	**Reactions to the Book "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an"**	**263**
3	**The Apocalypse according to Muhammad**	**281**
4	**The action of the Holy Spirit according to the Bible and the Qur'an**	**307**
5	**Qur'anic verses about the Messiah Jesus**	**315**
6	**Christ God in the Gospel and the Qur'an**	**317**

1

A Look of Faith at the Qur'an

This book is translated by the author from the original Arabic text. It is addressed to all those who seek to liberate themselves from the yoke of fanaticism imposed by the various tarnished religious traditions and arbitrary prejudices. It is dedicated to all men of good faith, thirsty for truth and justice, in search of a fraternity.

"**Show me your proof if you speak the truth**."

(Qur'an XXVII; The Ant,64)

DEDICACE

TO MARY,

OUR MOTHER THE VIRGIN

MOTHER OF THE MESSIAH

TO FATIMA,

MOTHER OF THE BELIEVERS,

AND

TO THE INDEPENDENT BELIEVERS

OF ALL RELIGIONS, RITES AND RACES.

Two birds of the same species represent the Bible and the Qur'an

1. Introduction

Most people believe that there is a difference between the Qur'an and the Bible. Nevertheless, the divine Inspiration is one in the Bible and the Qur'an. God, who inspired the Bible, Old and New Testaments, has equally inspired the Qur'an. The latter confirms the authenticity of the Bible. The difference therefore, is not in the Inspiration, but in **the interpretation**. God says in the Qur'an:

> "O people to whom the Book (*the Bible*) has been revealed, believe in what We have revealed (*the Qur'an*), **confirming** the truth of that which you already have before (*the Bible*) ..." (Qur'an IV; The Women,47)

This book is a succinct study of the authentic concept of the divine Inspiration. It is an invitation to open oneself, with faith, to the Qur'anic Inspiration. And through this, to the Gospels and the Torah, attested by the Qur'an. (*The Qur'an employs the word "Torah" for the whole collection of the Books of the Old Testament.*)

It is a look of faith at the divine Inspiration in general, to assemble believers together by discovering **the unity, of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration**. In fact, the Qur'an confirms its two predecessors, the Torah and the Gospel, and testifies that God is the only and unique Source of the Bible and Qur'an:

> "Our God and yours is One God, and to Him we submit." (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46)

(*The word "submit" is the translation for the Arabic word "Muslim". Islam means Submission (to God)*)

Yet we find that religious confessions have divided Christians and Muslims from age to age, through their inherited traditions. This division, due to the same human traditions, is not limited to the Muslim and Christian communities, but has won over the hearts of each of these two sisterly communities, separating Christians from Christians and Muslims from Muslims. It is why I advise readers to be open with objectivity to the contents of this book, raising themselves above the mentality of the rites that he or she belong to; to leave behind all narrow and confessional mentalities, as the aim of this study is to liberate oneself from the spirit of confessional clans and spiritual racism, which has unconsciously infiltrated into each one of us. We cannot free ourselves from this unhealthy spirit, except through the **knowledge** of what God has **really** revealed in the inspired Books. This knowledge only, can liberate us from the chains of tradition and prejudice, which deviate us from the teachings of the Bible and Qur'an.

These traditions and prejudices have penetrated, with time, men's veins, and are passed down from father to son, and accepted without their authenticity or rectitude being discussed. Some "believers" hold on to them so tightly, to the point of killing any and all opposition, because they consider these vain traditions as untouchable truths, without even making sure of their truthfulness. We have all suffered from this state of affairs, not knowing that these traditions do not have any divine foundations.

It is therefore important to convince oneself of the necessity of reverting to the Bible and the Qur'an to be able to render count of the truth or the falseness of these rumors, spread by some to provoke intrigue, as the Qur'an correctly notes:

> "It is He who sent down the Book (*the Qur'an*) upon you. In it are verses precise in meaning: these are the very heart of the Book. Others are **ambiguous**. Those in whose heart is waywardness pursue what is ambiguous therein, seeking **discord** and seeking to unravel its interpretation. But **none knows its interpretation save God**, while those deeply rooted in knowledge say: 'We believe in it (*the Qur'an*). All is from our Lord'. Yet none remembers save those possessed of minds." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,7)

Certain religious leaders have given themselves the right to monopolize the interpretation of the Divine Inspiration. And yet, the Inspiration is the monopoly of no man. According to the verse mentioned above: "none knows its interpretation save God", and it is He, "God who guides" his chosen, as the Qur'an also says in chapter XLII; Deliberation,52.

In fact, scholarly religious Jews have granted themselves the right to interpret, and they alone, the Bible, preventing believers from applying the messianic prophecies -though very clear- that they find, to Jesus.

Some religious leaders and Christian theologians equally monopolize the right to interpret the Gospels, refusing to apply explicit prophecies therein to denounce the unjust Israeli entity, the obvious target of these prophecies. This guilty attitude -which is a counter testimony to Jesus- is due to the Christian solidarity with Israel and international Zionism, although denounced by St John as the Antichrist to emerge (1 John 2,22).

Likewise, many Muslim leaders and scholars monopolize the right to interpret the Qur'an in favor of a strict tradition which suits them. They expose personal, and not divine, interpretations which allows a fanatic and separatist spirit to show. By doing so, people are prevented from understanding the Qur'anic verses independently of their narrow conceptions, so distant from the divine intention. They stop at "ambiguous" verses, and interpret them in their favor "to sow discord".

The Qur'an imposes on believers to open up to the sacred issues, starting from knowledge of the "**Luminous Books**", God having inspired them as a guide. Man should not therefore

thoughtlessly follow any recommendations of the nature that cause dissension without the recourse to a "**Luminous Book**", as the Qur'an commands:

> "Among people is one who argues about God, without knowledge, and follows thereby every rebel demon... Among people is one who argues about God, without knowledge, without a Luminous Book." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,3 & 8)

This is why, in our discussion, we have recourse to two "Luminous Books", the Bible and the Qur'an, so that our faith is not built on a quicksand of rumors that render us prey to "every rebel demon", and fanatic. We want to build our faith on the rock of knowledge and certitude. Then, we flourish, because we would be exposed to the rays that spring from the divine source, and not be submissive to mere human fables and traditions. The latter is a type which condemns, and have no foundations whatsœver in the "Luminous Books". It is the reason why they were a failure, by producing the bitter fruits of division between brothers. The Divine Intention, on the contrary, is to assemble believers together through a Unique Inspiration; not to separate them with traditions which God disapproves of.

> "Lord, Expand my heart..." (Qur'an XX; Ta Ha,25)

However, the heart can only bloom whence liberated from the yoke of ignorant faith, the fruit of deadpan traditions. If we aspire for salvation, we must strip ourselves of this unhealthy faith, to embrace real faith, built on knowledge of the "Luminous Books". This knowledge will be our guide in our discussions on divine matters.

To understand the genuine spiritual part of Islam, we must be aware of the enormous abyss that separates the Qur'an from the Muslim majority. This abyss has an equal too: the separation between the Bible and the vast majority of Jews and Christians. The responsible for this drift are followers of rituals and of worshiping traditions, anxious in safeguarding a religious heritage that is human, a material cult at the expense of worship "in spirit and truth", prescribed by Jesus (John 4,24).

The Prophet Muhammad says in his "Noble Discussions":

> "The time will come for men when the only thing left of the Qur'an will be its picture and from Islam its name. They claim to belong to Islam, yet they are most far from it."

The late Sheikh Muhammad Abdo also says of it:

> "What we are currently seeing of Islam is not Islam. We have retained from the works of Islam save a semblance of prayers, fasting and pilgrimage, and a few words **deviated** in part of their meaning. People have arrived to the point of stagnation of which I have mentioned, because of the heresies and fables that have contaminated their religion, considering them as religion. May God protect us from these people and their calumnies on God and His religion, for all who reproach Muslims today, do not belong to Islam. It is something else which they have called Islam." (Excerpts of his book: "Islam and Christianity")

The Messiah, likewise, poses a question to his Apostles on faith in the last days:

> "But when the Son of Man comes, will He find faith on earth?" (Luke 18,8)

He warns us that the love of God will disappear from the hearts of many, because of injustice and impiety which will prevail at the end of times (Matthew 24,12). This is why He warned believers in saying:

> "It is not those who say to me, 'Lord, Lord', who will enter the Kingdom of Heaven, but the person who does the Will of my Father in Heaven. When the day comes many (*false believers*) will say to Me (*in seeing my anger at them*): 'Lord, Lord did we not prophesy in your name, cast out demons in your name, work many miracles in your name?' Then I shall tell them to their faces: I have never known you; away from Me, you evil men!" (Matthew 7,21-23)

The Apostle Paul, he too, certifies this in his letters:

> "... that in the last days there are going to be some difficult times. People will be self-centered and avaricious; boastful, arrogant and rude... heartless... They will keep up the outward appearance of religion but will have rejected the inner power of it..." (2 Timothy 3,1-5)

Thus, Divine Inspiration warns us against vain and superficial practices everywhere, to which many believers are attached. This illusionary worship is fruitless in the eyes of the Divine Judge, who dœs not accord his mercy because of such acts which come from pagan inspirations, but is touched by the goodness, love, and effort He sees us providing, to come to know truth and practice justice.

In the Evangelical Inspiration, the criteria of faith at the end of times is the apparition of a "Beast" announced by the Apostle John in the Book of Revelation. This "Beast", the Antichrist, is the incarnation of the evil forces and injustice in the world. It appears in Palestine; up to the heart of Jerusalem (Revelation 11,2 & 20,7-9), where it assembles its army and its subjects "to make war", not peace. The criterion of faith resides in the degree of enthusiasm set in fighting this Beast. The stronger the faith, the more dœs spiritual discernment grow in recognizing the identity of this monster, and intensifies one's commitment to fight to the death. On the contrary, an unsteady or absent faith leads man to submit themselves to the Beast by saying, before its apparent power: "Who can compare with the Beast? Who can fight against it?" (Revelation 13,4). The Evangelical Inspiration announces the Good News to believers of their victory over the Beast, the Antichrist.

I have revealed and demonstrated in my book: "The Revelation unmasks the Antichrist", that the Israeli entity is this "Beast", which has amassed its Zionist troops from the four quarters of the earth... for war... in Palestine. The State of Israel, this "substitute", created from many bits and pieces, built on crime and blood, symbolizes injustice and evil. It is on the road to ruin.

Today, real believers are those who discern the identity of the "Beast" of Revelation and understand that it is the incarnate of "absolute evil", according to the expression of Imam Moussa Sadr, who adds: "To collaborate with Israel is a sin". Nowadays, a believer is one who rises against God's enemy, the Zionist post in Palestine, which occupies all its territory and spreads its injustice up to the South of Lebanon.

This Apocalyptic "Beast" is the redoubtable measure through which God probes the hearts of believers. It condemns those who collaborate with it, and forever bless the noble and courageous hearts who fight against it with faith. Thus, the unity among all believers today involves their unity against Israel, the enemy of God and Jesus, His Messiah. The fight against the State of Israel is equivalent to a new baptism.

The Qur'anic Inspiration has equivalently announced the apparition of a **Beast** at the end of times:

> "When the Decree falls upon them (*the unbelievers*), We shall bring up a Beast from the earth who will speak to them. But mankind is not convinced by Our signs." (Qur'an XXVII; The Ants,82)

It is also the "Beast" of Revelation (chapters 13 & 17). Muhammad announced in his "Noble Discussions" of the apparition of the Antichrist and his like in Palestine, "pouring in from everywhere", as is the case with the Jews. The Prophet continues in saying that they would cross the Lake of Tiberius, and that these "charlatans" will mislead many believers. The true believers will fight them and will triumph. I demonstrate in my book "The Antichrist in Islam", the relationship between this "Charlatan Messiah" and the Israeli entity, backing my arguments by the "Noble Discussions", collected from the works of Sheikh Sobhi Saleh, "Manhal el Waridin".

Many false doctrines have infiltrated amidst the ranks of believers, implanting themselves as indisputable and unquestionable traditions. Among those are:

1. the claim -to which a large number of Christians believe- that the Qur'an contradicts the Gospel
2. the claim -to which a large number of Muslims believe- that the Gospel is falsified and that there is contradiction between the four Gospels.

Some Muslims do not lend their faith to the Gospel under the pretext that it was written after the Messiah's Ascension. They ignore that the Power of God's Inspiration stops neither at the physical presence of the Messiah in the world, nor in a specific time or place. All these ideas demonstrate the ignorance and infantilism of people capable of believing in such nonsense.

We wanted, in this study, to enter the world of Inspiration through the door of the Qur'an. Through it, we reach the Bible. It is so, that we discover the unity of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration. It is the reason why we do not understand why those who believe in one of the two Books, fight those who believe in the other. It is illogical to accept one without the other.

2. The Qur'an is an Arabic text of the Bible

The trap, into which both Christians and Muslims fell into, was to consider that the Qur'an's religion opposes that of the Bible. The Qur'an is not responsible for this misunderstanding. On the contrary, it presents itself as a resume of the Biblical message, inspired to Muhammad, in "manifest Arabic Speech", addressed to the inhabitants of the Arabian Peninsula, as they did not have -like the people of the Bible- holy messengers to inform them. The Qur'an says:

> "It (*the Qur'an*) is indeed a Revelation from the Lord of the Worlds, brought down (*from Heaven*) by the Trustworthy Spirit, upon your heart (*Muhammad*), so that you may be a warner, in **manifest Arabic speech**. It (*the Qur'an*) **is also in the Books of the Ancients** (*the Bible, of the Jews and Christians*)". (Qur'an XXVI; The Poets,192-196)

It should be noted that the Qur'anic Inspiration is already found in the Bible, which precedes the Qur'an. The Qur'an, therefore, dœs not differ from the Bible, since it emanates from it. The only difference is that it was revealed in "manifest Arabic":

> "So also did We send it down as an **Arabic** code of law" (Qur'an XIII; Thunder,37)
>
> "Thus have We revealed to you an **Arabic Qur'an**, in order that you warn **Mecca**, the Mother of Cities, and **its surroundings**" (Qur'an XLII; Deliberation,7)
>
> "Rather, it (*the Qur'an*) is the Truth from your Lord, to warn a people to whom **no Warner had been sent before you**, that they may be guided." (Qur'an XXXII; The Prostration,3)

In spite of these clear verses, some fanatics, desiring to convert humanity into a fundamentalist Islam, rise "to defend" the Qur'an, proclaiming that it is not only for Arabs, but for the whole world. They should rather refer themselves to the Qur'anic texts where Inspiration is addressed to the **Arabs of "the Mother-city**". Nevertheless, and in a very different spirit, we support that the Qur'an is effectively a light for the whole world, and its message is nothing but the Biblical one. This is apparent in the aforesaid verse:

> "It (*the Qur'an*) is also in the Books of the Ancients" (Qur'an XXVI; The Poets,196)

Muhammad, like all the prophets, was sent as a universal guide, well beyond the religious confessions of today.

The word "Qur'an" in Arabic means a reading, this Holy Book being an Arabic "reading" of the Bible of which the original is in Hebrew (for the Old Testament) and in Greek (for the New Testament). The Arabs of Muhammad's epoch were ignorant of these two languages. They justified their ignorance of the Bible on the pretext of their incapacity to read. They also claimed, with pride, that if they had known the message of the Bible, they would have been -because of their superior intelligence- more erudite than the Jews and the Christians. To cut these arguments short, God thus inspired the Qur'an "in manifest Arabic language", to inform them of the content of the "Books of the First". In fact, God says:

> "Lest you should say: 'The Book was only revealed to two communities before us (*the Jews and the Christians*), and we were unschooled in their religious learning'; or lest should you say: 'If only the Book had been sent down upon us, we would have been more rightly guided than they are', manifest proof (*the Qur'an*) has now come to you from your Lord, a guidance and a mercy. What greater sinner than he who calls the lie to the revelations of God and turns away from them? We shall recompense those who disdained Our revelations with a wretched torment in return for their disdain." (Qur'an VI; Cattle,156-157)

The verses of the Qur'an -which is an Arabic version of the Bible- have been "molded" with precision, in an Arabic style and mentality, adapted to the Arabs:

> "Behold a Book (*the Qur'an*) whose verses are made distinct: an **Arabic** Qur'an (*a reading*), to a people who have knowledge... Nothing is being said to you (*Muhammad*) **that was not said to messengers (*biblical*) before you**... Had We revealed the Qur'an in a foreign tongue, they (*the Arabs*) would have said: 'If only its verses were made clear! What? Foreign **and Arabic?** (*so to understand it*)' Say: 'To those who believe (*so, the Arabs*), it (*the Qur'an in Arabic*) is Guidance and Remedy'..." (Qur'an XLI; Made Distinct,3 & 43-44)

Just as the Qur'an is a Biblical reading fashioned for the Arabs, this work which I have translated from the Arabic is aimed at presenting to the West, the Qur'anic message shaped for the Western mentality.

The Qur'an, which is an Arabic reading of the Bible, dœs not add anything new or contrary to the latter, since God reveals to Muhammad that "nothing is being said to you that was not said to messengers before you", as reported in the verses above.

The Qur'an, however, **dœs not entail the whole Biblical message**, as God says to Muhammad:

> "We sent messengers before you, **some of whose stories** We narrated to you, and some We have not..." (Qur'an XL; Forgiver,78)

The prophets and Apostles who are not mentioned in the Qur'an are mentioned in the Bible. It is the reason why I said that the Qur'an presents itself as a **summarized Inspiration** of the Bible, and dœs not differ from it in its essence.

This is why, during the time of Muhammad, some Muslims asked some Christians to become Muslims, whence the former answer that they are Muslims before the Qur'an; the word Muslim in Arabic means: resigned to God:

> "They to whom We brought the Book (*The Bible*) before this present Revelation (*the Qur'an*) believe in it (*the Qur'an*). And when it is recited to them, they say: 'We believe in It; It is the truth (*that comes*) from our Lord. **We had indeed been Muslims before it**. These shall be **paid their wages twice**..." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,52-54)

Notice the expression "We had indeed been Muslims before it". This means that the Christians did not hesitate in declaring themselves Muslims, submitted to God, **before the revelation of the Qur'an**. The attitude of the Qur'an and of Muhammad, was to grant a "**double reward**" to these believers who, without renouncing their Christianity, recognize, and without restraint, Muslims just as Christians. The logical conclusion that comes out from these verses, is that Islam, in the Qur'an's view, is nothing save another name for Christianity. This is confirmed by the Qur'an Itself:

> "He (*God*) chose you and did not burden you in religion; it is the religion of your father Abraham, and it was he (*Abraham*) who before now (***in the Qur'an, as in former Scriptures***) called you **'Muslims'**, in order that the Prophet might witness on your behalf..." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,78)

During a visit to a so-called Muslim society, I was engaged in a discussion in which I say: "I am a Muslim before the Qur'an". One of the fundamentalist religious leaders present became very angry and says: "These words are blasphemy!" I answer: "The difference between the Qur'an

and yourself, is that you judge my words as blasphemy, whereas the Qur'an, on the contrary, blesses me for proclaiming this and grants me a double reward". This is just one of a multitude of examples I experienced in various places, so-called Christian or Muslim. These experiences have taught me to discern between what is authentic faith and religious chauvinism.

As a witness to the unity of Islam and Christianity, let us quote these examples:

1. The Qur'an considers the Apostles of Jesus as Muslims, who came into the world seven centuries before it:

   > "When I inspired the **Disciples** to have faith in Me and in My Apostle, and they said: 'We believe, so witness that we are **Muslims** (*submission*).'" (Qur'an V; The Table,111)

   (*French translations of the Qur'an sometimes mention "submitted", sometimes "resigned" for the Arabic word "Muslims".*)

2. Abraham, who came twenty seven centuries before the Qur'an, is considered a Muslim by the Qur'an:

   > "Abraham was neither Jew nor a Christian, but a man of pristine faith, a **Muslim** (*submitted*)..." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,67)

3. The prophet Muhammad says in the Qur'an:

   > "And I am the first of **Muslims**." (Qur'an VI; Cattle,163)

The official interpretation reported by "Al Jalalein" explains that Muhammad is the first Muslim **among the Arabs**.

(*The Al Jalalein interpretation of the Qur'an is officially admitted to be the authoritative interpretation in the Muslim and Arabic worlds*).

The Qur'an consoles the heart of every true believer in the quoted verses of chapter XXVIII, The Narration, which relates the openness of the Christians of that time to the Qur'an, and the **double** blessing poured on to them by it. Where can we find, today, in a fanaticized world of various cults and rituals, such a grandeur of the soul from one side or the other? If a Christian dares to affirm today, that he is a Muslim before the Qur'an, he would arouse against him the anger of many Christians, and traditional Muslims. Here appears the abyss between God's original design, and deviant human traditions.

The Qur'an commands Muslims:

> "Do not argue with the People of the Book (*the Bible*) except with the best (*of arguments*), save the wicked among them, and say: 'We believe in what has been sent down upon us (*the Qur'an*), **and sent down upon you (*the Bible*). Our God and yours is One God**, and to Him we submit.'" (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46)

A Muslim therefore, **must** believe in the Bible. He must strive, incessantly, with a pure heart, in discovering the "**best of arguments**" to support this faith. This is the "Straight Path" (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha,6).

To be Christian or Muslim is thus two names for the same truth. Because, to be Christian means to witness that Jesus is truly the Messiah, and this is what the Qur'an attests; to be

Muslim, is to give oneself to God, to submit to Him, and this is the attitude that every true Christian should have.

We regret, and are astonished, of the behaviors of some Muslim countries which ban the Bible within their borders. Do they not know that the Qur'an condemns them? The Qur'an dœs not preach another religion, nor dœs it reveal another God other than the One of the Inspiration, who is found in the Bible. Those who are able to understand this simple truth do a giant leap in the Way of God.

Some think that the Qur'an dispenses the Bible and gœs so far as to despise it. Others suffice themselves with the Bible and disdain the Qur'an. Each one or the other has their arguments and pretexts. All thus fall into the trap of religious racism, breaching God's commandments in all the inspired Books.

The Qur'an has never claimed of being a substitute of the Biblical Scriptures, but brings closer, Jewish and Christian readers to the latter:

> "O People of the Book (*Bible*), you follow no religion unless you practice the Torah and the Gospel." (Qur'an V; The Table,68)

The Qur'an pushes the Arabs themselves in knowing the Bible; God says to Muhammad:

> "Time was when you knew not what the Book was (*the Bible*), nor faith, but We brought it forth as a light by which We guide whomever We will." (Qur'an XLII; Deliberation,52)

In spite of the testimony, repeated numerously, of the Qur'an in favor of the Bible, several Muslim scholars have interpreted the Qur'anic verses without recurring to the Bible. For this reason, their interpretations are alien to the spirit and logic of the Inspiration, carrying the seeds of dissension and separation between believers. The Qur'anic Inspiration is found in the "Books of the first", and hence is not isolated from the Biblical Inspiration. The Prophet Muhammad did not know "the Bible and the faith", so God revealed to him the Qur'an to instruct him on the Biblical message in Arabic.

Whœver reads the Bible and the Qur'an with objectivity, without prejudices, will render count of the parity of the two messages and two Inspirations, and will grow in wisdom and insight.

Some narrations related in the Bible are found in the Qur'an. And the Qur'an uniquely reports, of Biblical narratives starting from creation, up to the last days, passing from Noah, Abraham, the twelve tribes, the breaking of the Covenant by the Jews, and the Messiah Jesus, son of Mary. Why then, must one further himself from one of the two Books, since the Bible contains an additional Light which explains the Qur'anic Inspiration?

A great number of people discuss religion, and devote themselves to it with enthusiasm, yet this ignorant enthusiasm is not enlightened with the substance of the Inspired Books; they thus entangle themselves in the nets of fanaticism. Such an attitude is an abomination in the eyes of God and his prophets.

Whœver wants to discuss religion should know how to lay back and closely consult the Bible and the Qur'an before launching himself into a dialogue, which a fanatic transforms into a contest and a fight. Divine Inspiration, on the contrary, commands us to discuss with the "Best of Arguments" and comportments. How many religious leaders trample over this Qur'anic commandment, ignoring the Books, and digress from the Inspiration, even in its name? They thus sow discord amidst the ranks of believers, brothers.

Following these reflections, we thus understand the essence of Islam from the definition that the Qur'an gives. We thus strip it of the traditionalist ideas -added like parasites throughout the ages and events- which have disfigured the purity of its traits.

We have perfectly understood that, in the eyes of the Qur'an, the Muslim:

> "Whoso surrenders his face to God, and acts righteously, has held fast to a Handle most secure." (Qur'an XXXI; Luqman,22)

Such is the essence of Qur'anic Islam. Now, it is for good that we submit to the Bible, as God is found in it just as in the Qur'an. Happy are those, whomever they may be, who submit to God by reading his Books and believe in them. They "held to a handle most secure".

Here, it is for us to raise the following fact: it was impossible for the Arabs, before Muhammad, to study the Bible because it was written in Hebrew and in Greek. Today, the Bible is translated in Arabic and many other languages understood by Arabs (like English). They no longer have any pretext to ignore it.

In the spirit of what was said to the people of the Bible, we tell the people of the Qur'an today: "You will attain nothing until you observe the Torah and the Gospel", because without them you will be unable to grasp the Divine Spirit in the Qur'an (see Qur'an V; The Table,68).

Indeed, the plenitude of the Qur'anic Spirit cannot be understood without referring to the Bible, which is the source.

We believe that the Judaism of the Torah, the Christianity of the Gospel, and the Islam of the Qur'an have one and the same essence. We do not hesitate to proclaim our faith in Islam and its noble Prophet Muhammad. We owe it to them, to affirm our testimony to God, the Messiah and the Gospel.

We want, through this study to instill, and without compromise, the spirit of mutual understanding and harmony between true believers of all confessions, in exposing total agreement between the Bible and the Qur'an.

My companions and myself, well aware of the difficulties and persecutions that we will face from the extremists of different confessions, have nevertheless took an oath to go forward with patience and determination. In the name of God, we tread our path, ignoring all the narrow and fiery interpretations made by troublemakers. We have sought tirelessly, to search for the "Best of Arguments", and not to lose sight of it, so to satisfy God alone and our conscience, treading along this "Straight Path" of spiritual salvation.

Believers from all spiritual currents and all religions who will be able to free themselves from prejudices against the Holy Books, will discover with joy that they are sons of the same God, that they are brothers and friends, after having long thought that they were mortal enemies.

3. The Principles of the Study

Our study of the Divine Inspiration is based on the following unchanging principles:

1. Reference to the Qur'anic text itself.
2. Research of the spiritual meaning of the text.
3. The divine pedagogy in the Inspiration.
4. Unity of the Inspiration.

By respecting these principles in the study of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration, we are able to enter the divine intention and finally discover the unity of the two revelations.

3.1 The reference to the Qur'anic text

God demands believers to be prudent in their search of spiritual truths. He asks them to always refer to the Inspired Books and ignore rumors propagated by troublemakers. God warns us by saying:

> "Among people is one who argues about God, without knowledge, without guidance, without a Luminous Book." (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,8)

The Luminous Book that we have as a reference to understand the spirit of the Qur'an is the Qur'an itself, supporting our arguments by this Inspired Book and by the Bible, in order to manifest the unity that exists between the Inspired Books. It is intentional that we do not pay any attention to the vain protests of those who dwell on superficial controversies, wasting their time and ours.

This necessity of referring to a Luminous Book was sensed by the Apostles of the Messiah themselves, to convince the Jews that Jesus was truly the Messiah announced by the prophets of the Old Testament. In fact, the Evangelical Inspiration says that the Jews who believed in the Messiah have

> "... welcomed the Word (*announced by the Apostles*) very readily; **every day they studied** the Scriptures to check whether it was true." (Acts 17,11)

The Messiah had acted in the same way with His Apostles after His resurrection:

> "Then, starting with Moses and going through all the prophets, he explained to them the passages **throughout the Scriptures** that were about Himself." (Luke 24,27)

Sensible believers must therefore constantly refer to the luminous books if they seek solid guidance in order to base their faith on knowledge, following the Apostles' example, their predecessors.

3.2 The search for the spiritual sense of the text

God commands us to always search for **the spiritual meaning** of the inspired texts, putting us on guard against the trap of literal and restricted interpretations that deviate from the divine intention. Divine Inspiration's goal is to inflame our hearts and to stimulate our interest for eternal spiritual life, and which gœs beyond corporal life. That is why the Qur'an, after the Gospel and the Torah, incites us and increases our awareness to tie ourselves **to the spirit** through the letter. In fact, the Qur'an says:

> "Among people is one who worships God **to the letter**. If good befalls him, he grows content with it. But if an ordeal befalls him, he turns his face about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,11)

We find the same warning in the Gospel, in a different style:

> "God has given us the qualifications to be the administrators of this new covenant, which is not a covenant of written letters but of the Spirit: **the written letters bring death**, but the Spirit gives life." (2 Corinthians 3,6)

The Messiah advises us not to understand Inspiration literally, not to stop on the literal sense, but to elevate ourselves to the Divine Intention that manifests itself by prophetic words:

> "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer. The words I have spoken to you are Spirit and they are life." (John 6,63)

The Old Testament too, invites us to go beyond the letter to rejoin the Spirit. We cite as an example, circumcision and fasting. The prophet Jeremiah (VIth century BC) says with regards to circumcision:

> "Circumcise yourselves for Yahweh, apply circumcision **to your hearts**." (Jeremiah 4,4)

This great prophet had thus understood that the divine intention on circumcision was aimed at the purification **of the heart**, not the removal of the foreskin; a spiritual act, not physical, which washes the soul of all impure thoughts and tendencies. That is why St Paul says again about this:

> "To be circumcised or uncircumcised means nothing: what does matter is to keep the commandments of God." (1 Corinthians 7,19)

Indeed, those who observe God's commandments

> "In Him have been circumcised, with a circumcision not performed by human hand, but by the complete stripping of your body of flesh." (Colossians 2,11)

Such is the spiritual circumcision done by the hand of God to purify the soul through repentance and grace. This cannot be compared to the physical circumcision, performed by human hands, incapable of cleansing the soul of its impurity.

Circumcision, fasting, sacrifices, pilgrimage, etc... are all "**ambiguous**" symbols that evoke spiritual realities; they make up part of the "**ambiguous**" which should be interpreted spiritually, not literally, as is continually done

> "those in whose hearts is waywardness **pursue what is ambiguous therein**, seeking discord and seeking to unravel its interpretation. **But none knows its interpretation save God**, while those deeply rooted in knowledge say: 'We believe in it. All is from

> our Lord.' Yet none remembers save those possessed of minds." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,7)

Interpretation of the "ambiguous" is known by God alone, as the Qur'an reveals. How then, do some people dare to interpret them in a manner and a style which creates discord and division between brothers? As for us, we do not advance our own interpretation, but recourse to the Word of God in the Bible, and the Gospels in particular. There, we find the interpretation of God Himself concerning the "ambiguities", and by His proper "Word Which He cast to Mary" (Qur'an IV; Women,171). The Word of God incarnates itself in Her **to illuminate** the world on God's intentions in his Inspiration. This Blessed Word dœs not err; It surpasses and confuses all human interpretation. Only "the gifted with intelligence", who are freely open and without restraint when it comes to the whole Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration, will be able to learn from this Divine Word. All those who let themselves be entangled by the nets of fanaticism, can liberate themselves from this hellish slavery, if they allow themselves be guided by the whole Word of God. They will thus avoid God's severe judgment, and so glorify his Holy Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration by repeating with the Qur'an:

> "We believe in It. All is from our Lord." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,7).

As for fasting, the prophet Isaiah (VIIIth century BC) explained, a long time before, that divine intention was not aimed at drinking or eating, but on the works of justice:

> "Is not this the sort of fast that pleases me—it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks—to break unjust fetters and undo the thongs of the yoke, to let the oppressed go free, and break every yoke, to share your bread with the hungry, and shelter the homeless poor, to clothe the man you see to be naked and not turn from your own kin?" (Isaiah 58,6-7)

Yes indeed, we believe that the real fast is to avoid language of vain speech, calumnies which harm people, to abstain from eating the property of others. Such is the food that should be avoided, as Christ had said:

> "Listen and understand. What goes into the mouth does not make a person unclean... But the things that come out of the mouth come from the heart, and it is these that make someone unclean. For from the heart come evil intentions: murder, adultery, fornication, theft, perjury, slander. These are the things that make a person unclean..." (Matthew 15,10-20)

The Qur'an, inspired to confirm the Gospel, confirms these shocking words of Jesus. In fact, the words addressed by Jesus to the Jews are reported in the Sura of the Family of Imran:

> "I bring you a Sign from your Lord... I confirm what lies before me of the Torah and **to make it licit for you some of what had been made illicit**." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,49-50)

God's disciples understood that no food is forbidden or considered impure by God. The Torah and Qur'an do not mention these prohibitions, except to prepare the concept of what is pure and impure in the **actions and conducts of human beings**, addressing themselves to people who ignored God, good and evil. It is for this reason that God comes back to this subject, and clarifies his intention on pure and impure, in the Sura of "The Table", explaining that:

> "Today made **licit** to you are good and wholesome foods. The food of the People of the Book (*Bible*) is **licit to you**, and your food is licit to them." (Qur'an V; The Table,4)

God also confirms this intention further down in the same Sura:

> "**O believers**, do not pronounce illicit the delectable foods that God has made licit to you, but do not transgress - God love not the transgressors. Eat of what God has provided for you, food licit and delectable..." (Qur'an V; The Table,87-88)

We should notice that this commandment is addressed to **believers**, so that they put it into practice: "Oh thee believers", and not to unbelievers who transgress God's will and do not practice it. We are of those who believe the words of Jesus who declares "lawful a part, that was forbidden," of food, as previously explained. We are not transgressors. We also believe in Muhammad, his companion in this heavenly mission, who was sent to confirm the Gospel and the words of Jesus therein.

By virtue of this faith, which is ours, we are certain, not to forbid what God declares licit, as God also says in the Sura of The Table:

> "Upon those who believe and do good deeds, **no blame shall attach** in what they may taste, so long as they fear God, and believe, and do good works... for God loves the charitable." (Qur'an V; The Table,93)

Do good deeds! This is what is pure which God prescribes. Do evil works! Here is the impure that God forbids. Also, in Sura VI, The Cattle, God asks Muhammad to say:

> "Say: 'Come, let me recite to you what your Lord **forbids** you: that you associate nothing with Him... that you do not come near indecencies... that you do not kill the soul which God has sanctified except in justice. This is what He has **charged you** with... and do not come near the property of an orphan... Be fair in weights measures... be just even... and fulfill the Covenant of God... Here then is My Path, made Straight, so follow it'..." (Qur'an VI; Cattle,151-153)

We should note that it is not a question of pure or impure food in these divine prescriptions of the Straight Path, and thus have to go beyond these culinary and materialistic prohibitions, to put into practice what Jesus says in Matthew's Gospel and the Sura of The Family of Imran. Only a heart, mature in sound faith, and who listens to God's directives, is able to liberate himself from the chains of the letter, and to launch himself onto this "Straight Path" of the spirit prescribed by the Qur'an.

This also applies to fasting in Ramadan. This fasting **is not obligatory** as fanatics claim, since the Qur'an itself prescribes: "Upon **those who can bear it (*the fast*)**(and do not), a penance: the feeding of a poor person" (Qur'an II; The Cow,184). The true fast is therefore not to "consume each other's wealth", as prescribed by the Qur'an further down. Those who lead a well-ordered life, and balanced in all things, are those who fast the duration of their life.

We have seen people who fast that devour food like wild beasts from over-stocked tables, and end up by vomiting after their Pantagruelian, excessive meals from dusk till dawn...

Happy are those who understand the Divine Intention and practice equilibrium and self-control in all things.

It is the reason for which the Qur'an prescribes:

> "There is no compulsion in religion." (Qur'an II; The Cow,256)

This applies indeed, to fasting.

The Qur'anic Inspiration also underlines the fact that fasting is for oneself to refrain from listening to lies and in usurping people's money:

> "Those whom God wills not to cleanse their hearts - shame shall be their lot in this world, and in the next terrible torment. Ever willing to lend their ears to falsehood! Ever ready to **consume forbidden wealth**." (Qur'an V; The Table,41-42)

God also says in his Holy Book:

> "**Do not consume** each other's wealth in falsehood, nor argue the matter with judges in order to **consume a portion of people's wealth** unjustly, knowing well what you are doing." (Qur'an II; The Cow,188)

It clearly appears from these verses that the purification desired, **is that of the heart**, and that the fast, is to refrain from listening to lies and "usurping" money unjustly, without ever being satisfied, and not in refraining from eating food for a limited time.

Moses gave the Jews a Law, the Torah. Some persist, even today, to understand this Law to the letter, and refuse to open up to the divine intention. This closure has isolated them from God; it is the main reason of the Jew's refusal of Jesus. They were expecting a military warlike Messiah, an authoritarian politician and a brilliant economist. And yet, the Messiah came to speak to them of repentance, of love for the other, not of armed conflict, of scorn for money, not of its importance. He also explained the **spiritual** concept of ablution (physical purification by water), of fasting, of the sabbatical rest, and of the Law of Moses in general. But the fanatic Jews held on fast to the letter of the Law, not to its spirit, and refused to recognize the Messiah who invited them to cleanse themselves in the springs of the spiritual Waters, non-material, the source of repentance, solely capable of purifying the heart from its real impurities.

That is why God invites us in the Qur'an, to a serious examination of conscience. This justifies or condemns each one of us:

> "Say: 'Have you considered what bounty God has caused to descend upon you, which **you then divided into illicit and licit**?' Say: 'Did God give you leave (to say that), or did you fabricate lies **upon God**?' What will they think, those who fabricate lies upon God, on the Day of Resurrection? God is bountiful to mankind, but most mankind will not render thanks." (Qur'an X; Jonah,59-60)

These striking verses reveal that it is man who, by his foolishness marks, "against God", what is prohibited and what is permitted. What will the answer of each of us be to this question posed by the Qur'an: Is it God who distinguishes between what is prohibited and what is permitted in the goodness He Himself provides us with, or is it the narrow spirit of wicked believers who attribute these lies to God?

Moreover, and in all cases, the Qur'an reveals that **God is free to erase** whatever He wants from the revealed Books:

> "For every period decided there is a Register: **God erases** what He wills, **and ratifies**. With Him is the Archetype of the Book." (Qur'an XIII; Thunder,38-39)

Thus, we have seen that the Messiah declares "all foods clean" (Mark 7,19). Furthermore, with regards to **all animals**, God repeats to Peter, on three occasions:

> "What **God has made clean, you have no right to call profane**." (Acts 10,15-16)

Paul, on his turn, clarifies the question of pure and impure in these terms:

> "Do not wreck God's work over a question of food. Of course **all foods is clean**..." (Romans 14,20)

He also confirms this truth to his disciple Titus:

> "To all who are pure themselves, everything is pure; **but to those who have been corrupted and lack faith**, nothing can be pure—the corruption is both in their minds and in their consciences. They claim to have knowledge of God but the things they do are nothing but a denial of him..." (Titus 1,15-16)

There is a permanent conflict between the literal and spiritual interpretation. God is not asking us to simply have faith in His Inspiration, but **the good faith**: the one who submits himself to His Intention. God is Spirit and desires the elevation of our spirit. Without this we cannot, whatever we do to purify the body, rise towards God. Physical ablution makes up a part of the "ambiguities", and is but a **symbol** for the necessity of a spiritual purification, and is unable of producing it. This purification is obtained through faith and good works.

Believers who are in search for the spiritual meaning of Inspiration will reach the summit of spiritual life; on the other hand, those who remain attached to the letter are dwarves, as mentioned in the Qur'an in the following verse:

> "Among people is one who worships God to the letter (*harf*). If good befalls him, he grows content with it. But if an ordeal befalls him, he turns his face about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement!" (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,11)

The word "harf" in Arabic has a premier, specific meaning of the "letter". But, some translate this word as "edge", which is its secondary sense. If the divine intention was "edge", the more precise Arabic word would have been "haafat". Divine intention clearly targets believers who think in fear, attached to "the letter", who fear punishment, without seeking to understand the intention of the Holy Spirit through the love of God. For "the written letter brings death", says the Gospel, "but the Spirit gives Life". (2 Corinthians 3,6)

How can, a believer who is attached to the letter, not "fall" head over heels, be confused and shaken, when two passages of the same inspiration are contradictory? In truth, this contradiction is only apparent when placed at the level of the letter. But these same texts agree at the spiritual level and in the divine intention.

So, to climb toward the spiritual intention is necessary for salvation, without which, we plunge into the quagmire of the letter, soiling ourselves in the impurities of fanaticism and ignorance, as, alas, is the case of many. The necessity to go up to the divine intention and spiritual meaning of the texts appears in two passages on the creation, which are quite different:

> "It is He Who created the heavens and the earth, and what is between them, in **six days**, then sat firmly on the Throne." (Qur'an XXV; The Criterion,59)

In this text, the creation was achieved in six days. But we find in another chapter:

> "Say: 'You are blaspheming against Him who created the earth in **two days**...'" (Qur'an XLI; Made Distinct,9)

The interpretations which attempt to literally reconcile the creation in six days and that of two days are comical and whimsical. They become more obscure through detours and contortions, and fail to convince a thoughtful person, endowed with a mature and sensible mentality. They certainly move away from God's intention in His Inspiration.

We also find in the Old Testament two narratives on the creation. The first, talks of the creation in six days, where God created man and woman on the sixth day, after having created

the animals and the plants (Genesis 1). The second recounts, recites the exact contrary: God created Adam first; He then placed him, **alone**, in paradise, then created the rest of the animals, and finally, created Eve from Adam's rib. The narrative dœs not even mention the number of days of the creation (Genesis 2).

So, is there a contradiction in the Inspiration? No! Divine Inspiration dœs not contradict itself: we have to understand that God, through his narratives, wants simply to reveal to the polytheistic man, the existence of a unique Creator. This modest truth, and from it alone, provoked a lot of hatred against those who preached it. The purpose of the texts is to reveal to man, knowledge of the unique Creator, and to put an end to the vain adoration of idols and worship offered to the multiple gods of mythology.

This unique God invites us, by these various narratives on the creation, to go beyond the letter and to rise to reach the spirit. It is not important to know **how** the universe was created, but to know that there is but one God, Creator to worship. It is not about satisfying a scientific curiosity, by searching for numerical and temporal truths (number of days of the creation, etc...) in the sacred texts, but to understand the **spiritual** message: the Existence of one God and of the right way to worship Him. This is what the Inspiration wants to reveal us.

3.3 The divine pedagogy in the Inspiration

God, like a father with his children, has always acted pedagogically in His Inspiration to guide believers, leading them **gradually** from where they are, to the psychological and spiritual maturity in which He wants them. Any sensible and discerning believer will find that, in the Qur'an, God uses pedagogy with the Arabs of the VIIth century after Jesus Christ. God applied this same pedagogy toward the Jews and Christians in the Old and New Testaments respectively.

The Arabs of the Arabian Peninsula had no knowledge of spiritual life because of their ignorance of the revealed divine truths. Before the apparition of the Prophet Muhammad, they worshiped at Mecca where more than three hundred and sixty congregated at the "Kaaba", a cubic monument which houses the "Black Stone", which the Arabs believe came down from Heaven.

These gods of Arabian mythology ate, married amongst themselves, and procreated. The Arabs therefore believed in a mythology comparable to that of the Greeks, before the diffusion of Christianity in Europe.

It was not possible to give the Arabs the fullness of light in a single stroke, because of their absolute distance from the Divine Truth. Likewise, it is impossible for the human eye, which had remained in darkness for a long time, to all of a sudden be opened up to sunlight without being overwhelmed, stunned, blinded. In the same way, the Divine Light must be given gradually to those who remained in darkness for so long.

God, as always, acts with wisdom when he revealed Himself to the Arabs, not only "in a clear Arabic tongue", but also in progression. He is like a teacher who instructs his students at school, leading them from primary to secondary school, up to college.

The Creator ensued in the same way with Abraham, Moses and the Jews in the Torah, followed by the Christians in the Gospel, revealing little by little the essence of His unique and spiritual Being. This pedagogy can be found in the Qur'an where God reveals to the Arabs, the Biblical truths with infinite finesse and delicacy, like a father educates his child towards maturity. To illustrate this, we will expose two examples of the divine pedagogy, one on animal sacrifice, and the other on marriage.

3.3.1 The sacrifices

Since the time of Moses, the Jews contaminated themselves with idolatry in Egypt. They worshiped Egyptian gods and offered them sacrifice after sacrifice. To draw them away from these pagan practices, which became a habit that spanned for more than four centuries, and in order to gradually bring them closer to the unique God, Moses, in the Torah, gives them a cult. This latter consisted of sacrifices offered, not to Egyptian gods, but to the unique God whom they had forgotten. The purpose of these sacrifices was not to please God, but to move the Jews away from worshiping idols. That was the first step to move them closer to true worship.

Moses was neither capable of annulling the practice of sacrifices abruptly and conclusively, nor of convincing the Jews of their inaptitude in obtaining divine mercy. They could not understand at that time, that the principle of repentance was to approach God through forgiveness, not sacrifice. Therefore, God permitted for these sacrifices as a first step for them to get closer to Him.

The second step took place more than five centuries later, after the Jews left Egypt. God, then inspired his prophets on the vanity of animal sacrifice and holocaust, declaring that the only sacrifice desired by God is the spiritual sacrifice of oneself. The real offering that pleases God is a repentant soul who is totally resigned to the divine will. David, the prophet king, addresses God in Psalm 51(50) thus:

> "Lord, open my lips, and my mouth will speak out your praise. Sacrifices give You no pleasure, burnt offerings you do not desire. The sacrifice to God is a broken spirit, a broken, contrite heart you never scorn." (Psalm 51,17-19)

In another Psalm, God also says:

> "Am I to eat the flesh of bulls or drink the blood of goats? Let thanksgiving be your sacrifice to God, fulfill the vows you make to the Most High; then if you call to Me in time of trouble I will rescue you and you will honor Me." (Psalm 50,13-15)

In the Bible, God declares through the prophet Jeremiah (VIth century BC) that He never demanded sacrifice and holocausts, but that we follow his commandments. In fact, Jeremiah says to the Jews with irony:

> "Yahweh Sabaoth, the God of Israel, says this, 'Add your burnt offerings to your sacrifices and eat all the meat. **For when I brought your ancestors out of Egypt, I said nothing to them, gave them no orders, about burning offerings and sacrifices**. My one command to them was this: Listen to my voice, then I will be your God and you shall be my people. In everything, follow the way that I mark out for you, and you shall prosper.'" (Jeremiah 7,21-23)

The prophet Micah, he too, in the VIIIth century BC, denounced the vanity of animal sacrifice and continues in saying:

> "You have already been told what is right and what Yahweh wants of you. **Only this**: to do what is right, love tenderly and to walk humbly with your God." (Micah 6,8)

The Qur'an, in its turn, invites us to go beyond the sacrifice of animals and to understand the real intention of God. Speaking of sacrifices, it says:

> "**Their flesh and their blood shall not reach up to God**; rather, it is your piety that will reach Him." (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,37)

In spite of this, we see "believers" rushing in the millions towards pilgrimage sites, where an incalculable number of muttons and others are offered in sacrifice to God, who is touched "neither by their flesh, nor their blood". This custom is a social one rather than spiritual, mostly aimed at pleasing a hypocritical society, and which gœs against any real piety in everyday life.

3.3.2 Marriage

Polygamist marriage with the Arabs of Antiquity was chaotic, so was divorce. Dominated by the whims of men and their instincts, marriage exposed a woman to the greatest insecurities and a number of dangers: because divorce was free, a woman did not receive any indemnities. The unworthy role of women in the harems of Ancient Arabia was well known.

The Qur'an comes therefore, as a first step, to limit the number of wives and to impose a law on divorce, according to which man must compensate the divorced woman. Marriage is limited to four legitimate wives, provided however, that he is equitable towards them, otherwise, the man must marry **only one**. Here, divine pedagogy appears, as, a limitation in marriage is in itself a great evolution for an Arab man of the time, an evolution through which the people of the Bible had already undergone: The Qur'an says:

> "If you fear you will not be fair towards orphans, so too with marriage. Marry whomever pleases you among women - two, three, or four; but if you fear that you will not fair to them all, **then one only**... Give women (*wives*) their dowry, a free offering." (Qur'an IV; Women,3-4)

It is to be noted that the first verse commences by drawing man's attention towards orphans, thus opening a path to altruism. Then, in speaking of marriage, the Qur'an not only restrains, but also imposes on the man a dowry to be given to each woman. On one side, this dœs not encourage polygamy, and on the other, it elevates the woman's rank by imposing a dowry by the husband, not by the woman, as was practiced for a long time even in the Christian west. The Qur'an allows women to freely withdraw themselves from this dowry in favor of the husband:

> "Give women their dowry, a free offering. And if they willingly offer you any of it, then consume it in peace of mind and wholesomeness." (Qur'an IV; Women,4)

After having restrained marriage, the Qur'an recommends monogamy. Going back to the same subject, it presents monogamy as the unique and exemplary way of avoiding any injustice towards wives:

> "**You will not be able** to act equitably with your women (*wives*), **even if you apply yourself to do so**." (Qur'an IV; Women,129)

It is clear that God invites man, with this verse, to monogamy. After having progressively led him from the disordered union with woman, by passing through marriage with the condition of equality towards four wives, God finishes in prescribing monogamy to him **because he cannot treat** several wives **impartially**, "however hard he tried". Every sincere believer, who seeks to please God, not his own proper desires, understands this divine pedagogy, if they have matured in faith.

So, it is with a lot of finesse and delicacy, that the Creator introduced monogamy into the Arab mentality. Nevertheless, the first impression, which still remains predominant with many Muslims, is that polygamy is permitted by the Qur'an. In truth, this is only tolerated until man reaches a certain psychological and spiritual maturity. God thus gives man, this creature which He knows to be fragile, enough time to realize, through experience, the importance of monogamy for spiritual and worldly life.

At observing modern Arab society, we remark the success of God's pedagogic plan in the practice of monogamy. Arabs, the greater majority, have but one wife nowadays, and polygamy is rather discredited. Likewise, divorce is scorned by the majority of Arab families; generally, it is considered as a last recourse in very serious cases. Great is the difference between the Islamic society of today, and the pre-Islamic society, after the passage of the vivifying breath of the Qur'an.

The Gospel too, adopts the same pedagogical attitude with marriage and divorce: the Pharisees, who freely practiced divorce, question the Messiah on this subject to embarrass Him:

> "'Is it against the Law for a man to divorce his wife on any pretext whatever?' He answered, 'Have you not read that the Creator from the beginning made them male and female and that he said: This is why a man must leave father and mother, and cling to his wife, and the two become one body? They are no longer two, therefore, but one body. So then, what God has united, man must not divide'. They said to him, 'Then why did Moses command that a writ of dismissal should be given in cases of divorce?' He said to them, 'It was because you were so hard-hearted, that Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but it was not like this from the beginning. . . '" (Matthew 19,3-8)

We should stress that this attitude shook the Apostles themselves when hearing the words of the Master and they ask him:

> "'If that is how things are between husband and wife, it is not advisable to marry'. But he replied, 'It is not everyone who can accept what I have said, but only those to whom it is granted. There are eunuchs born that way from their mother's womb, there are eunuchs made so by men and there are eunuchs who have made themselves that way for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven. Let anyone accept this who can!'" (Matthew 19,10-12)

Two important facts are to be considered from this story: first, it is Moses who permitted to give a letter of divorce, not God. Moses authorized this as a pedagogical step, a temporary concession, because of the psychological immaturity of men at that time. A concession that had to be overcome later, to return to the original state desired by God, as Jesus had explained. But the Jews, attached to human tendencies, devoted themselves to the letter of the Law, refusing to elevate themselves to the divine intention.

The second point to retain is that the Messiah, in his discourse on marriage and divorce, went further, praising the chastity of those who "have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven". This expression dœs not implicate a surgical operation, nor an everlasting celibacy, but a faithful marriage filled with profound and spiritual feelings. It is no longer a question of satisfying purely sexual instincts, but of mastering them, until the meeting of a companion chosen by God. They are thus made *spiritual* "eunuchs", that is to say chaste and **faithful** in the **unique** marriage all their lives.

The Qur'an also speaks of chastity saying:

> "And let those who find not the means to marry have recourse to chastity until God shall enrich them from His bounty (*by sending a spouse*)." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,33)

The Arabs of the periods of anarchy despised continence and chastity before marriage. This virtue was ignored, even despised, to the point that those who practiced it were accused of a lack of virility. It is the case, still today, in so-called Christian countries.

The Qur'anic teachings have produced their good fruits in the hearts of many Arabs. The Qur'an is the instigator of the evolution of the Islamic society, even though some of its teachings

remain fruitless to many Muslims who have closed themselves to the Qur'anic spirit. Likewise, the Gospels did not bear fruit in the hearts of many Christians, who scorn the chastity and the holiness of marriage.

3.4 The Unity of the Inspiration

The Inspiration in the Bible and the Qur'an is one. It emanates of one and the same God who revealed Himself, manifesting His existence in the Books of the Old and New Testaments, and the Qur'an. That is what the Qur'an affirms in addressing the people of the Bible:

> "Our God and yours is one God, and to Him we submit (*Muslims*)..." (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46)

From one God, emanates only one immutable Inspiration, without falsification. Whœver asserts otherwise is a blasphemer.

To discover the unity of Inspiration in the Biblical and Qur'anic verses, one should surpass expressions and different literary styles in order to grasp the deep spiritual meaning, thus penetrating God's Spirit. Having grasped this important point, we can then be the witnesses of monotheism, because it is neither logical, nor suitable to bear witness on the existence of a one and only God without being a witness to his unique Inspiration.

Fanatics seek to divide this Inspiration, spreading rumors so to stir up hatred and unrest. The principal rumors are the following:

1. The Qur'an is not inspired by God
2. The Qur'an abolishes the Bible
3. The Gospel is falsified
4. The Gospel contradicts itself because of the so-called differences between the four Gospels, etc...

These calumnies have no foundation in the Qur'an. Many honest scholars have denounced these rumors, as the likes of Sheikh Mohammad Abdo, former leader of the El-Azhar mosque in Egypt. He certifies the authenticity of the Biblical text more than once.

In order to discover the unity of the Inspiration, two principles should be respected:

1. To place the Inspiration in its historical, geographical and social contexts
2. To discuss using "the best" of arguments, as demanded by the Qur'an.

The **best** interpretations of the Qur'an are those that **confirm** the Bible. Such is the "Straight Path" (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha,6). On the other hand, the Qur'anic interpretations that contradict the Biblical spirit must be rejected, because they are in contradiction with the Qur'an, which authenticates the Biblical Scriptures that descended before It. These false interpretations represent the tortuous path taken by "those who have incurred God's wrath" (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha,7).

3.4.1 Placing the Inspiration in its Context

In order to understand an inspiration, whether Biblical or Qur'anic, one should know **the prophet** to whom God inspired the message, **the reason** for which this message was given, as well as its social and historical **context**. Indeed, God says in the Qur'an:

> "We sent no messenger **except with the language of his people**, that he may enlighten them." (Qur'an XIV; Abraham,4)

This is why, one must know the people, the time, the language of every prophet and the society into which he was sent, as well as the historical context so to understand the scope of the inspired message.

In the case of the Qur'an, the Inspiration was given in the Arabian Peninsula to inform its inhabitants of the existence of a unique God and the nonexistence of their mythological gods. The Qur'an announced to the Arabs that this same God has already made Himself known to the people of the Bible and that, through the Qur'an, presents Himself to them and presents them this Bible in "a tongue" or "**clear Arabic text**", so that they would follow **the same path** as their predecessors (Jews and Christians):

> "God wishes to make clear to you and to guide you along the path of those who came before you..." (Qur'an IV; Women,26)

The path of Islam is therefore that of the Bible. Also, God invites the Arabs to believe not only in the Qur'an, but in the Bible too. Here manifests the unity of the Inspiration:

> "O believers, believe in God and in His Messenger (*Muhammad*), and in the Book He revealed to His Messenger (*the Qur'an*) and the Book He revealed before (*the Torah and the Gospel*)..." (Qur'an IV; Women,136)

To believe in the Bible and in the Qur'an, is a condition of the monotheistic faith and the realization of the Inspiration's unification. It is by believing in the authenticity of the Bible, that we are able to discover the correct interpretation of the Qur'an, since the latter confirms the authenticity of the Bible.

How then, do some claim that the Bible, and the Gospels in particular, are falsified, when the Qur'an itself explicitly says to the contrary? In fact, the Qur'an points out:

> "Those to whom we revealed the Book (*the Bible*) **recite it as it should rightly be recited**. They believe in it. But those who repudiate it **they are truly lost**." (Qur'an II; The Cow,121)

Our belief in the unity of the Divine Inspiration and in its protection by God, insists that we have faith in the Bible and the Qur'an from which they emanate. Adepts of the falsification of the Bible contradict the Qur'an. Indeed, as we have just seen, God says:

> "Those who repudiate it, they are truly lost." (Qur'an II; The Cow,121)

We draw the readers' attention to the fact that the Qur'an testifies in favor of the "correct" reading of the Gospel, ie "as it was inspired", according to the Qur'anic interpretation of "Al Jalalein". The fact that the Arabic prophet Muhammad always referred to "those who read the Scriptures" (*the Bible*), when in doubt of his mission, augments even further, our faith and attachment to these Holy Scriptures. God Himself guided him towards "the people of the Bible":

> "If you (*Muhammad*) are in doubt concerning what We have revealed to you, ask **those who have read the Book before you**. Truth has come to you from your Lord so do not be among those who doubt." (Qur'an X; Jonah,94)

We have tried to suffice ourselves with the Qur'an in our search for the Truth, yet it urges us to refer to the Gospel saying:

> "Say: 'O People of the Book (*the Bible*), you follow no religion **unless you practice the Torah and the Gospel**...'" (Qur'an V; The Table,68)

From the Qur'an's testimony in favor of the Bible, we set for ourselves the goal of demonstrating the unity of the Inspiration in these two inspired books. We have tirelessly endeavored to find the points in common between the Qur'an and the Bible and, with God's grace, have reached it.

3.4.2 Discussion by the "best" of Arguments

During our study, we have reached the following conclusion: any Qur'anic interpretation contrary to the Bible is in opposition with the spirit of the Qur'an and has to be discarded, since the Qur'an came to confirm the Bible, and not to contradict it.

There are fifteen verses in the Qur'an which reveal that the Qur'an was inspired **to confirm** the Bible. Here are two examples:

> "Believe in that which I have revealed, **confirming** what you possess (*the Bible*)." (Qur'an II; The Cow,41)

> (see also Qur'an II; The Cow,89 / 91 / 97 / 101)

> "He sent down to you the Book with the Truth, **confirming** His previous Scriptures (*Bible*), and He sent down the Torah and the Gospel, beforehand: A guidance to mankind..." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,3)

> (also see Qur'an III; 81 / IV; 47 / V; 48 / VI; 92 / X; 37 / XII; 111 /XXXV; 31 / XLVI; 12 / 30)

Our line of conduct is inspired from the luminous Qur'anic commandment: "Discuss by the Best of Arguments" (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46). The "best" of arguments is that which demonstrates that the Qur'an confirms the Bible, and resides in the discovery of the **unity of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration**. Such is the "Straight Path" (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha,6), and "the firm Handle" (Qur'an II; The Cow,256) of the chosen. Also, we have tried to treat the topics with love and the foremost circumspection, in order not to fall into the trap of controversies by the worst of arguments, like many do. These are responsible of distancing many people from the Qur'an because of their fanatic and senseless ways. They disfigure the true face and purity of Islam and bear the responsibility for the diversion of souls and division of ranks. They will have to answer to their guilty attitude on the Day of Judgment before the Throne of God, because they chose the tortuous path taken by "the lost souls who incurred God's wrath".

3.5 Commentary

The Qur'an repeats with force, the Biblical commandment addressed to the people of the Bible, Jews and Christians, to spread the knowledge of the Bible and not to suppress it:

> "Remember when God made a Covenant with those formerly entrusted with the Book (*Bible*): 'That you should **proclaim your Revelation to mankind and not conceal it**.' But they cast it behind their backs and bartered it for a paltry sum - wretched indeed is what they bought!" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,187)

The leaders of the people of the Bible neglected to spread its Divine Light. They kept the divine message hermetically shut, unexplained, so much so that people believe blindly, with no understanding **the reason for their faith**, ignoring the prophecies, and even their existence. The Qur'an, of course, after the Bible, condemns these leaders, traitors, Jews and Christians, and reveals their negligence.

However, what to think of the Islamic and Arab leaders who banish the Bible within their borders, while the Qur'an, fortunately, is welcomed everywhere? The Qur'an, however, demands -and they are supposed to know it- that the Biblical Message must also be clearly divulged everywhere, and to everyone, and to spread all over the world, threatening those who have suppressed the Light of the worst punishments:

> "Those who suppress what We brought down as evident signs and Guidance, after We have made it clear to mankind in the Book, those God shall curse, and all who curse shall curse them. . . " (Qur'an II; The Cow,159)
>
> "Those who suppress what God has revealed of the Book, and sell it for a paltry profit, those shall eat only fire in their bellies. God shall not speak to them on the Day of Resurrection, nor shall He cleanse them. A painful torment awaits them." (Qur'an II; The Cow,174)

Any other commentary is superfluous.

4. The litigation points

In this chapter, we examine the most important litigation points, the objects of discussion between the different confessions. The latter tackle the pursuit for the unity of the Biblical-Quranic Inspiration with no sincere effort. We regret to find, that there are religious leaders who are zealous to speak of the revealed truths without knowledge from their part, in an infantile and superficial manner, and devoid of any modesty or spiritual maturity.

The principal arguments and prejudices to which some fanatic Christians refer, to reject the Qur'an and its noble Prophet are the following:

1. The Qur'an contradicts certain evangelical truths

2. The life of Muhammad (Polygamy and wars) demonstrates that he is not a prophet.

We are going to demonstrate that the Qur'an dœs not attack a single evangelical doctrine. A great number of Christians have been led to believe these errors, because of the false interpretation of certain Qur'anic texts presented by some Muslims.

Starting from the principles of interpretation mentioned in the first chapter, we will demonstrate in the pages to follow, the full agreement and unity of the Biblical and Qur'anic Inspirations. Christians therefore, do not have any justifiable reason to refuse the Qur'an, just as Muslims do not in scorning the Bible. We will then present the great moments of Prophet Muhammad's life, exonerating him of all the false accusations conveyed against him.

We have briefly mentioned the reasons which drew away a good number of Christians from the Qur'an. Here now, are the prominent points to which certain Muslims base themselves on, to attack Christianity:

1. The Divine Trinity, the three aspects of the One and Only God

2. The title of Son of God attributed to the Messiah

3. The Divinity of the Messiah

4. The crucifixion and putting to death of the Messiah

5. The falsification of the Bible (Old and New Testaments)

What is important in these points, is to know what Divine Inspiration says about them, as our discussion rests on the solid base of an "Enlightened Book", as the Qur'an advises. If we come across these points again in the Inspired Books, we will believe in them, otherwise, we reject them. After having responded to each one of these points, we will have, by this fact, refuted the arguments presented by certain Christians to refuse the Qur'an, as well as the arguments of certain Muslims to reject the Bible and its teachings.

4.1 The Divine Trinity, the three Aspects of the One and Only God

God revealed Himself in the Torah, in the Old Testament, as the unique Creator, no other god but Him. The Gospel confirms this truth by adding a nuance that is even more profound. God is unique, and yet is not, so far as being isolated from Himself, or in solitude. In company of His Own Person, He unveils Himself as One-in-Three "Aspects": The Father, his Word or the Son, and his Spirit. In fact, Saint John says in the beginning of his Gospel:

> "In the beginning was the Word: the Word was with God and **the Word was God**. He was with God in the beginning. Through Him all things came into being, not one thing came into being except through Him... The Word became flesh, He lived among us." (John 1,1-14)

Such are the words of the Evangelical Inspiration. They inform us that God has a Word, which is God Himself. God and His Word are therefore one and the same essence, just as man and his word are one person. The Word that became flesh is Jesus the Messiah, known in the Qur'an as the "Word of God".

In the Gospel, the Messiah recommends his Apostles to baptize believers **in the Name** of the Father, the Son (the Word of God) and Holy Spirit:

> "Go, therefore, make disciples of all nations; baptize them **in the Name** of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit." (Matthew 28,19)

Remark that the Messiah did not say to baptize "in the names" in the plural, but in the singular, "in the Name". God is unique and his Name is mentioned in the singular, not in the plural. Any believer concludes from these words, that God is Father-Son-Holy Spirit, or in other terms: God-His Word-His Spirit.

The Messiah, before leaving this world, seeing his Apostles turn gloomy in thinking of this separation, tells them that He will send the Consoler Spirit, who will replace Him as a permanent Companion:

> "I shall ask the Father, and he will give you another Consoler to be with you for ever, **that Spirit** of Truth (*the Holy Spirit*) ... I will not leave you orphans; **I will come back to you**." (John 14,16-18)

The believers understood by these words that the Consoler that should come, after Jesus' Ascension, was **the Spirit** of God, who is also the Spirit of Jesus: God Himself. It is why the Messiah had said: "I will not leave you orphans; I will come back to you", which is to say, under the form of his Consoler Spirit. He wanted to make them understand that this Spirit and Himself are one. This is why the Messiah is recognized in Islam as the "Word of God", and the "Spirit of God":

> "The Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, is the Apostle of God and **His Word**, which He cast to Mary: a **Spirit** from Him." (Qur'an IV; The Women,171)

Some believers think that this Consoler Spirit promised by the Messiah to his Apostles is none other than the prophet Muhammad. This interpretation is in disagreement with the Qur'an and the Gospel. In fact, the Evangelical Inspiration says that ten days after His Ascension, Jesus sent the Holy Spirit onto the Apostles, and "they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak foreign languages..." (Acts 2,4)

This verse and the rest of the evangelical and Qur'anic verses concerned with the Holy Spirit, cannot be applied to the prophet Muhammad. Moreover, the Gospels and Qur'an reveal that the Holy Spirit came upon Mary, the Virgin, so that she becomes pregnant with the Messiah:

> "The angel answered (*to Mary*), 'The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will cover you with Its shadow." (Luke 1,35)
>
> "The Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, was God' Apostle, and His Word which He cast to Mary: a Spirit from Him." (Qur'an IV; The Women,171)
>
> "We sent her (*Mary*) Our Spirit, which appeared before her as an immaculate human." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,17)

This Spirit cannot be Muhammad who was not born yet. This false interpretation, without any scriptural foundation, cannot be accepted.

In the Old Testament, God revealed the Trinity in a manner which could only be understood together with the Evangelical Revelation. The Book of Genesis relates the apparition of God to Abraham in the form of Three Persons:

> "Yahweh appeared to him at the Oak of Mamre while he was sitting by the entrance of the tent during the hottest part of the day. He looked up, and there he saw **three men** standing near him. As soon as he saw **them** he ran from the entrance of the tent to meet **them**, and bowed to the ground. **'My Lord'**, he said, 'if I find favor with **You**, kindly do not pass **your** servant by. A little water shall be brought; **You** shall wash your feet and lie down under the tree. . . '" (Genesis 18,1-15)

The strange fact in this Biblical story is that Abraham speaks to these three "Persons", sometimes in the singular, and sometimes in plural, and appears confused in front of this Trinitarian vision of God. Many Christians created some confusion, at the dawn of Christianity, between "Trinity" (one God in three "Persons") and tritheism (three gods).

God invites us, by the Evangelical Inspiration, to discern between his Word and his Spirit in his Divine Essence. The Divine Being is God or the Father, the Word which emanates (or born) from Him and in Him -spiritually of course- is the Son, and God's Mentality -or His state of Mind- is the Holy Spirit. This Word and this Spirit are the Word and Spirit of God, not the word and spirit of other gods. This is the Holy Trinity, the one and only God in three "Persons". These **Persons** can be distinguished but not separated.

Some people wonder why there all these discernments and complicated terms? Our answer to them: "It is God who takes the initiative to make Himself known, to inform us of what He deems useful about his Divine Being. Our duty is to make an effort to understand, in order to recognize indeed, that it is not as complicated as we might think."

As for tritheism, it is a doctrine which totally differs from the Trinity, since it teaches the existence **of three gods**, in three different divine essences, each god having its own essence: such is the god of good, the god of evil, the god of punishment, the three gods being eternal, and separate of one another. This is, of course, a heresy condemned by the Apostles, by the Christian leaders of the first centuries and by the Qur'an. The Mormons as well as certain Hindu sects believe in tritheism.

Some ill-intentioned Jews fought Christianity from the start, by dividing its ranks with heresies of the likes of tritheism. Others have even claimed that Mary, the Mother of the Messiah, was one of the three divinities. This tritheism, an amalgam of corrupt Christianity and paganism, spread during the first centuries of our era. This is why the Qur'an condemns this apostasy by saying:

> "It is blasphemy they utter, those who say that God is the third of three! There is no God except the One God." (Qur'an V; The Table,73)

(*Interpretation of "Al Jalalein": "God is one of these three, the two others are Jesus and His Mother.* ***Some Christians*** *think this".*)

Notice that only some of the Christians are mentioned by the Qur'an. The Qur'an further explains that the three gods worshiped by this Christian sect are God, Jesus and Mary:

> "Remember when God said to Jesus Son of Mary: Did you really say to people: 'Take Me and My Mother as two gods instead of God?' He said: 'Glory be to You! What right have I to assert what does not in truth belong to me.'" (Qur'an V; The Table,116)
>
> "O People of the Book (*the Bible*), do not be excessive in your religion. Do not say anything about God but the truth. The Messiah, Jesus Son of Mary, is indeed God's Apostle and His Word which He cast into Mary and a Spirit from Him. So believe in God and His Apostles and do not say: 'Three!' (*God, Jesus and Mary: 'Al Jalalein'*). Desist (*saying this*), for this would be best for you. God in truth is One..." (Qur'an IV; The Women,171)

Today, no Christian confession believes that Mary is a goddess, or that "God is third of three". These words are heresy. The Gospel has never said these, as there is but one God whose quintessence is God, His Word, and His Spirit. This dœs not mean three gods, but one God in three "Persons". All those who are able to differentiate between the Trinity and tritheism demonstrate that they have attained a great maturity in reflection, as every Christian agrees with the Qur'an to say:

> "It is blasphemy they utter, those who say that God is the third of three! There is no God except the One God." (Qur'an V; The Table,73)

No Christian worthy of this name can say heretic words such as these. On the contrary, he must reject such thoughts. God is neither "third", nor "second", nor "first of three": God is One, there is none other but Thee, holy be thy Name! We are all with the Qur'an in rejecting tritheism. If the Qur'an had the intention of denying the Trinity, it would have said: "Infidels are all those who say: God is one in three". Let Christians know today that the Qur'an dœs not accuse them of blasphemy because of their faith, nor dœs it refer to them in the above-mentioned verses. That Muslims also know this of the Qur'an, and of their Christian brothers. Why then, is there this mutual repulsion when there is agreement among the Holy Scriptures?

Here is a simple clarification on the Trinity: a man and his word are one and the same essence, like a man and his spirit are. So, a man, his word and his spirit are one and the same essence. In a similar way God, His Word and His Spirit are One. The man who gives his word, gives himself, his whole self: his word, his soul, and his spirit. In adding a man to his word and to his spirit, we do not obtain three men, but one man in his three aspects. A man is thus, he too, a trinity and a lesser image of the Holy Trinity. This is not surprising since God created man in his Image.

There exists in man, a vital spiritual movement between him and himself. He consults himself, he examines his spirit and interrogates himself through reasoning. He agrees with his actions or rejects them; man is not isolated from his thoughts, unless he is in conflict with himself, suffering from psychological diseases which divide his personality, revealing symptoms of the imbalance. Man is a trinity. This spiritual movement related in man is perfectly harmonious in God.

Another example of the Holy Trinity: the Sun, its Light and its Heat are three aspects of the same Entity. **The Sun** represents God the Father, **its Light** represents His living and vivifying Word sent to enlighten the World, and **its Heat** represents His living Holy Spirit, felt in us.

Those who profit not from the Sun nor from Life are those who willingly close the shutters in their homes.

The Evangelical Inspiration has taught us that the Creator is One, but not separate of His Personality. Open unto Himself, He is in company of His own Person, perfectly in peace with Himself, fully conscience of His Being. God loves Himself knowing that He is Beauty without blemish. All those who meditate on God with a purity of heart can feel the infinite harmony of the Divine Being, and discover the triple movement of His unique and infinitely lovable Essence.

God, the Thought that He has of Himself, and the Love of His Perfect Being are called in the Gospels: the Father (God), the Son (His Word or his Thought expressed in Himself), and His Spirit (the atmosphere of Love in which God bathes).

The Qur'an invites us to discern between the Trinity and tritheism. Those who respond to this call with dispossession, take a giant spiritual and psychological step forward, making them apt of adjoining themselves eternally to God, taking part in His Love and endless Life.

4.2 The Messiah and his Title of Son of God

Many are shocked by the title "Son of God" attributed to Jesus as, they say, God begets no children as men do. And yet, the quality of Son of God associated with the Messiah means that He has no human father. To the question: "Who is the mother of the Messiah?" The response is: "Mary". And "Who is his father?", the Bible and Qur'an agree on the fact that no man had known Mary; no one has the right to claim physical paternity of Jesus. The Gospel and Qur'an agree on this fact. Such is the intention of the Gospel in giving Jesus the qualification of Son of God, Joseph being his adoptive father.

This truth is confirmed in the Old Testament and by several prophecies. In the Xth century before our era, God sent the prophet Nathan to king David to announce him the birth of the Messiah from his lineage. God says of Him:

> "I shall be a father to him and **He a Son to Me**." (2 Samuel 7,14)

In the VIIIth century BC, the prophet Isaiah announced:

> "The young woman (*virgin*) is with child and will give birth to a son." (Isaiah 7,14)

These prophecies were only understood at the birth of the Messiah, Jesus, of the young Virgin Mary. The Gospel reports that the Angel Gabriel announced to Mary that she would give birth to a son. She was astonished and asked him:

> "'But how can this come about, since I am a virgin?'. 'The Holy Spirit will come upon you,' the angel answered, 'and the power of the Most High will cover you with its shadow. And **so** the child will be holy and will be called **Son of God**.'" (Luke 1,34-35)

We must pay close attention to the words of the Angel who reveals **the reason** for which the Messiah is called "Son of God", explaining that "the Holy Spirit" will come upon Mary "**so** he will be called the Son of God", no man being his father.

The Gospel of Matthew also reveals to us that the Angel appears afterward to Joseph to confirm Mary's virginity, as he had doubt. The Angel says to him:

> "'Joseph son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary home as your wife, because she has conceived what is in her by the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son, and you must name him Jesus...' Now all this took place to fulfill the words spoken by the Lord through the prophet (*Isaiah*): The virgin will conceive and give birth to a son." (Matthew 1,20-23)

God also inspires this fact in the Qur'an, attesting this miraculous birth of the Messiah from the Virgin Mary through a divine act, non-human. Mary responds to the Angel:

> "'How can I have a son when no man has ever touched me, nor am I an adulteress?' He (*the Angel*) said: 'Thus did your Lord speak', 'It is a matter easy for Me. We shall make him a wonder to mankind and a mercy from Us - a decree ordained.' So she conceived him and retired with him to a distant place." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,20-22)

Thus, the Qur'an certifies to the Arabs that the mother of the Messiah is virgin, as she begot to the world a son without human intervention, but through a divine initiative and intervention. This unique case in human history earned the Messiah, and He alone, the title of "Son of God"; as every other man has a father and a mother. Unlike Adam, Jesus had a mother, whilst the former was created, says the Bible, from clay (or dust). Adam neither had a father, nor a mother.

How do we understand what the Qur'an reveals in the following Sura on the Unity of God:

> "Say: 'He is God, Unique, God, Lord Supreme! Neither begetting nor begotten, and none can be His peer.'" (Qur'an CXII; True Devotion,1-4)

Our response: These words are addressed to the Pagans of Mecca regarding their mythological gods, and not to Christians regarding the Messiah. In fact, these pagans believed that their gods ate, married, and procreated children. The Qur'an came to tell them that God is not like their idols, but that He is eternal, not begotten, nor dœs He beget another god with the aid of a companion goddess, like him, who shares his divinity, as is the case in mythology.

The Qur'an itself spurs us to explain these verses as we have done: God has no concubines with whom he sleeps with to get children, as was the case with Meccan gods:

> "Marvelous Creator of the heavens and the earth! How can He have a son when **He has no spouse** and created all things? He is Omniscient" (Qur'an VI; Cattle,101)

This verse dœs not point to Jesus, but those who:

> "assigned to God the Jinn as partners, though He created them, and (*who are in error*) fabricated for Him (*mythological*) **sons and daughters** mindlessly. Glory be to Him! May He be far above what they recount!" (Qur'an VI; Cattle,100)

It is in the same way that we should interpret the following verses:

> "And yet they say: 'The All-Merciful has taken to Himself a son!' (*by partnering with a companion*) You have uttered a thing most terrible..." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,88)

For this reason, Muhammad also says in the Qur'an:

> "Say: 'If the All-Merciful had a child, I would be the first to worship.'" (Qur'an XLIII; Ornament,81)

God's evident intention in this verse points to the children of these "Jinns" (spirits and gods of Arabian mythology), not the Messiah born from the Word of this Unique God, whom Muhammad was "the first to worship", thus being the "first Muslim" of the Arabian Peninsula as the Qur'an explains.

It was difficult for the Arabs of the pre-Islamic period to understand the spiritual evangelical truths. They were drowned in sensual pleasures and believed that their gods married, and had concubines and "sons and daughters" like themselves, as the Sura of "Cattle" reveals. The

Qur'an came to explain them, in their language and mentality, by placing itself at their level, about the existence of a unique God who created all things. This God has no need of a consort to beget a son through a sexual act, as His spiritual power is such that, with one word, He creates whatever He wants.

The Arabs were not prepared to understand and accept a creation made by divine order. God came to present this fact through the Qur'an, explaining to them the difference between the behavior of their mythological gods and that of the unique true God Creator:

> "It is not for God to take a child (*by a physical act like the gods of Mecca*) - Glory be to Him! When He determines any matter, He merely says to it: 'Be!' and it is." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,35)

The Qur'an also says in the Sura "The Groups":

> "Had God wanted to take a child, He would **have selected** whom He wished from His Creation." (Qur'an XXXIX; The Groups,4)

Indeed, the Qur'an reveals that God did, in fact, **choose** Mary with **the purpose of having a son**:

> "Remember when the Angels said: 'God **has chosen you**, made you pure and **chosen you** above all women in the world.'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,42)
>
> The angel said to Mary: "'I am but a messenger from your Lord, to **bestow upon you a son most pure**.' She said: 'How can I have a son when no man has touched me, nor am I an adulteress?' He said: 'Thus did your Lord speak'. 'It is a matter easy for Me. We shall make him a wonder to mankind and a mercy from Us - a decree ordained'. So she conceived him, and withdrew with him to a far-off place." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,19-20)

This is exactly what arrived with the Messiah. The Qur'an declares, in fact, as we have seen, that God **chose** the Virgin Mary **in order to create**, in her womb, and **by His divine Word**, His Holy Messiah. It is here thus, in the womb of Mary, that God tells the Messiah: "Be!" and He was. On the spot, the chosen Virgin was pregnant with the **Word of God**, as the Sura of "The Family of Imran" reveals:

> "Remember when the Angels said: 'O Mary, God gives you glad tidings of **a Word from Him**. His name is the Messiah, Jesus son of Mary...'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45)

The Qur'an thus confirms the evangelical revelation with regards to the Messiah:

> "... **The Word became flesh**, he lived among us, and we saw his glory, the glory that he has from the Father as only Son of the Father, full of grace and truth." (John 1,14)

Let us finally report this final Qur'anic verse:

> "The Jews say Ezra is son of God while the Christians say Christ is the son of God. This is what they say, from their very mouths, thereby agreeing with the speech of the unbelievers who came before. May God strike them down! How they pervert the truth." (Qur'an IX; Repentance,30)

We must understand this verse taking into consideration the fact that the Qur'an comes to confirm the Bible, and not to invalidate it. To do otherwise, would be to let oneself deviate towards the worst of arguments, and not orient oneself towards the best of arguments, which

is "the Straight Path" prescribed by the Qur'an. In this illuminated Path, we understand this verse in the following manner. They say: "Christ is the son of God. This is what they say, from their very mouths": it is not deeply rooted in their hearts and entails no positive spiritual consequence in their daily behaviors. They continue to live as pagans. If this word gushed from the heart, it would have changed their lives. And yet, they still behave in all things like these polytheistic pagans. They "repeat", alas, and use Christ's Name just as unbelievers did before them, regarding their deities who bore sons and daughters. These "stupid" pagans thus resemble each other in all things, and will suffer the same condemnation. Even today, we cannot but notice the moral decadence of the greater majority of the so-called Christians who "say from their mouths the Christ is Son of God", yet themselves behave, as children of the devil. The Christ had good reason to say:

> "Hypocrites! How rightly Isaiah prophesied about you when he said: This people honor Me only with lip-service, while their hearts are far from Me. Their reverence of Me is worthless." (Matthew 15,7-9)

The Qur'an reproduces in its own tongue, the Messiah's words addressed to the false believers.

The intention of Divine Inspiration, in giving the Messiah the title of Son of God, is thus clear: it means that He has no human father. Such is the veritable spiritual meaning confirmed by the Bible and Qur'an. Whœver wishes to discuss this in an extremist way, divides the ranks amidst believers and bear full responsibility before the Throne of God. As for us, committed to the "Straight Path", we have demonstrated, grace to the Scriptures, the veritable divine intention, and the unity of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration, thus employing the "best" of arguments and unite the believers' ranks.

4.3 The Divinity of the Messiah

No one imagined that God would lower himself to the point of taking on human form, appearing in this world and speaking to the man He created, within man. A human being, a prey to pride, often refuses to believe that his Holy Majesty would lower himself to the level of the created being.

What dœs the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration say about the Divine Incarnation?

The Old Testament gradually prepared believers of this truth in two stages. In the first stage, the Torah revealed the truth of the existence of the Unique God. In the second stage, God spoke to the prophets of the Messiah that He would send, presenting Him with exceptional supernatural traits.

4.3.1 In the first stage

Mankind before the Bible worshiped dictatorial mythological gods with fear and apprehension. The Bible presents a unique, kind, merciful God, Who forgives the sins of those who repent (Exodus 34,5-7). He appeared speaking to Abraham, Moses and the Prophets, whilst men who worshiped idols trembled before their gods in fear and crushed themselves before them in order to manifest their submission. In the Bible, to the contrary, God teaches man to love Him like a father who watches over his children; just as He teaches them that there is no need to fear Him, save the unjust:

> "Yahweh, Yahweh, God of tenderness and compassion, slow to anger, rich in faithful love and constancy, maintaining his faithful love to thousands, forgiving fault, crime and sin, yet letting nothing go unchecked. . . " (Exodus 34,5-7)

The Qur'an, at its turn, confirms this truth, revealing:

> "God the Compassionate, the Merciful." (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha,1)

4.3.2 In the second stage

In the Bible, God promised to send the Messiah as a Sign of His Mercy, to pull out humanity from infernal ignorance, fanaticism, egoism, and pride. He announced to his prophets the coming of a humble Messiah; and yet in this humbleness his grandeur lies. God attributed symbolic names to the Messiah, revealing his true divine nature, and his exceptional human personality. Isaiah (VIIIth Century BC) describes him so:

> "The Lord will give you a sign in any case. It is this: the young woman (*virgin*) is with child and will give birth to a son, whom she will call Immanuel." (Isaiah 7,14)

The name "Immanuel" means "God with us" (Matthew 1,23). Thus, with the Messiah, it is God Himself who is with us. Isaiah also attributes other exceptional names to this child:

> "For there is a child born for us, a son given to us and dominion is laid on his shoulders; and this is the name they give him: 'Wonder Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace'." (Isaiah 9,5)

God has never given the names of "Mighty-God" or "Eternal-Father" to any other prophet. No reasonable man would dare to bear them. On the contrary, we find names in the Arab world such as: Abdallah ie "God's Slave", Abdul-Massih ie "Messiah's Slave", Abdul-Nabi ie "Prophet's Slave". By the divine names given to the Messiah, God reveals through the Old Testament, his personal coming in the person of the Messiah.

The necessity for God's incarnation appears in Isaiah's heartbreaking cry which he addressed to Him, inviting Him to come to earth **Himself** to earth:

> "Oh, that You would tear the Heavens open and **come down!**" (Isaiah 63,19)

Other prophecies, notably those of the Prophet Micah (VIIIth Century BC), announce the birth of the Messiah in Bethlehem. Micah even predicted that his origins are **eternal**:

> "But you, (Bethlehem) Ephrathah, the least of the clans of Judah, out of you will be born for me the one who is to rule over Israel; his origin goes back to the distant past, to the **days of Eternity**." (Micah 5,1)

How can the Messiah, born 750 years after Micah, have eternal origins? This prophecy cannot be understood but at its accomplishment. In fact, in a heated diatribe between Jesus and the Jews, He declares:

> "I tell you most solemnly, **before Abraham ever was**, I Am." (John 8,58)

We know that Abraham precedes the Messiah by two thousand years on our earth. How then, can He assert that He exists before Abraham, if not, as Micah says, that His origins are eternal? This eternity appears equivalently, when Jesus was praying openly in the presence of his Apostles, telling his Holy Father:

> "I have glorified You on earth... Now, Father, it is time for you to glorify me with that glory I had **with You before ever the world was**." (John 17,4-5)

Jesus addresses himself to his Father in an elevated voice, in order to teach in which spirit, one should resort to God: with tenderness and delicacy. At the same time, He reveals his divine essence, He who existed with God "before ever the world was". In the Evangelical Inspiration, several verses mention the eternity of the Messiah's Spirit, not of his human body of course, which, like all flesh, was created in the world.

Some people are startled by the Divine Incarnation, and question themselves in a totally materialistic mentality: "Since God has incarnated in the Messiah on earth, how can he then, manage the world and the stars from heaven?!" This is a naïve, childish, and limited view of God's Omnipotence. God has no need of leaving Heaven to appear on earth.

In our epoch, this fact is more understandable than it was in the past. In fact, psychology has discovered the unsuspecting and unknown powers of the human spirit. A spiritual person can passage with his spirit, and appear some thousands of kilometers away of his body. Likewise, certain persons can control, from a distance, other's thoughts, even guiding individuals and collectives from a distance. If such is the power of the human spirit, created, which has not yet discovered all its faculties, what then can we say of the Creator's Spirit, whose infinite Power we do not yet realize? God can, indeed, incarnate himself on earth without actually leaving heaven.

However, what interests us in the Inspiration is not what people say, but what God Himself revealed to his Prophets. We believe in the plan of God revealed by God, even if it is shocking to those who have a materialistic faith and dull spirit, preventing them of understanding the divine plans.

What dœs the Qur'an say about the Messiah? That He is the Word of God and His Spirit:

> "The Angels said to Mary: 'God bids you rejoice in a Word from Him: His name is the Messiah Jesus, son of Mary'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45)

Notice that the name of this Divine Word is "the Messiah Jesus", which comes back to say that the Messiah is the Word of God. The Word of God is permanently with Him, being of his Divine Essence, as this is revealed by St John's Gospel:

> "In the beginning was the Word: the Word was with God, and **the Word was God**... The **Word became flesh**." (John 1,1-14)

The Qur'an also reveals us that the Messiah is also the Spirit of God:

> "The Messiah, Jesus the son of Mary was God's Apostle and His Word, which He cast to Mary: a **Spirit proceeding from Him**." (Qur'an IV; The Women,171)

As we cannot separate a person from his word, we also cannot separate him from his spirit. The Word of God is God Himself, the Spirit of God is also God, it is the Holy Trinity reported in the Evangelical Inspiration.

Some interlocutors regarding these topics resort to futile arguments, saying for example, that we can find some religious leaders who carry the title of "Spirit of God" (Ruh-Allah) without having the divine essence. The response is that it is human traditions which have attributed such titles to men; Divine Inspiration has nothing to do with it. The Heavenly Books have never said of a prophet, however great they may have been, the Word of God or the Spirit of God. Here appears the deviance of human traditions, which we denounce.

God utilized the best means to gradually reveal to the Arabs the truth about the Messiah's nature, using, as is his habit, a wise pedagogy. Those who wish to delve deep into the inspired truths must recur to the Bible. They should read it, arming themselves with the Spirit of God, so as to not interpret it in a purely human or philosophical spirit, which clouds the spiritual truths. What is important is not to simply read the Inspired Books, but in **the spirit** which these Heavenly Books are read.

If the Qur'an dœs not deny the Messiah's Divinity, how then, do we interpret the following verse?

> "It is blasphemy they utter, those who say that God is Christ the son of Mary! For Christ had said: 'O Children of Israel, worship God, my Lord and your Lord'. Whoso ascribes partners to God, God proscribes the Garden to him, and his final refuge is the Fire. Wrongdoers shall have no champions." (Qur'an V; The Table,72)

The Qur'anic points, here, considered a certain category of Christians as infidels because of their injustices. Notice that the verse dœs not say: "It is blasphemy they utter, **all those** who say that God is Christ", but "Blasphemers are those who say that God is Christ", that is, the known Christians like those who say "God, is Christ". The phrase should be understood as so: The Christians have blasphemed.

But why have they blasphemed? Is it for saying that God is the Messiah? If such was the Divine Intention, then the verse would have been inspired under an indisputable form, dissipating all misinterpretation, like: "All those who say that God is Christ blaspheme", or, more so, "whœver says that the Messiah is God, blasphemes".

But the Qur'an dœs not consider **all Christians** as blasphemers. Well to the contrary, it praises the virtues of many Christians, knowing those who say: "God, is the Messiah". God also inspired Muhammad the following verse:

> "You will surely find that the nearest in amity towards the believers (*in the Qur'an, Muslims*) are those who say: 'We are Christians'. That is because there are priests and monks among them; and they do not grow proud." (Qur'an V; The Table,82)

We should note that these priests and monks believe that God is the Messiah, and at the same time, the Qur'an praises them.

> "As for the believers, for the Jews, the Christians, and the Sabaeans who believe in God and the Last Day, and who do righteous deeds – these have their wage with their Lord. No fear shall fall upon them, nor shall they grieve." (Qur'an II; The Cow,62)

> "They to whom We brought the Book (*The Bible*) before this present Revelation (*the Qur'an*) believe in it (*the Qur'an*). And when it is recited to them, they say: 'We believe in it; it is the truth (*that comes*) from our Lord. We had indeed been Muslims (*submitted to God*) before it!' These shall **be paid their wages twice** for their steadfastness; they ward off evil by doing good, and expend from what We provided them. If they hear idle talk they turn away from it..." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,52-55)

We deduct that the Qur'an dœs not condemn, globally, all those who say "God, is the Messiah" for having said these words. Otherwise, God would have condemned, as one block, all Christians. God's real intention in these verses is to condemn a category of Christians who, because of their evil actions, have blasphemed and become infidels. Other Qur'anic verses where God praises faithful Christians for their good deeds, applies this interpretation. He reassures them in saying:

> "**No fear shall fall upon them, nor shall they grieve**... because among them are priests and monks, and they do not grow proud." (Qur'an II; The Cow,62 / Qur'an V; The Table,82-85)

The Qur'an distinguishes between two categories of Christians: those who follow the "Straight Path", and those who go astray. The latter are rightly accused, by the Qur'an, of being constituted as blasphemers.

The Qur'an says:

> "**They are not all alike**. Among the People of the Book is a group upstanding. They recite the revelations of God through the hours of the night and prostrate themselves. They believe in God and the Last Day; they command virtue and forbid vice; they hasten to do good works. These are among the righteous. What good they do will not be denied them; and God knows full well those who are pious." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,113-115)
>
> "**A group among the People of the Book** longs to lead you astray, but it is only themselves they lead astray, and they know it not!" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,69)
>
> "Among the People of the Book is one who, if you entrust him with a hoard of money, will give it back to you; and among them is one who, if you entrust him with a dinar, will give it back to you only if you keep standing over him." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,75)

The distinction made by the Qur'an between the two categories of people of the Book clearly emerges from these verses. The category of those who are led astray is denounced by the Qur'an, not because of their belief in the Messiah's Divinity, but because of their evil deeds, especially the theft of other's possessions. For the Qur'an praises on the one hand priests and monks, while it castigates others:

> "O believers, many rabbis and monks consume the wealth of people unjustly. . . " (Qur'an IX; Repentance,34)

Now, to "consume the wealth of people unjustly" equivocates, according to the Evangelical Inspiration, to idolatry. Likewise, all evil action is considered by the Gospels as idolatry. And Jesus, the Messiah had said:

> "No one can be slave of two masters: he will either hate the first and love the second, or treat the first with respect and the second with scorn. You cannot be the slave both of God and of money." (Matthew 6,24)

Saint Paul also says:

> "For you can be quite certain that nobody who actually indulges in fornication or impurity or greed—**which is worshiping a false god**—can inherit anything of the Kingdom of God." (Ephesians 5,5)

In spite of this, many Christians claim to belong to the Messiah, while they are, in reality, nothing but idolaters who associate the worship of God with that of money and pleasures.

It is therefore not strange that the Qur'an, after the Gospel, denounces the impious category of Christians who say that God is the Messiah. These Christians are thus accused of idolatry because of their love for money and pleasures, and not because they say that God is the Messiah. Such is our interpretation.

Yes, we too, with the Qur'an, affirm: "Blasphemers are those who say, 'God is the Messiah'". Nonetheless, we are amongst those who say that "God, is the Messiah". We affirm it without apprehension, confident of "having nothing to fear or grieve" (Qur'an II; The Cow,62), knowing that our good deeds will classify us amongst the blessed, not amongst those who disbelieve.

However -and to be more clear- we affirm: "Blasphemers are those who say that Muhammad is Prophet of God". Yet, we believe that Muhammad is a worthy Prophet of God. And we hope not to be classified, because of evil deeds, among the blasphemers. Many of those who say that Muhammad is Prophet of God have themselves, indeed, gone astray from the principles and noble commandments of the Qur'an, rejecting the spirit of openness of the Qur'an. They

are counted as blasphemers. We refer our readers to what the Prophet Muhammad and late Sheikh Muhammad Abdo said about this subject in our introduction.

Likewise, we say: "Blasphemers are those who say that Moses is prophet of God". Yet, we believe that Moses is Prophet of God. But we denounce Zionism and its criminal followers who say that Moses is prophet of God.

The Divine Incarnation is the answer to an absolute necessity, seeing the profuse darkness which humanity has been plunged into. The Prophets themselves were incapable of saving man. This incapacity is reflected in the words of the Prophet Isaiah:

> "We had all gone astray..." (Isaiah 53,6)

Only God never gœs astray. He alone is capable of freeing man from darkness. It is why:

> "The Word became flesh, he lived among us." (John 1,14)

God had answered the heartbreaking cry of the Prophet Isaiah:

> "Oh, that You would tear the Heavens open and come down!" (Isaiah 63,19)

4.4 The crucifixion of the Messiah

The Bible, in the Old Testament, announces that the Messiah will be despised and put to death by the Jews. The prophet Isaiah (VIIIth century BC) had said of the Messiah:

> "... a thing despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows and familiar with suffering, a man to make people screen their faces... And yet ours were the sufferings He bore, ours the sorrows he carried. But we, we thought of Him as someone punished, struck by God, and brought low. Yet He was pierced through for our faults, crushed for our sins. On him lies a punishment that brings us peace, and through his wounds, we are healed. We had all gone astray like sheep, each taking his own way, and Yahweh burdened him with the sins of all of us. Harshly dealt with, he bore it humbly, He never opened His mouth... Yes, He was **torn away from the land of the living**; for our faults **struck down in death**. They gave him a grave with the wicked, a tomb with the rich, though He had done no wrong and there had been no perjury in his mouth. Yahweh has been pleased to crush Him with suffering. If He offers His life in atonement, He shall see His heirs, He shall have a long life and through Him what Yahweh wishes will be done." (Isaiah 53,1-10)

Such is the Old Testament's description of the Messiah's calamity and putting to death, eight centuries before its accomplishment. If, today, we were to describe the sufferings of the Messiah, we could not have done it better than Isaiah.

What is the meaning of this divine prophecy: "He was pierced through for our faults. And we had all gone astray!" What are these faults, and how did the Jews go astray? It is about the crimes of Zionism and of its perdition. Indeed, the Zionist spirit had infiltrated among the Jewish people in the last centuries, and this spirit was strongly condemned by the prophets of the Old Testament and by the Messiah. "We had all gone astray", said the prophet Isaiah. This perdition lies in the **politicization of Judaism**. In fact, Zionists conceived Judaism as an Israeli State. On the contrary, God desires faith and repentance for all humanity. Here is why the Messiah had declared:

> "My Kingdom (*spiritual and universal*) is not a Kingdom of this world (*political and restricted*)." (John 18,36)

The Zionist Jews of today follow the steps of their ancestors and drive astray in the illusion of Zionism. After having occupied Palestine, most Israelis still dream of Greater Israel, an Israeli empire that extends from the Nile to the Euphrates. The tragedy of the Middle East is because of Zionism, and reproduces in the 20th century, the tragedy of Jesus, the Messiah, who denounced Zionism up to the Cross.

The Zionist evil had equally contaminated Jesus' Apostles themselves. They expected -like all the other Jews- a military Messiah who would lead a Zionist movement of liberation. They awaited that Jesus would engage in a violent and armed expansionist campaign against the Romans and neighboring countries of Palestine. The aim of this messianic military movement would have been the establishment of the Zionist empire. It is the reason for which the Messiah, far from speaking to them of military glory, gradually prepared them to the thought of him being put to death, thus substituting their political and racial ambitions, with a spiritual vision of Salvation.

In fact, Jesus, after being assured that his Apostles believed in Him as the Messiah, revealed to them his spiritual and non-political Messianism, by Him being put to death:

> "From that time Jesus began to make it clear to His disciples that He was destined to go to Jerusalem and suffer grievously at the hands of the elders and chief priests and scribes, to be put to death and to be raised up on the third day." (Matthew 16,21)

The spontaneous reaction of the Apostles was disappointment; Peter rejected this non-political vision and was pressed to say:

> "Heaven preserve You, Lord, this must not happen to You!" (Matthew 16,22)

But Jesus rebuked him and went on repeating to the Apostles that He must be crucified and be put to death (Matthew 16,23 and Luke 9,22 / 9,44-45).

The Zionist spirit had so consumed the Jewish mentality, that the Apostles themselves felt an immense difficulty in getting rid of it. The Gospel mentions that Jesus, even after His death and resurrection, was to appear to two of His disciples in order to explain to them the prophecies of the Old Testament concerning His suffering. He said to them:

> "'You foolish men! So slow to believe all that the prophets have said! Was it not necessary that the Christ should suffer before entering into His glory?' Then starting with Moses and going through all the prophets, He explained to them the passages throughout the Scriptures that were about Himself." (Luke 24,25-27)

The Messiah has entered into His own Glory -a spiritual one, neither worldly nor political- through the door of martyrdom. The martyrdom for Justice is in the eyes of God, glory and dignity, not shame as certain people think. The Messiah did not despise martyrdom; and whœver considers it a shame is not guided by God's Holy Spirit. It took the Apostles quite a long time to understand this manner of thinking; some were even ashamed of what St. Paul, in his letter, calls "the scandal of the Cross" (Galatians 5,11).

Many have scorned Jesus because of His crucifixion. On the other hand, the Apostles did not blush with shame in him being put to death, as the Messiah, after His resurrection, explained to them the deep meaning of the Cross. They then understood God's intention and wisdom and thus submitted themselves. St Paul writes in his first letter to the Corinthians:

> "Here are we preaching a crucified Christ; to the Jews an obstacle that they cannot get over, to the pagans madness." (1 Corinthians 1,23)

God wanted, by the Messiah being put to death, to establish a criterion of faith, to separate true believers from Zionists. The latter refused to follow Him because of their attachment to politics and earthly glory. The Qur'an alludes to this latter who, after having believed in Him as the Zionist messiah, refused to follow Him **after His death**, having understood that He would not satisfy their dream of hegemony:

> "Among the People of the Book (*the Jews*) none there are but shall believe in Him (*the Messiah*) **before his death**, and on the Day of Resurrection He shall be a witness against them." (Qur'an IV; The Women,159)

This Qur'anic verse clearly demonstrates that the Messiah was veritably put to death.

If such was the attitude of the people of the Bible -the Jews, scribes and Pharisees who were already introduced to the death of the Messiah by biblical prophecy- how much more could God have managed the Arabs of the time, incapable of assimilating the fact of the Cross? The Arabs of the pre-Islamic era, could not have conceived nor accepted, an apparently defeated Messiah, hanging on a cross and killed by men, the Jews, supposed to be his witnesses.

Why did the Messiah have to be put to death? To abolish the Zionist spirit from its followers' mentality. These, seeing Jesus in whom they believed as the political Messiah hanging on a cross, realized that Zionism was a mistake and an illusion which had to be given up definitively.

If the Messiah was not crucified, his disciples would have never understood their error and would have went on asking for the establishment of the Israeli Zionist kingdom. By the cross, the Messiah put an end to the concept of Zionism.

Jesus is Savior because He saves all those who believe in Him, not only from the chains of Zionism, but from all similar illusory ideals, from all materialistic mentalities, even when this conceals itself under a religious appearance. Such is the case of political and nationalist Islam and Christianity. All attempts to politicize religion -all religions- is another Zionism under the guise of another name. The Vatican, in proclaiming itself "State" in 1929, similar to other states, has fallen into the same trap as Zionists did.

As already mentioned, it was impossible for the pre-Islamic Arabs to understand the message of a seemingly defeated Messiah. It is why the Qur'an -a good pedagogy- gradually presents them the truths and evangelical facts. One must also hold count of the fact that at that time, Arabs evaluated a man by his physical strength, courage and skill in handling a sword, and not by qualities like tenderness, humility and the martyrdom for Justice.

This mentality still prevails today in many societies; the greater number have learnt nothing from Divine Inspiration and continue to scorn the meek and the kind, treating them as weaklings. Such behavior defines the Zionist spirit, vanquished by Jesus, on a humble cross.

The Qur'an has prepared the Arabs, with a lot of delicacy and finesse, to the comprehension of the wisdom behind the Messiah's martyrdom. This cannot be discovered, except by a meticulous and well-intentioned researcher. Because the Qur'an says of the Jews and condemns them:

> "Therefore, by renouncing their Covenant, by blaspheming against the revelations of God, by killing prophets unjustly... So also by their blasphemy and their terrible words of slander against Mary, and their saying: 'It is we who killed the Christ Jesus son of Mary, the Messenger of God' - they killed him not, nor did they crucify him, but so it was made to appear to them... but God raised Him up to Him." (Qur'an IV; The Women,155-158)

Certain superficial believers are pressed to think that these Qur'anic verses deny the crucifixion and physical death of the Messiah. Carried away in their enthusiasm, they embark on a fully-fledged campaign against the Gospels, claiming that they -which report the crucifixion of Jesus-

are falsified. By their hasty conclusions, they contradict the Qur'an that attests to the Gospels. By taking a step back and calmly consulting the Qur'an, without any fanaticism, they would discover that it speaks -in another verse- of the putting to death of the Messiah.

Here lies the importance in searching for the unity of the Inspiration, and the need to study the Qur'an in depth to reach the divine purpose. Thus, guided by an "Enlightened Book", we can avoid the trap of literal interpretation, which draws us away from the divine intention. The Qur'an Itself encourages us to follow this itinerary by a forthright declaration on the Messiah's death, where He, as a child, says:

> "Peace be upon me the day I was born, the day **I die**, and the day I am **resurrected, alive!**" (Qur'an XIX; Mary,33)

The Qur'an speaks therefore, of the Messiah's death and his resurrection, attesting by this the Gospels. Certain superficial believers think that these verses speak of the Messiah's return at the End of Times. Only then would the Messiah be -according to them- put to death. The Divine Inspiration provides no foundation for these rants. We do not understand the reasons for which these "believers" accept the idea of the death of the Messiah at the End of Times, and totally refuse it at his first coming. The Qur'an equally mentions the Messiah's death in the following verse, where Jesus, speaking to God **after His death**, says of the Jews who renounced Him after His death:

> "I was a witness to them while I lived among them, but when You **caused me to die**, it was You who kept Watch over them. You are a witness over all things." (Qur'an V; The Table,117)

We have already seen that the Qur'an condemns the people of the Book (the Jews) who ceased to believe in Jesus **after** His death:

> "Among the People of the Book none there are but shall believe in Him (*Jesus*) **before his death**, and on the Day of Resurrection He shall be a witness against them." (Qur'an IV; The Women,159)

The Messiah's death is also reported in the following Qur'anic verse, referring to the incredulous Jews:

> "They schemed (*against Jesus, to kill Him*). But God schemed; and God is the best of schemers. Remember when God said: 'O Jesus, I shall cause You to die (*moutawaffica*) and make You ascend to Me. I shall purify you from those who blasphemed (*the Jews who denied you*), and I shall raise those who followed you (*the believing Jews*) above those who blasphemed until the Day of Resurrection.'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,54-55)

NB: Here also, the word "moutawaffica", which means, "I will cause You to die", is badly translated by "I will take You". This is false. In fact, this word designates a deceased, physically, a putting to death, corporally.

How do we reconcile between the Qur'anic verses where God Himself declares the putting to death of Jesus, and those where Jesus Himself declares his proper death, with the verse of Qur'an IV; The Women,157, which says:

> "They killed him not, nor did they crucify him, but so it was made to appear to them!"

Dœs the Qur'anic Inspiration contradict Itself? Certainly not!

Those who stop at the literal interpretation, stumble and, as says the Qur'an of those who worship God to the letter:

> "They turn their faces about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement!" (Qur'an, XXII; The Pilgrimage,11)

In elevating ourselves to the level of the Divine Intention in the Inspiration -to understand according to the Spirit and not the letter- we will not see in verse 157 of chapter Women (Qur'an IV), any negation of the crucifixion or the physical killing of the Messiah. The Divine Intention is to make us understand that the Jews, in putting the Messiah to death, did not put an end to the Messiah's message. "But so it was made to appear to them", that in killing him, they could abort his mission in its cradle. Yet His message, after His death, spread like wildfire, up to the confines of the earth.

The Jews feared the message of Jesus, opposed to Zionism, even more than his Person. And yet, his message, which they had in their sights by killing Him, is widespread in the world, **because of the same reason: this crucifixion**. Thus, God, "the best schemer", triumphed over the cunning of the Jews (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,54-55).

Some think that God's shrewdness bested that of the Zionist Jews because He raised the Messiah up to Him, evading Him of being put to death. But this interpretation contradicts the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration. Therefore, we cannot accept it. We believe that God's shrewdness triumphed over that of the unbelievers, because the Messiah's death caused Zionism's defeat. God, after the Messiah's death, resurrected Him and elevated Him to Him, whereas the Jews thought that they had precipitated Him to the deepest confines of hell. Divine victory over the Jews dœs not stop at the elevation of the Messiah: The Creator confounds the Jews further still, by raising above them eternally, His Messiah's **disciples**:

> "I shall raise those who followed you (*the believing Jews*) above those who blasphemed (*the Zionist Jews*) until the Day of Resurrection." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,55)

Nothing can justify those who deny the Messiah's crucifixion on the pretext of glorifying Him. The martyr for the cause of God is not shameful. Also, God responds in the Qur'an, to all those who think of glorifying the Messiah by denying His crucifixion:

> "Say (Muhammad): Who can do anything against God's will should he wish to **extirpate the Christ** son of Mary and his mother, indeed all that is on earth?" (Qur'an V; The Table,17)

As we have already seen previously, the Bible reveals to us through the prophet Isaiah, eight centuries before Jesus, that God had already decided of **destroying** the Messiah:

> "... He has **been cut off** from the land of the living, He has been **struck dead**... It was **Yahweh's good pleasure** to crush Him with pain." (Isaiah 53,8-10)

Our conviction is firm: No one can stop the arm of God Who acts according to His plan and His wisdom, so often misunderstood by men. God really physically destroyed the Messiah as was prophesied in the Old Testament, and as the Messiah Himself taught in the Gospels. The Qur'an only certifies it. Nevertheless, if God **wanted to extirpate** the Christ corporally, it was for the purpose of glorifying Him spiritually and eternally. This will be realized with the near and final destruction of Zionism, incarnate today in the State of Israel.

To believe that the Messiah was not put to death, means to believe in a political and military Messiah. This is another form of Zionism. The Messiah had to pass through death to change the mentality of good-intentioned men, who fall into the nets of materialism.

Following these reflections, a simple and true conclusion imposes itself: belief in the Messiah's crucifixion dœs not contradict the Qur'an when its verses are interpreted spiritually, according to our principles and is valid for all the inspired Books. On the contrary, the negation of the Messiah's crucifixion pushes interpreters of the Qur'an to look for contorted explanations, to adapt them to Qur'anic verses which speak of Him being put to death. They thus end up by contradicting the Gospel, instead of confirming it as the Qur'an intends. This culpable behavior is neither "the best of arguments", nor "the Straight Path" prescribed by the Qur'an.

To die as a martyr for God is an infinite glory: no one can take it away from the Messiah Jesus, the First of the martyrs. He who has grasped this truth will cease of wanting to remove from the Messiah the *"shame"* of the cross. To die for God, is to live eternally, as is revealed in the Qur'an:

> "Do not say about those who are killed in the cause of God that they are dead; **they are indeed alive**, but **you do not perceive them**." (Qur'an II; The Cow,154)

The Qur'an is logical with itself. It dœs not consider the martyrs of God as dead, but alive. It is why, respecting its own principles, it dœs not stop at the Messiah being put to death, but as a martyr, declaring Him alive forever. The Jews had not put Him to death because God, "the supreme Contriver", brought Him back to life eternally, but "they are not aware of it". The Qur'an also says on this subject:

> "Do not imagine those killed in the path of God to be dead. Rather, they are alive with their Lord, enjoying His bounty." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,169)

We say, we who believe in the crucifixion, death and resurrection of the Messiah: The Messiah is alive, "they did not kill Him, nor did they crucify Him, but they thought they did".

4.5 The falsification of the Bible

4.5.1 The Qur'anic proofs of the Bible's authenticity

Along the centuries, some Jews spread rumors of the Bible's falsification, and the Gospels in particular, by Christians. Their goal was to convince the people that the prophecies on which the Christians rely on for believing in Jesus as the Messiah are falsified, and do not exist in the Old Testament, at least in the form presented by the Christians. Also, that the latter had manipulated the Biblical texts and adapted them to Jesus.

Many believed in this calumny and spread it up until our days, scorning the Bible, especially the Gospels. Some Arabs go so far as preventing the introduction of the Gospels into their countries and their homes when paradoxically, their doors are open to immoral books and reviews.

To claim that the Bible is falsified is a heresy inspired by the Devil who, as the Qur'an says:

> "whispers and recoils... in the hearts of mankind." (Qur'an CXIV; Mankind,4-5).

We find no verse in the Qur'an that warns believers against the falsification of the Bible. To the contrary, the Qur'an says that it comes to **certify** the Bible (Qur'an IV; The Women,47). Would the Qur'an authenticate a falsified Biblical text?

How can the Qur'an warn against the Bible, when the Inspiration is one? God is Almighty to protect His Inspiration, and would not allow the falsification of a Book which He has inspired. Otherwise, how could we ever recur to a "Luminous Book" to guide us in the right path? And what reference would we have? Whœver defames the Bible by claiming that it is falsified, defames by the same fact the Qur'an as well, which confirms its authenticity.

One of the fundamental differences between the Qur'anic Inspiration and the many traditional Muslims is the fact that the Qur'an attests the Bible; whereas they slander it. The Qur'an says:

> "Those to whom We (*God*) revealed the Book (*the Bible*) **recite it as it should rightly be recited**. They believe in it. **But those who repudiate it, they are truly lost**." (Qur'an II; The Cow,121)

The explanation given by "Al Jalalein" for the expression "read it as it ought to be read" is the following: "They read it as It was inspired". We adopt this correct interpretation, which has the merit of expressing the Lord's Intention.

The Qur'an's witness in favor of the authenticity of the Old and New Testaments, makes all discussion futile to us. We ask ourselves how do some claim to believe in the Qur'an, while they assert the Bible's falsification. In slandering the Bible, they demonstrate that they do not believe in the Qur'an, since it explicitly says of the Bible:

> "those who repudiate it, they are truly lost." (Qur'an II; The Cow,121)

The Qur'an bears witness to the Gospel by saying, again:

> "So let those who follow the Gospel judge in accordance with what God revealed in it. Whoso judges not in accordance with what God revealed, these are the dissolute." (Qur'an V; The Table,47)

The Qur'an therefore urges the people of the Gospel to judge in virtue of what God has inspired to guide them. Is not this Qur'anic attestation in favor of the Gospel, a sure witness of its authenticity and of one's duty to recur to it? Despite this, Jews, Muslims and Christians, in their great number affirm the contrary. What will the judgement of these "infidels" be, as the Qur'an qualifies them?

Those who claim that the Gospels are "falsified" do not manifest absolute faith in the Qur'an, but blind fanaticism. In fact, such people hide their hatred behind a mask regarding the whole Divine Inspiration. The same can be said of those who despise the Qur'an under the pretext that they believe in the Gospels.

Any Muslim who thinks that the Gospel is falsified is against the Qur'an. And any Christian who attacks the Qur'an, is against the Spirit of the Gospels. Whœver has really understood the Gospel's Spirit cannot but embrace the Qur'an.

The Qur'an incessantly applies itself on the Bible as its assured and faithful reference. In fact, God advises Muhammad to refer to the readers of the Bible if he doubted the divine words that were inspired to him:

> "If you are in doubt concerning what We revealed to you, ask **those who have read the Book before you**." (Qur'an X; Jonah,94)

We would have liked to see every Muslim put into practice, the spirit of the Qur'an, and every Christian put into practice the spirit of the Gospels, so to break the chains of extremism that lead to perdition. May every Muslim therefore imitate the Prophet of Islam, who occupied his heart with words of piousness and respect for the Bible:

> "We (*God*) have revealed the Torah in which there is guidance and light. Prophets who surrendered to God were to judge... Following upon their tracks We sent Jesus son of Mary, confirming what he already possessed of the Torah. To Him We revealed the Gospel in which there is guidance and light, confirming what was in his hands of the

> Torah a guidance and homily to the pious. **So let those who follow the Gospel judge in accordance with what God revealed in it**." (Qur'an V; The Table,44-47)

Is there a single Qur'anic verse that a believer in the Gospels can reject, under the pretext that it attacks the Gospels? No. Not one verse can be found in the Qur'an which contradicts the Gospels and its teachings, on condition, however, that the interpretation takes into consideration the "Best of Arguments", ie the one which attests to the Gospels, not which contradict it.

Any Qur'anic interpretation contrary to the Gospels is false testimony given against the Qur'an. We are dismayed by those who present false Qur'anic interpretations, then justify their erroneous assertions by claiming that it is the Gospels which is falsified. This justification is even more condemnable than the error itself. The Qur'an Itself denounces and judges such persons.

We are likewise dismayed with those who refuse the Qur'an on the pretext that it is contrary to the Gospels. This assertion is false, as the Qur'an attests the Gospel and confirms it. Why reject it then, under false pretext? On the contrary, is it not more sincere and simpler to believe in the Qur'an because it testifies in favor of the Gospels? In fact, the Qur'an says to the people of the Bible:

> "O People to whom the Book (*Bible*) has been revealed, believe in what We have revealed (*the Qur'an*), **confirming** the truth of that which you already have (*Bible*)." (Qur'an IV; The Women,47)

It is why the people of the Bible must strive to seek the Qur'anic interpretation that **confirms** the Bible, "which they already have". By acting with love and wisdom, they will unite the ranks and put an end to denominational hatred.

The Qur'an also addresses its commandments to the Muslims in saying:

> "O believers, believe in God and in His messenger (*Muhammad*), and in the Book (*Qur'an*) He revealed to His messenger, and **the Book He revealed before (*Bible*)**. Whoso disbelieves in God, His angels, **His Books** (*the Old, the New Testament, and the Qur'an*), His messengers, and in the Last Day has strayed far in error." (Qur'an IV; The Women,136)

It is not our business to judge those who do not believe in the Holy Books of the Old and New Testaments **in their current text**, nor to condemn them more resolutely than God himself declares in the Qur'an: They "strayed far". We therefore exhort to believe the **current text** of the Bible, because it is the text that the Prophet Muhammad knew. The Divine Inspiration in the Qur'an designates this text because the evidence, even scientific, of its authenticity is manifold and destroys any dispute to the contrary.

There is however, no scientific proof of the falsification of the Bible. If a person who is convinced of this falsification succeeds to present scientific proof of what he is advancing, I will be grateful to him and become his disciple.

4.5.2 The scientific evidence of the Bible's authenticity

God did not inspire the Bible so to leave it to men's whims and malice. Here are the principal scientific proofs -results of modern archaeology- which, with the Qur'an, attest the Bible's authenticity:

1. The "Dead Sea" scrolls discovered in 1947 in Qumran (near the Dead Sea), demonstrate the authenticity of the Old Testament. Scholars have compared this text to those that we possess and were found to be authentic. These texts of the IInd century B.C. are inscribed on goats' leather. These rolls are found at the Rockefeller Museum of Jerusalem. International museums have copies of them.

2. The "Ryland" papyrus, that dates to the year 125 A.D., contains a part of chapter 18 of St John's Gospel. It conforms with the current text.

3. The "Chester Beatty" papyrus carries a large chunk of the New Testament. It dates to the IIIrd century A.D. This text also conforms with the current one and is found in the Museum of Michigan (U.S.A.)

4. The so-called Vaticanus Bible dates back to the IVth century A.D., and consists of the whole Bible in Latin. It is found in the Vatican Museum.

5. The so-called Sinaiticus Bible, discovered in the convent of St Catherine in Sinai, is found in the British Museum. It is the Bible in Greek; it also dates back to the IVth century A.D. It was discovered by a Russian prince at the end of the XIXth century.

6. A logical proof of the Bible's authenticity: the wide range of Christian denominations have the same Biblical text. This text exists in different languages and all conform to the original text.

7. Many of the Muslim scholars deny the falsification of the Bible. The principal ones are the two grand well-known sheikhs (deceased): Afghani and Muhammad Abdo.

According to a fable propagated by certain "believers", the Gospel was taken up to Heaven with the Messiah and could no longer be found on earth. To these people, we pose the following question: What weight of truth do these words entail, since the Qur'an says of "those who recite the Bible, given they recite it correctly?" How could they read it correctly, if it is no longer on earth?

These rantings are even more ridiculous, that the Qur'an recommends the people of the Gospel to judge according to what God has inspired therein. Can God, in the Qur'an, recommend us to judge from a book which no longer exists?

We have demonstrated that the Qur'an is an Arabic reading of the Bible which, at the time of Arab paganism, only existed in three languages: Hebrew, Greek, and Latin. This is irrefutable proof, supported by modern-day archaeological discoveries, of the presence of the Bible on the earth at that time. It was therefore not taken up to Heaven with the Messiah! The archaeological discoveries already mentioned demonstrate that.

The official Islamic tradition equally reports in the "Noble Discussions", of the Prophet Muhammad, an extremely important fact.

(*These discussions (Hadith, in Arabic) are reported by the scholar Bokhari*)

After the apparition of the Angel Gabriel to Muhammad, the Prophet was troubled by the revelation of his mission. He immediately left his habitual place of meditation and reported this happening to Khadija, his wife. To calm him, she took him directly to Waraka-Ibn-Nofal, Khadija's cousin and Muhammad's uncle. Bokhari reports that Waraka was an Arab scribe -a Christian convert- **who drafted "the Gospel in Hebrew**". The Bible existed, therefore, "on earth", at Muhammad's time, within the Arabian Peninsula.

The scientific and scriptural evidence presented here demonstrate the Bible's authenticity. It shows the immense abyss between, on the one hand, the words of the Qur'an and its Prophet

concerning the Bible, and on the other, the calumnies of certain traditionalist believers. For our part, we confide in the testimony of the Qur'an and its Prophet in favor of the Bible. And this testimony is satisfactory for us.

Some believe that the Bible was falsified after the Qur'anic Inspiration. This is the worst of all arguments, and reveals a depraved faith. As we have presented irrefutable scientific evidence of the current evangelical text's authenticity, which is identical to the one inspired in the past before Muhammad. It is in favor of this same text that the Qur'an witnesses.

The "gospel" of Barnabas

Many persons in the East believe in the pseudo gospel of Barnabas. This "gospel" is a parody of the Messiah's life, accepted, unfortunately by many Muslims. But every Muslim who is worthy of this name, cannot but reject this "gospel" for the simple reason that it presents Jesus not as the Messiah, but as the predecessor of the Messiah. According to this false "gospel", Muhammad would be the Messiah.

Here are some extracts of this "gospel":

> "The priest says to Jesus: Stand up Jesus, as we must know from you who you are: it is written in the Book of Moses that God will send us the Messiah who will inform us about God's will. Therefore, I want you to tell us the truth. Are you God's Messiah whom we are waiting for? Jesus answered: it is true that God did promise us this, but I am not the Messiah, because he was created before me and he will come after me." (chapter 96,1-5)
>
> Chapter 97,13-17 also reports:
>
> "The priest then said: what will be the name of the Messiah? Jesus answered: the name of the Messiah is admirable because God Himself gave him a name when He created his soul and placed him in a heavenly glory. God said: Wait, O Muhammad! His blessed name is Muhammad."

These verses are a flagrant contradiction with Divine Inspiration in the Gospels and the Qur'an, which testify, all two, that Jesus is truly the Messiah.

Furthermore, Muhammad never claimed to be the Messiah, neither did he say that Jesus was not so. He never declared that he was created before Jesus. The Qur'an's teachings are contrary to the vulgar lies of the "gospel" of Barnabas, and strongly confirm that Jesus is indeed, the Messiah of God.

The purpose of the authors of this "gospel" -which badly conceals Zionism's hand- was to spark a separation between Christians and Muslims, applying the principle of "divide and conquer". They played on the affection of Muslims for Muhammad, presenting him as greater than Jesus. Superficial believers have blindly fallen into this trap, without grasping the depth of the problem. They do not realize that, denying Jesus' Messianism and attributing it to Muhammad, transforms them into counter-witnesses of the Qur'anic message, to which they nonetheless claim to belong.

Dœs the Qur'an speak of falsification?

The propagators of the rumors of the Bible's falsification, recur to certain Qur'anic verses. They forget that the Qur'an presents itself as a witness to the Bible. We will mention certain Qur'anic verses to which adepts of the falsification refer, and demonstrate that the Qur'an's intention is to denounce those who falsify **the interpretation** of Biblical verses. The Qur'an dœs not refer to Biblical verses, but to the bad faith of the interpreters. The Qur'an says:

> "Do you (Muslims) really expect them (Jews) to believe in the message sent to you, when a group among them would hear the Word of God (*in the Bible*), and **then pervert it, knowingly, after having grasped its meaning?**" (Qur'an II; The Cow,75)
>
> "Those to whom We brought the Book (*Bible*) know it as well as they know their own children. Some of them **suppress the truth knowingly**." (Qur'an II; The Cow,146)

Those ill-intended interpreters **knowingly** altered, with full knowledge of the facts, the meaning of the Biblical verses, "**although they understood its meaning**". This is a falsification in **the interpretation** of the word of God. Elsewhere, the Qur'an also reveals:

> "Among them **is a group who twist their tongues while reading the Book**, so that you might suppose it to be part of the Book, but it is no part of the Book. They claim it is from God, but it is not from God. They utter falsehood in God's name, and they know it." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,78)

Remark that this group "twist their tongue"; they do not falsify the Biblical texts. By "twisting their tongue", they present **false interpretations** -which are convenient to them- to make believe that what they say comes from God, "whereas it is not from God".

Such is our interpretation of the above-mentioned verses, verses which some ill-intentioned people want "to twist", to slander the Gospels. The Qur'an accuses the Jews in particular of having recourse to this type of practice:

> "Among Jews are some who **distort the Words** of revelation **from their contexts**. They say..." (Qur'an IV; Women,46)

Those who "distort the Words from their contexts", digress them from the meaning intended by God, in presenting a false interpretation. The Qur'an also says on this matter:

> "For violating their (*the Jews*) Covenant We cursed them, and hardened their hearts. **They twist words** (of the Bible) from their context, and have forgotten a portion of what they were asked to remember..." (Qur'an V; The Table,13 and 15)

It is clear that to "twist words", points to here, the false interpretations of the Divine Intention.

Yet the Qur'an is not alone in denouncing the Jewish scribes. In the Old Testament, the prophet Jeremiah had already rebelled against them for the same reason:

> "How dare you say: 'We are wise, and we possess the Law of Yahweh?' But look how **it has been falsified by the lying pen of the scribes!**" (Jeremiah 8,8)

It is important to meditate these words of inspiration by Jeremiah to grasp the divine Intention that is being revealed: unmask the Jewish scribes who disfigure the Biblical message with their false interpretations.

We have demonstrated that the Biblical text is authentic. The current text in our hands, thus perfectly corresponds to the known text before the Messiah. This text is confirmed by the "Dead Sea" Scrolls. It is this text, which the Messiah and the Prophet Muhammad knew. No falsification is found therein; no human hand can falsify it because God, in His Infinite Wisdom, desires that the whole text of the Divine Inspiration reaches us. The reason is that God wants to inform us of His plan of salvation in favor of all mankind, and about the fatal influence of the Zionist spirit of the Jewish leaders and scribes.

Indeed, the scribes when transcribing the Bible, added, in favor of the Zionist plan, many false texts attributed to God, as the Qur'an rightly points out. These texts can still be found today

in the Bible. God, in His Wisdom, allowed them to endure therein to reveal the Zionist hand that introduced them to justify, in the name of God, the human, unwanted traditions of God. These verses resemble parasites, easily detectable by any wise person.

Jesus did not fail to denounce these "hypocrite" scribes and Pharisees:

> "'Why do you break away from the commandment of God for the sake your tradition?' ... 'In this way you have made God's word **null and void** by means of your tradition. Hypocrites! It was you Isaiah meant when he so rightly prophesied: This people honors Me only with lip-service, while their hearts are far from me. The worship they offer me is worthless; the doctrines they teach are only **human regulations**'." (Matthew 15,3-9)

It must therefore be stressed, that the Bible itself invites us to discern between Divine Inspiration and the Zionist interpretations therein. A believer must not move away from the Bible because of this Zionist infiltration. On the contrary, this state of affairs must incite strong and valiant hearts to scrutinize the Bible in order to extract the treasures, despite the obstacles. This is how Jeremiah, Jesus, and Muhammad acted.

Moreover, the Prophet Muhammad's respect of the Bible is a sufficient and supplemental guarantee for all Muslims who wish to consult it. Because God says to Him in the Qur'an:

> "Say (*to the Arabs who scorn the Bible*): 'Bring a Book from God, more conductive to guidance than both (*Torah and the Gospel*), and I shall follow it, if you speak the truth'." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,49)

What better testimony in favor of the Bible can we ask from this noble Arab prophet? It is clear that in the Prophet of Islam's mentality, the Bible is indeed inspired by God. We want to be precise: The Bible **in its current text**, since it is this same text which Muhammad knew.

From the above-mentioned verse, God not only makes Muhammad an Apostle of the Qur'an, but of the Bible too, as the Qur'an is an Arab Inspiration of the Bible. It is the reason for which God, in the Qur'an, asks Muhammad not to demand from the people of the Bible to recur to him as judge, because they have the word of God in the Bible:

> "How is it that **they elect you to judge** between them when they already possess the Torah, in which is found the judgement of God..." (Qur'an V; The Table,43)
>
> "So let those who follow the Gospel judge in accordance with what God revealed in it. Whoso judges in accordance with what God revealed, these are the dissolute." (Qur'an V; The Table,47)

The Prophet Muhammad invites all Arab believers to follow the path of "those who came before them" in the faith, the Jewish and Christian **faithful**, matured by the Spiritual Waters of the Bible. The Qur'an says:

> "God wishes to make clear to you and to guide you concerning the laws of those who came before you..." (Qur'an IV; Women,26)
>
> "O believers (*Arabs*), believe in God and in His Apostle (*Muhammad*), and in the Book (*Qur'an*) He revealed to His Apostle, and the Book (*Bible*) He revealed before. Whoso disbelieves in God, His angels, **His Books**, His messengers, and in the Last Day has strayed far in error." (Qur'an IV; Women,136).

Such is the Qur'an's commandment: to believe not only in Muhammad and in the Qur'an, but also in the Scriptures inspired by God before the Qur'an: the Torah and the Gospel in their

current text. Any true believer, Jew, Christian, or Muslim, cannot but believe in the totality of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration.

May God Almighty gather His elect, all sincere hearts, all those of good faith, around His one and indivisible Inspiration, in order that they form one unit to face the evil powers who seek to divide them.

4.6 The life of the Prophet Muhammad

Some Orientalists blame Prophet Muhammad for his multiple wives and many wars. We will outline the reasons that justify his behavior which, in our times, appear unacceptable and incompatible with a prophet.

4.6.1 The marriages of Muhammad

One reproach concerns Muhammad's marriage to Zaynab, daughter of Jahsh. Zaynab was the wife of Zayd, Muhammad's adopted son. After his divorce, Muhammad had to marry her. Muslims make no effort whatsœver to present the best explanation of this marriage. The explanation we will give further down, adapts perfectly to the character and integrity of the Prophet Muhammad. In effect, some official Islamic interpretations of this marriage, had distanced many Orientalists -and many Christians- from the Qur'an and the Prophet Muhammad as a consequence. The Muslim scholars interpret it so: "After Zaynab's marriage to Zayd, the Prophet's gaze fell upon Zaynab and love for her took over his heart".

This explanation is neither certain, nor conclusive: it is the fruit of a particular mentality of the Arab interpreters of the time. Now, research in the field of interpretation remains open; it is better known in Islam as "Ijtihad", which means "effort", because one must do an effort to find, as prescribed by the Qur'an, the best interpretation. It is what we have done, and we think we have found it. We shall explain further, after having briefly outlined the life of the Prophet.

Muhammad was born in Mecca, in the year 570 of our era. He died on June 8, 632. His father, Abdallah, died a few months before his birth, and his mother Amena, died when he was only about five. An orphan, his grandfather Abd-el-Muttaleb took charge of him. He died three years later, leaving him under the care of his son Abi-Taleb, Muhammad's paternal uncle, who loved him very much because of the uprightness of his morals. Abi-Taleb is the father of Ali, Muhammad's beloved cousin and faithful friend for life. Ali later married Fatima, Muhammad's beloved daughter. Abd-el-Muttaleb, Muhammad's grandfather, was a noble of the Bani-Hashim House of the Meccan tribe of Quraish. He had ten sons including Abdallah (Muhammad's father), Abi-Taleb (the uncle who adopted and sheltered him), Hamza (who believed in Muhammad), and Abu-Lahab (who fought him).

Amena, Muhammad's mother, was the sister of Waraka-Ibn-Nofal, whom we have already mentioned. He was the cousin of Khadija, Muhammad's first wife. Muhammad spent his youth in Mecca and was known for his integrity, chastity, and moral uprightness. He liked isolation and meditation, and did not share the tastes of worldly life with other young men of his age. The inhabitants of Mecca called him "The Honest One" (in Arabic: "El-Amine") because of his faithfulness and honesty. His love for prayer and meditation often led him to the mountain caves that overlooked Mecca. There, he fled the city's tumult, to deepen his research of the spiritual.

This did not prevent him from taking part in Mecca's commercial life. He attended to the commercial caravans in transit between Yemen and Syria. Muhammad was employed at his cousin Khadija -widow of a rich Meccan merchant- where he managed caravans towards Syria, for commerce. She was attracted by his honesty in transactions, and sent him Abi-Taleb (Muhammad's uncle who sheltered him) to talk to him about marriage. Muhammad accepted. He was 25 years old then, and Khadija 40.

It was a happy marriage until the end. They had three boys, who died very young, and four daughters: Rokaya, Zeinab, Umm-Kalthoum and Fatima, the beloved of Muhammad.

During his many trips to Syria, Muhammad met several Christian monks, including the famous monk Bohaira, to whom Muhammad was bound by a deep friendship. Bohaira had admired Muhammad's high morality, and often spoke to him of the prophets and the Messiah. Thus, God was already preparing him, without his knowledge, for a great mission.

When the soul of Muhammad reached maturity through contemplation, at the age of 40, Heaven manifested itself to him. The Angel Gabriel appeared to him while in solitude in a cave near Mecca named "Harra". The Prophet, and the vision over, hurries to Khadija his wife, and tells her what occured. These verses are found in the Qur'an XCVI; The Blood Clot,1-3. We reproduce the story as related by Bokhari:

> "Gabriel presented himself to me and tells me: Read! (*the Bible*) I responded: I cannot read (*Muhammad was illiterate*). The Angel took me and covered me until I calmed down, then he said: Read. I answered: I cannot read. He took me and covered me a second time until I calmed down, then he said: 'Read!' I answered: 'I cannot read'. He took me and covered me a third time and sent me saying: 'Read, in the Name of God who created! He created men from a blood clot. Read! For God is generous'. And the prophet returned with these words engraved in him, heart trembling, to Khadija daughter of Khowaylid, and reported to her all what had happened. He tells her: 'I feared for my person'."

Such was Muhammad's first vision. He trembled just as Moses, Jeremiah, Daniel and other prophets did before him. Khadija decided to go with Muhammad to see her cousin, Waraka-Ibn-Nofal. He was a Christian and transcribed Biblical text. Waraka reassured them in saying that this corresponded to the message of Moses, the Biblical message. Bokhari reports the story as follows:

> "Muhammad therefore went with Khadija to Waraka-Ibn-Nofal who had become old and blind. Khadija told him: 'Cousin, listen to what your nephew (Muhammad) wants to tell you'. Waraka answered: 'What is it, my nephew?' The prophet then informed him about his vision. Waraka told him: 'This is the Law of Moses that God has descended upon him. Oh! How I wish to remain alive and take part to this mission. I wish I could stay alive when your people will deny you'. And the prophet Muhammad exclaimed: 'Will they deny me?' He answered: 'Yes! No man is given what you have received, without having enemies. And should this be granted to me, I would support you up to your victory'. Waraka died soon after."

Thus, Waraka confirmed the authenticity of the vision and certified to him that his message was Biblical. The Message then, is one, and the mission is the same. It is important that this fact is raised.

Waraka's prophecy was accomplished because the inhabitants of Mecca, whose main tribe is the tribe of Quraish, fiercely fought the Prophet.

In the beginning, and for a long time, only a small group believed in Muhammad. Khadija, his wife, was the first of the believers. The new religion that began to dawn in Mecca, worried the idol merchants and those in power of the city who collected taxes and who profited from the pagan pilgrimages that they held. Monotheism represented a serious danger to their trade, power and hegemony. They thus transformed into mortal enemies of Muhammad and his disciples, and strongly persecuted them.

The Prophet courageously endured the painful burden of his mission and waited patiently, even though it cost him his money and his rest. He refused to oppose his armed enemies with weapons, even abstaining from carrying a sword for self-protection. He advised his disciples to flee Mecca and seek refuge in Ethiopia, a Christian country. Amongst his disciples, twelve of them went to the Negus, the emperor of Ethiopia. He greeted them and granted them the right of refuge, assuring them a peaceful stay.

For ten years, Muhammad endured persecution in Mecca, preaching monotheism in vain, having around him only a small number of faithful. The opposition of the tribe of Quraish increased in violence to the point of threatening Muhammad's life and his followers. There was more than one attempt on his life. Muhammad finally relinquished and fled Mecca for Yathreb, later named "Al Madina", which in Arabic means "The City", ie the City of the Prophet.

Muhammad left Mecca secretly during the night, having been warned of a plot to kill him. That same night, Ali, his cousin, took his place in his house, in his bed even, to simulate his presence, thus saving his life. In Yathreb, many adepts protected him, and solely the Jews of this city constituted a threat to him.

Before the flight of Yathreb, two painful events struck the Prophet: the death of his uncle and protector Abi-Taleb (this precipitated the plots against him), and that of his beloved wife Khadija, the faithful life and mission companion. She was his spiritual support, having affirmed him in his faith, and had given him confidence in himself. The year of the death of these two dear persons to Muhammad, was called "the Year of Sadness".

The people of the Quraish tribe, led by the notable Abi-Sifian, tried to seduce Muhammad. They delegated a committee to his uncle Abi-Taleb, shortly before his death, whilst lying sick in bed, so to obtain his intervention with Muhammad. They proposed Muhammad money, glory, even royalty, under condition that he renounces monotheism. They said to him: "If your intention in preaching is money, we will give it to you. We will gather from our own wealth so that you would be the richest amongst us. If you desire honor, we shall establish you as leader, and nothing will be decided without your consent. If you want the kingdom, we shall make you our king; but, as for the Unique God, no!"

In hearing these words, the Prophet clung even tighter to his mission and said: "By God! Should you give me the sun in my right, and the moon in my left to make me renounce this affair, I will not renounce it." On the death of his uncle Abi-Taleb, who sought to temper between the people of Quraish and Muhammad, the tension was at its peak.

Shortly before his flight to "Yathreb", Muhammad experiences the miracle of the Mystical Journey related in Sura XVII, called "The Night Journey". This mystical and historical fact is very important in Muhammad's life and his followers; it constitutes a turning point in his mission. During this night, Muhammad was at his cousin Hind, sister of Ali, son of Abi-Taleb. He saw the Angel Gabriel present himself to him to transport him in vision on a horse named "Al Bouraq" (Lightening) towards Mount Sinai, where God spoke to Moses. He then took him to Bethlehem, the Messiah's birthplace, followed by Jerusalem, to the site of the Temple. From there, he raised him to Heaven, then returned him to Jerusalem, where he re-took his horse to return to his cousin Hind. "The Night Journey" begins so:

> "Glory be to Him Who carried His Servant by night from the Sacred Mosque to the furthest Mosque, whose precincts We have blessed, to show him of Our wonders!" (Qur'an XVII; The Night Journey,1)

The inhabitants of Quraish refused to believe in this vision. Many of his followers refused to believe him and ceased to follow him. After this experience, Mecca's hostility still augmented

towards him and the Prophet's isolation became almost total. On September 24, 622, Muhammad decided to flee Mecca for Yathreb, "Al Madina". This flight marks the debut of the Islamic calendar of Hijra (Hijra: departure, flight, emigration).

After his departure, Muhammad married several women, not for the love of women, as several Orientalists think, but to unite the Arab tribes by a parental link. Muhammad's first wife, Sawda, was the widow of one of his twelve disciples who went to Ethiopia at the Prophet's demand, in order to flee persecution. Sawda was no longer young, and mother to several children. Muhammad married her in recognition, to protect her and provide for the children, because she and her husband were among his first disciples.

He also married Aicha, the daughter of one of his first disciples, Abu-Bakr, to strengthen the links between this faithful friend and himself. Aicha was only seven years, but remained two years in her father's house before integrating to the Prophet's house. It was during those two years that he married Sawda. Muhammad also married Hafsa, daughter of Omar Ibn-El-Khattab, the second of the four Caliphs who succeeded him after his death.

With the same desire of unifying the Arab ranks, he gave his daughters to men chosen in marriage. Osman-Ibn-Affan, one of his faithful disciples who became the third of the Caliphs, married his daughters Rokaya and Oum-Kalthoum. Ali, his cousin, married Fatima, his beloved daughter. He gave his daughter Zeinab in marriage to Khaled Ibn-el-Walid, an enemy officer who he had defeated at the battle of Uhud, but who later became a follower. Muhammad himself in return, married Khaled's aunt, to reinforce, through matrimony, the community of the first believers. Muhammad also married two older women, Zaynab and Salma, because they were widows of two martyrs who had fallen during the fighting.

As for Muhammad's marriage to Zaynab, Jahsh's daughter, previously the wife of his adopted son Zayd, the Muslim interpreters have erred, in our opinion, in presenting this fact as a bond of human love.

We will cite below, the Qur'anic verses on this subject, and add the official commentary of "Al Jalalein", which is accepted in general, but that we disapprove of. We shall then present our interpretation, which demonstrates the nobility of the Prophet's intention in marrying Zaynab. The Qur'an says in this regard:

> "It is not for any believer -man or woman- if God and His Prophet decide some matter, to have liberty of choice in action. Whoso disobeys God and His Prophet strayed far in manifest error." (Qur'an XXXIII; The Confederate Troops,36)

The interpretation of "Al Jalalein":

This verse was inspired with regards to Abdallah Ibn-Jahsh and his sister Zaynab. The Prophet had the intention to give Zaynab as a bride to Zayd, his adopted son. But when they arrived at the Prophet's house, Zaynab and Abdallah were disappointed when they learned of Muhammad's intention, believing that Muhammad himself wanted to marry Zaynab and not give her to his adopted son. They submitted nevertheless, to the judgment of the Prophet, after this inspired verse: "Whœver disobeys God and His Apostle strays far".

The Prophet gave Zaynab in marriage to Zayd, but later, his gaze stopped upon her and his heart was enflamed with love for her. Zayd took her in hatred. He says to the Prophet: "I want to divorce her". But the Prophet tells him: "Guard your wife beside you".

Our interpretation:

Prophet Muhammad did not experience a passionate love for Zaynab. This is the reason for which he refused Zayd his divorce. Even more so, Muhammad himself had invited Zaynab and her brother to come to the celebration of the marriage of Zaynab and Zayd. This had taken place despite the initial objections of Zaynab and her brother. They accepted nothing but the Prophet's inspiration. Subsequently, Zayd's intention to divorce put the Prophet in an embarrassing situation, and exposed Zaynab to dishonor and disgrace. The people would have said: "The Prophet's son has repudiated her", which meant her banishment from society as a result, and an animosity between the Prophet Muhammad and the people of Jahsh's House. Only one option remained to Muhammad: reluctantly, marry Zaynab himself as it was said, "Muhammad has married her." It was to raise her dignity instead of degrading her.

Muhammad feared society's miscomprehension nonetheless. Many would have said that he took the wife of his son having been seduced by her. This is the reason why he insisted on Zayd not to go ahead with this divorce. If Muhammad was in love with her, he would have looked forward to, even desired the divorce.

Zayd was a slave before knowing Muhammad. The latter had set him free before the start of his mission, and Zayd subsequently, believed in Islam. A double grace was thus granted to him: that of emancipation, and that of faith. This is the reason for which God, after verse 36, continues in telling Muhammad:

> "Remember when you said to him (*Zayd*) to whom God had been generous (*by Islam*) and your had been generous (*in setting him free*): 'Retain your wife, and be pious before God' - all the while hiding within yourself what God was to reveal..." (Qur'an XXXIII; The Confederate Troops,37)

The interpretation of "Al-Jalalein":

"You sought to hide in your heart" your love for Zaynab and intention to marry, should Zayd leave her.

Our interpretation:

The Prophet did not conceal his love for Zaynab in his heart, but his concern, conscience of the gravity of the situation. He realized that, in case of Zayd's divorce, he would be obliged to marry her himself, to not dishonor her. On the other hand, people would not had understood his deep intentions and would have misinterpreted his actions; they would think, moreover, that he married her out of love, and which some people think still today. This is the reason for which God prompted Muhammad to act according to his own conscience, regardless of what people may think: "And you fear men (for they would say that he married his son's wife). It is God rather, that you have to fear."

The interpretation of "Al-Jalalein" with regards to this verse:

"Take her in marriage without worrying about what people would say".

Our interpretation:

The Prophet must act wisely before God, ignoring people's allegations. Muhammad must model his behavior in function of what is better, not to search for ways to please men, even if they slander him in saying that he married Zaynab because of passion. The Prophet must take into account God's Judgement, Who knows his hidden intention: wed Zaynab to save her from dishonor and to avoid the dangerous discord between the Arabs.

Our interpretation is in complete harmony with the Prophet's entire life, especially in what concerns the noble and deep motivations for his marriages.

4.6.2 The main battles of the Prophet Muhammad

In "Al Medina", the "Prophet's City", the "Enlightened City", as it was named later, Muhammad had several disciples from the two tribes of "Al Aws" and "Al Khazraj". His only enemies there were the Jews who allied themselves with Mecca's idol worshipers. It is why the Qur'an says:

> "You will surely find that the most hostile of men to the believers are the Jews and those who ascribe partners to God (*pagans of Mecca*). And you will surely find that the nearest in amity towards the believers (*to the Qur'an*) are those who say: 'We are Christians', and that is because among them are priests and monks, and they do not grow proud." (Qur'an V; The Table,82)

After his flight to Al Medina, the Jews of this city incited the idolaters of Mecca to keep on fighting Muhammad. The Prophet had, till that moment, refused to carry arms, but this pursuit forced him to resort to it in self-defense. He had to defend his followers, the first community of believers, and his own life against the enemies who attacked Al Medina. They had already invaded the homes of his followers in Mecca and obliged them to go into exile. The Qur'an alludes to this in the following verse:

> "Those who were **driven out of their homes** without just cause, only because they said: 'Our Lord is God'." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,40)

It is the reason why Muhammad decided that he must defend himself in Al Medina. Legitimate defense is not only a right, but one's duty too. God therefore allowed the Prophet to fight:

> "**Leave is granted (*by God to take up arms*)** to those who are being attacked, for they were wronged, and God is assuredly capable of sending them victory." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,39)

> "Therefore, fight them so that there will be no discord and the whole of religion belongs to God." (Qur'an VIII; Booty,39)

Before addressing the topic of wars, it is important to stress that Muhammad, according to the cited Qur'anic verses, never took the initiative of war, but always found himself in the position of self-defense. In certain circumstances, Muhammad was accused of taking the initiative, but it was a pursuit of the enemy, a battle that completed another.

The invasion of Badr

During this first battle, the Muslims, only 300 in number, confronted 1000 idolaters of the Quraish tribe of Mecca. Despite their small numbers, the Muslims triumphed over the idolaters and this was a great joy and sign to them. This battle took place in the second year of Hijra.

The invasion of Uhud

The idolaters of the tribe of Quraish in Mecca, incited by the Jews of Al Medina, attacked Muhammad at Uhud, a suburb of Al Madina. The Quraishites, in a secret alliance with the Jews, were led by the army chief, Khaled Ibn-El-Walid who, later, converted to Islam and married Zaynab, Muhammad's daughter. This battle ended with the defeat of the Muslims and the death of Hamza, Muhammad's beloved uncle. During this invasion, the Prophet became aware of the secret alliance between the Jews of Al Medina and the idolaters of Quraish, and decided to put an end to the Jewish power.

The invasion of the "Trenches"

This invasion was named so, because a trench was dug around Al Medina to prevent access to the Quraishites. The Jews, once again, motivated the idolaters of Mecca to fight the Muslims. The Meccans then encircled Al Medina with a considerable army of 10,000 men. Muhammad had an ex-Persian soldier named Salman by his side. A Christian, and well-advised in military combat, he advised Muhammad to dig a trench around Al Medina and the Meccan horses were not able to invade the city. This saved Muhammad and his followers. This battle took place in the fifth year of Hijra (627 AD). The Meccans believed in an easy victory, but were stuck in the desert with diminishing provisions and the freezing cold. They were thus forced to withdraw.

The invasion of Beni-Qorayza

The invasion of the Jewish village of Beni-Qoraiza followed the invasion of the Trenches. In the meantime, Muhammad discovered the Jewish plot concocted against him, and the Jews' defining role in the invasion of the Trenches. Muhammad decided to pursue them. The Jews had fled into the village of Beni-Qoraiza, where he attacked and annihilated them. The survivors sought their last refuge in the Arabian Peninsula, a Jewish fortress in the city of Khaybar. It was later in this place, that Muhammad's last battle against the Jews followed suit.

After the invasions of the Trenches and Beni-Qoraiza, the bases of Islam in the Arabian Peninsula were consolidated, and Muhammad had a period of peace. The Arabs began to fear him, and sought to establish peaceful links with him.

The pact of Hudaybiyya

Six years after the Prophet and his followers exited Mecca, the latter wanted to return in pilgrimage. The Prophet headed a peaceful march towards Mecca. They stopped in a place on the outskirts of Mecca called Hudaybiyya. The people of Quraish denied Muslims permission to enter pilgrims into Mecca. Talks were held and culminated in the "Hudaybiyya Pact" under which a ten-year truce was proclaimed. This pact allowed Muslims to make a pilgrimage to Mecca the following year and for a period of only three days.

The pilgrims and Muhammad thus returned three weeks later to Al Medina. The pact of Hudaybyya allowed Muhammad to spread his message all over the Arabian Peninsula, and contributed in manifesting the peaceful aspect of Islam. A good number of Arabs embraced the monotheistic religion and joined the Prophet. At that time, the great officer Khaled Ibn-El-Walid converted to Islam, married Zaynab, the Prophet's daughter, after having fought the Muslims in Uhud. In return, Muhammad took Maymouna as wife, Khaled's aunt, and thus consolidating the union between them.

Muhammad's Emissaries to the Kings

As the situation calmed down in the Arabian Peninsula, Muhammad sent emissaries in charge of a letter to the chief kings, asking them to adhere to the Islamic faith and its message. The solicited Kings were Heraclius, the Byzantine King, Xerxes, the Persian king, the Negus "Ahmassa" of Ethiopia, and finally, the Head of the Coptic community in Egypt. In chapter VI, we reproduce the contents of the letter sent to King Heraclius.

The invasion of Khaybar

As peace spread in the Arabian Peninsula, only one threat remained to Muhammad: the Jews entrenched in Khaybar. One month after the pact of Hudaybyya, Muhammad went out himself and headed an Islamic army, and surrounded the city and the fortress. The Muslims valiantly launched their campaign without fear of death, and triumphed after a fierce and ferocious fight. It was the 7th year of Hijra, 629 AD.

Ten years after Hijra, the light of Islam had totally spread throughout the Arabian Peninsula, where Muslims and Christians lived in peace. Muhammad made a peaceful, triumphant entrance into Mecca, and met no resistance. He entered the "Qaaba" and destroyed all the idols therein. He then pronounced these words:

> "Say: 'The Truth has come and Falsehood is stifled. Falsehood shall ever be stifled'." (Qur'an XVII; The Night Journey,81)

Muhammad generously pardoned his enemies -Abi Sifyan and all those who had led the resistance against him- and did not seek vengeance.

This noble Prophet died in the 11th year of Hijra, the year 632 of our era, in Al Medina, where his tomb currently lies.

5. The principal points of Agreement between the Qur'an and the Gospels

The main point of agreement between the Bible and Qur'an is the revelation of the Unique God, the Creator of the Universe. Moreover, the main testimony of the Qur'an in favor of the Gospels is the confirmation that Jesus is truly the Messiah. Had the Qur'an not attested this fundamental evangelical truth, it would neither have been sincere, nor truthful. It is this testimony in particular which confounded the Jews, raising their hatred against Muhammad, especially since the Qur'an is a confirmation of the Evangelical message in its totality. And yet, the Gospels are banned by the Jews, Atheists and Pagans.

Had the Qur'an affirmed that Jesus was not the Messiah, the Jews would not have fought Muhammad, and this would have justified their waiting for a Zionist Messiah, known in the Gospels as the Antichrist. We will discuss this subject by talking about the Messiah.

The main points of agreement between the Qur'an and Gospels are the following:

1. The Messiah
2. The Virgin Mary
3. The Heavenly Table
4. The (Holy) Spirit

5.1 The Messiah

The first and great Truth revealed by the Qur'an to the Arabs is the existence of the one God.

The second fundamental truth is that Jesus is truly the Messiah sent by God and announced by the prophets of the Old Testament. As already mentioned, it is the revelation of this truth by the Qur'an that irritated the Jews and led them not to support the Qur'an. Because, in acknowledging the Qur'an, they would have had to give up the awaiting of a Zionist Messiah.

Here are the Qur'anic verses which confirm that **Jesus is the Messiah, the Prophet** of God, **the Word** of God, and **the Spirit** of God:

> "Remember when the Angels said: 'O Mary, God gives you glad tidings of a Word from Him. His name is **the Messiah**, Jesus son of Mary...'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45)
>
> "They (*the Jews*) declared: 'It is we who killed **the Christ**, Jesus son of Mary, **the Prophet** of God...'" (Qur'an IV; Women,157)
>
> "**The Messiah Jesus**, Son of Mary is indeed the **Prophet of God**, and **His Word**, which He cast into Mary, and a **Spirit** from Him." (Qur'an IV; Women,171)
>
> "Who can do anything against God's will should He wish to extirpate **the Christ son of Mary**, his mother..." (Qur'an V; The Table,17)

If the Jews had accepted Jesus' Messianism, they would have stopped waiting for a Zionist messiah and consequently, would have had to renounce Zionism and the State of Israel - which incarnates the ideals of Zionism. The Jews rejected Jesus as Messiah in the past, and still do so because He condemned the establishment of a political entity in the name of Judaism. St John reports in his Gospel that Jesus, seeing the crowds rushing towards him to proclaim Him as king of Israel, escaped to the mountain all alone (John 6,14-15). Jesus also taught, that God's

Kingdom is within man (Luke 17,20-21), not in the outside political world, as the Jews and so many others still believe today.

Twelve centuries before Jesus, Gideon, a military leader, he too, declined the kingship offered to him by the Jews:

> "The men of Israel said to Gideon, 'Rule over us, you and your sons and your grandson, because you have rescued us from the power of Midian.' But Gideon answered them, 'It is not I who shall rule over you, nor my son; **God must be your lord**'." (Judges 8,22-23)

Following this, the Prophet Samuel had announced God's rejection of an Israeli kingdom (1 Samuel 8). But the Jews, for a long time, had aspired for a Zionist empire through the intervention of an Israeli Kingdom in Palestine. They ignored God's commandments and His Will, proclaimed by the Prophet Samuel (1 Samuel 8,1-19).

In refusing the establishment of an Israeli kingdom, the Messiah reveals the spiritual, nonpolitical purpose of the Jewish religion and all religion. This dœs not exclude the exercise of political activity by believers. To the contrary, it is preferable for believers to take the reins of power in order to institute social and moral reforms for society. But to politicize the spiritual in creating, in the name of religion, a new State, as some Jews, Christians and Muslims want, is contrary to the plan of God. For God is for believers, and the State is for all, believers and non-believers, as the Qur'an says:

> "**There is no compulsion in religion**." (Qur'an II; The Cow,256)

Such a Revelation should be written in gold.

The belief in Jesus as the Messiah is the summit of the Evangelical teaching:

> "Nobody is able to say, 'Jesus is the Lord' (*which is to say that he is the Messiah*), except in the Holy Spirit." (1 Corinthians 12,3)
>
> "Whoever believes that Jesus is the Messiah is a child of God." (1 John 5,1)

Jesus Himself had said to the Jews who plotted against Him:

> "Yes, if you do not believe that I am He (*the Messiah*), you will die in your sins." (John 8,24)

We need to underline another Qur'anic verse testifying that Jesus is the awaited Messiah:

> "They make taken their rabbis (*the Jews*) and monks (*the Christians*) as Lords instead of God - and also the Christ son of Mary. They were commanded to worship but one God - there is no God but He!" (Qur'an IX; Repentance,31)

This verse which testifies that Jesus, the "son of Mary" is the Messiah, is often misinterpreted by some as a negation of the Messiah's divinity. This is not the Qur'an's intention, which presents itself as a confirmation of the Evangelical Inspiration (Qur'an IV; Women,47). And yet, the Gospels reveal the divinity incarnate in the person of Jesus. (See Chapter: "The litigation points", paragraph 3: "The Divinity of the Messiah"). We must therefore not take as Lord and God the Son of Mary INSTEAD of God, but AS God incarnate announced by the Biblical prophecies. Otherwise we would be worshiping two gods, independent from one another: God as one part, and the Messiah as another, when "they were ordered to serve only one God". Notice that the words "Lords" is plural, indicating polytheism. This subtlety is not

perceived by all the interpreters of the Qur'an, who did not bother to interpret by "the best of arguments", as prescribed by Qur'an in chapter XXIX; The Spider,46).

Moreover, the Evangelical Inspiration warns us against the apparition of the false Zionist messiah called the Antichrist by St John:

> "You were told that the Antichrist must come... **The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ**... he is Antichrist" (1 John 2,18-22).

We know that the Jews deny that Jesus is the Messiah, the Zionists in particular.

What can we conclude from these Evangelical words? We draw two conclusions:

1. Muhammad, in acknowledging Jesus as the Messiah is inspired by the Holy Spirit and "is born of God".

2. All those who deny that Jesus is the Messiah, ie the Jews who both reject Him and who await another messiah, form the entity of the Antichrist. In other words, the modern State of Israel incarnates the powers of the Antichrist.

The Evangelical Inspiration reveals that Jesus Himself will annihilate the Antichrist when this latter will appear. According to St Paul, the Messiah's Advent will be preceded by the apparition of "the Rebel", "the Enemy", who the Messiah Jesus will annihilate by the magnificence of his coming (2 Thessalonians 2,3-12). The Rebel announced by St Paul is the impious and racist behavior of the Zionists. God is universal, non-racist. "The Lost One", the "Son of Perdition" and "the Enemy" whom St Paul speaks of, are Zionists who "act in a way that cannot please God and make them the enemies of the whole human race", as Paul explained (1 Thessalonians 2,15).

In the past, the Zionist Jews worked secretly under the Roman Empire to found the State of Israel. They were prevented by the Romans. At present, the apparition of this State allows them to operate openly and with greater power than before, and to exert their influence. Today, this antichrist power is armed with allies who claim to be Jesus' disciples. This is the seduction and treason of the end of times predicted by the Gospels (Matthew 24).

The Prophet Muhammad in his "Noble Discussions", spoke of the apparition of this force of impiety in saying that the Antichrist will have three letters "**K.F.R**." inscribed on its forehead. These letters in Arabic, form the word "Kufr", and mean impiety or blasphemy. He even specified that this force of evil emanates from the Jews. In the Evangelical Inspiration, we find the same blasphemies inscribed on the head of the Apocalyptic "Beast":

1. This beast was given "to mouth its boast and blasphemies." (Revelation 13,5)

2. "I saw... a scarlet Beast... and had blasphemous titles written all over it... on her forehead was written a name, a CRYPTIC NAME." (Revelation 17,1-5) See the text: "The Key of the Apocalypse"

The Prophet Muhammad, confirming St Paul, has equally stressed in his "Noble Discussions" that, at the Antichrist's apparition, Jesus and his elect will rise up to fight him and destroy him. Jesus' disciples today, according to the intention and inspiration of the divine prophecies, are not the traditional Christians who collaborate with and support Israel. This culpable "christian" support to Israel was also prophesied, because according to the Gospel, the seducer Antichrist will succeed in seducing Jesus' false disciples (Matthew 24). Nowadays, true believers

are those who thirst for Justice, those who bear the yoke of Zionism's iniquity, those resistant to Israel and international Zionism.

According to the Evangelical prophecies, and those of the Prophet Muhammad's, the State of Israel will disappear forever. Its fall will symbolize Zionism's failure, and all the corresponding materialistic mentalities. From this happening, many will realize that Jesus is truly the Messiah, and that His Kingdom is indeed and forever established on earth, according to the announcements of the prophets.

5.2 The Virgin Mary

The Qur'an contains the most beautiful verses on the Virgin Mary. It places the Mother of the Messiah at the highest summit of human holiness:

> "Remember when the angels said: 'O Mary, God has chosen you, made you pure and chosen you above all the women of the world.'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,42)

This testimony condemns the Jews who, as the Qur'an reveals, have invented terrible words of slander against Mary, (Qur'an IV; Women,155). God, in the Qur'anic Inspiration, attests what He had inspired in the Gospel about Mary:

> "Of all women you are the most blessed..." (Luke 1,42)

The Qur'an equally reveals Mary's exceptional purity, and her Immaculate Conception, as well as that of Jesus'. In the following two verses, the wife of Imran, ie Mary's mother (the Family of Imran are Mary's parents), prays in saying:

> "'My Lord, I pledge to You what is in my womb. It shall be dedicated to Your service. Accept this from me for it is You - You Who are All-Hearing, All-Knowing'. When she gave birth to a female, she said: 'My Lord, I have given birth to a female... I have called her Mary. I seek refuge in You for her and her progeny (*Jesus*) from Satan, ever deserving to be stoned.'" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,35-36)

God hears the prayer of Mary's mother and grants her vow: Mary and Jesus were the only ones safeguarded from the devil, as Muhammad reports in his "Noble Discussions":

> "No man is born without the devil reaching him from birth and he screams because of this satanic attack (*tarnish of original sin*), **except Mary and her Son**."

This verse from the "Noble Discussions" is reported in the interpretation of "Jalalein", from verse 35 of the Sura "The Family of Imran"; it is a Hadith related by Abu Houraira, see `http://www.el-ilm.net/t1333-maryam-bint-Imran.` It is also reported in a slightly modified way by Al Bokhari, see "L'authentique tradition musulmane, choix de hadiths", Fasquelle, pg 48 (French book).

These words, accepted by the whole Muslim world, are an acknowledgement of Mary's Immaculate Conception.

With these words, the Prophet Muhammad teaches us that every man, including the Prophets and himself, is born with this defect, except for Mary the Immaculate and, of course, her Son, the Messiah.

5.3 The Heavenly Table

The Qur'an reveals us that God has descended from Heaven a "Table", served to nourish Jesus' Apostles. This heavenly food is a common point between the Bible and the Qur'an, a point ignored by the greater majority of believers. It is the communion of the Messiah's Body and Blood, the spiritual Table of God. In fact, the Qur'an reports pedagogically, in a condensed and vibrant form, the Last Easter Supper that Jesus shared with his Apostles and during which He instituted the spiritual Meal with his Body and Blood. This fact is reported by the Qur'an in a subtle manner, respecting the ignorance of the Arab world on the evangelical message:

> "The disciples said: 'O Jesus son of Mary, can your God send down upon us a Table **from Heaven** (*spread with food*)?' He said: 'Fear God if you are true believers'. They said: 'We wish to eat from it so that our hearts are at peace, and we know that you have spoken the truth to us, and we be **witnesses** thereof (*witnesses of the Table*)'; said Jesus son of Mary: 'Lord, send down upon us **a Table from Heaven**, and it shall be a feast day for **first and last** among us, and a miracle from You, and grant us Your bounty - You are the best of Providers.' God said: 'I shall send it down **upon you**. Whoso among you disbelieves hereafter, I shall torment him with a torment the like of which I shall torment no other human being.'" (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115)

What is this Table (spread) coming down from Heaven? It is important to know its true nature, since the Apostles committed themselves "to be witnesses" to it. Moreover, this testimony is to last up till the last believer on Earth, since Jesus reclaims this Table from God in order that It be "a feast for the first of us and **the last** of us". Then, God made It descend, threatening unbelievers with the harshest of punishments.

Some interpreters see in this Table a material food made up of fish or meat. They confound between the **material** miracle of the multiplication of bread and fish made by Jesus in the Gospel (John 6), and the miracle of the **Spiritual** Meal: the Heavenly Table which "came down **from Heaven**", as the Qur'an specifies.

The Gospel reports in chapter 6 of St John, of the Messiah's words on this spiritual Meal of vital importance. He said that "His Flesh and His Blood" are a spiritual food and beverage which gives "Eternal Life" to believers. Many of His disciples, in hearing these words, found them "intolerable" and no longer followed Him (John 6,48-66). Still today, many of the "believers" refuse these words and ask themselves "how can this man give us his flesh to eat!" (John 6,52)

The Jews, after centuries of preparation, were not able to understand Jesus. Many acclaimed Christians, still today, do not grasp the profound meaning of His words. How then, do we explain this spiritual Meal, this Table, to the Arabs of the Arabian Peninsula who knew nothing of the Bible? The Qur'an thus had to present the biblical message by innuendo and parables in order to arouse amongst the truth-loving Arabs, a holy curiosity leading to the search for the deep meaning of this message in the Gospels. There they will find the fullness of light concerning the mystery of the Qur'anic Table which descends from Heaven. As we have said, many find this fact hard to believe; it is a matter of "believe it or not! Take it or leave it". To each one his or her responsibility.

Some interpreters claim that this Table has still not been sent by God. This does not correspond to the Qur'anic words: "God said: 'I am sending one **to you**'". God therefore brought it down to the Apostles in the past, even threatening unbelievers with unparalleled suffering. Additionally, Jesus asks God for This, in order that the "the first and the last" of the believers bear witness to it. The first Apostles had therefore already participated in it. It must endure up till the end of times in order that the last believers bear witness to It on Earth.

The Messiah gave the Apostles this "Table", which came down from Heaven. It is this "Bread of Life that comes down from Heaven" (John 6,32-36). Jesus gave this Bread from Heaven one year after He had spoken of It. This happened during the Last Easter Supper He had with his Apostles when taking the bread, gave it to them saying:

> "'Take it and eat', He said, 'this is my Body'. Then he took a cup, and when He had given thanks He handed it to them saying, 'Drink from this, all of you, for this is my Blood, the Blood of the New Covenant, poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins'." (Matthew 26,26-29)

It is from henceforth that the Apostles, and the believers after them, understood how the Messiah gave Himself to them as food and drink. The Meal, the served Table, which the living Messiah offers to "the first and to the last" believers is the Holy Spirit. It dwells in the hearts of believers through this Bread which they eat, and this Wine which they drink, which contain the Body, the Blood, and the Soul of the Messiah, eternally living.

This Heavenly Beverage is the same as mentioned in the Qur'an from the Sura, "Those who Shortchange": those who drink of this rare Wine are the pure ones, God's chosen ones, whereas those who refuse to drink it are the damned. In fact, the Qur'an reveals:

> "The righteous are in bliss. Upon couches, watching. On their faces you would discern the radiance of bliss. They **are given to drink from a nectar, sealed**, whose seal is musk - for this let contenders contend - and whose mixture is from Tasnim, a fountain, from which those **nearest to God** shall drink. Sinners (*those who refuse to drink it*) would once laugh at the faithful (*in this sealed wine*) . . . " (Qur'an LXXXIII; Those who Shortchange,22-29)

The Qur'an, by offering believers this mysterious "**sealed Wine**", in a pœtic and harmonious way, testifies in favor of Jesus' words in John's Gospel about the "**sealed bread**", it too, a food sealed by God, which comes down from Heaven, namely Jesus Himself, "for on Him the Father, God Himself, has **set** His **Seal**" (John 6,27). This Heavenly Food is found in the Bread and the Wine, which is generously served on God's Heavenly Table, and which descends from Heaven.

Recall what Jesus says in the chapter of the (served) Table:

> "Lord, send down upon us a Table from Heaven (*spread with food*), and it shall be a feast day for first and last among us, and a miracle from You. . . " (Qur'an V; The Table,114)

This means that the Table which descended, was not for the Apostles only; it continues to descend every day and everywhere, to be a feast "for the first and **the last**", therefore for believers of all places up to the last believer, up till the Day of Resurrection, and It will witness eternally before God in favor of those who have witnessed for It on earth.

The Table served and this Holy Wine sealed with musk which descend from Heaven, are intended to separate humanity in two: on one side God's elect, those who feed themselves from this Table, and on the other, the damned who refuse to feed themselves from It, and mock those who believe in It.

Finally, it is necessary to point out a fact of the utmost importance: namely that the Holy Qur'an incites the believers, **let contenders contend** for this mysterious Beverage which comes down from Heaven (Qur'an LXXXIII; Those who Shortchange,26). This is totally different from the alcoholic drinks in the world below. That all those who refuse this Holy Wine, arm themselves with Wisdom. Let those who mock the believers who rush to it as "contenders", pull themselves together before it is too late for them.

5.4 The Spirit

The Islamic world has but a vague notion of the "Spirit". This word often comes up in the Qur'an without its essence being clarified. So, believers wonder what exactly this word means. We read in the Sura XVII; The Night Journey,85:

> "They ask you about the Spirit. Say: 'The Spirit belongs to the realm of My Lord, and of knowledge you have been granted but little (*in the Qur'an*)'."

It is for divine wisdom that the Qur'an hides from Muslims what the Spirit is. God wants that His Qur'anic Revelation be an open door and passage towards the Bible, to the Gospels in particular, because He wants the Qur'an to be a witness confirming the veracity of the Biblical Revelation, as explained before.

In the Qur'an, the question of the Spirit is similar to that of the "Table", which God descended from Heaven onto the Apostles. The believer can understand its meaning only by resorting to the Bible. In fact, the Qur'an itself incites the believer to consult the Bible and the people of the Bible. We read in the Sura of "Jonah":

> "If you (*Muhammad*) are in doubt concerning what We revealed to you, **ask those who have read the Book** (*the Bible*) before you. Truth has come to you from your Lord so do not be among those who doubt." (Qur'an X; Jonah,94)

Thus, the Qur'an appears as a passage towards the Bible. Here, believers find the clarifications of what has been partly revealed in the Qur'an. In fact, the latter clearly declares that it offers the Arabs, ignorant at the time, save **a part** of the knowledge, or even "little knowledge", whose supplement is found in the Bible:

> "**Knowledge** you have been granted but **little**" (Qur'an XVII; The Night Journey,85)

Those who denigrate the Bible make up "those who doubt" (Qur'an X; Jonah,94). But the believer who wants to open up to the ensemble of Divine Revelation, will find in the Biblical Revelation the answer about the significance of the word "Spirit": it is the Holy Spirit of God, God Himself who sent His Eternal Spirit to the prophets from the time of Abraham, then became incarnate in the womb of the Virgin Mary as God revealed in the Bible and the Qur'an.

In fact, the Gospel reports:

> "... Mary said to the Angel, 'but how can this come about, since I have no knowledge of man?' The Angel answered, '**The Holy Spirit** will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will cover you with its shadow. And so the child will be holy and will be called Son of God.'" (Luke 1,34-35)

Similarly, we read in the Qur'an:

> "The Christ Jesus son of Mary is indeed the Prophet of God and His Word which He cast into Mary and a **Spirit from Him**." (Qur'an IV; Women,171)

Moreover, when the Prophet Muhammad's messengers went before the Negus to explain to him the Prophet's teachings, Jaafar-Ibn-Abi-Taleb answers that Jesus is "the Servant of God, His Messenger, **His Spirit**, and His Word cast in the Virgin Mary".

6. Invitation to reflection

This last chapter invites the reader to reflect on two points:

1. The letter of invitation to the faith addressed by Muhammad to the emperor Heraclius
2. The welcoming reserved by the Negus of Ethiopia to the Muslims who sought refuge after their flight from Mecca.

6.1 The letter to Heraclius

Here is the translation of this letter:

> "In the Name of the Merciful God. From Muhammad, servant of God, to Heraclius, the Great King of the Byzantines, greetings to those who follow the good orientation. Now I invite you to receive the message of Islam. Accept Islam, you will be saved and God will give you a **double reward**. If you refuse, **the impiety of the Arians** will be upon you. Oh people of the Book, come, let us discuss and agree on the fact that we worship but one God, without associating anything else to Him, and without proclaiming amongst us lords others than God. If you accept, say: Witness that we are Muslims."

Two points interest us in this letter:

6.1.1 The double reward

The Prophet Muhammad assures Heraclius of a "double reward" from the part of God, should he believe in his Message. The Prophet repeats here this **double reward**, promised by God to the Christians who had proclaimed their faith in Islam by saying:

> "We had indeed been Muslims before It (*the Qur'an*)". God answers them in the Qur'an: "These shall be **paid their wages twice**." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,53-54)

The first reward is derived from their faith in the Messiah and the Gospels, the second comes from their faith in the Qur'an, which witnesses in favor of the Bible and the Gospels.

What should the attitude of today's Christians be, who believe in the Gospels and in the Qur'an? According to the Prophet Muhammad -and contrary to the opinion of many traditional Muslims- they do not have to renounce any of the teachings of the Gospels. Muhammad only asks them to say: "We are Muslims" (*that is to say submitted to God*). According to the Sura "The Story" mentioned above, they were **already Muslims** submitted to God, before the Qur'an.

As for the Negus of Ethiopia and the Coptic patriarchs, it was for the first time that they hear the Islamic Message; the patriarchs exclaimed: "But these words stem from the same source as the words of our Lord Jesus, the Messiah!"

Likewise, the Qur'an witnesses that Islam preexisted the Qur'anic revelation:

> "When Jesus detected unbelief from them (*the Jews*), He said: 'Who are my supporters on the path to God?' The Apostles said: 'We are the supporters of God and believe in God. Witness that **we are Muslims** (*submitted*)'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,52)

And God says in another verse:

> "When I inspired the disciples to have faith in Me and in My Messenger (*Jesus*), and they said: 'We believe; so witness that **we are Muslims**'." (Qur'an V; The Table,111)

So, in the concept of the Qur'an, the Apostles of Jesus were already Muslims before Islam, and whœver believes that Jesus is the Messiah is already Muslim, "submitted" to God by accepting the Gospel.

After the coming of the Prophet Muhammad who confirmed the Gospels, those who reject Muhammad reject the Gospels; and those who believe in Muhammad bear witness with him the Gospel's authenticity, and obtain "a double reward". Likewise, the Muslim who believes in the Qur'an and Muhammad, and submits to the Gospels too -in its current text- witnesses with the Qur'an. But if he rejects the Gospels, he ceases to be a Muslim. He thus becomes a false witness of both the Gospels and the Qur'an, and the impiety of the Arians extends to him.

6.1.2 The impiety of the Arians

The second point worthy of interest in this letter is the mention of the "**Arian impiety**", known in the West as "Arianism". Arianism appeared in Alexandria in the IIIrd century after Jesus Christ. A Christian priest named Arius, denied the Messiah's Divinity and had many disciples known as the "Arians" (not to be confused with the Aryan race). The Council of Nicaea (Turkey), held in 325 after Jesus Christ, condemned Arianism. This heresy, well known in Christianity's history, continued for a long time after the Council of Nicaea. It spread out in the East up until the time of the Prophet Muhammad, and even after. Its evil consequences exist still today. The Muslim interpreters, who still ignored the true meaning of Arianism, are incapable of giving an exact explanation, and distort Muhammad's intention.

In mentioning this impiety, Muhammad demonstrates a wisdom and an intelligence which affects every sensible spirit. For the Prophet certifies from his Arab and desert environment, that the decisions of the Council of Nicaea, condemning Arianism, are justified and fully approved by him. Now, this impiety was the **negation of the divinity of Jesus and the Holy Trinity**. Is this not an implicit recognition on the part of Muhammad of these two divine Truths?

6.2 The refuge of the Muslims in Ethiopia

Muhammad's first disciples took refuge in Ethiopia in two successive groups. As soon as the first group arrived to Ethiopia, the tribe of Beni-Quraish of Mecca, Muhammad's staunch enemy, sent two messengers, Amru Ibn-El-Aass -who ultimately became Muslim- and Abdallah Ibn-Abi-Rabih behind them with precious gifts to offer the Negus "Ahmassa", calling for the extradition of the Muslim refugees. They accused them of being malicious, of having left the religion of their people and of opposing the religion of the Negus. They claimed that they had invented an unknown religion, contrary to that of the Negus and the Arabs.

The Negus refused to deliver the refugees before hearing them out first. One of them, Jaafar Ibn-Abi-Taleb, then spoke in the Negus' presence and the Ethiopian religious leaders:

"Oh King, we were an ignorant people who worshiped the idols until God sent us a prophet from amongst us whose origin we all know, as well as his honesty and faithfulness. He invited us to believe in the One and only God and to worship Him".

The Negus responded: "Can you read to us a text written by this man on behalf of God!"

Jaafar responded: "Yes", and he recited all the Sura of Mary up till the verse where Jesus says:

> "Peace be upon me the day I was born, the day I die, and the day I am resurrected, alive!" (Qur'an XIX; Mary,33)

When the patriarchs heard these verses, they said: "But these words stem from the same source as the words of our Lord Jesus, the Messiah."

And the Negus confirmed this in telling the two messengers: "The words of these men here, and the words of Moses emanate from one same source. Leave now! In the Name of God, I will not deliver these men to you".

Yet the two messengers did not give up their scheme. They returned to tell the Negus: "The Muslims speak evil of Jesus, Son of Mary. Send for them and interrogate them on this subject". When they arrived before the Negus, Jaafar answers him: "We say what our Prophet has taught us: Jesus is the Servant of God, His Messenger, His Spirit and His Word sent unto the Virgin Mary". These Muslims had thus understood that Jesus only, is the Spirit and the Word of God.

When the Negus heard that, he took a rod and drew a line on the ground in saying: "Between your religion and ours, there is no more than this line".

Had the Negus known Muhammad personally and heard his teachings from his own mouth, and not had the two messengers of Mecca poison the atmosphere, he certainly would not have drawn this line between the believers. The Prophet Muhammad never imagined, nor wanted such a line of separation. Wouldn't he had been, he the Prophet, inspired to say to the people of the Book:

> "Our God and yours is One God." (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46)

Where is this line then, in Muhammad's mentality? It simply dœs not exist.

Now is the time for every believer who is mature in faith to overcome the lines and artificial obstacles erected for centuries by human fanaticism. The time has come for the believer to find and embrace his believing brother.

There are no more Jews, there are no more Christians, there are no more Muslims. We are all Jews, we are all Christians, and we are all Muslims, provided however, that we surpass the letter and embrace God's Spirit after discovering his true intention in his Biblical-Qur'anic revelation. "Judge for yourself what is right" as the Messiah recommends (Luke 12,57). This is "the Straight Path" of the Qur'an (Qur'an I; Fatiha,6).

Let us have the courage to be independent believers!

6.3 Conclusion

Why did I call this Book "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an"?

The reason is simple: in men's eyes, I am Christian and, in their opinion, a Christian dœs not believe in the Qur'an. Yet my Christianity is more faithful to Islam than that of many Muslims. The Qur'an and its noble Prophet Muhammad witness in my favor and grant me a **double reward**.

The Qur'an and the Bible are nobody's monopoly. The Qur'an is a Divine Inspiration addressed to all those who love spiritual Life and aspire to sublimate their thoughts to sit with the Creator, in His company and live eternally with His life-giving Breath and Spirit.

I believe in God, in Abraham, in Jesus, the Messiah of God, and in Mohammed, the Prophet of God. I am an independent believer. I am neither Jewish, nor Christian, nor Muslim. And yet I am altogether Jewish, Christian and Muslim, because I believe that there are only two communities: the Community of blessed believers, and the community of banished fanatics, belonging to all peoples, nations and religions.

Also, I conclude my testimony with this luminous Quranic verse from Sura III, The Family of Imran,199:

"Among the People of the Book are some who believe in God, and **in what was revealed to you** (*Qur'an*), **and what was revealed to them** (*Bible*), bowing in piety before God, and bartering not the Signs of God for a paltry price! These shall have their reward with their Lord, and God is swift in reckoning." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,199)

Pierre (13.10.1984 / Revised 23.02.2008)

2

Reactions to the Book “A Look of Faith at the Qur’an”

Two explicit reactions, one in support, the other in refusal, ensued after the publication of the book “A look of Faith at the Qur’an”.

The first reaction is an article written by the Sheikh ZY (Dignitary of the Higher Islamic Legal Council). This supportive article should have appeared in an Arabic Islamic journal. This publication was forbidden, but the author of the article sent a copy, signed by his own hand to Pierre. We reproduce its contents translated from the Arabic.

1. First Reaction: Article of the Sheikh Z Y

To M. the Teacher

With regards to the book "A look of Faith at the Qur’an": a new book by the Christian scholar Pierre was completed the 13th of October, 1984. The book is composed of 136 pages of average size; it is divided into four chapters:

1st chapter: The reference to the Qur’anic text

2nd chapter: The litigation points

3rd chapter: The main points of agreement

4th chapter: Invitation to reflection.

The author mentions a Qur’anic verse in the introduction: "O People to whom the Book (*the Bible: Torah and Gospel*) has been revealed, believe in that We have revealed (*the Qur’an*) confirming the truth of that which you already have before" (Qur’an IV; Women,47). And the author says that this book is a brief study of the original Divine Intention, an inviting study to open oneself with faith to the Qur’an, and from the Qur’an to the Gospel and the Torah, which are both certified by the Qur’an. The Qur’an indeed affirms that it confirms its two predecessors and dœs not contest them. In fact, the Lord says to the believers in the Qur’an: "’We believe in what has been sent down upon us (*the Qur’an*), and sent down upon you (*the Torah and the Gospel*)" (Qur’an XXIX; The Spider,46).

The author says: “I advise the readers to open themselves to the content of this book with objectivity, in rising above the confessional mentality to which they pertain to, and to any narrow confessional mentality. Our aim is to liberate ourselves from the confessional mind and the abominable religious racism that has infiltrated into each one of us without our knowledge. We can only liberate ourselves with knowledge, true knowledge of what God has said in the inspiration. It is this knowledge that is capable of freeing us from the chains of traditions and deviating ideas regarding the teachings of the Bible and Qur’an. And the author appeals on the Qur’anic verse: “They to whom We brought the Book (*The Bible*) before this present Revelation (*the Qur’an*) believe in it (*the Qur’an*). And when it is recited to them, they say:

'We believe in it (*the Qur'an*); it is the Truth from our Lord. We had indeed been Muslims before it'. These shall be paid their wages twice..." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,52)

The author adds: "What consoles the heart of every true believer with regards to this verse is, on one side, the opening up of Christians to the Qur'an in the past, without fanaticism, and on the other, the double reward of God when they say that they were Muslim before the Qur'an. If a Christian today proclaims that he is a Muslim before the Qur'an, he would arouse against himself the spite of many traditional Christians and Muslims. Here appears the abyss between God's original desire and the traditions that have deviated them, these traditions created by man.

And the author is astonished that despite the Qur'an's testimony in favor of the Torah and the Gospel, repeated so many times, there have been many scholars who wanted to interpret the verses of the Qur'an independently of the Bible: as if they were disgusted by the Bible. On the contrary, they pride themselves on not referring to the Bible. It is why their interpretation has become alien to the logic of the inspiration. It carries in it the seeds of division between brothers, when the Qur'an has asked not to separate between prophets, and what God has inspired them. The Qur'an says: "Do not argue with the People of the Book except **in the best manner**, save the wicked (*of the Bible*) among them, and say: 'We believe in what has been sent down upon us (*the Qur'an*) and sent down upon you (*Bible*). Our God and yours is One God, and to Him we submit." (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46).

And the author adds: "All those who read the Bible and the Qur'an objectively, without tension, will augment their insight, and will understand that certain Biblical stories are also reported by the Qur'an: from the Creation of the world, passing through Noah, Abraham and the twelve Apostles, the breaking of the Covenant by the Jews, and finally, the mentioning of the Messiah which the Qur'an reports with such honor and respect. Why then, dœs one shy away from the Qur'an? Why move away from one of the two Books in particular, when we find in the Bible an extra bit of Light compared to what is in the Qur'an? Many of those who discuss religion, do it with enthusiasm, but without the knowledge that is inspired in the Bible. And their ignorant enthusiasm causes them to fall into the nets of extremism. This attitude is abominable to God and his prophets".

The author also says that, as Christians, we understand the essence of Islam starting from what the Qur'an itself says of Islam, purifying it from all the traditional attributes, which have culminated like parasites along the centuries and throughout the events, to deform the purity of the face of Islam. The author also writes: we are perfectly aware, that in the eyes of the Qur'an, the Muslim (submitted) is he who surrenders himself to God in doing Good, "has held fast to a handle most secure" (Qur'an XXXI; Luqman,22). Because there are those who submit to God, but do not do good. But happy is every Muslim who surrenders to God and who dœs good by making an effort to understand, and in reading the Books that the Lord has inspired. Happy this man, whether he is Muslim, Christian, or pagan.

The author again certifies in saying: "This study aims to inculcate the spirit of openness and goodwill among the faithful of good faith, non-racists, and non-fanatics from all confessions, without any compromise. Believers from all confessions, who are able to free themselves of their prejudices, will realize in reading the inspired divine Books -calmly and at safe distance from challenges, provocations and personal ideas- that this Inspiration is One. Its Source is One, and it comes from one God. They will discover with joy, that they are brothers, embracing each other mutually, after having believed that they were enemies killing one another."

Pierre says: "I named this book 'Look of faith at the Qur'an' because, to men, I am a priest and Christian and, in their opinion, a Christian dœs not believe in the Qur'an, despite that the Qur'an is nobody's monopoly. It is the inspiration of God addressed to all those who love

spiritual life, and aspire to sublimate their thoughts, so they may sit next to the Creator, and live eternally from his breath and in his company".

Pierre says: "I believe in God, I believe in Jesus, the Christ of God and believe in his prophet Muhammad. I believe there are but two communities, not a third: the community of the blessed believers, and the community of the banished fanatics, belonging to any people, any nation, and any religion".

And we, in our turn, greet Pierre, this generous soul, for having drawn our attention with much kindness, as we have greeted before him, Ambassador Nasri Salhab, hoping to see many more of these books of faith that have their result.

Signature of the Reverend Sheikh Z Y

2. Second reaction: Response to the articles of Sheikh KR

The second reaction consists of a series of five articles written by the Sheikh KR and appeared in an Arab review. Pierre responded in a newspaper to the first four articles.

Here the translation of Pierre's response:

Unity of faith, not the dissimulation of the texts:

I read in the review, your reaction to my book "Look of Faith at the Qur'an: Unity of the Biblical-Qur'anic Inspiration". I respond to your Reverence because some close friends, authentic Muslims, have asked me with insistence to do so, after having been convinced by my answers to your attacks. They have thus asked me to answer publicly so that nobody, including you, can believe that you are right.

Firstly, permit me me to draw your attention on some remarks. You said: "The author forced himself to reconcile the texts of the Torah, Gospel and Qur'an. And from where has he the right to do so? ... The truth is, that he has stumbled in his style of conciliation and has walked around the truth, so that the conciliation has become an elusion". You repeat this in the introduction, always the same, in the four articles reported by the review. And yet, in my book, and contrary to what you say, I did not provide a single effort "of conciliation". Such an effort is conceivable only between texts that contradict or oppose each other; this is not the case with the inspired Books. Speaking of the conciliation between the inspired Books, implies that they are not in harmony with each other. Yet, there is nothing like that here. That is why I think you are right in saying, with regards to conciliation: "From where has he the right to do so?", since the problem from the start dœs not exist. I have tried to find an agreement between the believers of these inspired Books, not between the inspired Books themselves which, from the start, are in agreement. Is it this you are blaming me for? If this effort of conciliation between believers is a sin, I then merit hell, as I burn with zeal to see believers in agreement and united with love around the unique God. And how could there not be harmony between the Books of God? The Qur'an declares explicitly, that it certifies the Bible, not that it contradicts it, and that the God of the Qur'an is the same as the One of the Bible, as I have demonstrated in my book, supporting myself on some Qur'anic verses which I repeat here:

> "O People to whom the Book (*the Bible*) has been revealed, believe in what We have revealed (*the Qur'an*), confirming the truth of that which you already have (*the Bible*), before." (Qur'an IV; Women,47)

And yet, what the "people of the Book" had with them, in the VIIth century AD, was the Bible in its current text. Would the Qur’an have testified for the Bible if it had been falsified -according to your statements- in the preceding centuries?

The Qur’an also says to the people of the Book: "Our God and yours is One God (*the same*). To Him we submit." (Qur’an XXIX; The Spider,46)

The logical conclusion of these inspired words is that: to believe in God in the Qur’an, is to believe in God in the Bible, to Whom we all "are resigned" (i.e. "Muslims"). It is why the Qur’an considers the apostles of Jesus Christ "Muslims", even before the arrival of the Qur’an. Sane logic leads us to conclude that from the same God emanates one sole inspiration, a unique divine intention, and one salutary plan that we must strive to discover incessantly until we reach the goal which, by the grace of God, will delight and blossom us. In fact, God’s intention is one in the Bible and Qur’an, even if the style and the literary forms are different. The latter depends on the society, the place and the moment when the inspiration was given. God, as you know, speaks to each people according to their language and mentality as the Qur’an reveals: "We sent no Messenger except with the language of his people..." (Qur’an XIV; Abraham,4).

What I endeavor to seek, is the unity of the faith that originally existed in the heavenly Books inspired by God in the various languages, and according to the societies to whom God addressed Himself. I never tried to find an agreement between these inspired Books, as you say: "From where has he the right to do so", since this agreement already exists?

My intention appears in the title of my book: "Unity of the Biblical-Qur’anic Inspiration" and not "Attempt of reconciliation between the Bible and the Qur’an".

This is why I did not understand the reason for your fit of anger. Furthermore, several respectable believers and well-educated Muslims congratulated me for this happy initiative, including wise religious chiefs which you know and who know you. Besides, from the onset, I warned the reader, provided he is attentive, notifying him on page 1 that, "this book is a brief study of the true concept of the divine inspiration. It is an invitation to open oneself with faith to the Qur’anic inspiration, and through it, to the Gospel and the Torah attested by the Qur’an. It is a look of faith at the divine inspiration in general, to assemble believers with the discovery of the unity of the Biblical-Qur’anic inspiration..."

Thus, as the attentive reader will have noticed, the thread of my research is clear: it is to discover the unity of the faith, already existent, in the inspired Books and not an effort of conciliation between the Books.

Now, permit me, Reverend Sheikh, to express my disappointment and my regret, feelings shared by others, with the scornful, aggressive and provocative style which you have adopted in your response, not that I consider myself as an important personality, I am not, but because I am a simple man, a man whom your Reverence ignores, with his dignity like all men. The prophet Muhammad has never reacted like you, but chose the best of attitudes and recommends it to believers. We were expecting from a man of religion, a discussion and a dialogue using "the best" of attitudes according to the Qur’anic commandment. Especially that in your introduction you say: "I had recourse to God the Almighty so that He would inspire me the Good and correct logic". And yet, I note that you had recourse to pœts, philosophers and men of science, not God. In the name of God, I ask you then: how can you accuse me of elusion, I, who refer to His Words from the luminous book of the Qur’an, and not human ideas?

You have still tried, as far as you could -and I want to believe that it was in good faith- to disfigure the content of my book, by not mentioning a single positive idea. You have spoken of tritheism as if I believe in three gods, even when I have denounced it as heresy. You have spoken of the divinity of the body of Christ, whereas I speak of the Spirit that has animated this body, created as Adam’s body. I have explained why the Christ, only, is considered by the

Qur'an as the Spirit of God. It is why I said that you have tried to disfigure the content of my book in mentioning half-truths, defending with enthusiasm the unity of God, a unity in which I believe, without your long speeches. You have disfigured, as it suited you, certain passages of my book, before people who were unaware of it, without mentioning a single positive point, presenting it as content with animosity and hatred towards the Qur'an, Islam and the Truth. However, the opposite is true and satisfied with the testimony of my conscience and the support of my good friends, authentic Muslims. And that God forgives you, Reverend and respectable Sheikh KR!

However, I ask each reader to be aware of the content of my book before passing judgement. (Today, it is found on the site: http://www.pierre2.net).

I seized the opportunity to inform the readers and yourself, Reverend, that my book has been translated in French and on its way to English, German and Italian, if God wills it. This work has planted in the heart of many believers in the West, love for the Qur'an, for its noble prophet and for Islam. It has contributed in destroying blind fanaticism, especially in the West, in presenting the Qur'an in its purity, the prophet Muhammad in his limpidity, and Islam in its innocence, not an intolerant, vanquished and divided Islam -as Christianity is too- because of the aggressive fundamentalism of both communities. It is why my soul exalts in God because of these translations, because the faith, the Bible, the Qur'an, the prophets, the apostles, Christianity and Islam are the monopoly of no man; no one can claim to limit them, whatever his hierarchy or culture.

It is the reason for which I stop here, on the remarks of your Reverence, on N ° 8 of the review: "Each prophet who came, cancelled the law of his predecessor as a result of alliances and various times, until God put an end to prophecy, accomplishing His message by the last of His prophets: Muhammad. Thus, the law of Muhammad has cancelled that of Jesus. Now, between Jesus and our Prophet (Muhammad), there is no other prophet; we know then by this fact, that it is not permitted to practice any religion other than Islam".

I am shocked Reverend, that you consider the prophet Muhammad as "your" prophet; he is the prophet of God, the prophet of the Universe, of all those who believe in him, and whom I am a part of. He is the monopoly of no man, but it is us who belong to him. No community can say that an apostle or a prophet is their own, or the Messiah is "Our Messiah". As these messengers have a greater dimension than our capacity, and nobody can monopolize them. The faith, the prophets, the apostles and God are for all, whether some would admit it or not!

You then speak Reverend, of the "Law of Jesus". But Jesus never established another "Law", but that of Love, justice and judgement with a mature conscience. How can such "a Law" be abolished? Did the Qur'an speak of the abolition of the "Law" of Jesus by Muhammad, or are these but human thoughts?

The Gospel says: "The law was given through Moses, grace and truth have come through Jesus Christ" (John 1,17). As for what you say: "It is not permitted to practice any religion other than Islam, and the religion in the eyes of God is Islam", I am among those who preach this with an ardent and lively faith. But I preach a Qur'anic Islam, not a confessional and fanatical one, divided and torn by its own contradictions. The beloved prophet Muhammad said: "Be careful, do not become again after me as irreligious people beating one another." (Discussion N ° 204)

The numeration of the Discussions of the Prophet is drawn from the Arabic book "Manhal Al Waridin", by Sheikh Sobhi Saleh.

So where is Islam today? Do you see it in the different Muslim communities who kill themselves? Where is the faith today? I ask myself with desolation and sadness, as my love for the faith, the unique God, the Qur'an and Islam is profound, but saddened.

What Islam is your Reverence speaking of? You are in a valley and I in another... and I meditate with desolation the words of the beloved prophet Muhammad in his spiritual "Discussions": "There will come a time when only the drawing of the Qur’an will remain, and of Islam only its name. People will claim Islam, but they will be the most distant of it".

This time has come with the apparition of evil incarnated in the Israeli entity. This entity, you know well, announces a Zionist Christ and denies Jesus, the true Christ.

This "christ" of Israel is the Antichrist of which the Gospel and the prophet Muhammad in several of his spiritual "Discussions" spoke of, where he says among other things: "I do not fear for you except for the Antichrist. If he appears while I am with you, it is I who will refute his arguments, but if he appears then when I am no longer with you, then it will be for each one of you to find the arguments (*against him*), and then, God will be my successor beside each Muslim" (Discussion N ° 1806).

The Zionist Antichrist has appeared, deceiving mankind, and the beloved Muhammad is not with us. In this case, each man today is responsible for his own arguments and God is the only successor of Muhammad beside the believers until the end of the world. I say to all those who claim to be the successors of Muhammad: “You are deceived! This is not true, because the beloved prophet himself warned us himself, by saying to us that now, there is no longer any other successor but God”. I believe and my faith is firm, and profoundly established, that we have reached the moment when each person must seek, himself, his own arguments to justify his conscience and faith before God. Today, God Himself takes the reins in his hands to lead all Muslims, whom I am a part of.

Permit me still, to remind you Reverend, what the Qur’an reports: "The Bedouins say: ’We believe.’ Say: ’You do not believe. Instead you may say: "We surrender," but faith has not entered your hearts’" (Qur’an XLIX; The Chambers,14).

This Islam of the Bedouins is that which is widespread today. The beloved prophet warned us against this kind of faith and this "Islam" which I reject and denounce. Numerous are these modern "Bedouins" who say: "We believe and we are Muslim, but they are neither believers nor Muslims, having submitted (*Islamized*) not to God, but to Israel, the enemy of God, and hate one another. The examples are numerous in the Arab countries and I am not alone, to be sorry and sad with the Muslims’ betrayal of the authentic Islam, as I am not alone in my pain to see the Christians betraying the true Christianity.

I have relied in my research on the words of God and His directives, putting into practice His commandment to discuss religious subjects based only on a "Luminous Book". The Luminous Book that I took as a guide is the Qur’an as I have mentioned on page 11 of my book where I say: "God requires prudence from believers in the search of spiritual truths. He asks them always, to lean on the inspired Books and to ignore rumors propagated by the troublemakers. God warns in saying: "Among people is one who argues about God, without knowledge, without guidance, without a Luminous Book (Qur’an XXII; The Pilgrimage,8). The Luminous Book we resort to understand the spirit of the Qur’an is the Qur’an itself".

As for you, Reverend, trying to demonstrate at all costs that the Gospel is falsified, you have resorted to the sayings of certain "Western scholars", neglecting to resort to those of the Orient, like the two great Muslim scholars, the late Reverends Muhammad Abdo and Afaghani who have confirmed with firmness, the authenticity of the Bible. How much I would have liked that you, as a man of religion, respond to me on the basis of Qur’anic texts. They only, can convince me. I had however, warned readers of my book, in saying that one of the most important principles in my research, as I value before all, to safeguard the faith, consists of the continual return to the text of the Qur’an to avoid any distractions. The calm and posed reader has, without any doubt, grasped this point which, in my view, is of greatest importance. You will find this principle mentioned in page 11 of my book.

The scholars to whom you had recourse to in your responses have misled many people. It is why -and whatever the eminence of their science and culture- I prefer the luminous Book and its directives over them.

You have strived with an astonishing determination to find non-Qur'anic evidence to prove the falsification of the Bible, and especially the Gospel, as if you port an angst towards this Holy Book. Your work is condemned by God in the Qur'an which, as I will show a bit further, considers "lost", those who refuse the Gospel (Qur'an II; The Cow,115). You avoided to refer yourself to the Qur'an and have relied on a long list of Western, anti-Biblical "scholars". Permit me then, Reverend, to draw your attention to four points:

1. To find a proof of the falsification of the Gospel -and there are none- is equivalent in contradicting the Qur'an, which attests it. You present the Biblical translation of the Vulgate as a proof of the falsification of the Holy Scriptures. This translation, as you well know, was made by St Jerome, starting from Hebrew for the Old Testament and Greek for the New Testament. To translate the Bible dœs not mean to falsify it. The translation was named "Vulgate", ie "popular", as it was translated in Latin, the "popular" and universal language at the time. What wrong is there in translating it? Where is the falsification? And what is the harm in correcting the text and improving it after having it translated? The Vulgate's text is that which existed at the time of Muhammad, and which was recognized canonical by the Council of Trent in Italy in 1546. It is the text employed by all the Catholic and Orthodox Christian Churches. The Protestants refuse seven books of no importance of the Old Testament, but recognize that the other books are canonical, non-falsified. As for the books of the New Testament, all the Christian confessions are in agreement on their authenticity.

2. The "scholars" which you have mentioned are but the links of a chain of agents of international Zionism and the universal atheistic freemasonry. Many of these "scholars" infiltrated into the Christian clergy, Catholic in particular, in order to sow confusion and to spread this false doctrine of Biblical falsification, which the Qur'an is innocent of. Their words are not new and many Biblical scholars have responded to these calumnies, like Jean Daniélou, Karl Rahner, Paul Claudel, the Biblical School of Jerusalem headed by the Dominican monks of the convent of St Etienne in Jerusalem, etc...

The Vatican has denounced and dismissed several of the fake scholars that you cite and warned against many others. Moreover, the archaeological discoveries have falsified your "scholars". Indeed, the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls, dating 200 years BC, prove the authenticity of the Old Testament and other discoveries attest that of the New Testament, as I demonstrated in my book (*Paragraph 3.5.2*).

We would have appreciated it if you mentioned the great orientalist scholar, Louis Massignon, who believed in the Gospel and in the Qur'an and who took defense of Islam and its mysticism. This man is an apostle of openness and peace, of agreement and unity between the believers of the East and of the West. He was a celebrated orientalist who won the confidence of the true Christian and Muslim believers.

I do not wish to expand and mention lists of scholars and their words -as you have done- whatever the valor of their arguments and the grandeur of their virtues, for I rely only on the divine inspiration. I limit myself in the citation of men of science, not to imitate the over-proud who show off their cultural "muscles" to impress psychologically, the simple and naive. Having recourse to scholars ports naught, in any case, to the incredulous who have "eyes but do not see and ears but do not hear", as the Lord says in His luminous Book.

3. The majority of scholars which you have mentioned attack not only the Gospel, but the Qur'an too. They reject the evangelical doctrines attested by the Qur'an, like Mary's virginity. These people are the apostles of the evil struggle against the Qur'anic inspiration. It is true

that they recognize the authenticity of the Qur’anic text, but they reject the content. They have put all their research at the service of the Israeli entity and claim that their discoveries result in the support of Israel. They teach that Israel is the people of God and that Palestine is their divine right. They impose on the Christians of the West, solidarity with the Jews of the East and the West. They apply pressure on the Vatican -especially on those amongst them who are infiltrated- that they recognize Israel.

The aim of these "scholars", in propagating the doctrine of falsification, is to remove all confidence in the gospel because it denounces the Jews. I cite to you as an example, what the Christ says to the Jews who refuse Him: "You are from your father, the devil..." (John 8,44). The ultimate aim of the doctrine of the falsification of the Gospel is double:

1. To consider all the anti-Israeli texts as falsified.

2. To destroy the Christian faith in Jesus as the Christ, so to lead to the presentation of a Zionist "Christ", considered by the Gospel as the Antichrist, Jesus being the true Christ as the Qur’an also confirms.

The infiltration of the Zionist, or zionized scholars up till the heart of the Church has bore many fruits. You are certainly aware, Reverend, that the Second Vatican Council has put forward a declaration of justification of Jews in 1964. Recently still, on the 25th of June 1985, the Vatican put forth a declaration where it demands Christians to get closer to Jews. On this proposal, I refer you to the article of Mr. Youssef Elias Daher in the newspaper "Al-Safir", dated 10-11-1985. The title of the article is: "The final declarations of the Vatican on the attitude towards the Jews".

I mention this so that we are more prudent, and that we have recourse only to the luminous Book to avoid the punishment of the apostles led astray by falsification, and of those who will believe in it.

4. How can the Bible be falsified when the Qur’an says: "Those to whom We revealed the Book (*the Bible*) recite it as it should rightly be recited. They believe in it. But those who repudiate it, they are truly lost" (Qur’an II; The Cow,121).

The "losers" in God’s eyes, are not those who take defense of the correct reading of the Bible, but the impious who calumniate it under the pretext of falsification.

God adds in the Qur’an: "So let those who follow the Gospel judge in accordance with what God revealed in it. Whoso judges not in accordance with what God revealed, these are the dissolute". (Qur’an V; The Table,47). Would God want us to judge from what is falsified?!

How can those who believe in the Qur’an -or who claim to believe in it- believe in the falsification of the Bible, when the Qur’an attests and certifies it, witnessing that it is read "correctly"? Dœs not this mean that the Qur’an blesses and approves the text of the Gospel? What additional proof is needed for you, Reverend, but the testimony of God Himself! As far as I am concerned, I am satisfied with the guarantee of the Qur’an against all transgressions, and I am satisfied with it as a guarantee of the veracity of my words.

You have said about me: "he has stumbled and run around the truth in his words". How can you claim this when I based my research on the Qur’an? I have not run around the truth; this is in the Qur’an and my research emanates from this Holy Book. Others run around the truth in choosing to follow the errors of some scholars instead of questioning the Qur’an. I have chosen for my part, the honor in referring to the Qur’an and to resign myself with its content without resistance and compromise.

You have criticized me, Reverend, because I have written that the Qur'an, speaking of animal sacrifices, said: "Their flesh and their blood shall not reach up to God" (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,37). Why do you churn out your anger at me, when all I did was mention a Qur'anic verse? Your revolt dœs not affect me because it is directed against the words of God. He alone will respond to you as his Majesty sees fit.

Then, you go on further when I wrote that God in the Qur'an directs man towards monogamy and not polygamy. God says about this: "If you fear you will be fair to them all (*towards your wives*), then marry one only" (Qur'an IV; Women,3) ... "You will not be able to act equitably with your wives, even if you apply yourself to do so" (Qur'an IV; Women,129). God in saying: "even if you apply yourself to do so, will not be able to act equitably with your wives", distances the believer away from polygamy. But it is also necessary for this believer to be intelligent, insightful and able to grasp the intention of God at the first divine sign.

I have mentioned these verses of the Qur'an in my book, basing my sincere research on them. But you have attacked me with virulence, without mentioning a single convincing Qur'anic verse, and had recourse to pœms of pœts. The weakness of your Qur'anic argumentation has done nothing but reinforce my conviction of being on the right path, and my determination to move forward still.

You were also angry at me because I said that divorce, which was anarchic at the time of Arab ignorance, is scorned in the Arab world today, after the passage of the Qur'an's vivifying breath. What is there in these remarks which make you so angry? I remind you of the words of the noble prophet Muhammad in his Discussions: "For God, divorce is the most odious of the permitted things (*of the "permissible" things*)". I do not have to comment on these prophetic words, as there is a wisdom for those who are capable of understanding.

You say in your response (review N ° 9 p 82) that God has no resemblance or an image, as the New Testament frankly declared in several places, that the vision of God in this world is impossible. The verse of John 1,18 says: "No one has ever seen God". Why Reverend, do you mention only half of the verse which seems to show that you are right on the impossibility of seeing God, and not mention the whole verse which contradicts your claim: "No one has ever seen God; it is the only Son, who is nearest to the Father's heart, who has made Him known"? And why do you not mention the words of Jesus, the Christ, to His apostles in John 14,9: "Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father"? In eliminating the verses of the Gospel which contradict your ideas, your research becomes subjective, and deprived of any credibility. How can you then accuse others of elusion?

You say to me that you do not believe in the verses which you did not mention because they are falsified! ... Very well! If the Gospel is falsified, then it should not be mentioned at all. I will then discuss with you with the best of arguments in drawing your attention to what the Qur'anic interpretation of Jalalein reports with regards to the first verse of the Sura "the Night Journey". Muhammad says therein: "I have seen my God the Almighty". My sole comment on this regard, which contradicts your affirmation, is the following: the vision of God in this world is possible, and in fact, took place. The New Testament, contrary to what you claim, dœs not deny this possibility... if it is not for the impious and the wicked, but for men of a pure conscience. In fact Jesus, the Christ, said: "Happy are the pure in heart: they shall see God" (Matthew 5,8). But you will certainly find me some philosophical and scientific arguments to deny the possibility of seeing God. I leave these false arguments to those who appreciate them. As for me, I lend my ear but to the Gospel, the Qur'an, and to the spiritual Discussions of the prophet Muhammad.

In your response, you have mentioned "the Gospel" of Barnabas and a whole list of other non-canonical gospels for Christians. You seem to place these latter at the same level of the canonical Gospels, if not higher. Why did you not tell the reader what I explained in my

book with regards to the false gospel of Barnabas? I demonstrated that this "gospel" is a false testimony against the Gospel and the Qur’an because it affirms that Jesus is not the Christ. I mentioned, moreover, the verses of this pseudo-gospel that claim it, concluding that these teachings are contrary to those of the Gospel, which announces that Jesus is truly the Christ, and are also contrary to the teachings of the Qur’an, that Jesus -and no other- is the true Christ. You know, Reverend Sheikh, that many of the Muslims believe that "the gospel" of Barnabas is the only true one. Why have you kept secret the truth on this "gospel"? Why did you not reveal it to the readers, leaving them in ignorance? Why have you concentrated your attacks on the true Gospels? Why hide the truth, when you are a spiritual guide? Why?

I underline that I wrote my book, convinced that the precious Qur’an is the property of no one, and that Islam is the monopoly of no one. I wanted to present them as I see them and understand them. I have exposed my arguments with sincerity and have depicted the beautiful and tender face of Muhammad as I have known him and loved him, so that those who have a false image of him -due to the fault of some who disfigured the Qur’an, Islam and Muhammad- can equally love him too.

My book contains a new research and a new concept. I have drawn the attention on some important points which remained obscure for a long time. In discovering them, many have awaken and have rejoiced. No one can ever extinguish this ray of light. You have responded to me with an obsolete logic and teaching, which convinces but those who are doomed to perdition. For the days of fanatic logic which attack the inspired Books are over. This logic has failed... and from where would it be given to succeed? Here are the Heavenly Books going their way, defying time, enemies and events. They have no need for the testimony of any man to remain; God protects and confirms them, and any sincere and mature conscience believe in them. Many in the near and distant past have attacked the Gospel; they have descendants and disciples on earth. But the Gospel remains like a rock on which the stubborn enemy is shattered. Many have attacked and continue to attack the Qur’an. But it is the same rock which dashes the fanatics who fight it.

I thank you, Reverend Sheikh, for your response. You did yourself an effort and some research. I thank you because your response has tranquilized my heart and confirmed my faith. Now, I am even more attached to the content of my book than before, having noted the weakness, if not the absence, of any valid argument to the contrary.

Of course, I do not expect that all Muslims and Christians share my convictions. This is not the most important. I am not waiting for all to agree with what I wrote. Many of those who praised me do not share all my points of view. This is natural and even positive. But what remains important, is the freedom to express opinions with conviction, and to exchange ideas with love, without attacking others and accusing them of elusion or other things. After all, religion is to act towards the others with "the best" behavior. I am therefore fully prepared to meet your Reverence, if you will, and if you think it may be helpful, for a calm and cordial discussion. We can exchange ideas freely, far from any distortion, fanaticism or provocation, given however, that our discussion is made on the basis of a "luminous Book", and that it is not based on the sayings of pœts, philosophers and scholars, as I have had enough. And because that is the commandment of God.

3. Sheikh KR’s response

I have read in a newspaper, Pierre’s response to the points which he has raised again, even though I have already responded to them. In his response, Pierre accuses me of having been angry. With love and sincerity, I tell him that I had no interest in this, only for manifesting the truth. In responding, I did not exceed the rights of courtesy and discussion, based on logic

and good reflection. I add that Pierre criticized my style of discussion, but then he fell into the same trap. The proverb says: "Do not criticize a morality and then fall into the same mistake".

As for what Pierre says at length with on the conciliation between believers, I will summarize as follows: The conciliation between believers must be made on healthy and stable bases, unshakeable by storms that come to move us. This is agreed upon by any wise person. I therefore, call upon all righteous people: How can one reconcile between the belief in the Unique and that of Three? Between those who deny the crucifixion and those who affirm it? Between those who believe in a unique God, who has neither wife, nor child, and those who affirm to the contrary? Between those who say during the Mass: "Mary, Mother of God" and those who deny it, saying God is above all that?

These are but a few examples of the doctrinal and controversial questions between Christians and Muslims.

Yes, we can become closer and cultivate agreement in cultivating love between men, because man, despite everything, is man's brother.

This is possible based on God's word who says: "Men! We created you man and woman and made of you people and tribes so that you know each other". God adds: "God dœs not forbid you to be associated with those who do not attack your religion, nor drive you out from your homes. Be righteous towards them, because God likes the righteous ones".

If the beliefs of some are opposed to that of others, dœs this mean animosity, fights, exile, and the stripping of others must prevail? Certainly not!

The divine inspiration's unity is part of the Muslim doctrine; he thus believes in it and if he attacks or despises one of God's prophets, he denies Islam and falls in heresy and apostasy.

There has been between Arab and non-Arab Muslims on the one hand, and Israel and the Zionists on the other hand, an animosity and combat from the dawn of Islam up till the present day. Despite this, if a Muslim attacks Moses, God's prophet, he apostasies and is excommunicated from Islam. The inspiration's unity is a doctrine decried by the Qur'an and affirmed by our prophet and God's prophet, Muhammad.

I have demonstrated in the newspaper in detail, the elements of this research and I see no reason of repeating myself.

Pierre raised an interpretation and some questions on what God had said: "O People to whom the Book has been revealed, believe in what We have revealed, confirming the truth of that which you already have, before." (Qur'an IV; Women,47)

The interpreters have mentioned in which occasion this inspiration was given: "Ibn Isaac said: The prophet spoke to some Jewish chiefs and said to them: 'You Jews, fear God and resign to God; you know that what I bring to you is the truth'. They said: 'We do not know that Muhammad'. They apostatised, they did not know and remain stubborn in their apostasy. God thus has inspired this verse!"

As for the confirmation in question, in the verse, it means: Their knowledge of the quality of the prophet and their stubbornness despite this, remained in apostasy.

God furthermore denounced, in several verses, those who falsify the Bible. We suffice to mention the following verse: "Misfortune to those who write the Book with their hand and then say: 'This comes from God' to earn dishonest money. Misfortune to them for what their hands have written and misfortune to those who wrote to acquire a profit".

God has invited the people of the Book by this call: "You people of the Book, come to a word of agreement between you and us, that we adore only God, let us not associate to Him anything, and that we do not become lords between us, in the place of God".

This divine invitation is always valid and the door is always wide open to those who want to respond to it. As for the verse to which Pierre referred to: "Those to whom we gave the Book read it correctly; they believe in it and those who do not believe in it are the losers", Katada interpreted it as follows: "They are the prophet’s friends; the book is the Qur’an". Abu Moussa El-Ashaari has said: "The one who follows the Qur’an is led by it into Paradise’s meadows". Omar Ibn-El-Khattab has said: "It is those who, by reading a verse of mercy, ask God for it, or a verse of punishment, have recourse to God".

Pierre has made some comments on polygamy, referring to the verse of the chapter of the Women: "You could never be equitable towards your wives even if you wanted to". To be equitable here, means the fondness of the heart (an equal affection is impossible). This is a fact that man dœs not control, but that God alone controls. The prophet Muhammad had several women; as did his successors and this was not forbidden.

Pierre also spoke about God’s vision in this world. This question is discussed by the learned. What we tend to believe, I would even say what we prefer to believe, is that God’s vision is forbidden in this world, and that his vision in the other world is without any possible comparison, this according to the word of God: "Nothing is similar to him; he sees and hears all".

There are still other questions which do not deserve a lengthy explanation, as my response to the book has covered all the subjects.

I thank Pierre and congratulate him from all my heart for the beautifully expressed words, among others, that the Antichrist is the Christ of the Jews. I thank him for frankly expressing his faith in the Qur’an and for manifesting his love for the prophet Muhammad and for his brothers, the other prophets.

(Sheikh KR ends in thanking us for the invitation to a cordial dialogue and by courtesies).

4. Second response to Sheikh KR

Reverend Sheikh KR, I read your response in a newspaper. I am delighted that you are in agreement on the fact that the Antichrist is the Zionist’s "christ", the fabricated State of Israel. My first response was an indication to this satanic state and the denunciation of its charlatanism and its injustice. I permit myself to send you my book "The Antichrist in Islam", as our beloved prophet Mohammad speaks of it in his Discussions. His prophetic words allow us to conclude that the Antichrist is the State of Israel.

However, this belief implies many new commitments on the religious and spiritual levels, and it dœs not suit those who are harmed by these upheavals. The apparition of the Antichrist means that we have arrived to the time of corruption, against which the Lord Jesus, the Christ, as well as the prophet Mohammad warned us against. With this charlatan’s appearance, a new era thus begins in the world, where God alone is the successor to all the prophets and Muhammad as well, as the latter revealed himself. This succession of God, for believers, aims to liberate them from the hegemony of the alleged humane succession which exploits them: tradesmen of religion and the mercenaries who continue to tie the consciences of the poor and simple with chains that God alone can rupture. Such is the divine wisdom which, today, opens a new door to welcome the hearts who aspire to free themselves from the weight of material things, and to fly high towards God, so to live in his presence, his eternal divine company, from now.

Any human claim on any prophetic succession is therefore in vain today, as the prophet Muhammad says in his Discussion (1806): "I do not fear for you, except from the Antichrist. If he appears while I am with you, it is me who will refute his arguments, but if he appears when I am no longer with you, it is up to each one of you to find the arguments (*against him*) and **then God is my successor** beside every Muslim".

And yet the Antichrist has appeared! So, Muhammad's successor today, is God.

That being said, I respond sequentially, to the points which you raised in your response in the newspaper:

1) You say: "The conciliation between believers must be made on a healthy and stable basis... How can one reconcile between the belief in the Unique (God) and that of Three? Between those who deny the crucifixion and those who affirm it? Between those who believe in a unique God, who has neither wife nor child, and those who affirm to the contrary? Between those who say during Mass "Mary, Mother of God" and those who deny it..."?

My answer is the following:

A) The unity of the Qur'anic-Biblical inspiration which I preach is the stable and unshakeable base to reconcile believers with one another. On the contrary, the principle of the falsification of the Gospel on which you base yourself is not a stable ground for the conciliation, as it contradicts the Qur'an and the Gospel at the same time. It is rejected by many Muslim scholars (which I have mentioned the Muslim clerics: Muhammad Abdo and Afaghani) and Christians.

B) The conciliation between the belief in (divine) uniqueness and triplicity (three gods) is impossible, but on the other hand, the reality the Unique and Trinitarian God is a fact revealed by God and explained in my book "A Look of faith at the Qur'an". I summarize the explanation herein: Man, his word and his spirit, are but one and the same person, not three persons. Likewise, God, his Word and his Spirit, are one and the same essence. God revealed this so that we know that the Christ is the Word of God and his Spirit, not the Word and Spirit of another God. No other prophet has been qualified in this way.

C) It is impossible to reconcile between "what" denies the crucifixion and "what" confirms it, but we must work to unite "those" who deny the fact and "those" who confirm it. I explained in my book that the Qur'an's formulation of Christ's crucifixion leaves a door open to the following interpretation: The Jews were not able to extinguish Christ's message in killing him. As the Qur'an speaks of the death and resurrection of Jesus, as I have explained. This confirms the Biblical words. In any case, to believe or not to believe that the Qur'an denies the crucifixion is not an obstacle in believing in the unity of the inspiration when we are mature and free of fanaticism. Unless you are one of those who adore God to the letter, not those who seek the divine intention through the words. I also remind you that the Qur'an condemned the worshipers of God according to the letter, in saying: "Among people is one who worships God, but to the letter. If good befalls him, he grows content with it. But if an ordeal befalls him, he turns his face about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement." (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,11)

D) The Gospel dœs not preach that God has a wife with whom he has sexual relations, and from whom bears children, as you suggest. In my book, I speak of the title of Son of God, explaining that the Christ is born from Mary, not through the intermediary of a man, but by a word of God which said: "Be! And it was". This truth was revealed to us by the Bible and the Qur'an.

E) I do not accuse those who say "Mary is the Mother of God", and do not qualify them as impious who associate to God other gods. These believers base themselves on the evangelic inspiration with regards to the incarnation of God, not the incarnation of one of the gods -this would be "association", which is to say, associate to God other gods- because there is but one God. The divine incarnation took place in the body of Christ. This revelation is clear: it is rejected by some who do not understand it according to the wisdom of the divine religion, which confounds the philosophers of the falsification of the Gospel. They carry the responsibility; the Qur'an has nothing to do with this calumny of the falsification.

Mary is the Mother of the body of Christ, created as Adam was created; she is not the mother of the Divine Spirit, which animated this body and employed it as an instrument to propagate his light into the world. The quality of "Mother of God" attributed to Mary is a temporal quality, not eternal, whom "God chose... and chosen above all the women of the world" (Qur'an III; Family of Imran,42). She, alone, was thus chosen for the profound reasons inspired by God, reasons accepted by spiritual men and rejected by materialists. And that those who understand see clearly. Mary is but the "Servant of God", as she says herself in the Gospel. She is a creature like all human beings and differs from others only because she alone was chosen to be the temporal Mother of Him who is the Word of God and the Spirit of God, amongst men. It is the reason for which the prophet Muhammad, blessed is he, admirable in his perspicacity and discernment, had said: "No man is born without being touched by the devil, from his birth he screams because of this satanic touch: except for Mary and her son".

This verse of the Discussions is reported in the interpretation of "Jalalein", after verse 31 of the Sura of the Family of Imran. Any perspicacious man, endowed with some discernment, can understand why, only Jesus and Mary were not touched by the devil.

After having presented you my sincere arguments, I declare: Let us first work to unite believers on the same side, as in our unfortunate Lebanon -like on the outside- confessions which believe in the same doctrine, mutually kill and exile each other, in a fratricidal war. It is why, I fully agree with you Reverend, when you say: It is possible to reconcile and bring them closer together, in cultivating love between men, in you referring to Qur'anic verses. It is for this that I am working too, with God's help; as there is no compulsion in religion! (Qur'an II; The Cow,256) Religion is for God. Land and country are for all, and I believe in the peaceful cœxistence between a believer and an atheist, if the mutual behavior is good. Because God alone is the judge of the consciences and much will be demanded from those who have received much and believed much! ...

2) You say: "The inspiration's unity is a doctrine decried by the Qur'an and affirmed by our prophet and the prophet of God, Muhammad". I do not wish to enter into an unhealthy competition and compare the inspired Books, or the prophets, getting myself into an escalation that religion and the prophets condemn. But, I pose the following question to your Reverence: How can you reconcile between the inspiration's unity in which you believe in, and the doctrine of the Gospel's falsification that you preach? You speak as if God the Almighty were powerless to safeguard his inspiration from falsification.

3) You say: "Pierre created an interpretation and some questions on what God had said: "O People to whom the Book (*the Bible*) has been revealed, believe in what We (*God*) have revealed (*the Qur'an*), confirming the truth of that which you already have (*the Bible*)". You have explained this verse as so: The Qur'an's attestation dœs not refer to the Bible, but to Muhammad, which the "Jewish leaders" have even rejected.

And yet, in Jalalein's interpretation, we find the contrary to your assertion. It is written therein: "O People to whom the Book has been revealed, believe in what We have revealed, confirming the truth of that which you already have (*the Torah*)" (Qur'an IV; Women,47).

The Qur'anic attestation then well points to the Bible, as I have said. I did not walk around the truth in my research, as you accuse me. This attestation of the Bible -not of Mohammad- by the Qur'an, arises from the words of this same verse where God invites people of the Bible to believe in "what it" inspired (*ie the Qur'an*), attesting "that" which they already had with them (*ie the Bible*). "That", dœs not indicate to a person. If the verse was aimed at Muhammad, it would have said: "**The one** who is with you" and not "that which is with you". Moreover, God says: "attesting that which is with you"; and yet the prophet Muhammad was not with these Jews who rejected him. What was with them, in their possession, in all sincerity and honesty, was the Bible.

I end this important topic in pointing out the following: If the Qur'anic verse intended to indicate Muhammad, it would have been inspired for example as so: "You who received the Book, believe in what We have inspired, attesting the one (*Muhammad*) you hate and fight".

4) You say: "As for the verse to which Pierre refers to: "Those to whom we have given the Book, read it correctly", Katada has interpreted it as follows: "They are the the prophet's friends"; the book is the Qur'an"! (not the Bible). My response to you is that this verse's interpretation by Jalalein says that he was inspired with regards to a group coming from Ethiopia and converted to Islam. And yet, we know that the inhabitants of Ethiopia were Copts, Christians, and their Book was thus the Bible. The fact that they became Muslim, which is to say that they recognized Muhammad as a prophet of God, is a proof that they were not Muslim yet, friends of the prophet, and that by consequence, the Book in question is indeed the Bible. Furthermore, the Qur'an was not yet grouped as a book. This was done much later, under Osman Ibn Affan. It is for this that myself and others have a quite different opinion from that of Katada's, and follow Jalalein's point of view.

5) You assert that the interpretation of the following Qur'anic verse: "You could never be equitable towards your wives even if you tried" is as follows: "To be equitable here, means the fondness of the heart". My answer: Let it be! But God says nonetheless: "If you fear being unjust from an emotional point of view, the fondness of the heart, then only one wife is needed", and then God adds: "You could never be equitable towards your wives even if you tried". Just one woman should thus be taken. Add to this that it is easier to be just and equitable in material things, than in the affective domain. If the exact interpretation was the fondness of the heart, it would be a stronger reason to marry one woman, because affection -for spiritual people, not the sensual ones- is much stronger and more important than the material.

A jurisprudence (Fatwa) of the Egyptian Minister for religious affairs (Wakf), Dr. El Ahmadi Aboul Nour, published in the newspaper of 20-11-1985 consolidates my conviction even more. He writes, in effect: "Some imagine that when God gave them a financial generosity, a second wife was permitted to them, especially if there has been a repulsion or divisions with the first. We can say that as long as there is no acceptable justification for polygamy, this becomes forbidden and constitutes a sin." Dr. Aboul Nour mentions the reasons "of disorders and discords, which replace calm and stability, sowing hatred and hardness" in the second marriage. He cites as a living example that of an employee who, after his second marriage, neglected his first family, which broke down and so did he. This is but a number of examples of the evil created due to the second marriage.

If such is the condition of the second marriage which, according to this minister's decision -who is the authority in one of the largest Muslim countries- is forbidden and constitutes a sin, what about a third and a fourth marriage? I conclude that the most odious of the "permissible" for God, after the divorce, is polygamy.

To justify polygamy, you refer yourself to the numerous wives of the prophet Mohammad. And yet these, as you know, were more numerous than four and thus exceeded the number limited by the Qur'an. Your argumentation on this point is not convincing, as the aim of the prophet's marriages was to unify the opposing tribes and to reconcile them through the matrimonial connection. They were not due to a seduction or a fondness of the heart. And what God allowed Muhammad, his prophet and ours, he dœs not allow to any man, as there is no valid reason for that today. The Qur'anic verses themselves enlighten us, and judge between you and I.

6) You say with my regard: "He still spoke about God's vision in this world. This question is controversial by the scholars. What we tend to believe, I would even say: what we prefer to believe, is that God's vision is forbidden in this world". My answer is that the opinions of the "scholars", as you know, do not interest me because I do not wish to philosophize around

a subject that is clear-cut by the divine inspiration and the prophets. It’s very simple. In my preceding article, I intentionally mentioned the word of the prophet Muhammad in the interpretation of Jalalein of the first verse of the chapter "the Night Journey", where he says: "I have seen my God".

I have trust in the experience of the prophets without listening to scholars and philosophers who want to prevent me from seeing God. I thus deploy the wings and fly up to answer the call addressed by God and his prophets to the pure hearts, asking them to rise and channel their thoughts beyond the material and man’s restricted logic. I climb up the summits so to be able to contemplate my God, helped by his holy and almighty grace.

I mention here an example to clarify my thought: It is about a dialogue between a blind person and a clairvoyant. The sighted says to the blind person: "Look how beautiful the sun is at its rising!" The blind man answers: "No, nobody can see the sun". The sighted says again: "But yes! I see it!" And the blind man says: "But no, nobody sees it!". I say that both are right. The clairvoyant sees and rejoices; and the blind man dœs not see. The important is to put, if possible, peace between the two, leaving the clairvoyant to rejoice for his vision, and in praying for the cure of the blind.

By this example, I do not want to undermine anyone, believe me. I quote it, being obliged to clarify my answer, and I do it with great love, not to confound. My goal is not to offend, but to testify for a truth. Also, neither in my current answer, nor in my first answer, do I have the intention to offend anyone, as you accuse me of. Yes, I have tried to testify, and with firmness, but with great respect, in favor of the Divine Inspiration’s unity to honor God before pleasing men. I wish, however, to excuse myself in advance before those who feel targeted by the example given, repeating still that such is not my intention. But I believe in the prophets and in what God revealed to them and I make every effort to invite believers to rise towards the highest summits of the Spirit, so to be in the Creator’s company, like many believers and mystics have done -Christian and Muslim- including the Muslim mystic El Hallaj.

7) You claim having responded in detail in the newspaper to the question of the Divine Inspiration’s unity. But you did not do so at all. Likewise, you avoid responding to my remarks on the alleged gospel of Barnabas which you mentioned, and I demonstrated its falseness; you also avoided responding to the subject on the impossibility of annulling the "law" of Jesus, which has no other law but love and justice, not of cult and material tradition, which must be annulled.

8) In your fifth response to my book you take defense of the Qur’an and speak at length of its grandeur, its influence on the Arabic language and the Prophet Mohammad’s impeccable style. You present all this, leaving the reader to believe that I am not convinced by it. However, I have never tackled these subjects in my book, believing firmly in the fact of the miraculous Qur’an, in its literary and spiritual genius, convinced that it was really inspired to our dear prophet Mohammad. My faith in this is total. And yet, here you present these subjects in the setting of your response to my book, as if I did not believe in it. You thus intentionally pursued in your determination to disfigure the content of my book.

9) As for the examples which you cited in your fifth response on the question of the Heavenly Table (The Eucharist), they simply mean that the efforts of interpretation will always continue. The truth on this “Heavenly Table” will be discovered, only by those who humble themselves and ask the Gospel its true sense because, like you say (p 95 of your 5th response): “The general opinion with regards to this Table is that it descended from Heaven with, above, a consumable food of which God alone knows the essence”. God has defined its essence in John’s Gospels in chapter 6,51-63, Matthew in chapter 26,26-29, Luke 22,19-20 and Mark 14,22-25, as well as in the first letter of Paul to the Corinthians: 1 Corinthians 11,17-33. However some, do not believe in it and refuse it, as the Jews rejected it in the past, and others too, still today. I explained the sense of this Heavenly Table in my book (paragraph 5.3).

10) You reiterate in your fifth response on the Qur'an's call which invites "People of the Book, let us rally around a discourse common to us and you: that we worship none but God, that we associate nothing with Him, that we do not take each other as lords apart from God". (Qur'an III; Family of Imran,64). Notice that the Qur'an, knowing that the people of the Bible associate no "person" to God, asks them not to associate "nothing" with God (*like money for example*). We have responded to this noble invitation, my companions and myself, and have found the common word of understanding between sincere Muslims and Christians, not others. We submitted ourselves (*Islamized*), not only to God, but to all the inspired Books too, as the Qur'an commands in saying: "The faithful believe in God, His angels, His Books (*in the plural*) ..." (Qur'an II; The Cow,285).

We believe in the Torah, the Gospel and the Qur'an.

In my opinion, you are well-right to say: "The monotheism of certain people is a monotheism far away from the unique God and stained with polytheism, as God says: "Most of them believe not in God unless they associate other gods with Him." (Qur'an XII; Joseph,106) I am of this opinion too, because there are many who believe in God, but associate to Him many other "things" like money, glory and pleasures, as I mention in my book. There are others who claim to believe in monotheism, but associate to God the worship of their own mentality, refusing the Books inspired by God for our salvation, because their narrow materialistic mentality is incapable of rising in order to understand the sublimity of their spiritual content. Incapable to understand these Holy Scriptures, they calumniate them and treat them as falsified. May God help us to sow peace, even between enemies.

(Pierre ends by asking the review to publish all the answers to Sheikh KR in order to be fair and just).

Pierre

3

The Apocalypse according to Muhammad

The Book of Revelation is the last book of the Bible. It contains a mystery that only Jesus can reveal. This mystery has been revealed to a man on May 13, 1970. It concerns the identity of the Beast of Revelation, which is none other than the State of Israel.

All the characteristics of the Beast of Revelation, which is the announced Antichrist, perfectly apply to the current State of Israel. This was demonstrated in the text on this website "The Key of the Apocalypse", and which we refer the reader to before beginning the present text. We also recommend you to first read the texts "The Antichrist in Islam" and "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an".

The "open" book, the Beast, the End Times, the Hour of Judgment, the Trumpet, the Return of Jesus, the Apostles of the End of Times, the Universal Restoration, are all subjects intimately linked to the Revelation. Biblical prophecies of the New and Old Testaments speak of them. Muhammad also deals with these issues in the Qur'an. In the current study, we have regrouped these verses in themes to show the similarity of the two texts: the Book of Revelation and the Qur'an, and to focus on the Unity of the Inspiration in these texts that concern our times.

1. The Book of Revelation

1.1 The Book of the Pure

God, in the Qur'an, draws our attention in a very subtle and highly imaginative way to the Book of Revelation. He calls it "'Illiyyun", the "record-book of the righteous". It is at the end of times that this book will acquire its importance, since Muhammad speaks of "Judgment Day" just before. The text says:

> "Woe that Day to deniers, those who deny the Day of Judgment... No! ... The record-book of the righteous shall be in 'Illiyyun. But how can you know what is 'Illiyyun? A record precise, witnessed by those drawn near. The righteous are in bliss, upon couches watching. On their faces you would discern the radiance of bliss..." (Qur'an LXXXIII; Those who Shortchange,10-36)

This coded (sealed) book is the Book of Revelation, which is sealed by 7 seals (Revelation 5,1), and has been opened by the Angel (the Envoy) of chapter 10 as Muhammad underlines in the aforementioned verse: "seen only by God's favored".

These Qur'anic verses are an invitation to consult the Book of Revelation and to "digest" its content, so to be able to recognize the Enemy of God and "to prophesy again, this time against many different nations and countries and languages and kings" (Revelation 10,8-11); the huge masses which support the Beast today.

1.2 The Book laid open

Muhammad also specifies at which moment this book will acquire importance:

> "The Trumpet shall be sounded, and everyone in the heavens and earth shall fall down dead, except for whomever God wills... And the earth shall shine with the light of its Lord, the **Book will be laid open**, prophets and witnesses shall be summoned, and judgement will be passed among them in truth, nor will they be wronged. Each soul shall be paid in full for what it did, and they shall know best what they used to do." (Qur'an XXXIX; The Groups,68-70)

This "Book laid open" at the time of Judgment is the Book of Revelation. The Apocalypse says: "The **book of life was opened**, and other books opened which were the record of what they had done in their lives, by which the dead were judged." (Revelation 20,12) This "book of life" which was "opened" is the Book of Revelation. It allows the "inspired" books to be opened, ie to understand them profoundly according to God's Intention.

The Book of Revelation is the Book of Life because it gives back Life to all those who identify the Beast, the Enemy of God, and commit themselves against it, thus expressing their Love for God and for Justice.

Muhammad says the same thing when he says (Qur'an LXXXI; Rolling Up,1-14): "When the sun is rolled up; when the stars are cast adrift, when the mountains are wiped out...when **scrolls are unfolded**... then each soul will know what it has readied". This will be the Judgment by the **scrolls unfolded**. And these scrolls have been opened by the Apocalyptic Envoy who has explained, in depth, thanks to the Apocalyptic Key, the whole Divine Revelation from the Old Testament, New Testament, Qur'an, up to the Book of Revelation.

God also says in the Qur'an:

> "A Day shall come when We shall cause mountains to heave, when you shall see the earth flattened. And We shall herd them all, and shall not overlook any of them... **The Book shall be laid out**, and you will see sinners afraid of what it contains." (Qur'an XVIII; The Cave,47-49)

They will be afraid as the Book of Revelation will lay bare their injustice. They supported the Beast instead of committing themselves to Jesus and Muhammad to fight it.

1.3 The unrolled parchment

Muhammad announces an "ineluctable" punishment. He begins the Sura of "The Mountain" saying:

> "By the **Mountain**! By a Book inscribed, in **parchment unrolled!** ... By the teeming sea! Your Lord's punishment shall surely fall. Nothing can repel it. The Day when heaven shall heave in turmoil, and the mountains shall scurry in haste, woe is it on that Day to those who cry lies! ... That Day they shall be hustled to Hell... But the pious are amidst Gardens and Bliss..." (Qur'an LII; The Mountain,1-18)

This "unrolled parchment" is the Book of Revelation opened. God, in the Revelation, is seated on the throne and holds in his right hand "a scroll that was written on back and front and was sealed with seven seals" (Revelation 5,1). Only Jesus can open this book, ie to explain it (Revelation 5,2-5). He dœs so through the Angel (the messenger) who comes down from heaven "in his hand a small scroll, unrolled" (Revelation 10,2). It is the "unrolled parchment" which Muhammad speaks about. The similarity between the terms used is impressive and indicates that God wants to encourage the reader to consult the Book of Revelation to realize the whole

dimension of his fight against the Beast. The Book of Revelation announces the "Great Day of God's wrath", and the punishment of the Beast and all its allies (Revelation 6,17). This is what Muhammad underlines saying in the aforementioned verse: "... Wœ is it on that Day to those who cry lies..." (Qur'an LII; The Mountain,11). It is about the Zionist lie.

The Sura of "The Mountain" begins with the words: "**By the mountain**, and by the Scriptures penned on unrolled parchment!" This "Mountain" is Mount Zion. Yet here, it is about true Zionism, that is spiritual, not political. The promised land is spiritual, it is internal. It is the Holy Mountain our Father dwells in, according to Jœl's words:

> "Sun and moon grow dark, the stars lose their brilliance. Yahweh roars from Zion (*the Angel's Clamor: Revelation 10,3*), makes his voice heard from (*the Heavenly*) Jerusalem; heaven and earth tremble. But Yahweh will be a shelter for his people, a stronghold for the children of (*true*) Israel. 'You will learn then that I am Yahweh your God, **dwelling in Zion**, my holy Mountain. Jerusalem will then be a holy place, no alien (*political Zionists*) will ever pass through it again.'" (Joel 4,15-17)

The Apocalypse talks of the assembly of Jesus and his companions on the spiritual Mount of Zion, singing the New Hymn:

> "Next in my vision I saw **Mount Zion**, and standing on it a Lamb (*Jesus*) who had with him a hundred and forty-four thousand people, (*12 x 12 x 1000 = the 12 tribes and the 12 Apostles and one thousand is the universal figure, that is all the people of God*), all with his name and his Father's name written on their foreheads... they were singing a new hymn... They never allowed a (*Zionist*) lie to pass their lips and no fault can be found in them." (Revelation 14,1-5)

God's triumph occurs on the spiritual Mount of Zion to confound his enemies who wanted to challenge Him from the material Zion. It is why Muhammad begins the Sura with the words "By the Mountain!", in other words, by the place where God dwells in and where His triumph will be fulfilled.

2. The door opened to Heaven

At the time of the Apocalypse, a door is opened to Heaven. Muhammad also refers to this door. He says of the unbelievers who mock the prophets:

> "Even if We open to them **a gate from Heaven**, and they keep **ascending**, they will still say: 'Ah, our eyes have been blurred, or rather we are a people bewitched.'" (Qur'an XV; Al-Hijr,14)

In other words, they would find excuses not to rise up.

The Apocalypse equally speaks of this heavenly door. John writes:

> "Then in my vision, I saw **a door open in Heaven** and heard the same voice speaking to me, the voice like a trumpet, saying: '**Come up here**: I will show you what is to come in the future'." (Revelation 4,1)

It is about an invitation "to come up" in spirit to see the events that are "to come" according to the vision of God, and not according to the mentality of man. This "door open in Heaven" is the Book of Revelation explained by the Apocalyptic Envoy.

It is the door of Prophecy.

It is about raising oneself to acquire the sight of the Holy Spirit and let go of our restricted and too human views. Our inner eyes need to be washed. We need the Apocalyptic "eye drops" to "recover our sight" according to the Spirit of God (Revelation 3,18). Otherwise, we remain "wretchedly and pitiably poor, and blind and naked!" (Revelation 3,17), like the Vatican currently. Many will find excuses not "to come up", as Muhammad stresses.

Muhammad, in the Sura "The Tidings", also establishes a link between the Trumpet and heaven opened:

> "What is it that they question each other about? Is it the Great Proclamation, concerning which they differ? No indeed! They will surely know! And again no! They will surely know! ... The Day of Separation shall be the date appointed, a Day when **the Trumpet shall be blown**, and you shall come forth in droves, **when Heaven shall be opened**, and turn into apertures, when mountains shall be wiped out, and turned into a mirage. Hell shall be lying in wait, for transgressors a final destination... But for the pious there lies a path to salvation..." (Qur'an LXXVIII; The Proclamation,1-5 and 17-31)

Muhammad, in the verses of the Sura "The Tidings", announces the Day of Judgment regarding the "people who dispute". Yet, "before long they shall learn".

They will soon do so by the "open" Book of Revelation. This open Book is itself the announced Trumpet. This Book is a powerful Message, and powerful like a Trumpet. It announces The Hour of Judgment and God's Triumph over the Beast and its allies. At that moment, "the doors of Heaven shall swing open", according to Muhammad's words. All those who will accept this message and commit themselves will be able "to come up" through this marvelous door, opened to Heaven (Revelation 4,1), to enter into intimacy with God, and to benefit from his sweet and Holy Presence from hereon.

3. The Beast and Gog and Magog

In the center of the Book of Revelation, there is a Beast. The whole mystery wrapped around this little Holy Book becomes clear when we understand the Beast's identity.

3.1 The Beast

Muhammad also mentions the Beast in the Sura of "The Ant". He says:

> "When the Word falls upon them, We shall bring up **a Beast** from the earth who will speak to them. But mankind is not convinced in our signs. A Day shall come when We shall herd from every nation a group who cried lies to Our revelations, all led in strict order (*to Palestine*). When they arrive, He will say: 'Did you cry lies to My revelations, and were unable to comprehend them? Or what else were you doing?' But the Word shall be handed down to them because of their wickedness, and they shall become speechless... A Day shall come when **the Trumpet** shall be blown, and all who dwell in the heavens and earth shall be seized with dread, save those whom God wills. But all shall come to Him, groveling." (Qur'an XXVII; The Ant,82-87)

This Word which will fall upon them is the Apocalypse. It is the Book which unmasks the Beast.

As the Qur'an indeed points out in these verses, this Beast, the Antichrist, is characterized by lies. John says in his letter: "The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ–he is the liar, he is the Antichrist!" (1 John 2,22) From this great Lie, the Beast treats all the Signs of God as lies. He himself proclaims the lie since he says: "... men have no faith in our revelations". It thus has an interpretation, all the more false, of the Signs of God and deceives mankind. One

of these lies that Muhammad condemns, for example, is the Jews' claim that "they claim to be the friends of God to the exclusion of the rest of mankind" (Qur'an LXII; Congregation Prayer,5-6). Another lie, is the myth of Solomon's Empire (Qur'an II; The Cow,102): "They followed what the devils had narrated during the reign of Solomon". Now, this kingdom is the basis of Zionism. It is about re-establishing Solomon's kingdom. Behold the Seducer's deceit, the Antichrist (2 John 7). It is why the Trumpet of the Apocalypse which announces the fall of the Beast and God's close Triumph will surprise and confound them. Terror will strike them.

> "For that, within a single day, the plagues will fall on her: disease and mourning and famine. She will be burned right up. The Lord God has condemned her, and he has great power." (Revelation 18,8)

3.2 Gog and Magog and the Two-Horned One (Dhu'l Qarnayn)

As this was explained in "The Antichrist in Islam", the Two-Horned One is America. The Qur'an says:

> "They said: 'O Dhu'l Qarnayn, Gog and Magog (Ya'jouj wa Ma'jouj) are working corruption on earth. Shall we pay you a wage to build us a barrier between us and them?'" (Qur'an XVIII; The Cave,93; read and meditate from 82 to 101)

To understand Gog and Magog, we must go back to the prophet Ezekiel in the Old Testament. Ezekiel had prophesied that in the end times, Gog and Magog, the Kings of the North, will invade God's people in Palestine (Ezekiel 38,1 to 39,20). The Israelis, consider that this text concerns them as God's people, and that Iran and Syria represent Gog and Magog who will attack them. But the Apocalypse comes to rectify this false interpretation, and reveals who Gog and Magog truly are. Gog and Magog are Israel, for its subjects come from the four quarters of the earth to invade Palestine (Revelation 20,7-9). And a great number of them, actually came from the North.

To come back to the above-mentioned text, indeed, some Arab countries have handed over their wealth and oil to America to protect them from Israel. This is the rampart Muhammad speaks of. They even paid for some ultramodern anti-missile installations, thinking of protecting themselves from what Gog and Magog (Israel) might soon launch. This rampart has even been realized materially. But this protection is short-lived and illusory. Despite all the intrigues of some Arab countries to hold back Israel by America, this rampart will ultimately crack. It will be the day when the God's Mercy will act:

> "'This is an act of Mercy from my Lord! But when my Lord's promise is fulfilled, He **shall level it to the ground**—the promise of my Lord is ever true'. On that day, We shall abandon them, to swarm against one another. **And the Trumpet shall be sounded**, and We shall herd them all together. On that Day, We shall open Hell to the unbelievers' view, all in one view. It is they whose eyes were veiled from My remembrance, and who were incapable of hearing." (Qur'an XVIII; The Cave,98-101)

This "Remembrance" is that of the Apocalypse and Muhammad's prophecies concerning our time. It is the Trumpet that will sound at the moment of the rampart's collapse, and when people will "come in tumultuous throngs". It is the Third World War which Gog and Magog will launch. And "the rampart" will collapse as a result of our Father's Mercy.

3.3 The wild beasts

Muhammad also mentions that at the end of times, Beasts will be assembled. He says:

> "When the sun is rolled up; when the stars are cast adrift; when the mountains are wiped out... when **wild beasts are herded together**; when seas are filled to overflowing; when souls are paired together... when the scrolls are unfolded; when the sky is scraped away; when Hell-fire is kindled; when the Garden is drawn near; then each soul will know what it has readied." (Qur'an LXXXI; Rolling Up,1-14)

These "wild beasts herded together" are the two Beasts of the Apocalypse. The Apocalypse says that "three foul spirits" (the Dragon ie the Devil, the Beast, and the second Beast, also called the false prophet), "go out to all the kings of the world to call them together for the war of the Great Day of God the Almighty... They called the kings together at the place called, in Hebrew, Armageddon" (Revelation 16,13-16). It will be the Great Day of God's Wrath, which will see the defeat of the two Beasts, and the triumph of the elect. Some will know the "Hell fire" and others the "Garden drawn near", as Muhammad points out.

The fact that our Father had inspired Muhammad to mention the "wild beasts herded together" at the end of times, clearly signifies that through this, He invites the independent believers of all backgrounds to consult John's Revelation, because without this book's light, it is impossible to understand such symbols.

3.4 The Seducer

The following Qur'anic verses describe the Parable of the ten bridesmaids (Matthew 25,1-13) in a different form:

> "A Day shall come when you shall observe believing men and believing women, with their light shimmering before them and upon their right hands: 'The good news today is Gardens beneath which rivers flow, abiding therein forever. And this is the greatest of triumphs.' That Day, the Hypocrites, men and women, shall say to those who believed: 'Please allow us to obtain a ray from your light', and it shall be said to them: 'Turn back, and search for a light!' A wall shall be erected between them in which there is a gate, with mercy on its outer and torment on its inner side. They shall call out to them: 'Were we not with you?' And the others shall answer: 'Yes indeed, but you led yourselves into sin, you plotted, you doubted, and false hopes seduced you, until the command of God arrived and the Tempter tempted you away from God." (Qur'an LVII; Iron,12-14)

This deceiving Seducer is the Antichrist. John says in his second letter (2 John 7): "There are many deceivers about in the world, refusing to admit that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. They are the Deceiver; they are the Antichrist". Zionism is the great seduction and the great trial of the end of times. Zionism has deceived a great number of Jews, Christians, and Muslims, who "plotted and doubted". They let themselves be bought by the Beast and "false hopes seduced" them, as Muhammad points out.

But at present, the Trumpet of Liberation sounds for all those who have resisted this Seduction. They will be "with their light shimmering before them and upon their right hands... And this is the greatest of triumphs", in the words of the Qur'an.

4. The Hour, Judgment Day

4.1 Caught unawares

On several occasions, Muhammad mentions the coming of the Hour, which corresponds to Judgment Day. He gives us several characteristics of this Hour.

Muhammad stresses on the point that the events of the end times arrive unexpectantly:

> "They ask you about the Hour and when it will alight. Say: 'Knowledge of it is with my Lord alone, and none will reveal it when its time arrives but He. This is a weighty matter in the heavens and earth. It shall only come upon you suddenly.' They ask you as though you had knowledge of it. Say: 'Knowledge of it rests only with God, but most people are ignorant of it'." (Qur'an VII; The Battlements,187)

The greater majority is unaware of it. A minority will be warned, as Paul also underlines:

> "You know very well that the Day of the Lord is going to come like a thief in the night. It is when people are saying, 'How quiet and peaceful it is', that the worst suddenly happens, as suddenly as labor pains come on a pregnant woman; and there will be no way for anybody to evade it. But it is not as if you live in the dark, my brothers, for that Day to overtake you like a thief." (1 Thessalonians 5,2-4)

In other words, those who are in the Light will be forewarned. They will be warned by the Book of Revelation, opened, which unmasks the Beast. They will also be warned by the prophecies of Muhammad about our times.

Muhammad also says:

> "Are they sure they will not be overwhelmed by a torment from God, or that the Hour will come upon them suddenly, unawares?" (Qur'an XII; Joseph,107)

For some people will be caught unawares; for the small number of the faithful, our Father will warn them. Muhammad confirms this saying:

> "When the stars are erased, when the sky is fractured, when the mountains are obliterated, when the Apostles are alerted; to which day shall they be deferred? To the Day of Separation!" (Qur'an LXXVII; Unleashed,8-13)

God then, will forewarn his Apostles about "The Hour". This is what is currently taking place.

4.2 A World War

The following texts contain some symbols which show that God will execute his punishment by nuclear war.

> "So look out for a Day when heaven **exhales smoke**, for all to see, that envelops mankind - a painful torment." (Qur'an XLIV; Smoke,10-11)

> "... The Day when the **Quake shall quake**, to be followed by the after-shock! Hearts that day shall fill with dread, and all eyes shall be downcast. They say: 'Are we to retrace our steps, once we are hollow bones?' And they add: 'That would surely be a ruinous rebirth!'" (Qur'an LXXIX; The Dispatchers,1-12)

Earthquakes were also prophesied by Jesus:

> There will be famines and earthquakes here and there. All this is only the beginning of the birth pangs." (Matthew 24,7-8)

And the Apocalypse confirms:

> "In my vision, when he broke the sixth seal, there was a violent earthquake and the sun went as black as coarse sackcloth; the moon turned as red as blood all over, and the stars of the sky fell onto the earth like figs dropping from a fig tree when a high wind shakes it; the sky disappeared like a scroll rolling up and all the mountains and islands were shaken from their places." (Revelation 6,12-14)

This "violent earthquake" is the 3rd world war, which will shatter everything.

The prophet Jœl had already prophesied about this:

> "As they come on, the earth quakes, the skies tremble, sun and moon grow dark, the stars lose their brilliance. Yahweh makes his voice heard at the head of his army, (*the Apocalyptic Message!*) and indeed his regiments are innumerable, all powerful is the one that carries out his orders, for great is the Day of Yahweh, and very terrible—who can face it?" (Joel 2,10-11)

Muhammad says about this:

> "When **the sky disintegrates**; when the stars are strewn; when **the seas are made to erupt**; when graves are dispersed, each soul will know what it did, and what it failed to do... The righteous are in bliss, and the impious in Hell, to be scorched by it on Judgment Day. Nor will they ever depart therefrom... A Day when no soul can do anything to help another. That Day, Judgment belongs solely to God." (Qur'an LXXXII; Disintegration,1-19)

This text by Muhammad resembles Peter's description of "Judgment Day". Peter says:

> "But by the same Word, the present sky and earth are destined for fire, and are only being reserved until Judgment Day so that all sinners may be destroyed... The Day of the Lord will come like a thief, and then **with a roar the sky will vanish**, the elements will catch fire and fall apart, the earth and all that it contains will be burnt up. Since everything is coming to an end like this, you should be living holy and saintly lives while you wait and long for the Day of God to come, when the sky will dissolve in flames and the elements melt in the heat..." (2 Peter 3,7-13)

This text clearly evokes a 3rd World War which will see "the destruction of all sinners".

> "But when **the Scream** comes to pass, that will be a Day when a man flees from his brother, from his mother and his father, from his wife and his children: each one of them that Day will have something to preoccupy him. Some faces that Day will be radiant, laughing, full of good cheer; and some faces that Day shall be covered with dust, **overlaid with gloom**. These are the blasphemers, the dissolute." (Qur'an LXXX; He Frowned,33-42)

The "Blast" which will arrive is the terrible clash of nuclear war. This rejoins Peter's verses mentioned above: "with a roar the sky will vanish..."

Muhammad expresses the triumph of the elect in saying: "Some faces that Day will be radiant, laughing, full of good cheer". And Matthew specifies that at the time of the Harvest, after

the punishment of all sinners: "... the virtuous will shine like the sun in the Kingdom of their Father" (Matthew 13,43).

Here are some other verses which go in the same sense:

> "Which scatters sparks, as from massive logs, colored like tawny camels (*the Sulphur*)..." (Qur'an LXXVII; Unleashed,29-34)
>
> "A Day when the sky shall be like molten brass, and mountains like tufts of wool scattered. No intimate friend shall ask about his intimate, when glances meet..." (Qur'an LXX; Ascensions,8-14)
>
> "... The Quake of the Hour is a thing terrible! On the Day you witness it, every nursing woman shall be distracted from what she nurses; every pregnant woman shall deliver what she carries; and you shall see mankind drunk, but they are not drunk. Rather, God's punishment is so grievous!" (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,1-2)
>
> The Messenger of Allah has said: "For the one who keeps my soul in His Hand, this world will not extinguish before a man passes before a grave, and bending on it he says: 'Alas! I wish I could be the occupier of this grave!'. He will not do that for devotion, but the difficulty of the trial will push him." (Hadith (Noble Discussions) 1821, chapter 370)

And the Apocalypse says in the same sense: "When this happens, people will long for death and not find it anywhere; they will want to die and death will evade them." (Revelation 9,6)

> "When the Trumpet is blown, that shall be a Day grievous to the unbelievers, a Day of no ease. Leave Me to him I created frail, then granted wealth extensive, and sons always by his side, and rendered all things easy for him - all too easy! And then he covets from Me! Ah no! Inflexible was he against Our revelations! I shall inflict a steep ascent upon him. He reflected and assessed - curse him how he assessed! And curse him again how he assessed!" (Qur'an LXXIV; Enfolded,8-20)

The Apocalypse qualifies this attitude as the "second Death". It is the final death of the soul that in any state of consciousness chose this end. There is no return.

Whereas for the faithful, "the second death has no power over them but they will be Priests of God and of Christ and reign with Him for a thousand years." (Revelation 20,6)

> "In truth, man wishes to persist in his debauchery; he asks when the Day of Resurrection shall come. When eyes are dazzled, **and the moon is eclipsed**, and sun and moon are joined together, man that Day shall ask: 'Where to escape?' No, there is no refuge! To your Lord that Day is the journey's end. Man that Day shall be informed of all his works... On that Day, some faces shall be resplendent, to their Lord their eyes are lifted." (Qur'an LXXV; The Resurrection,5-23)

These "joyous faces" are the faces of all those who have stood up till the end in the fierce battle against the Beast for the greatest Triumph of Jesus, Mary and Muhammad, in a liberated, non-fanatic spirit.

5. The Return of Jesus

Jesus' Return at the end of Times is prophesied in the Gospels, in the Letters, and in the Book of Revelation. Here are some of the key verses:

> "'As it was in Noah's day, so will it be **when the Son of man comes**. For in those days before the Flood people were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, right up to the day Noah went into the ark, and they suspected nothing till the Flood came and swept them all away. It will be like this when the Son of Man comes." (Mathew 24,37-39)
>
> Paul writes: "Since human beings only die once, and after that comes judgment, so Christ, too, offers Himself only once to take the faults of many on himself, **and when he appears a second time**, it will not be to deal with sin (*outside the physical body*) but to reward with salvation those who are waiting for him." (Hebrews 9,27-28)

Peter in the Book of Acts urges the Jews saying:

> "Now you must repent and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, and so that the Lord may send the time of comfort. **Then He will send you the Christ** he has predestined, that is Jesus, whom heaven must keep till the **universal restoration** comes which God proclaimed, speaking through His holy prophets." (Acts 3,19-21)

The Revelation ends in saying:

> "The one who guarantees these revelations repeats his promise: '**I shall indeed be with you soon**'. Amen; come Lord Jesus." (Revelation 22,20)

Jesus returns to destroy the Beast and to restore everything.

Muhammad equally witnesses about the Return of Jesus in various Qur'anic Suras:

5.1 The Throne of your Lord

> "The Hour of Truth! What is the Hour of Truth? But how can you know what is the Hour of Truth? ... When **the Trumpet shall be blown, a single blast**, and the earth and mountains are raised up and crushed, a single crush, on that Day the Calamity shall strike! The sky shall be rent and, on that Day, be brittle. **The angels shall be on its confines**, and carrying the Throne of your Lord above them, on that Day, are eight. On that Day you shall be passed in review, and nothing you hide will remain hidden..." (Qur'an LXIX; The Hour of Truth,1-52)

This "Throne of your Lord" is God our Father, who will live in intimacy with all those who have faithfully resisted the Beast. God's presence with us takes place through the Return of Jesus in the Bread of Life, the Body and Blood of Jesus taken in the intimacy of the family (see the text "The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an"). God wants to live with us in the intimacy of everyday life. He says the following about the Heavenly Jerusalem in the Book of Revelation, which is formed by the real disciples of Jesus who resist the Seduction of the Beast until the end:

> "... Here **God lives** among men. He will make his home among them; they shall be His people, and He will be their God, his name is God-with-them. He will wipe away all tears from their eyes, there will be no more death, and no more mourning or sadness. The world of the past has gone." (Revelation 21,3-4).

Muhammad speaks of "eight" who carry God's Throne. These "eight" evoke the "four living creatures" described by Ezekiel, who with their wings, carry the vault of Heaven and God's Throne. These four living creatures are the four evangelists.

Ezekiel says:

> "... In the center I saw what seemed four animals. They looked like this. They were of human form. Each had four faces, each had four wings... Human hands showed under their wings (*human hands to write*)... Their wings were spread upward; each had two wings that touched, and two wings that covered his body; and they all went straight forward; they went where the Spirit urged them; they did not turn as they moved... Over the heads of the animals a sort of vault, gleaming like crystal, arched above their heads; under this vault their wings stretched out to one another, and each had two covering his body... Above the vault over their heads was something that looked like a sapphire; it was shaped like a throne and high up on this throne was a being that looked like a man..." (Ezekiel 1,1-28)

The "eight" who carry God's Throne then, are the eight wings of the four animals that are spread up toward Heaven. God's Throne is carried by the four evangelists who have brought us the Word of God. This Word was confirmed by Muhammad in the Qur'an. To understand the subtleties of Muhammad's vision, we need to refer to Ezekiel's vision. It is certainly about a vision Muhammad had from what he says towards the end of the same Sura LXIX in verse 43: "It is a Revelation from the Lord of universe!" By this revelation, Muhammad confirms the importance of the four evangelists in our Father's Plan of Salvation.

The four living creatures also appear in the Book of Revelation: they prostrate themselves before the Lamb as it takes the Book of Revelation from the Hand of God.

> "The Lamb came forward **to take the scroll** from the right hand of the One sitting on the Throne, **and when He took it, the four animals prostrated themselves before Him** and with them the twenty-four elders (*the whole of God's people*); each one of them was holding a harp and had a golden bowl full of incense made of the prayers of the saints. They sang a new hymn: 'You are worthy to take the scroll and to break the seals of it, because you were sacrificed, and with your blood you bought people for God of every race, language, people and nation and made them a line of kings and priests, to serve our God and to rule the world." (Revelation 5,7-10)

The Four Living Animals who prostrate themselves before the Lamb are symbolic of the Gospels which prostrate before the Revelation of the mystery of the Apocalypse. God will speak one more time by revealing to the Angel of the Apocalypse the mystery of this small sacred Book, which will spark off the events of the end of times and change the course of history.

And all the Angels and Saints will praise God and the Lamb for this Revelation (Revelation 5,11-14). It will actually lead to our Father's triumph on earth, and enthrone him as King.

It is this Apocalyptic Revelation today, which takes over from the four Gospels in carrying the Throne of God into our hearts.

5.2 Jesus knows the Hour

About knowledge of the Hour, Muhammad says:

> "Jesus is a portent of the Hour, so be in no doubt regarding it and follow Me, for this is a straight path." (Qur'an XLIII; Ornament,61)

With these words Muhammad orients adepts of the Qur'an toward the Book of Revelation, because in the Book of the Revelation, Jesus reveals the Signs of the Hour at the end of times. Adhering to the Apocalyptic Message revealed by Jesus to His Angel, a liberated Muslim is following Muhammad since Muhammad confirms and certifies:

"Have no doubt and follow me".

Muhammad here, identifies himself with Jesus and witnesses once again in favor of the Divine Unity of the Inspiration. He also insists by saying: "This is a straight path".

Now the ultimate aim of every Muslim is to follow the "straight path" (Qur'an I; Fatiha,6-7).

At the end of times, the "straight path" thus entails that all Believers should follow Jesus, who knows the Hour.

By the three small phrases mentioned above from verse 61 of Sura "Ornament", Muhammad evokes a real revolution that rejoins with the revolution of the Angel of the Apocalypse. Today, it is about liberating oneself of all clichés and labels, and to discover together, the Word of God and His Plan in the Book of Revelation and in the Qur'an.

Jesus returns through His Apocalyptic Angel, to enlighten us about the Hour.

5.3 Jesus returns to Damascus with the two witnesses

In the Hadith (Noble Discussions) 1808, chapter 370 (Riyad Es-Salihine, The Gardens of virtue, by Imam An-Nawawi, Translation by Messaoud Boudjenoun, Universal, 2007), Muhammad speaks of the Antichrist and then says regarding the Return of Jesus:

> "In the meanwhile, Allah will send the Christ, son of Mary, who will descend close to a white minaret to the east of Damascus, laying the palms of His hands on the wings of two angels. When He'll bend the head water drops will fall, and when He'll lift it this water will descend, like some pearls. All the disbelievers, who will smell His odor, will die suddenly, and His odor will take as far as his sight; He will pursue the Antichrist until He will catch him at the entry of Lod (*close to Tel Aviv*) and He will kill him. Then Jesus will go to see the people Allah would have preserved from the Antichrist; He will wipe their faces and will talk to them about their places in Paradise."

The Christ returns to Damascus, because, despite all the trials due to the Beast and its terrible diplomatic pressures, Syria has remained faithful to the prophetic words: "No to Israel". This "No to Israel" is inspired by the Spirit of Jesus. It is what Muhammad stresses by saying that Jesus descends to Damascus. Syria's attitude glorifies God and His Messiah.

"Jesus lays the palms of His hands on the wings of two angels." These two angels are the two witnesses of chapter 11 of Revelation; who are killed by the Beast. They are the Palestinian witness and the Lebanese witness. These two witnesses, massacred by the Beast, are supported by their Master: Jesus. The Book of Revelation says:

> "When they have completed their witnessing, the Beast that comes out of the Abyss is going to make war on them and overcome them and kill them. Their corpses lie in the main street of the Great City (*Jerusalem*) known by the symbolic names Sodom and Egypt (*because Jerusalem today has become pagan*), in which their Lord was crucified." (Revelation 11,7-8)

The two witnesses share with Jesus, their Lord, the glory of Martyrdom.

The water drops which fall from Jesus' head represent the graces that pour out like pearls on the two witnesses, and on all those who take part in this holy war.

It is Jesus who will pursue the Antichrist, catch him close to Lod (Tel Aviv), and kill him. Paul says of the Wicked One (the Antichrist):

> "The Lord will destroy him with the breath of His mouth and will annihilate him with His glorious appearance at His coming." (2 Thessalonians 2,8)

The splendor of his Coming takes place through the Book of Revelation opened, which designates the Enemy and mobilizes for the true Fight.

In the end, “Jesus will go to see the people Allah would have preserved from the Antichrist; He will wipe their faces and will talk to them about their places in Paradise”. It will be the time for the Consolation of God’s new people who will be born from the ashes of the Beast. And God “will wipe away all tears from their eyes; there will be no more death, and no more mourning or sadness. The world of the past has gone.” (Revelation 21,4)

These new times are now at the door.

6. The Angel of the Apocalypse, or "the greatest witness"

6.1 Preparation for the Encounter

Muhammad says with regards to the Envoy:

> "So call on God, sincere in faith, even though the unbelievers are averse. Exalted in degree, possessor of the throne. He casts down the Spirit, by His command, upon whomever He wishes of His servants, to warn against the Day of Encounter, a Day when they shall come out of their graves, when nothing about them shall be hidden from God. To whom does sovereignty belong this Day? To God, One, All-Conquering! Today each soul shall be rewarded for what it earned. Today there is no injustice. God is quick to settle accounts. . . " (Qur’an XL; Forgiver,14-20)

The man who, in the end times, has the mission “to warn them of the Day when they shall Meet Him” is the Angel (or Envoy) of the Book of Revelation. The Spirit was “cast down” onto him to assume this mission. He is sent by God with the small “open” book, ie the Apocalypse, to prepare man for the Return of Jesus, for the “Encounter” according to the words of Muhammad, and for the Day of God’s Triumph. On that Day, according to Muhammad, “God shall reign supreme”.

The Apocalypse expresses the same Truth in a similar way. When the 7th Trumpet is blown, “voices could be heard shouting in heaven, calling, ’The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and His Christ, and He will reign for ever and ever...’ ’We give thanks to You, Almighty Lord God, He-Is-and-He-Was, for using your great power and beginning your reign.’” (Revelation 11,15-17) (see also Luke 19,11-19) The Mission of the Apocalyptic Angel is to enthrone our Father.

Muhammad confirms this, saying (Qur’an VI; Cattle,73): “To Him belongs sovereignty, upon a Day when the trumpet shall be blown”. Now the trumpet, as mentioned earlier, is the Book of Revelation, opened.

6.2 To Designate the Antichrist

The mission of the Apocalyptic Envoy is to designate the Antichrist.

Mohammed says about him:

> "They will take him to the Antichrist, and when the believer will see Him, he will say: 'Oh people! It is the Antichrist of whom God's Messenger spoke to us'. The Antichrist will order to throw him face down to earth and will say: 'Take him and beat him'. One will hit him in the stomach and in the back. He will say to him: 'So, don't you believe in me?' He will say: 'You are the Antichrist, the impostor!' He will then order to cut him in two with a saw, and that will be done. The Antichrist will then walk between his two halves, afterwards he will tell him: "Stand up". He will stand up and the Antichrist will say to him: 'Do you believe (*now*) in me?' He will answer: 'I am even more convinced (*that you are the imposter*)'. Then (*the believer*) will add: : 'Oh people! He could never do the same thing with another than me'. The Antichrist will take him to slit his throat but God will place a copper collar on his neck and he won't be able to do him any harm. He will then take him by his hands and feet and he will throw him into what people will suppose to be a fire, but in truth, he will be propelled into Paradise. God's Messenger has said: 'This man will be the greatest witness by the Lord of the universe'." (Chapter 370, Hadith 1815).

This text describes the terrible fight between the Apocalyptic Envoy and Satan. This terrible battle prophesied by the prophet Mohammed has taken place very recently. We are witnesses that this was a body-to-body combat against the devil; where Satan tried to possess him; he mistreated him a thousand different ways, gave him blows invisible to the eye, yet real. But the Apocalyptic Envoy has stood steadfast in front of Satan and has come out triumphant from the battle of all Battles. He will be "propelled to Paradise".

Other characteristics of the Angel of the Apocalypse are explained in the text "The Signs of the Return of Jesus".

7. The Apostles of the End of Times

The following Qur'anic verses mention the "angels" who will intervene in the end times:

7.1 The Return of Jesus with his Angels

> "No! But when the earth is crashed to fine dust, and your **Lord comes downs** with **the Angels, in their ranks**, and Hell is brought near – on that Day man will remember his deeds... But on that Day none will punish as He will punish..." (Qur'an LXXXIX; The Dawn,21-29)

This text evokes the Return of Jesus with His Angels in the end times. Muhammad says: "When your Lord comes down". This Lord is the Lord Jesus. He returns to finally punish his enemies who have directly or indirectly, supported the Satanic Zionist plan.

Luke mentions the punishment on Jesus' "compatriots who detested him", and who said to him "We do not want this man to be our king". At the time of His Return and "His appointment as King", Jesus will say about them: "As for My enemies who did not want me for their king, bring them here and execute them in my presence" (Luke 19,11-27).

Regarding the Return of Jesus, Matthew mentions:

> "'Immediately after the distress of those days the sun will be darkened, the moon will lose its brightness, the stars will fall from the sky and the powers of heaven will be shaken.

> And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in Heaven; then too all the peoples of the earth will beat their breasts; and **they will see the Son of Man coming** on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And **He will send His angels** with a loud trumpet to gather His chosen from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other." (Matthew 24,29-31)

These Angels are the Apostles of the End of Times, who are sent by Jesus with the loud trumpet of the Apocalypse to gather the elect from all over the world.

The elect are those who believe in this Apocalyptic Message.

These Angels come with Jesus "in their ranks" according to the words of Muhammad, ie they are perfectly synchronized with Jesus. They only follow what the Holy Spirit inspires them. They are indeed "in the ranks" as they react to every impulse of the Holy Spirit. They only speak under inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Muhammad says about this:

> "On the Day when **the Spirit and the Angels stand up in their ranks**, they shall not speak; except him who shall receive the sanction of the Merciful and declare what is right. That Day is the Truth. Let him who will, seek a way back to his Lord. Yes, we have forewarned you of an imminent scourge: the Day when man will look upon his works and the unbeliever cry: 'Would that I were dust!'" (Qur'an LXXVIII; The Tidings,38-40)

Muhammad adds:

> "On that Day **the sky with all its cloud shall be rent asunder and the angels sent rapidly down in their ranks**. On that Day the Merciful will truly reign supreme. A Day of woe it shall be to the unbelievers. On that Day the wrongdoer will bite his hands and say: 'Would that I had walked in the Prophet's path'." (Qur'an XXV; The Law,25-27)

The "sky with all its cloud shall be rent asunder" to give back Jesus, who returns on the clouds (Matthew 24,30). He returns accompanied by His angels, who are "sent rapidly down" to enlighten believers on the Apocalyptic events and on the Return of Jesus. The "rapidity" of which Muhammad speaks, evokes the rapidity of the Return of Jesus, which will come like lightning (Matthew 24,27), and the zeal of the Apostles of the End of Times, who will "rapidly" obey the Spirit's orders.

The following Qur'anic verses shed light on other characteristics of these "Angels":

7.2 The men who will emerge in groups

> "When earth is rocked in her last convulsion; when earth shakes off burdens and man asks, 'What may this mean?' – On that Day she will proclaim her tidings, for your Lord will have inspired her. On that Day mankind will come in broken bands to be shown their labors..." (Qur'an XCIX; The Earthquake,1-8)

These men who will emerge in groups are the Apostles of the End of Times, whose mission is to enlighten the earth after the fall of the Beast. They are sent "in bands" to reveal the Apocalyptic prophecies and that of Muhammad. Their mission is to renew the world through the Word of God. It is why at that time, the earth "will proclaim her tidings, for your Lord will have inspired her". The only reference will be the Word of God.

7.3 Those who are sent forth

The beautiful Sura, "Those that are sent forth", is to be read entirely. It speaks of the end of times and Judgment Day. It starts thus:

> "By those that are sent forth blowing violently! By those who spread out widely, and who, afterwards, disperse all over hurling a Recall – as an excuse (*for those who accept*) or a warning (*for the others*) – That which you have been menaced by shall be fulfilled!" (Qur'an LXXVII; Those that are sent forth,1-59)

These verses concern the Apostles of the End of Times who are sent to warn mankind of the Day of the near punishment. They "spread out widely" to "gather the elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other" (Matthew 24,31).

According to the explanation of the Qur'an by Al Mizan "those that are sent forth" are the inspired Angels who come with Knowledge. It is about Knowledge of all Biblical-Qur'anic prophecies concerning our times, thanks to the Apocalyptic Key which has been revealed to the Angel of the Apocalypse.

The Sura "Those that are sent forth" continues saying:

> "When the stars are blotted out; when the sky is rent asunder and the mountains crumble into dust; when the Hour will be manifested to the Apostles. When will all this be? Upon the Day of Judgment. Would that you knew what the Day of Judgment is! On that Day woe betide those who accuse of lie!" (Qur'an LXXVII; Those that are sent forth,8-15)

"Those who accuse of lie" are those who proclaim the Zionist lie. They are the false prophets announced by Jesus. Jesus had said speaking of the end of Times:

> "'If anyone says to you then, 'Look, here is the Christ' or, 'He is there,' do not believe it; for false Christs (*Zionist leaders who take themselves for the messiah*) and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents (*military among others*), enough to deceive even the chosen, if that were possible. There; I have forewarned you.'" (Matthew 24,23-25)

Yes, we have been warned and we warn others so that the greatest number has "the strength to survive all that is going to happen, and to stand with confidence before the Son of Man." (Luke 21,36)

7.4 Those who escape death

Muhammad also says with regards to these envoys:

> "By those who escape death! By those who speed headlong! By those who run lightly! By those who precede the first to direct all things! In truth, on that day when **the earth will be shaken violently**, then shaken by a second earthquake, on that Day, all hearts shall be filled with terror, and all eyes shall stare with awe!" (Qur'an LXXIX; The Soul-Snatchers,1-11)

"Those who escape death", those who "speed headlong" and "lightly" are the Apostles of the End of Times who are sent by Jesus to weed out the darnel, the bad plant, at the time of the harvest, which is the time of Divine Justice.

They will weed out the wicked to save the upright.

Jesus says about this in the Gospel: "'... and at harvest time I shall say to the reapers: First collect the darnel and tie it in bundles to be burned, then gather the wheat into my barn'." (Matthew 13,30) And a little bit further, Jesus explains:

> "The Son of Man will send His angels and they will gather out of His Kingdom all things that provoke offenses and all who do evil, and throw them into the blazing furnace, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. Then the virtuous will shine like the sun in the Kingdom of their Father." (Matthew 13,41-42)

The "things that provoke offenses and all who do evil" is the Vatican today, and other religious leaders with all their hidden scandals, as well as all those who directly or indirectly support the Beast and its allies.

The punishment of the wicked will serve the upright in "escaping death".

7.5 The companions of Jesus

Hadith (Noble Discussion) 1808, chapter 370: The Apostles of the End of Times are called by Muhammad “the companions of Jesus” in the Hadith. Their mission is to denounce the Beast and to pray for its fall. Muhammad says in Hadith 1808:

> "Jesus, Allah’s Prophet and His companions will invoke Allah who will send against Gog and Magog some verses that will attack their necks. They all will die..." (read all Hadith 1808)

Muhammad attests to the efficacy of their prayers in the fight against the Antichrist.

8. The new Heaven and the new Earth, the Universal Restoration

8.1 The new Heaven and the new Earth

The Gospels and the Book of Revelation announce for the era after the fall of the Beast, a Universal Restoration and “a new Heaven and a new Earth”:

> "What we are waiting for is what he promised: the new Heavens and new earth, the place where righteousness will be at home." (2 Peter 3,13)
>
> "Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now, and there was no longer any sea... Then the One sitting on the Throne spoke: ‘Now I am making the whole of creation new’..." (Revelation 21,1-5)

Muhammad equally announces a renewal of creation:

> "He who has brought the Creation into being and will then restore it; who gives you sustenance from heaven and earth. Another god besides God? Say: ‘Show us your proof, if what you say be true’." (Qur’an XXVII; The Ant,64)
>
> "It is He who brings the Creation into being, and will then restore it: that is easier for Him. His is the most exalted attribute in the heavens and the earth. He is the Mighty, the Wise One." (Qur’an XXX; The Romans,27)
>
> "The Supreme Terror shall not grieve them, and the angels will receive them, saying: ‘This is the Day you have been promised’. On that Day we shall roll up the heaven like a scroll of parchment. Just as We brought the First Creation into being, so will We restore it. This is a promise We shall assuredly fulfill. We wrote in the Psalms after the

> Torah was revealed: 'The righteous among my servants shall inherit the earth'. This is an admonition to those who serve us." (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,103-105)

God will "restore the creation", ie He will renew it. The Apocalypse employs the same terms about the old world that will disappear: "... when he broke the sixth seal, there was a violent earthquake... the sky disappeared like a scroll rolling up and all the mountains and islands were shaken from their places..." (Revelation 6,12-14) It is the punishment that will befall the Beast and its allies and will make the old world disappear.

So, our Father "sitting on the Throne" will declare: "I am making the whole creation new" (Revelation 21,5).

Here are also other verses which speak of the restored Creation and of the New Heaven and New Earth:

> "Never think that God will break the pledge He gave to His prophets. Mighty is God, and capable of revenge on the Day when earth is changed into a different earth and the heavens into new heavens." (Qur'an XIV; Abraham,48)
>
> "Do they not see that God, who has created the heavens and the earth, has power to create their like?" (Qur'an XVII; The Night Journey,99)
>
> "... It is He who brings the creation into being and then **restores it**. It is He who is forgiving; **who loves men...**" (Qur'an LXXXV; The Constellations,12-16)

The Bible and the Qur'an are in perfect agreement about this Restoration, or Renewal of "the heavens and earth". What dœs it consist of?

8.2 The Restoration: to free oneself

To enter the new Heaven and the new earth, we must free ourselves from the weight of human traditions, customs and fanaticism:

> "When they are told: 'Follow what God has revealed', they reply: 'We will follow what our fathers practiced'." (Qur'an II; The Cow,170)

Many still today, prefer to follow human customs and traditions, rather than refer directly to an inspired Book. Muhammad says:

> "This Book has been revealed to you... Observe that which is brought down to you from your Lord and follow no other masters besides Him..." (Qur'an VII; The Eights,2-3)

Muhammad clearly indicates by these verses that the Holy Scriptures should be our only master.

And Jesus calls us to the maturity of judgment saying:

> "Why not judge for yourselves what is upright?" (Luke 12,57)

This is especially valid for the end of times, as Muhammad says:

> "I fear for you only the Antichrist; if he appeared and I were among you, I would confound him through decisive argument before you with no need of your help, but if he appeared and I were not among you, each of you should try to confound him. And Allah will substitute me beside all the Muslims." (Hadith 1808)

In other words, at this moment, it is the direct link with our Father which will be the "right path". The religious hierarchy is part of the "old world" which will disappear.

The Book of Revelation says:

> "I saw that there was no temple in the city since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb were themselves the temple, and the city (*The Heavenly Jerusalem*) did not need the sun or the moon for light (*churches, mosques, temples, etc...*), since it was lit by the radiant glory of God and the Lamb was a lighted torch for it." (Revelation 21,22-23; see also the text "Worship and Place of Worship")

8.3 The Restoration: Intimacy with God

This new Heaven and new Earth consist of living in intimacy with God our Father. Muhammad says:

> "The Trumpet shall be blown... The earth will shine with the light of her Lord..." (Qur'an XXXIX; The Throngs,68-70)

In other words, believers will shine with the Light of God. It will be the Light of Love. It will be the Light of Knowledge of our Father through the understanding of all the Inspired Books.

It is the direct contact with God, heart to Heart, spirit to Spirit.

Muhammad adds:

> "But when the dread blast is sounded... On that Day there shall be beaming faces, smiling and joyful..." (Qur'an LXXX; He Frowned,33-42)

The Restoration will be the time of Consolation.

The Book of Revelation says: "... And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes..." (Revelation 7,17).

Muhammad also says:

> "When the Sky is rent apart... O man, who labour constantly to meet your Lord, shall you meet Him..." (Qur'an LXXXIV; The Rending,1-6)

After the fall of the Beast, many will turn towards God. The Restoration will be the time of the Encounter with God our Father.

This Encounter takes place in the Bread of Life.

The Book of Revelation says in the same Spirit about the Victors:

> "They will see Him (*the Face of God*) face to face, and His name will be written on their foreheads." (Revelation 22,4)

To see God's Face, is to live this Encounter prophesied by Muhammad.

And John continues saying:

> "It will never be night again and they will not need lamplight or sunlight (*no more need of temples, churches, or mosques*), because the Lord God will be shining on them. They will reign for ever and ever." (Revelation 22,5)

At the time of Restoration, God will enlighten man directly, from the inside.

8.4 The Restoration: Only one community

The Restoration will also take place by the union among all true believes. There will no longer be barriers, but only one Father with his children, as is in Heaven.

Muhammad says regarding this matter:

> "And to you We have revealed the Book with the Truth. It confirms the Scriptures which came before it (*the Bible*) and stands as a guardian over them. Therefore give judgment among men according to God's revelations, and do not yield to their whims or swerve from the Truth made known to you. We have ordained a law and assigned a path for each of you. Had God pleased, He could have made one community: but it is His wish to prove you by that which He has bestowed upon you. Vie with each other in good works, for to God shall you all return and He will resolve differences for you." (Qur'an V; The Table,48)

It is through the Angel of the Apocalypse that God clarifies our differences. These differences come from wrong interpretations that have accumulated along the centuries. In the divine intention, and overcoming the letter to reach the Spirit, there are no differences (see "A Look of faith at the Qur'an").

The time of Restoration is also the time of maturity. Some differences, which were pedagogue in nature are now overcome.

The fierce battle against the Beast has breathed the Holy Spirit directly and with no human intervention into the hearts of the Palestinian and Lebanese combatants, the two witnesses. The purification (baptism) occurs by the blood that is shed. Through their courageous combat, they have transformed water into blood. The Book of Revelation says regarding this:

> "They (*the two witnesses*) are able to turn water into blood. . . " (Revelation 11,6)
>
> "They have triumphed over him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the witness of their martyrdom, because even in the face of death they would not cling to life." (Revelation 12,11)
>
> "'These are the people who have been through the great persecution, and because they have washed their robes white again in the blood of the Lamb, they now stand in front of God's throne and serve him day and night in His sanctuary. . . '" (Revelation 7,14-15)

Their sufferings and their martyrdom in the fight against the Antichrist have placed them in front of "God's throne". They have been given direct access to God. It is more than the baptism of water, which is but a symbol of a spiritual reality.

Muhammad also says regarding the union of believers:

> "And of Zachariah, who invoked his Lord saying: 'Lord, let me not remain childless, though of all heirs You are the best'. We answered his prayer and gave him John, curing his wife of sterility. They vied with each other in good works and called on Us with piety, fear, and submission. And of the woman who kept her chastity. We breathed into her of Our Spirit, and made her and her son a Sign to all mankind. **Your community is but one community**, and I am Your only Lord. Therefore serve Me. Men have divided themselves into factions, but to Us shall they all return". (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,89-93)

In God's perspective, there is therefore only one and the same community.

Muhammad insists on this point saying:

> "We gave Moses the Book, so that they might be rightly guided. We made the son of Mary and his mother a Sign to mankind, and gave them a shelter on a peaceful hill-side watered by a fresh spring. Prophets! Eat of that which is wholesome, and do good works: I have knowledge of all your actions. **Your community is but one community**, and I am your only Lord: therefore fear Me. Yet men have divided themselves into factions, each rejoicing in its own doctrines. Leave them in their error till a time appointed." (Qur'an XXIII; The Believers,49-54)

It is men who have divided themselves. God, from the onset, wanted save "one community".

Moreover, Muhammad adds:

> "He has ordained for you the faith which He enjoined on Noah, and which We have revealed to you; which We enjoined on Abraham, Moses, and Jesus, saying: 'Observe the faith and do not divide yourselves into factions'... God chooses for it (*that religion*) whom He will, and guides to it those that repent. Yet men did not divide themselves, until the wicked Knowledge was given them... Therefore call men to the true Faith, and follow the straight path as you are commanded. Do not be led by their desires, but say: 'I believe in all the scriptures that God has revealed. I am commanded to exercise justice among you. God is our Lord and your Lord. We have our own works and you have yours; let there be no argument between us. God will bring us all together, for to Him we shall return'." (Qur'an XLII; Counsel,13-15)

This reunion and this return take place today through the text "A Look of faith at the Qur'an", which has been inspired and demanded by our Father, and especially by Mary, Jesus' Mother.

After this inspired text, all those who want to continue arguing are condemned by Muhammad himself when he says:

> "As for those who argue about God **after having received the answer**, their arguments will have no weight with their Lord, and His wrath will fall upon them. Grievous punishment awaits them." (Qur'an XLII; Counsel,16)

This text condemns all those who, by fanaticism, want to continue arguing and sowing division after having received the light through the Angel of the Apocalypse.

It is of him that the Book of Revelation says:

> "I saw another Angel come down from Heaven, with great authority given to him; the earth shone with his glory..." (Revelation 18,1)

And also:

> "Then I saw another powerful Angel coming down from Heaven, wrapped in cloud, with a rainbow over his head; his face was like the sun, and his legs were pillars of fire." (Revelation 10,1)

His face is like the sun because he brings us the Light of God.

And Muhammad, inspired by our Father calls him "the greatest witness before the Lord of the universe" (Hadith 1815).

Let us follow then, his testimony and recognize that we are all children of the same Father. At that moment, we will render Glory to God by the accomplishment of Jesus' prophecy:

> "And there are other sheep I have that are not of this fold, and I must lead these too. They too will listen to my voice, and there will be only one flock, one shepherd." (John 10,16)

Finally, the following Qur'anic verses point out that in God's perspective, there is only one faith which englobes Judaism, Christianity and Islam. It is the faith of today's independent believers, stripped of all fanaticism and gathered around Jesus, the Messiah of God, Mary, the Mother of Jesus and Muhammad:

1. Qur'an IV; Women,125 &136 & 150-152
2. Qur'an VI; Cattle,161
3. Qur'an XVI; The Bee,123

8.5 The Great Day of Reconciliation

After the fall of the Beast, our good Father will proclaim the Great Day of Reconciliation.

Jews of good faith will ask forgiveness for the sufferings caused to the Palestinians and the Lebanese, and for having adhered to Zionism.

Sincere Christians will ask forgiveness for the past sufferings caused to the Jews and for their support of Zionism.

Repentant Muslims will ask forgiveness for their fanaticism and for their rejection of the Gospels. And Christians too, etc... etc...

Each will do their sincere and public mea culpa, from the bottom of their hearts, before going to rejoin the large Family of the Heavenly Jerusalem described in the Apocalypse. The Book of Revelation says in relation to the Return of Jesus:

> "Look, he is coming on the clouds; everyone will see him, even those who pierced him, and all the races of the earth will mourn over him. Indeed this shall be so. Amen!" (Revelation 1,7)

The great prophet Zechariah had already pronounced this lamentation:

> "But over the House of David and the citizens of Jerusalem I shall pour out a spirit of kindness and prayer. They will look on the one whom they have pierced; they will mourn for him as for an only son, and weep for him as people weep for a first-born child. When that day comes, there will be great mourning in Judah, like the mourning of Hadad-Rimmon in the Plain of Megiddo. And the country will mourn clan by clan. . . " (Zechariah 12,10-12)

There are some who will lament with tears of repentance for their salvation. The hardened others will lament over their defeat.

And Isaiah prophesied:

> "'Console my people, console them,' says your God. 'Speak **to the heart** of Jerusalem and call to her that her time of service is ended, that her sin is atoned for, that she has received from the hand of Yahweh **double punishment** for all her crimes.' (*see Revelation 18,6-8*). A voice cries, 'Prepare in the (*Apocalyptic*) desert a way for Yahweh. Make a straight highway for our God across the desert. Let every valley be filled in, every mountain and hill (*human pride*) be laid low, let every cliff become a plain, and the

> ridges (*all kinds of deviations*) a valley; then the **glory of Yahweh shall be revealed** and all mankind shall see it; for the mouth of Yahweh has spoken'." (Isaiah 40,1-5)

Yahweh's Glory will be revealed by the final Triumph of his Messiah, Jesus of Nazareth, and by the final fall of Israel, the announced Antichrist.

Yahweh's Glory will be revealed on the Great Day of Reconciliation, which will be the prelude to the New Heaven and the New Earth. "I am making the whole of creation new" (Revelation 21,5).

It will be a day of collective Resurrection:

> "The sea (*symbol of the nations*) gave up all the (*spiritual*) dead who were in it; Death and Hades were emptied of the (*spiritual*) dead that were in them; and everyone was judged as his deeds deserved." (Revelation 20,13)

Muhammad has similarly spoken of this Resurrection:

> "Thus do We recount to you the history of past events. A Scripture of Our own have We given you: those that reject it shall bear a heavy burden on the Day of Resurrection. Forever shall they bear it: an evil burden on the Day of Resurrection, the day when the Trumpet shall be blown... On that day no intercession will avail except from him that has received the sanction of the Merciful and whose word is pleasing to Him... They will hang their heads with awe before the Living One, the Ever-existent..." (Qur'an XX; Ta Ha,100-112)

This Resurrection corresponds to the first Resurrection (Revelation 20,5), that of the soul which relives on the life-giving contact of its Creator. It will be at the moment "when the Trumpet shall be blown", ie at the moment the Revelation, the trumpet of God, is revealed.

Many souls will resurrect at that moment, because they will be able to free themselves from the nets of Zionism and the materialism that had trapped them.

8.6 The Restoration: The Bread of Life in the Family

The ultimate reward for the faithful will be intimacy with God through the "Table spread with food from Heaven" (Qur'an V; The Table,114), the Bread and the Cup of Life. Muhammad insisted a lot on the importance of this Cup of Life (see "The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an"), and said among other things:

> "God will deliver them from the evil of that Day, and make their faces shine with joy. He will reward them for their steadfastness with Paradise and robes of silk. Reclining there upon soft couches, they shall feel neither the scorching heat nor the biting cold. Trees will spread their shade around them, and fruits will hang in clusters over them. They shall be served on silver dishes, and beakers as large as goblets; silver goblets which they themselves shall measure: and **they will drink cups brim-full with ginger-flavored water** from a fount called Salsabil. They shall be attended by boys graced with eternal youth (*angels or saints*), who to the beholder's eyes will seem like sprinkled pearls. When you gaze upon that scene, you will behold a kingdom blissful and glorious." (Qur'an LXXVI; Man,11-20)

The Restoration takes place through the Bread and the Cup of Life, the Body and Blood of Jesus taken in the intimacy of the home, heart to Heart, in simplicity and Love.

9. Conclusion

It is beautiful and touching to discover how God, in His Infinite Subtlety, inspired aspects of the Apocalypse to Muhammad using the same terms as John.

By this fact, he draws our attention and encourages us to consult the Book of Revelation which specifically concerns our time. It is time for God's final triumph over all His enemies.

The Qur'an says:

> "God has decreed: 'I will surely triumph, Myself and My prophets'. Powerful is God, and Almighty." (Qur'an LVIII; She who Pleaded,21-22)

We are at the Door of God's Triumph and the announcing of the Universal Restoration. Each person is called to this Renewal, provided that we wear the Wedding Dress (Matthew 22,11-13) by stripping ourselves of all fanaticism. We are invited to God's Great Feast, to the Festive Table which Muhammad speaks of (Qur'an V; The Table,114).

We are called together to form this great human Family, according to the words of Jesus: "In expectation of what must happen: the love of man for his brother's man, and for the Supernatural" (Message given to Pierre2, 1960).

And as Muhammad had foretold:

> "God will bring us all together, for to Him we shall return..." (Qur'an XLII; Counsel,15)

He says again:

> "Therefore strive for the pardon of your Lord, and for a Paradise as vast as heaven and earth, prepared for those who believe in God and His prophets. Such is the grace of God: He bestows it on whom He will. God's grace is infinite!" (Qur'an LVII; Iron,21)

It is with a superabundance that God lavishes his grace, to regenerate the true believers at the time of the Universal Restoration. It will be a new Pentecost.

Fortunately, our Father has waited for the end of times to unite all the communities, because, considering the Vatican's betrayal, it was necessary that our brother combatants, the children of Fatima, who fight against the Beast, are able to evolve freely and follow the Impulse of the Spirit which animates them. They are our beloved brothers whom we are proud of, and whom we love and support by our prayers. They lead the Fight of Liberation, under the banner of Saint Joan of Ark.

As Jesus had announced, it is necessary to wait for the time of harvest (the end of times), before weeding out the darnel (the subjects of Evil), for fear that the wheat (the subjects of the Kingdom) are also weeded out.

Jesus says to his angels:

> "... When you weed out the darnel you might pull up the wheat with it. Let them both grow till the harvest; and at harvest time I shall say to the reapers: First collect the darnel and tie it in bundles to be burnt, then gather the wheat into my barn..." (Matthew 13,24-30 & 36-43).

We must let the Zionist evil evolve to unmask the wicked (see 2 Thessalonians 2,9-12) and reveal the deep hearts of God's true friends. This is the Wisdom of God.

After all, the Beast serves God's Plan in uniting the whole world's spiritual communities around Jesus, Mary and Muhammad, for the greatest Glory of our tender Father.

Finally, independent believers “from every nation, race, tribe and language” (Revelation 7,9) will unite to proclaim with one heart and one voice, grounding themselves by all the Inspired Books:

1. Jesus is the Messiah of God.
2. Mary is the Messiah’s Immaculate Mother and our Mother.
3. Muhammad is the beloved Prophet of God.
4. The Beast, the Antichrist, Al Massih al Dajjal, is Israel. God will manifest His power by destroying the Beast very soon.
5. Jesus returns to restore everything.
6. Jesus unites us around his Heavenly Table and invites us to form this one community, linked together by the sacred bond of Love.

And the Apocalyptic prophecies of Muhammad and John will be accomplished:

> "Their light shining before them... That is the supreme triumph." (Qur’an LVII; Iron,12)
>
> "For to your Lord, on that Day, all shall return... On that Day there shall be joyous faces, looking towards their Lord..." (Qur’an LXXV; The Resurrection,12-23)
>
> "It is He that has sovereignty over the heavens and the earth. He ordains life and death, and has power over all things." (Qur’an LVII; Iron,5)
>
> "‘The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and his Christ...’ ‘We give thanks to you, Almighty Lord God, He-Is-and-He-Was, for using your great power and beginning your reign. The nations were seething with rage and now the time has come for your own anger, and for the dead to be judged, and for your servants the prophets, for the saints and for all who worship you, small or great, to be rewarded. The time has come to destroy those who are destroying the earth.’" (Revelation 11,15-18)

BR (In Honor of our Lady of Fatima, 13.05.2010 / reviewed 01.06.2010)

4

The action of the Holy Spirit according to the Bible and the Qur'an

The Holy Spirit acts in us and guides us. The action of the Holy Spirit can blossom and intensify in us in measure with our Knowledge that grows, and that we allow ourselves to be modeled by Him. This is also valid throughout history.

1. The Holy Spirit in the Books of the Old Testament

In the Old Testament, God first wanted to reveal His Grandeur to the Jews in comparison to the pagan idols. The relationship between the believers and the Holy Spirit was a relationship of fear and tension. The Holy Spirit tried to educate them, but there was great resistance. The Psalmist desired to flee far away of the Holy Spirit... The Holy Spirit was in danger of withdrawing itself because of their Zionist, warlike spirit.

> "Who could have advised the Spirit of Yahweh, what counselor could have instructed him? Whom has he consulted to enlighten him, and to learn the path of justice... He lives above the circle of the earth, its inhabitants look like grasshoppers... 'To whom could you liken Me and who could be my equal?', says the Holy One. Lift your eyes and look. Who made these stars..." (Isaiah 40,13-26)
>
> "The Holy Spirit of instruction shuns deceit... is thwarted by the onset of vice..." (Wisdom 1,1-7)
>
> "Where could I go to escape your Spirit? Where could I flee from your presence?" (Psalm 139,1-7)
>
> "God, create a clean heart in me, put into me a new and constant spirit, do not banish me from your presence, do not deprive me of your Holy Spirit." (Psalm 51,10-11)

2. The Holy Spirit in the Books of the New Testament

2.1 Characteristics of the Holy Spirit

Jesus revealed to us the true face of the Holy Spirit:

- Gabriel announces to Mary that Jesus will be conceived in her by the Holy Spirit: "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will cover you with its shadow. And so the child will be holy and will be called Son of God." (Luke 1,35)
- John the Baptist announces that Jesus will baptize the disciples in the Holy Spirit and Fire, and not in water anymore, as John did (Matthew 3,11 / Mark 1,8).

- He is this "other Consoler", the Spirit of Truth, through whom Jesus dœs not leave us orphans. He comes back to us (John 14,16-18).
- He is the Consoler sent by Jesus and who comes from the Father (John 15,26).
- He comes from the Father and the Son: "He will glorify me, since all he reveals to you will be taken from what is mine. Everything the Father has is mine; that is why I said: all he reveals to you will be taken from what is mine" (John 16,14-15).
- The Holy Spirit is the greatest Good we can ask the Father for (Luke 11,9-13).
- It could not have been given before that Jesus "was glorified" (John 7,39). By His Passion and His Resurrection, Jesus had to first destroy the Zionist, nationalist, and exclusive Spirit, which was an obstacle to the coming of the Holy Spirit.

After His Resurrection, Jesus leaves the yield of His Passion in inheritance to the Apostles, the Holy Spirit, and gives them full powers:

> "And He said to them again: 'Peace be with you. As the Father sent Me, so I am sending you'. After saying this he breathed on them and said: 'Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive anyone's sins, they are forgiven; if you retain anyone's sins, they are retained'." (John 20,21-23)

And then the diffusion: Jesus, just before his Ascension, gives the Apostles the following mandate:

> "Go therefore, make disciples of all nations; baptize them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to observe all the commands I gave you. And look, I am with you always; yes, to the end of time." (Matthew 28,19-20)

2.2 The action of the Holy Spirit

- In the Holy Spirit we are born again: John 3,5-6: "No one can enter the Kingdom of God without being born through water and the Spirit; what is born of human nature is human; what is born of the Spirit is Spirit".
- We are marked by the seal of the Holy Spirit: Ephesians 1,13 / Revelation 7,2 / Revelation 13,18.
- It is uniquely under the action of the Holy Spirit that we can say "Jesus is Lord" (1 Corinthians 12,3).
- He speaks through us: Mark 13,11 / 1 Corinthians 2,13-14 (a language taught by the Spirit). It is necessary to be sensible to the voice of the Holy Spirit in us. The Holy Spirit is internal, subtle and gentle.
- He makes us jump with joy:

  - Luke 1,46-47: Mary is thrilled with joy as the Holy Spirit came upon her (Luke 1,35).

  - Luke 1,39-42: John the Baptist jumps with joy in his mother's womb at hearing Mary's voice.

  - Luke 10,21: Jesus is filled with joy under the action of the Holy Spirit.
- He confers us strength and power, and takes away all fear: Acts 1,8 / Acts 2,1-36 / Romans 14,13-17: to take into account the faith of others; to know how to be pedagogue.

- He confers us joy, peace: Romans 15,13 / 1 Thessalonians 1,4-6.
- He renews us: Titus 3,5: The bath of renovation in the Holy Spirit = cleansing of sins.
- He comes to the rescue of our weaknesses: Romans 8,26-27.
- He allows us to kill the letter: John 6,63: The letter kills, the Spirit life-giving / 2 Corinthians 3,4-6.
- He confers us his charity and produces in us his fruits: Hebrews 2,4 / Galatians 5,22-26
- He makes us sons of God and coheirs of Christ: Romans 8,14-17:

  > "Everyone moved by the Spirit of God is a son of God. The Spirit you received is not the spirit of slaves bringing fear into your lives again; it is the Spirit of sons, and it makes us cry out: 'Abba, Father!' The Spirit in person adjoins our spirit to attest that we are children of God, and coheirs of Christ, since we suffer with him to also be glorified with him."

2.3 Our relationship with the Holy Spirit

- We are the Temple of the Holy Spirit: 1 Corinthians 6,17-19 / 1 Corinthians 3,16-17
- Do not sadden him: Ephesians 4,30
- Do not extinguish him: 1 Thessalonians 5,19 (as the churches do).
- In the Spirit we form but one body and we complete one another. Each one has his mission through the Holy Spirit, like one body with its members, and to each its function: 1 Corinthians 12,1-30 / Ephesians 4,1-6.
- The Holy Spirit spreads the love of God in our hearts (Romans 5,5).
- He confers us liberty and introduces us in the Glory of our Father:

  > "Now this Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. And we, with our unveiled faces reflecting like mirrors the brightness of the Lord, all grow brighter and brighter as we are turned into the image that we reflect; this is the work of the Lord who is Spirit" (2 Corinthians 3,17-18).

- He reveals to us "the hidden wisdom of God, a wisdom that none of the masters of this age have ever known... all that God has prepared to those who love him... for the Spirit reaches the depths of everything, even the depths of God." (1 Corinthians 2,6-12)
- He makes us penetrate the Plenitude of God and makes us understand the grandeur of God's love: Ephesians 3,14-19.

3. The Holy Spirit in the Qur'an

The following verses show that the Holy Spirit is also very present in the Qur'an:

3.1 Jesus is a Spirit eminent from God. He was fortified by the Holy Spirit

> "The Christ Jesus son of Mary is indeed the Prophet of God and His Word which He cast into Mary, a Spirit from Him" (Qur'an IV; Women,171).
>
> "We revealed the Book to Moses, and We sent after him messengers in succession; and We granted Jesus son of Mary evident miracles and strengthened Him with the Holy Spirit" (Qur'an II; The Cow,87).
>
> "Remember when God said: 'O Jesus son of Mary, remember My blessing upon you and your mother, when I strengthened you with the Holy Spirit, and how You spoke to people in the cradle and in your manhood'" (Qur'an V; The Table,110).
>
> "Remember when your Lord said to the Angels: 'I shall create a human being from dry clay, from fetid mud. When I give him the proper shape and breathe into him from My Spirit, you are to fall down prostrate before him'. All the angels then bowed before him except for Satan, who refused to be among the prostrate." (Qur'an XV; Al-Hijr,29-31)

This mortal in whom God breathed of his Spirit, is Jesus. Paul equally reveals that the Angels prostrate themselves before him (Philippians 2,6-11 / Hebrews 1).

3.2 The Spirit was breathed into Mary. Testimony of her virginity. The miracle of Jesus and Mary

> "And mention in the Book Mary, when she withdrew from her people to an eastern place... We sent Her Our Spirit, which appeared before her as an immaculate human." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,16-17)

It speaks of the angel Gabriel who was animated by the Holy Spirit to announce to Mary that she will be pregnant. This verse has ported confusion in the Muslim world between the Holy Spirit and Gabriel. But in the light of all the Biblical-Qur'anic revelation, it is clear that it is Gabriel who was animated by the Holy Spirit, as the apostles were animated by the Holy Spirit some time after (see paragraph 2, The Holy Spirit in the Books of the New Testament).

> "Remember also she who preserved her virginity, and We breathed into her of Our Spirit, and made her and her son to be a sign to mankind." (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91)

The Holy Spirit was breathed into Mary to beget Jesus by a miracle. The Qur'an joins the Gospel. According to this Qur'anic verse, the Holy Spirit cannot be Gabriel.

> "Then, too, there is Mary, daughter of Imran, she who guarded Her chastity; and We breathed into her of Our Spirit; and she reposed her trust in the words of her Lord and in His Books, and was devout in worship." (Qur'an LXVI; Making Illicit,12)

This verse is a clear testimony of the Qur'an in favor of Mary's virginity. It is the Holy Spirit that impregnated Mary (see the text "A Look of faith at the Qur'an").

3.3 God breathed his Spirit into man, at the time of the creation

> "Then gave him shape and breathed into him of His Spirit, then granted you hearing, eyesight and hearts - but little thanks do you give in return." (Qur'an XXXII; The Prostration,9)

3.4 God breathed his Spirit into man and makes of him a prophet

> "Exalted in degree, Possessor of the throne, He casts down the Spirit, by His command, upon whomever He wishes of His servants, to warn against the Day of Encounter, a Day when they shall come out of their graves, when nothing about them shall be hidden from God. To whom does sovereignty belong this Day? To God, One, All-Conquering!" (Qur'an XL; Forgiver,15-16)

In these verses, God reveals that it is his Spirit who is sent to form the prophets, men who speak and forewarn in his Name. Muhammad announces here, in a veiled fashion, the coming of the Apocalyptic Messenger who has the Mission of preparing men to the encounter with God, the Day of triumph of God's Kingship on earth. This triumph concerns our times and is announced in St. John's Apocalypse (Revelation 11,15 / see the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

3.5 God inspires the Qur'an through his Spirit

> "The Night of Qadr (the decree) is better than a thousand months. In it, the Angels and the Spirit are sent swarming down, by their Lord's leave, attending to every command." (Qur'an XCVII; Qadr,3-4)

It is the night the Qur'an "descended". The Qur'an is therefore inspired by the Spirit.

> "The Qur'an is indeed a Revelation from the Lord of the Worlds, brought down by the Trustworthy Spirit, upon your heart, so that you may be a warner, in manifest Arabic speech; it is also in the Books of the ancients (*the Bible*)..." (Qur'an XXVI; The Poets,193-196)

This verse underlines the continuity between the Bible and the Qur'an. From the optic of God, it is the same Message.

> "Say: It is the Holy Spirit that sends it (*a Qur'anic verse*) down from your Lord with the Truth, to confirm the believers, and as guidance and glad tidings to the Muslims." (Qur'an XVI; The Bees,102)

After the Qur'anic inspiration, God thus sends his Spirit to inspire the Qur'an, or some Qur'anic verses since "the Holy Spirit brought it down from your Lord".

The Qur'an thus well-distinguishes between God and his Spirit. It would be inappropriate, however, to accuse Muslims of worshiping two Gods because of this distinction. It refers to God and his Spirit, forming the one and same Entity.

The Qur'an also distinguishes between God and His "Word which He cast into Mary" (Qur'an IV; The Women,171). Jesus is the Word of God. This Word is inspired by the Holy Spirit. It is why Muhammad so insisted on the fact that Jesus was fortified by the Holy Spirit and it is the Holy Spirit that was breathed into Mary "to make her and her son a miracle to all mankind" (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91).

Given the level of spiritual knowledge of the Arabs of the time, who were still immersed in idolatry and a polytheistic environment, and who did not have all the preparation of the Old Testament, God could not have said more. Besides, God said to Muhammad:

> "They ask you about the Spirit. Say: 'The Spirit belongs to the realm of my Lord, and of knowledge you have been granted but little'." (Qur'an XVII; The Night Journey,85)

In order to have more knowledge, Muslims are invited to consult the Bible, since "it was surely foretold in the Books of the ancients" (Qur'an XXVI; The Pœts,193-196).

God, His Spirit and His Word form the Unique God under the form of three facets, three manifestations of His Unique Being (see "The Key of the Apocalypse").

The Qur'an and the Bible are in perfect agreement. How can it be otherwise, since it is the Spirit of God who has brought down the Qur'an, and it is the Spirit of God who inspired the Gospel: "The words I have spoken to you are Spirit and they are life." (John 6,63) And also: "Since he whom God has sent speaks God's own words: God gives him the Spirit without reserve." (John 3,34)

4. The Holy Spirit in the Book of Revelation

4.1 The Heavenly Jerusalem and the Spirit

In the Heavenly Jerusalem, the independent believers, who believe in the Apocalyptic Message revealed by Jesus Himself to his Messenger on the 13th of May 1970, let themselves be totally guided by the Holy Spirit: Ezekiel 1,20-28 (the four Living creatures are the four evangelists, and the wheels are the Apostles of the End of Times): "Where the spirit urged them, there the wheels went, since the spirit of the animal was in the wheels".

Meanwhile, Jœl prophesies: "'After this I will pour out my Spirit on all mankind. Your sons and daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, and your young men see visions. Even on the slaves, men and women, will I pour out my Spirit in those days. I will display portents in heaven and on earth, blood and fire and columns of smoke.' The sun will be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the Day of God dawns, the great and terrible Day. All who call on the name of Yahweh will be saved" (Jœl 3,1-5).

It is the outpouring of the Holy Spirit in abundance in the end of times. These times are symbolized by "the sun which turned into darkness" (see Revelation 6,12).

The following texts testify to the plenitude of the Holy Spirit accorded in the Apocalyptic times:

- The Angel who has as a mission to open the Book of Revelation (Revelation 10), flies in the zenith (Revelation 14,6). This means that he rose very very high in the Spirit.
- It is the time of the "Marriage of the Lamb", it is the time of the Total Union, of the accomplishment. God gives Himself entirely (Revelation 19,7-9).
- The Holy City made itself "beautiful as a bride all dressed for her Husband." (Revelation 21,2) The countless trials have purified and cleansed us. We are dressed in "dazzling white linen" (Revelation 19,8) to welcome in the Spirit, Jesus in Return amongst us.
- "And the city did not need the sun (*traditional churches*) or the moon (*mosques*) for light, since it was lit by the radiant Glory of God" (Revelation 21,23). As Isaiah had prophesied: "All your children will be taught by God" (Isaiah 54,13).

  To compare with Paul, who said to have received "the first-fruits of the Holy Spirit" (Romans 8,23).
- The Lamb had "seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits God has sent out all over the world" (Revelation 5,6). These seven eyes, are us, in mission all around the world to denounce the Antichrist and to announce Jesus' Return. The mention of the "seven Spirits" indicates the plenitude of the Spirit that guides us.

- The Qur'an expresses the same thing under another form: "The Day of Separation shall be the date appointed, a Day when the Trumpet shall be blown... when Heaven shall be opened... That Day, the Spirit and the Angels shall stand in rows..." (Qur'an LXXVIII; The Proclamation,17-40).

  "The Day of Separation" is a very clear reference to the Apocalyptic times when God is "going to sit in judgement on all the nations around", in the "Valley of Decision" (Jœl 4,9-16). These Angels, or Messengers, are the Apostles of the end of Times who will be on the same wavelength, "on range" with the Holy Spirit. They are sent by Jesus Himself: "He will send His angels with a loud trumpet to gather His elect from the four winds" (Matthew 24,31). The "trumpet" which Muhammad also speaks of, is the "open" Book of Revelation (Revelation 10,2).

- The Ark of the Covenant could be seen inside the Sanctuary (Revelation 11,19). The modern Ark of the Covenant is Jesus, who manifests himself in us by the action of the Holy Spirit. It is the accomplishment of John 14,23: "Anyone who loves Me will keep My word, and My Father will love him, and We shall come to him and make a home in him". See Revelation 21,3

In the Apocalyptic times, the River of the Spirit gushes up. In Jesus' time, it was still the source that began to spring up: John 4,12-14 (spring of water springing up to eternal life) / John 7,37-39 (the rivers of living water) / Revelation 22,1-2 (the river of life limpid as crystal). Ezekiel already had a vision of the source which transformed into a torrent and "wherever the river flows, all living creatures teeming in it will live" (Ezekiel 47,1-12). He designated the Apocalyptic times, as John picks up the same symbols again in the Apocalypse (the tree of Life which bears fruits, the River which rises from the throne) (Revelation 22,1-2).

We are submerged by the River of Life, which flows out from the Bread of Life.

4.2 Those who have the Spirit listen

> "But when the Spirit of truth comes he will lead you to the complete truth." (John 16,13)

It is in the Apocalyptic times that this prophecy of Jesus is accomplished. The Book of Revelation has been "open" (Revelation 10,2) by the Apocalyptic Messenger, that is to say explained, and all the Bible and the Qur'an have been explained: "The book of life was opened, and other books opened..." (Revelation 20,12) This "book of life" is the Apocalypse (see "The Key of the Apocalypse").

The Revelation addresses itself to those who have the Spirit:

> "Let anyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches." (Revelation 2,7 / 2,17).

Only those who have the Spirit will be able to recognize the Beast and fight it. It is uniquely under the action of the Holy Spirit that we can say "the Beast is Israel" (compare with 1 Corinthians 12,3):

> "There is need for shrewdness here: if anyone is clever enough he may interpret the number of the beast: it is the number of a man, the number 666." (Revelation 13,18; compare with 1 Kings 10,14).

Those who have the Spirit listen and understand. It is thus that our Father "probes the hearts and minds" of believers (Psalms 7,10).

The Spirit promises Rest to those who commit themselves:

> "Happy are those who die in the Lord! Happy indeed, the Spirit says; now they can rest for ever after their work, since their good deeds go with them." (Revelation 14,13)

4.3 The Spirit and the Bride call Jesus

The Spirit and the Bride call the Return of Jesus:

> "The Spirit and the Bride say, 'Come!' Let everyone who listens answer, 'Come!' Then let all who are thirsty come: all who want it may have the water of life, and have it free." (Revelation 22,17)

The Bride, it is Mary, and it is us. It is in union with Mary, our Mother, the Woman "robed with the sun" of the Truth (Revelation 12,1), and by the Spirit that we call Jesus, so that He will come to restore all.

The Bible begins with the promise of the Woman who crushes the head of the serpent (Genesis 3) and finishes with Mary, the triumphant Bride who says 'Come!' It is her, who through Her Compassionate Intercession, obtain to us the grace of the Plenitude of the Holy Spirit.

The Joy of the Holy Spirit is for it to pour out in the minds of his children "from every nation, race, tribe and language" (Revelation 7,9).

BR (04.05.2009)

5

Qur'anic verses about the Messiah Jesus

Here are some Qur'anic verses which present Jesus as the **Messiah**, the **Prophet** of God, the **Word** of God, and the **Spirit** of God:

> "O Mary, God gives you glad tidings of a Word from Him. His name is the **Christ** Jesus son of Mary..."
>
> (The Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45)
>
> "They said: 'It is we who killed the Christ **Jesus** son of Mary, the Messenger of God...'"
>
> (The Qur'an IV; Women,157)
>
> "The **Christ Jesus** son of Mary is indeed the Prophet of God and His **Word** which He cast into Mary, and a **Spirit** from Him..."
>
> (The Qur'an IV; Women,171)
>
> "Say: Who can do anything against God's will should He wish to extirpate **the Christ son of Mary** and his mother, indeed all that is on earth? ..."
>
> (The Qur'an V; The Table,17)
>
> "They have taken their rabbis and monks as lords instead of God - as also **the Christ son of Mary**..."
>
> (The Qur'an IX; Repentance,31)

6

Christ God in the Gospel and the Qur'an

How do we understand the Qur'anic verse of Surah V; The Table,116:

> "Remember when God said to Jesus son of Mary: Did you really say to people: 'Take me and my mother as two gods, instead of God?' He (*Jesus*) said: 'Glory be to You! I could never have claimed what I have no right to. If I had said it, You would have known it; You know what is in my mind **and I know not what is in Your mind**, for it is you Who are the All-Knower of the **Unseen**.'"

Is the verse "I know not what is in Your mind", a negation of Christ's Divinity?

Answer:

This verse is not a negation of Christ's divinity. In order to understand it, one should:

a) Place it in its historical context in relation to the polytheist Arabs of the VIIth century.

b) Compare it with the Gospel's text.

1. Historical Context

It was difficult to demonstrate to the polytheist Arabs that the unique God became incarnate in the person of Christ. It is clear that they understood Jesus and Mary as two separate gods, comparable to the multiple gods they worshiped. This verse comes to contradict that.

2. To Compare with the Gospel text

The words of Christ, addressing himself to God: "I know not what is in Your mind" are interpreted by some as a negation of Christ's Divinity, since He is unaware of what is in God. We demonstrate -in comparing it to the Gospel text- that this hasty interpretation is false, especially that the Qur'an in Surah IV; The Women, 47 presents itself as a **confirmation** of the Gospel and invites us, moreover, to find the "best of arguments" (Qur'an XXIX; Spider,46), to follow the "Straight Path" towards God (Qur'an I; Al-Fatiha, 6-7).

The Qur'an confirms the words of Christ while addressing his Apostles in the Gospels. They asked him about the end of times and of the moment of his return:

> "Tell us, when is this going to happen, and what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the world?" (Matthew 24,3). He answered them: "But as for that day and hour, nobody knows it, neither the angels of heaven, **nor the Son**, no one but the Father only" (Matthew 24,36).

This means that the Christ did not declare "what he had no right to" as this Qur'anic verse states because the Apostles were unable to understanding the immensity of the Divine Plan. This is what is "**Unseen**" according to the Qur'an.

Besides, the Christ "can do nothing by himself; he can do only what he sees the Father doing: and whatever the Father dœs the Son dœs too" (John 5,19). And also: "I do nothing of myself: what the Father has taught me is what I say" (John 8,28). Some would like to see a negation of Christ's Divinity from these evangelical verses. This is not so! We explain why below.

Addressing himself to the Jews, Jesus says: "Before Abraham ever was, I am" (John 8,58). This so irritated the Jews that it made them want to stone him to death, understanding that He was presenting himself as God incarnate. How can the Christ already exist before Abraham? Certainly not in his body which was created by God in Mary's womb, eighteen centuries after Abraham. It is therefore the Spirit of Christ, like God, that existed before Abraham and which itself became incarnate in Mary. Besides, Jesus says: "**I came from the Father** and have come into the world" (John 16,28). This is the reason for which Jesus adds: "Now, Father, it is time for you to glorify me with that glory I had with you **before** ever the world was" (John 17,5).

Therefore, we must discern in Christ the physical aspect, his created body, and the divine dimension. It is this eternal and divine dimension that animates and instructs this created body that takes its information from the Father. It is why Jesus had said: "I do nothing of myself. What the Father has taught me is what I preach", which corresponds to the following verse in the language of the Qur'an: "You know what is in my mind, but I know not (*in human form*) what is in Your mind". And in the Gospel's verse: "I do nothing of myself. What the Father has taught me is what I preach; he who sent me is with me" (John 8,28). The corporal part of the Christ only knows what was revealed to him by the Divine Will. And "the Father loves the Son and shows him everything He dœs himself" (John 5,20).

However, because of the limit of human intelligence and its inability to grasp "what is unseen (*indescribable*)" (Qur'an V, The Table, 116), the Son cannot reveal everything, all at once, to a restricted human mentality, opaque to divine plans and to the Divine Essence (The Trinity, The Messiah's Divinity, The Eucharist, The Crucifixion). In the same verse of the "Table", Jesus, addressing himself to God, says: "You Who are the All-Knower of the **Unseen**". These are such truths that Jesus in this same Qur'anic verse "has no right to tell" to people of limited intelligence.

So then, Christ's answer is not a negation of his divinity, but a limit to what he could reveal at that moment. It is in a spirit of a paternal pedagogy and divine wisdom that the Christ also says:

> "I still have many things to say to you **but they would be too much for you now**" (John 16,12).

This will be the Holy Spirit's mission to reveal, later on, the fullness of the divine mystical plan to those who welcome it:

> "The Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you everything" (John 14,26).

And also:

> "When the Spirit of Truth comes he will lead you to the complete Truth" (John 16,13).

Paul picks up this teaching again in addressing himself to the Corinthians:

> 1 Corinthians 3,1-3: "Brothers, I myself was unable to speak to you as people of the Spirit: I treated you as sensual men, still infants in Christ. What I fed you with was **milk**, not solid food, **for you were not ready for it**; and indeed, you are still not for it since **you are still not spiritual**..."

One must have received the Holy Spirit to understand God and to judge:

> "The spiritual person, on the other hand, is able to judge the value of everything, and their own value is not to be judged by other persons." (1 Corinthians 2,15)

The Holy Spirit is given to us men so that "our minds are to be renewed by a spiritual revolution so that we can put on the New Self that has been created on God's way, in the goodness and holiness of the truth" (Ephesians 4,23). "For the Spirit reaches the depths of everything, even the depths of God..." (1 Corinthians 2,10-15)

How many people in Christ's time, Muhammad's time in Arabia, were willing to believe in the divine truths? How many people, still today, twenty centuries after the Christ, are willing to believe in the truths revealed by the Holy Spirit, whose principals are:

1. The Holy Trinity
2. Jesus is the Christ announced by the prophets (Many do not believe in this amongst the so-called Jews, Christians or Muslims).
3. Jesus is the divine incarnation on earth.
4. The Kingdom of God as well as his Temple is IN US; this Kingdom being spiritual, not political. It is not a geographic location: Jerusalem, Rome, Mecca, etc...
5. The bread and wine taken around Christ's Holy Table are truly his Body and his Blood.
6. Monogamy and marital fidelity.
7. The uselessness of animal sacrifice, geographic pilgrimage, clean and unclean foods, etc... for the salvation of the soul.

All these truths -which the Christ revealed through the Holy Spirit after him- could not have been understood by his Apostles and the Arabs at their time... and still are not today by the vast majority of people. The Christ, who acts pedagogically according to the principles of God, could not strike the people of his time and reveal them all these truths to them frankly, at once. It is why he often spoke in parables, knowing that He was addressing himself to people whose hearts are hardened by pleasures, materialism and worldly irregularities. The Apostles themselves did not understand it. In speaking of monogamy and condemning divorce, they replied to him: "'If that is how things are between husband and wife, it is advisable not to marry.' But he replied: 'It is not everyone who can accept what I have said...'" Divine pedagogy appears in these words of Christ: "'It was because you were so unteachable, that Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but it was not like this from the beginning'" (Matthew 19,1-12). The Qur'an also reveals this pedagogy in matters of marriage, passing from capricious polygamy and anarchic divorce to monogamy, passing through the reduction of marriage to four women, then indicating monogamy for salvation (See "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an").

Neither the Apostles at the time of Christ, nor the Arabs at the time of Muhammad had received the fullness of the Holy Spirit to understand the immensity of the divine plan at man's service, stubbornly drowned in his ignorance. St Paul himself declares that he received but "the **first-fruits** of the Spirit" (Romans 8,23).

Jesus followed the divine plan in confiding what is incommunicable to the Holy Spirit. By humbling himself up until the cross, he respected the fragile human condition. God lowered himself through Christ to speak to man face to face. St Paul expressed himself as follows:

> "His (*Jesus*) state was divine, yet he did not cling to his equality with God but emptied himself to assume the condition of a slave, and became as men are; and being as all men are, he was humbler yet, even to accepting death, death on a cross. But God raised him high and gave him the name which is above all other names so that all beings in the heavens, on earth and in the underworld, should bend the knee at the name of Jesus and that every tongue should acclaim Jesus Christ as Lord, to the glory of God the Father." (Philippians 2,6-11).

So Christ was the Father's instrument to speak to the heart of man, deaf and blind to the divine truths. He incarnated himself then, "to assume the condition of a slave, and became as men are", to speak to man face to face, then send them his Holy Spirit.

This is why in our time, Christ, Himself again, to complete his work "will manifest himself a second time (*but out of the body*) to those who are waiting for him (*the sensible bridesmaids: Matthew 25*), to bring them salvation" (Hebrews 9,28 / 2 Timothy 4,8). He will no longer manifest himself in the body, but by the Holy Spirit.

Christ who said to the Apostles of not knowing the hour of his Return (Matthew 24,36) and who, in the Qur'an, tells the Father of not knowing his secrets, knew very well the hour and the day, and the divine secrets. But this was not the time to reveal the salutary truths, that only the Holy Spirit's mission is to reveal to those who welcome him in our time.

Blessed are the pure hearts capable of hearing and understanding the whispers of the Holy Spirit.

(See the text "The Divinity of Jesus").

Peter (29.06.2006)

Part VIII

Biblical themes

Table of Contents

1	The Mystery of Piety	323
2	The Mystery of Impiety	325
3	Faith versus the Law	329
4	Forgiveness of sins	335
5	The Shepherd, His Sheep and the Gate	337
6	The Intercession of the Saints in the Bible	339
7	The Survival after Death	343
8	The Afterlife	345
9	Isaiah 7-8-9	349
10	Two wonderful Twin Discoveries	353

1

The Mystery of Piety

To those who believe in our Message and, through prayer, ardently commit to it.

> "Without any doubt, the **Mystery of Piety** is very profound indeed: He was made visible in the flesh, attested by the Spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed to the pagans, believed in by the world, taken up in glory", Paul said (1 Timothy 3,16).

He also explained this mystery: "... God's purpose to reveal it to them and to show all the rich Glory of this mystery... **The Mystery is Christ in you**" (Colossians 1,27).

2000 years ago, Paul also revealed that: "The Mystery of Impiety" was, it too, already at large in his time. It opposed the Mystery of Piety. As this is the Christ in us, the Mystery of Impiety is none other than the devil among us, whose intermediary is the Antichrist.

This Mystery of Impiety was to manifest openly later, to be destroyed by the Lord Jesus: "The Rebel appears openly and the Lord will **kill** him with the Breath of His mouth and will annihilate him with His glorious appearance at His Coming" (2 Thessalonians 2,7-8). This satanic "Mystery" is the name inscribed on the forehead of the "Prostitute", the Beast (Revelation 17,5).

Today God opposes, once again, this maleficent evil, by "the Mystery of Piety". This is symbolized by "**The Woman** who escaped into the desert", to be nourished, in silence and anonymity, with God's prophetical and Apocalyptical words (Revelation 12,6). This "Woman" represents us; through her, Christ is returning inside us! The Mystery of Piety is once again in action, invisible to man, "mysteriously".

And so, it has thus commenced, in silence, "in the desert", this unsuspected mystical struggle of man. It is the Apocalyptical, ruthless fight, between two Mysteries: the Pious One against the Rebel, the Rider and his followers versus the Beast and its allies (Revelation 19,11-21).

How is this fight unfolding?

The Book of Revelation answers: "The Serpent vomited water from his mouth, like a river, after the Woman, to sweep her away in the current" of the Beast (Revelation 12,15). The Serpent, Satan, vomits this river of deceit to mislead the whole of humanity through the mouth of the Second Beast of Revelation, who "made noise like a dragon. This second beast was servant to the first beast, and extended its authority everywhere, making the world and all its people worship the first beast..." (Revelation 13,11-12)

The Mystery of Piety counters against this devilish current. It is Christ Himself, who returns **-on earth-** to reveal the mystery of the Book of Revelation through "the Angel", his Envoy: "But the earth came to her rescue, it opened its mouth and swallowed the river spewed from the dragon's mouth" (Revelation 12,16). "The **earth** that opens its mouth" against Satan and "The

Breath coming out from the mouth of Jesus the Lord" during His Coming against the Rebel, are both the revelation of the Apocalypse, which has already saved us all from deceit. The Messenger of Revelation receives from Heaven, the order to reveal the Apocalyptical Mysteries: "Do not keep the prophecies in this Book (*of Revelation*) a secret, because the time is near" (Revelation 22,10). These two symbols, "the Earth" and "the Breath", also represent "the loud cry, like a Lion roaring (*symbol of Christ*)", the cry that will be launched by the Angel, later, after the fall of the Beast (Revelation 10,3). This cry is also "the sharp, double-edged sword, coming out of Jesus' mouth" (Revelation 1,16 and 19,15). It is sharp because it gives believers discernment. The Apocalyptic Mystery thus revealed will bring about the final fall of the Mystery of Impiety, and Salvation for all those who will have formed the Mystery of Piety.

The Mystery of Impiety, the Beast, has appeared. We have recognized it. The Mystery of Piety (the Angel and his like) is already at work, opposing the Rebel through prayer -oh how effective they are in the spiritual spheres!- The efficacy of the fight through prayer is noticed in Paul's words to the Colossians: "Epaphras, your fellow-citizen, sends his greetings; this servant of Christ Jesus **never stops battling for you, praying**, that you will never lapse but always hold perfectly and securely to the will of God" (Colossians 4,12). Let us imitate him in the fight, with prayer, against the Mystery of Impiety.

The Mystery of Piety will cease to be a mystery after the fall, which is near, of its wicked enemy: "the Mystery of Impiety". This is no longer a mystery to us "who can see", as Mary says, the "Woman of the Apocalypse" (Revelation 12) in La Salette, instructing her children to fight: "I am with you and in you... Fight children of Light, you, the few who can see. For now is the Time of all times, the End of all ends".

All will soon be clarified for us, after the fall of the Antichrist, the Beast, the modern Babylon, symbols of this Mystery of Impiety, when the Angel will scream out loud: "Babylon has fallen, Babylon the great has fallen!! ..." (Revelation 18,1-2)

In the meantime, we persevere, with patience, in the desert, in the silence where we are parked, in our mystical and mysterious struggle, by praying with confidence against the Rebel. We know that he is on his way to perdition and that we will never see him again on earth. This advice given by Jesus to his people will be thus fulfilled: "If you have faith and do not doubt at all... if you say to this mountain: 'Get up and throw yourself into the sea,' it will be done." (Matthew 21,21) He indicated mount Zion, the symbol of Zionism.

So it is enough for us to be, to be what we already are, to abort the ultimate plan of Wickedness: The construction of the Zionist temple. This will take place at the very moment when this enemy of the Messiah believes it has reached the summit of its temporal glory. Let us face the challenge, through faith in the prophecies, which announce its final destruction. Such is the purpose of our election. Let us be aware of this with force and determination. The fall of the diabolical enemy is near: "The Beast was taken prisoner, together with the false prophet..." (Revelation 19,20), and near is the final glorification of our Beloved Savior and King of Eternity, Jesus the Messiah: "Then the seventh Angel blew... and voices could be heard shouting in Heaven: 'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and His Christ and He will reign for ever and ever" (Revelation 11,15-18). Then, all will become clear, as "the Mystery of God will be fulfilled" (Revelation 10,7 / 17,17).

The Mystery of Piety is already at work towards its triumph. This Holy Mystery, is all of us who believe in and fight with the living Christ, "Immanuel", back in the world. He acts in us and through us:

> "Here God lives among men. He will make his home among them. . . " (Revelation 21,3)

2

The Mystery of Impiety

The Jewish-Zionist infiltrations into Jewish-Christian assemblies

From the start of Christianity, the Zionist Jews rejected Jesus as Messiah. They infiltrated the Jewish-Christian assemblies to bring them back to the practice of the Law of Moses, and by this, to renounce Jesus because He refused to establish the political kingdom of Israel. St Paul, writing to the Thessalonians, did not fail to denounce this maneuver and called it "the Mystery of Impiety", or "of Iniquity". It was therefore already active in his time:

> "**Rebellion** is at its work already, but in secret, and the one who is holding it back has first to be removed (*the Roman Empire*) before the Rebel **appears openly**." (2 Thessalonians 2,7-8)

So, this mystery had to reveal itself in the future, again, in the world, with power, on the eve of Jesus' Return. Paul specifies that it will even install itself in God's throne on earth, whose symbol today is the Vatican:

> "About the coming of our Lord Jesus... It cannot happen until the Great Revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Lost One, has appeared. This is the Enemy (*the Antichrist*)... that he **enthrones himself in God's sanctuary**..." (2 Thessalonians 2,1-8)

The Virgin appeared in La Salette in 1846 to warn us: "Rome will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist".

This Rebel has already, palpably, appeared in the world. The sleeping bridesmaids did not recognize him (Matthew 25,1-13). He sits however, in the heart of the Church today (see the text "The Antichrist and the Return of Christ").

The Apostles denounced this Zionist infiltration already practiced in the past, amidst the ranks of the first Judeo-Christian community as we demonstrate below:

1. These infiltrators were Jews, the "**falsely circumcised**", who refused to believe that Jesus is the Messiah:

   > Philippians 3,2-3: "Beware of dogs! Watch out for the people who are making mischief. Watch out for the **cutters** (*Judeo-Zionists, false Jews*)! We (*disciples of Jesus*) are the real people of the circumcision..."
   >
   > Titus 1,10-14: "And in fact you have there a great many people who need to be disciplined, who talk nonsense and try to make others believe it, particularly among

those of the Circumcision (*the Jews*)... So you will have to be severe in correcting them... so that they stop taking notice of Jewish **myths**..."

John and Peter also unmasked these deceivers:

2 John 7: "There are many deceivers about in the world, **refusing to admit that Jesus Christ** has come in the flesh. They are the Deceiver; they are the Antichrist."

1 John 2,19-22: "Those (*Judeo-Zionists*) rivals of Christ came out of our own number, but they had never really belonged; if they had belonged, they would have stayed with us; but they left us, to prove that not one of them ever belonged to us... **The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ**, he is the liar, he is Antichrist"

2 Peter 2,1: "As there were false prophets in the past history of our people, so you too will have your false teachers who will insinuate their own disruptive views and **disown the Master** who purchased their freedom. They will destroy themselves very quickly."

2. In the past, the Zionist Jews had already infiltrated amidst the Judeo-Christian ranks to ridicule Christian Sanctity and to transform the "Lord's Supper" into a meeting of **drunkards**. Thus works the Mystery of Impiety:

1 Corinthians 11,17-33: "... I cannot say that you have done well in holding meetings that do you more harm than good... when you hold these meetings, it is not the Lord's Supper that you are eating, since when the time comes to eat, everyone is in such a hurry to start his own supper that one person goes hungry while another is **getting drunk**..."

Jude 4-12: "Certain people have **infiltrated** among you... they (*Judeo-Zionists*) were condemned for denying all religion, turning the grace of our God into immorality, and **rejecting our only Master** and Lord, Jesus Christ... **They** are a dangerous obstacle to your community meals, coming for the food and quite shamelessly only looking after themselves (*during the Lord's Supper*)..."

Galatians 2,4: "Because **some who do not really belong** (*Judeo-Zionists*) to the brotherhood **have furtively crept in to spy** on the liberty we enjoy in Christ Jesus..."

Acts 20,28-30: Paul says to the Ephesians: "I know quite well that when I have gone **fierce wolves will invade** you..."

3. The aim of this infiltration was to oppose Christ and to destroy his work by bringing the Judeo-Christians back to the practice of Judaism (circumcision, etc...):

Galatians 1,6-7: "I am astonished at the promptness with which you have **turned away** from the One who called you... it is merely that some **troublemakers** among you want to **change the Good News** of Christ" (*Who, among the first Judeo-Christians, wanted to **change** the Good News other than the Judeo-Zionists?!*)

Galatians 3,1-3: "Are you people in Galatia mad? Has someone **put a spell on you?!** ..." (*the Judeo-Zionists once again*)

Galatians 6,12: "... who **force** circumcision on you..." (*the Judeo-Zionists, again and always*)

Acts 15,1-5: "Then some men **came down from Judea** and taught the brothers, 'Unless you have yourselves **circumcised** in the tradition of Moses, you cannot be

saved.' ... But certain members of the **Pharisees'** party who had become believers objected, insisting that the pagans should be circumcised and instructed to keep the Law of Moses." (*Here, the Judeo-Zionist infiltration is evident*)

Acts 21,17-24: The Jews around St James still practiced the Torah. Acts 15,1-5 speaks of them.

The Mystery of Impiety is one of the names of the Beast of Revelation; this name, "Mystery", is engraved on its forehead (Revelation 17,5). The mysterious modern Zionist action is planned and revealed in the "Protocols of the Elders of Zion", denounced as a forgery by Zionists and their followers. They are however authentic and well-applied in today's world for those who are awake and discerning.

In the past, the first Christian Jewish community lived in "fear of the Jews" (John 7,13 / 19,38 / 20,19). This fear pushed some believers to yield to the pressures of the Zionist Jews on two levels: religious and political.

On the religious level, this was done by returning to the practices of the works prescribed by the Torah: circumcision, Sabbath, animal sacrifices, etc... Politically, this was manifested by a military commitment in fighting against Rome to restore an Israeli nation or kingdom. Failing to do so, the first converts to Jesus were subjected to a genuine persecution by the Judeo-Zionists. These are the persecutions that Paul refers to when addressing the Thessalonians: "For you, my brothers, have been like the churches of God in Christ Jesus which are in Judaea, in suffering the same treatments from your own countrymen as they suffered from the Jews: the people who put the Lord Jesus to death, and the prophets too. And now they have been persecuting us, and acting in a way that cannot please God and makes them the enemies of the whole human race, because they are hindering us from preaching to the pagans and trying to save them..." (1 Thessalonians 2,14-16)

Two attempted uprisings against Rome took place: the first was hampered by Titus in the year 70 AD; its result was the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem. The second Jewish revolt was led by Simeon Ben Koseba (132-135 AD) who managed to seize Jerusalem. He was, as a consequence, recognized by rabbi Aqiba as Messiah and the Star predicted by Balaam in Numbers 24,17, hence the nickname of Bar Kokeba, which means Son of the Star. He persecuted the Judeo-Christians because they had refused to join the uprising against Rome. He perished in August 135, vanquished by Severus.

Therefore Paul, in speaking of the "Rebel already at work" at his time, refers to these aforementioned political-religious Zionist uprisings. These movements were led by the Jews who refused to recognize Jesus as Messiah.

The Rebel at work is repeated today under other forms: pressure to recognize the State of Israel, the right to build Solomon's Temple, and returning to the worship of the Torah. This is the great universal and sudden trial which surprised and deceived the world, even the Christian leaders themselves who give in to a pro-Zionist ecumenism: "... **the whole world** had marveled and followed the Beast" (Revelation 13,3). This trial was announced by Jesus for the end of times; to test men's faith, it will spare only the true believers (Matthew 24,11-13 / Luke 21,34 / Revelation 3,10). (See the text "The Universal Trial").

The Mystery of Impiety is back in the world. It is fought by the Mystery of Piety.

Pierre (29.09.2002)

3

Faith versus the Law

In the Gospel, the word Law is the interpretation of the word Torah. One should always translate Torah in order to really understand the sense of the text. So, when Paul says "As we see it, a man is justified by faith (*in Jesus*) and not by something the Law (*Torah*) tells him to do" (Romans 3,28), the reader dœs not always understand Paul's intention who also speaks of "the curse of the Law" (Galatians 3,13). But in reading that one is saved by faith in Jesus Christ and not by the deeds of the Torah, which has become "a curse", one understands the importance of faith and the futility of material worship prescribed by the Torah (see the text "Cult and Place of Worship").

To this some respond: But Jesus said: "Do not imagine that I have come to abolish the Law (*Torah*) or the Prophets. I have come not to abolish but to complete them. I tell you solemnly, till Heaven and earth disappear, not one dot, not one little stroke, shall disappear from the Law **until its purpose is achieved**" (Matthew 5,17-19). This is true! Jesus came to accomplish the Torah, not in its worship, but in the prophecies that announce His advent. Through the Advent of Jesus, the Messiah, everything, in the Torah, is thus **already** realized.

In fact, there are two categories in the Torah (the Law):

1. The category of the Ten Commandments (Exodus 20,1-17) and Messianic prophecies (Genesis 3,15 and 49,10 / Numbers 24,17 / Deuteronomy 18,15), which **Jesus came to accomplish**.

2. The category of worship that **Jesus came to abolish**. It is this category that is described in the following text.

1. Consecration of the Priests

> Exodus 29,22: "... You will then take the fatty parts of the ram: the tail, the fat covering the entrails, the fatty mass over the liver, the two kidneys with their covering fat and also the right thigh –for this is a ram of investiture..."
>
> Exodus 29,29-30: "Aaron's sacred vestments must pass to his sons after him, and they will wear them for their anointing and investiture. Whichever of the sons of Aaron succeeds him in the priesthood and enters the Tent of Meeting to serve in the sanctuary, will wear them for seven days."

Compare with the Priesthood of Christ:

Hebrews 4,14-5,10: "Since in Jesus, the Son of God, we have the supreme high priest who has gone through to the highest heaven, we must never let go of the faith that we have professed... (5,9-10) ... he became for all who obey him the source of eternal salvation and was acclaimed by God with the title of high priest of the order of Melchizedek."

Revelation 1,6: "He made us a line of kings, priests to serve his God and Father; to him, then, be glory and power for ever and ever. Amen."

Revelation 5,10: "You made them a line of kings and priests to serve our God and to rule the world."

Revelation 20,6: "Happy and blessed are those who share in the first resurrection; the second death has no power over them but they will be priests of God and of Christ and reign with him for a thousand years."

2. Daily holocaust

Exodus 29,38-42: "This is what you must offer on the altar: two yearling male lambs each day in perpetuity. The first lamb you will offer at dawn, and the second at twilight, and with the first lamb, one-tenth of a measure of fine flour mixed with one-quarter of a hin of pounded olive oil and, for a libation, one-quarter of a hin of wine. The second lamb you will offer at twilight, and do it with a similar cereal offering and libation as at dawn, as a pleasing smell, as an offering burnt for Yahweh, a perpetual burnt offering for all your generations to come, at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting before Yahweh, where I shall meet you and speak to you."

3. Sacrifice for the forgiveness of sins

Leviticus 4,3: "If the one who sins is the anointed priest, thus making the people guilty, then for the sin which he has committed he must offer Yahweh a young bull, an unblemished animal from the herd, as a sacrifice for sin."

Compare with

Matthew 26,26-28: "Now as they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and when he had said the blessing he broke it and gave it to the disciples. 'Take it and eat', he said, 'this is my body'. Then he took a cup, and when he had returned thanks he gave it to them. 'Drink all of you from this,' he said, 'for this is my blood, the blood of the covenant, which is to be poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins.'"

4. Unclean animals

Leviticus 11,3-7: "You may eat any animal that has a cloven hoof, divided into two parts, and that is a ruminant. The following, which either chew the cud or have a cloven hoof, are the ones that you may not eat: you will regard the camel as unclean, because though it is ruminant, it does not have a cloven hoof... (11,7): you will regard the pig as unclean, because though it has a cloven hoof, divided into two parts, it is not a ruminant etc..."

Compare with

Matthew 15,10: "He called the people to him and said, 'Listen, and understand. What goes into the mouth does not make a man unclean; it is what comes out of the mouth that makes him unclean'."

Acts 10,9-16: "Next day, while they were still on their journey and had only a short distance to go before reaching Jaffa, Peter went to the housetop at about the sixth hour to pray. He felt hungry and was looking forward to his meal, but before it was ready he fell into a trance and saw heaven thrown open and something like a big sheet being let down to earth by its four corners; it contained every possible sort of animal and bird, walking, crawling or flying ones. A voice then said to him, 'Now, Peter, kill and eat!' But Peter answered, 'Certainly not, Lord; I have never yet eaten anything profane or unclean'. Again a second time, the voice spoke to him, 'What God has made clean, you have no right to call profane'." This was repeated three times, and then suddenly the container was drawn up to heaven again.

5. Circumcision

Leviticus 12,3: "On the eighth day the child's foreskin must be circumcised."

Deuteronomy 10,16: "Circumcise your **heart** then and be obstinate no longer."

Compare with

Jeremiah 4,4: "Circumcise yourselves for Yahweh; off with the circumcision of your hearts (men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem), lest my wrath should leap out like a fire, and burn with no one to quench it, in return for the wickedness of your deeds."

Romans 2,28-29: "To be a Jew is not just to look like a Jew, and circumcision is more than a physical operation. The real Jew is the one who is inwardly a Jew, and real circumcision is in the heart—something not of the letter but of the spirit. A Jew like that may not be praised by man, but he will be praised by God."

6. Sabbatical rest

Exodus 31,12-14: "Yahweh then said to Moses: 'Speak to the Israelites and say, You will keep my Sabbaths properly, for this is a sign between myself and you for all your generations to come, so that you will know that it is I, Yahweh, who sanctify you. You will keep the Sabbath, then; you will regard it as holy. Anyone who profanes it will be put to death; anyone who does any work on that day will be outlawed from his people.'"

Compare with

Luke 6,1-11: "Now one Sabbath he happened to be taking a walk through the cornfields, and his disciples were picking ears of corns, rubbing them in their hands and eating them. Some of the Pharisees said, 'Why are you doing something that is forbidden on the Sabbath day?' Jesus answered them, 'So you have not read what David did when he and his followers were hungry—how he went into the house of God, took the loaves of offering and ate them and gave them to his followers, loaves which only the priests are allowed to eat?' And he said to them, 'The Son of Man is master of the Sabbath'..."

7. Stoning of an adulterous woman

Leviticus 20,10: "The man who commits adultery with his neighbor's wife will be put to death, he and the woman."

Deuteronomy 22,23-24: "If a virgin is engaged to a man, and another man encounters her in the town and has sexual intercourse with her, you will take them both to the gate of the town in question and stone them to death. . . "

Compare with

John 8,4-10: "they said to Jesus, 'Master, this woman was caught in the very act of committing adultery, and Moses has ordered us in the Law to condemn women like this to death by stoning. What have you to say?' They asked him this as a test, looking for something to use against him. But Jesus bent down and started writing on the ground with his finger. As they persisted with their question, he looked up and said, 'If there is one of you who has not sinned, let him be the first to throw a stone at her'. Then he bent down and wrote on the ground again. When they heard this they went away one by one, beginning with the eldest, until Jesus was left alone with the woman, who remained standing there. He looked up and said, 'Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?' 'No one, sir', she replied. 'Neither do I condemn you', said Jesus, 'go away and don't sin any more'."

8. Not to eat blood

Leviticus 17,10-14: "If any member of the House of Israel or any resident alien consumes blood of any kind, I shall set my face against that individual who consumes blood and shall outlaw him from his people. For the life of the creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you for performing the rite of expiation on the altar for your lives, for blood is what expiates for a life. . . "

Compare with

John 6,53: "Jesus replied: 'I tell you most solemnly, if you do not eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you will not have life in you.'"

9. Unclean pregnancy

Leviticus 12,2-4: "Speak to the Israelites and say: 'If a woman becomes pregnant and gives birth to a boy, he will be unclean for seven days as when in a state of pollution due to menstruation. On the eighth day the child's foreskin must be circumcised, and she will wait another thirty-three days for her blood to be purified. She will not touch anything consecrated nor go to the sanctuary until the time of her purification is over."

10. Sexual Uncleanliness

From the man:

Leviticus 15,1-2: "Speak to the Israelites and say to them: When a man has a discharge from his body, that discharge is unclean. . . "

From the woman:

> Leviticus 15,19: “Whenever a woman has a discharge and the discharge from her body is of blood, she will remain in a state of menstrual pollution for seven days. Anyone who touches her will be unclean until evening. . . ”

When Jesus says: “’Do not imagine that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets. I have come not to abolish but to complete them...” (Matthew 5,17-19), He dœs not refer to the deeds of the worship in the Torah, but to the prophecies found therein announcing his Advent. He comes in order to accomplish them. He also refers, of course, to the Ten Commandments: “Therefore, the man who infringes even one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be considered the least in the Kingdom of Heaven...” (Matthew 5,19)

On the contrary, Jesus denounces as invented, by the scribes and Pharisees, the religious practices of the Torah (Matthew 15,1-20 / Matthew 23).

Likewise, St. Paul rebels against these same practices which he describes as a curse: “The Christ redeemed us from **the curse** of the Law (*Torah*)” (Galatians 3,13).

11. Conclusion

We are saved through faith in Jesus and not by the practice of the Law (Torah) (Galatians 3,2-9). This applies to all the laws of worship in all religions (Torah, Canonical Law, Sharia, etc...)

4

Forgiveness of sins

The majority of Christians (and other religions) continue to beat their breasts (some even whip themselves) when asking God for forgiveness of their sins. They ceaselessly find themselves unworthy of approaching the Bread of Life, of spiritually nourishing themselves with the Holy Body of Jesus, before confessing that they are sinners and unworthy. This guilt complex must be put to an end, inspired by the enemy to slow us down. I am sent in order to liberate you by reminding you that God, our Father, annuls our sins for three reasons:

- For believing that Jesus is the Christ, announced by the prophets (Acts 13,38 / 26,18).
- For believing in the Bread of Life, the divine gift for the forgiveness of sins (Matthew 26,28).
- For believing in the Apocalyptical message as revealed by Jesus (Revelation 1,5-6).

Does this mean that we can go on sinning and automatically obtain forgiveness by our faith in Jesus? Certainly not! Those who think so, understand nothing of the words of God and do not fathom his intentions. In fact, those who have really encountered Jesus on their road, and who have truly believed in Him with all their hearts, have their sins forgiven and **sin no more**. Here is what St John says of this:

> "Anyone who lives in God (*Jesus*) **does not sin**, and anyone who sins has never seen Him or known Him." (1 John 3,6)
>
> "No one who has been begotten by God **sins**; because God's seed remains inside him, **he cannot sin** when he has been begotten by God." (1 John 3,9)
>
> "We know that anyone who has been begotten by God **does not sin**, because the begotten Son of God protects him, and the Evil One (*Satan*) does not touch him. We know that we belong to God, but the whole world lies in the power of the Evil One." (1 John 5,18-19)
>
> "He (*Jesus*) loves us and **has washed away our sins** with his blood, and made us a line of kings and priests to serve his God and Father (Revelation 1,5-6) ... those who refused to worship the Beast or his image, and would not have the brand mark on their foreheads or hands; they **came to (*spiritual*) life**, and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. This is the first Resurrection; the rest of the dead (*those of the past*) did not come back to life until the thousand years were over (*at the end of the world, during **the second resurrection** of all the dead for the final judgment*). Happy and blessed are those who share in the first resurrection; **the second death has no power over**

> **them** but they will be priests of God and of Christ and reign with Him for a thousand years (*until the end of the world*)." (Revelation 20,4-6)

Let us therefore free ourselves of this **false humility**, which makes us bow, for no legitimate reason, our heads before our Father. It is inspired by the devil and his fiends on earth. God desires his children to look him in the face, to jump onto Him, just as a child dœs when running spontaneously towards his father. Jesus tells us:

> "When these things begin to take place, **stand erect, hold your heads high**..." (Luke 21,28)

I remind you all of this so that you may be in full assurance next to our Father, by your total faith in Jesus and your refusal of the Antichrist who has failed to "mark you on the right hand or on the forehead" (Revelation 13,16-17). Saint Paul already invites us to have this attitude of assurance: "This is why we are bold enough **to approach God in complete confidence, through our faith in Him**" (Ephesians 3,12). In fact, John says: "In love there can be no fear, but fear is driven out by perfect love: because to fear is to expect punishment (*as the result of sin; and yet the true disciples of Jesus no longer sin*), and anyone who is afraid **is still imperfect in love**", he concludes (1 John 4,18).

This is the why we no longer ask the Father to forgive our sins; this is already granted! Do we still ignore it?! We do not want, nor should "bombard his ears" about an affair already concluded between Him and us. Let us thank Him rather, unceasingly, for forgiving us and forgetting our sins, for having made us participate in the First Resurrection, for having made us, moreover, his priests and intimate friends, and for having gathered us around his Son's Holy Table. And let us not forget, above all, in the euphoria of this heavenly bliss, our gratitude to Mary, Mother of Jesus and our Immaculate Mother, for her Compassionate Intercession!

That is how our wonderful and Holy Father wants us to behave with Him **from our stay on earth**: to be "bold enough to approach Him in complete confidence... because fear is driven out by perfect love". May His Will be done "on earth as is in Heaven!"

Glory forever to the Holy Name of the Father through Jesus, the Messiah, our Savior. Amen.

5

The Shepherd, His Sheep and the Gate

You will recognize yourselves, independent believers, in the following text: in Revelation 3,6-8 Jesus reveals that He alone holds the Key that opens and closes, and that He opens a Door to His sheep which no one can close. This Door is open to Heaven (Revelation 4,1).

Our Brother Savior had already spoken to us of this Door in John 10: He Himself is this Door: "I am the Gate of the sheepfold" (John 10,7). "Anyone who enters through Me will be safe: he will go freely in and **out** and be sure of finding pasture" (John 10,9). We have entered by the Gospel for 2000 years. They say: "Outside the Church, no salvation!" But since then, the situation has deteriorated and we find everywhere, "cesspools of impurity": Today, in churches and religions, we no longer find salvation. To them also applies this urgent call of the Apocalypse: "Come out, my people, away from her, so that you do not share in her crimes and have the same plagues to bear. Her sins have reached up to Heaven, and God has her crimes in mind" (Revelation 18,4-5).

So the Shepherd of the sheep came again to open a way out for his sheep, an escape which nobody can close. Not only has He brought them in to feed them, but now "He brings them **out** so that they could find pasture", which is no longer found in the inside where everything is dangerously rotten.

What is marvelous about the words of Jesus is that this Good Shepherd, who jealously watches over his sheep along the centuries, who not only brings them in, but also out in order to find their food. Humanly speaking, we should say: 'make them leave, then make them enter'. Now that the churches and religions have sunk down into infidelity, the sheep's substantial Sustenance is lacking. To save them from famine, Jesus opens to them this new heavenly door.

However, only the real sheep recognize the Shepherd's Voice and follow Him to the outside without ever turning back and dying like Lot's wife (Genesis 19,17-26). It takes faith and courage because it is not easy to break the chains of traditions. The lukewarm will be afraid and God will vomit them out (Revelation 3,16).

You know well "the Pasture" that the sheep will find on the outside: Yes, it is in fact the Body, the Blood and the Spirit of the Messiah, the Shepherd who gives Himself, Body and Soul to his followers, and "gives His life for His sheep" (John 10,11). And this Divine Life which He gives them, is not in traditional edifices, but inside their homes, outside of these buildings which have become cursed:

> "If one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in to **share his** meal, side by side with him." (Revelation 3,20 / Luke 12,35-38)

> "The sheep hear His voice; **one by one** he calls His own sheep and leads them **out**. When He has brought out His flock, He goes ahead of them and the sheep follow **because they know His Voice**. They never follow a stranger..." (John 10,3-5)

This Good Shepherd of whom Jesus speaks, is the One prophesied by Ezekiel, God Himself:

> "... I am going to call the shepherds to account. I am going to take my flock back from them... I am going to look after my flock **Myself**... I shall feed them in **good pasturage**... **I myself** will pasture my sheep, I myself will show them where to rest—it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks... I shall be a true Shepherd to them." (Ezekiel 34,1-16)

Happy are those who recognize the Apocalyptic Voice of the Good Shepherd. They will dine with Him and He with them, face to face. Amen!

6

The Intercession of the Saints in the Bible

To intercede means to intervene in favor of someone. We believe in the intercession (or mediation) of the saints as a truth desired by God and revealed by the Gospels.

Some deny this intercession in basing their arguments on Paul's words: "For there is only one God, and there is **only one mediator** between God and mankind, himself a man, Christ Jesus, who sacrificed himself as a ransom for them all." (1 Timothy 2,5-6) Therefore, intercession with God would be reserved to Christ alone.

Those who deny the intercession of the saints do not fail to intercede themselves for others. To be logical with themselves, they should stop praying for others.

And yet, Paul pushes us to intercede for all; in fact, he writes to Timothy: "My advice is that, **first of all**, there should be prayers offered **for everyone** –petitions, intercessions and thanksgiving– and especially for kings and others in authority... **To do this is right, and will please God our Savior**" (1 Timothy 2,1-3). Paul prays for Timothy and the believers themselves, and asks them to pray for the others and for himself:

> "Night and day I thank God... and always I remember you in my prayers..." (2 Timothy 1,3)
>
> "I have never failed to thank God for you and to remember you in my prayers. May the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory, give you a spirit of wisdom and perception of what is revealed, to bring you to full knowledge of Him. May He enlighten the eyes of your mind..." (Ephesians 1,16-18)
>
> "Pray all the time... Never get tired of staying awake to pray for all the saints; and pray for me to be given an opportunity to open my mouth and speak without fear and give out the mystery of the gospel" (Ephesians 6,18-19)
>
> "Be persevering in your prayers... Pray for us especially..." (Colossians 4,2-3)
>
> "And their prayers for you, too, show how they are drawn to you on account of all the grace that God has given you." (2 Corinthians 9,14)
>
> "We pray to God that you will do nothing wrong... What we ask in our prayers is for you to be made perfect." (2 Corinthians 13,7-9)
>
> "I thank my God... and every time I pray for you all, I pray with joy." (Philippians 1,3-4)
>
> "My prayer is that your love for each other may increase more and more..." (Philippians 1,9)

The Apostles James and John also recommend intercession:

> "So confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another, and this will cure you; **the heartfelt prayer of a good person works very powerfully**." (James 5,16)
>
> "If anybody sees his brother commit a sin that is not a deadly sin, he has only to pray, and God will give life to the sinner..." (1 John 5,16)

The intercession is made either to Jesus Christ, or directly to the Father Himself because of our faith in Jesus. Therefore, the fact that Jesus is the unique Mediator, dœs not prevent our intercession **beside Him** for others, and He will intercede beside the Father for us. Better still, Christ gets his faithful to intercede **themselves** directly beside the Father, because of the love they have for Him. This comes out clearly in Jesus' words: "The **Father** will give **you** anything you ask Him in my Name" (John 15,16). The direct intercession of the disciples of Christ beside the Father is evident.

Jesus not only gets his people the power to intercede directly beside the Father, but reveals to them that by believing in Him, He will no longer even have to intercede for them. In fact, He says: "When that day comes, you will ask in my name; and **I do not say that I shall pray to the Father for you**, because the Father Himself loves you for loving Me..." (John 16,26-27).

The saints who preceded us to Heaven, as well as the angels, are alive and active; they can and intercede for us (See the text: "The survival after death"). One must be without humility and without love to refuse or disregard their intercession while admitting the intercession of oneself. As for us, we accord more importance to the interventions of Mary and Joseph of Nazareth, of Peter of Capernaum, of Paul of Tarsus, and of Muhammad, than any earthly intervention.

Intercession is an expression of unwavering love and solidarity. We are united by common prayer and reciprocal intercession to all true believers, those who still live on earth and those -known or unknown to us- who have preceded us to Heaven. It is the "Communion of the Saints". It is the union of the Heavenly and earthly societies gathered around the Christ in one **family**, since God is OUR **Father**. Pray, supplicate the Father, intercede for one another, which means to love one another and to be one in Christ: "One for all, all for one". Jesus prays ardently for this union (John 17,21). Love, solidarity, understanding, compassion, inevitably lead to supplication in intercession, as James says in 5,16. And Paul specifies: "...This is what is good and what is pleasing to God our Savior" (1 Timothy 2,1-4). How many mothers, fathers, holy persons who are deceased, have saved their children and their beloved by their tears placed beside the Father...

In Cana, the Virgin Mary intervened beside Jesus so that He would change the water into wine. She had sympathized with the guests who, in this cheerful nuptial atmosphere, had no more wine "to toast" in honor of the new spouses. She was generously granted, Jesus having accepted to change the divine plan by advancing his hour (John 2,1-11). Mary intercedes, with stronger reason, when the circumstances are painful for her people. She sympathizes with them, feels their pain, justifies their situation and always obtains what is right for them... at the opportune moment. She is the "**Compassionate Intercession**"; the Father and the Messiah never refuse her anything, since what she asks, is always heading in the direction of the Holy Spirit.

Much can still be said and written in favor of the intercession of the saints. What has been explained here is sufficient enough to enlighten a pure heart who searches with detachment, without contention or fanaticism, the one and only truth revealed by Jesus Himself and by his Apostles after Him.

Finally, let us recall what Jesus kindly says to all those who never asked anything from the Father, nor interceded for anyone: "Whatever you will ask the Father in my Name He will give it to you. Up to now you didn't ask for anything in my Name. Ask and you will receive and your joy will be perfect" (John 16,23-24).

Since the intercession of believers on earth beside the Father is so powerful, all the more so is that of the saints who preceded us to Heaven with the Father.

7

The Survival after Death

The soul survives after the death of the body. Such is the teaching of Divine Revelation. The following are some texts:

1. Survival of the soul

1 Samuel 28,3-19: Samuel's soul, after his death, speaks to Saul. Some claim that it was not Samuel, but the demon who spoke to Saul. And yet, the text reveals that it was Samuel. And Samuel's predictions were fulfilled, a sign that it was not the lying devil.

Matthew 17,1-8: Moses and Elijah appear next to Jesus at the Transfiguration. It is true that Elijah, according to the Bible, did not die: he was removed up to Heaven in his body (2 Kings 2,1-13), but Moses died (Deuteronomy 34,5-7). It is therefore Moses' **soul** that appeared.

Luke 16,19-31: The **souls** of Abraham, of poor Lazarus, and of the bad rich man, exist after their death.

Luke 23,43: "In truth, I tell you, **today** you will be with me in Paradise", Jesus says to the thief who repented on the cross.

1 Peter 3,18-20: Jesus' soul, between his death and his resurrection, visits the souls of those who died in the past to announce his Advent.

Revelation 6,9: John sees the **souls** of the martyrs.

2. Resurrection of the bodies

Matthew 27,52-53: The bodies of many holy people rose from the dead after Jesus' resurrection.

Luke 20,27-39: Jesus answers the Sadducees who didn't believe in the resurrection: "The Lord is God of Abraham, God of Isaac and God of Jacob. Now, He is not God of the dead, but of the **living**". This text explains the survival of the soul and the resurrection of the body.

John 5,28-29: The resurrection of the dead revealed by Jesus.

John 6,54: Jesus said: "Who eats my flesh and drinks my blood has the eternal life and I will resurrect him on the last day."

1 Corinthians 15,12-57: "How is it that some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead!". Paul explains the resurrection of the bodies and blames those that do not believe therein.

In spite of these evident biblical confirmations on the survival of the soul after death, and the resurrection of the body, some "supposed" believers do not believe in them. Their arguments are a fabric of incoherence.

8

The Afterlife

In theology, a chapter is devoted to the Afterlife, to man's fate after death.

This fate remained mysterious for a long time, the Adamic fault having plunged the whole of humanity into the darkness of total ignorance for all that concerns the soul, the reasons for life on earth, spiritual life and the future of man. Archeology teaches us that the ancients believed in a vague survival, but still material. So, during the times of the Pharaohs, Egyptians buried their dead with food and drink to save them from hunger and thirst.

Divine Revelation gradually taught us that man, after death, continues to live outside his body, each one keeping his own personality. For example: Samuel, after his death reprimands Saul (1 Samuel 28,11-16), Judas Maccabee sees Jeremiah "praying a lot for the people..." (2 Maccabee 15,11-16): the Jews prayed for the dead soldiers, they then, continued to live in the Afterlife (2 Maccabee 12,40-46), Elijah and Moses appeared next to Jesus transfigured (Matthew 17,3).

Moreover, Biblical Revelation teaches us that there are three conditions, three states of the soul in which a person can find themselves in the Afterlife: Heaven, Purgatory, or Hell. These three states are not geographical nor interstellar places, but feelings of happiness or misery, of joy or sadness, due to the success or failure of the soul in its life on earth. They are sentiments which can already be felt from down here. How many times have we heard someone say: "I'm living hell", and then its suicide! Or the contrary: "I feel I'm in Heaven! I'm so happy!", and it is the blossoming and radiance of joy in the eyes! There is still that intermediary condition between the hell already lived and the heavenly bliss already felt: that of the person who is looking for himself: it is not yet total despair, but not happiness either, nor the joy of having accomplished something worthwhile, especially when having found oneself. It is the state of he or she who continues their journey in the dark in the hope of discovery.

The following are some Biblical verses to support what has been said:

1. Heaven

In his parable of Lazarus and the bad rich man (Luke 16,19-26), Jesus shows us these two protagonists in the Afterlife. The first is submerged in happiness, and the other suffers in the pangs of Hell as a result; an **INSURMOUNTABLE** abyss separates the two men who, on earth, were neighbors. This parable represents Heaven and Hell. They are both, a state of the soul acquired by each one on earth. Those who, from their life on earth, succeed in changing, in adapting their way of thinking to that of the heavenly spirit, will not find it difficult to integrate rapidly to the heavenly society. Those who, on the other hand, will stubbornly cling to their way of seeing and thinking, without even trying to understand the divine mentality, will be unsuitable in the Celestial Fatherland. It is Hell.

The intermediary state is Purgatory.

One can merit Heaven by a sudden change, by an intense and immediate act of love before dying. Jesus says to the good thief who expresses his faith and confidence in Him: "In truth I tell you, today you will be with me in paradise" (Luke 23,43).

Heaven, is to see God and to finally know Him as He is: "Happy the pure in heart: they shall see God" (Matthew 5,8). "And eternal life is this: to know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent." (John 17,3) "I want to be gone (from the body) and be with Christ", Paul exclaimed, conscious of the eternal happiness, perfection, which was reserved for him after his life in the flesh (Philippians 1,23).

"With him who fears the Lord it will be well at the last, and he will be blessed on the day of his death." (Ecclesiasticus 1,13) To be blessed by God, approved by Him, is eternal bliss. Hell, on the other hand, is to be cursed by God because of the malice committed.

Heavenly bliss is imperturbable and cannot be lost. It is stable forever: "Store up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where neither moth nor woodworm destroy them and thieves cannot break in and steal." (Matthew 6,20)

Social life in Heaven bathes in the mutual love lived between all its members. Neither hatred, envy, nor jealousy have a place there. Total and perfect harmony unite all celestial subjects, as one man, around God, their good Father.

2. Hell

Hell is the gathering of all those who are in an irreversible conflict with God. It is a state, a feeling of defeat, vanquished by the Almighty. These are souls forever distant from the Light because of their fierce resistance to God. These people never cared about God's plan and do only what is in their heads. Deaf to divine injunctions, they go straight on their way, indifferent to divine solicitations.

It is the case of those who refused Jesus because He did not fit their political aims: "Whœver dœs not believe (*in Jesus*) is judged **already**" (John 3,18). This condemnation is in effect then, from hereon, on those who oppose God's will. Jesus invites us to submit our will to that of the Creator inside us, by asking us to pray: "May your will be done". Many prefer their own will to that of God's.

The conflicts between men are likely to provoke very serious psychological disturbances. A moral fire burns the souls of lovers in conflict, transforming their lives into an often unbearable Hell. Even more so, when this conflict is between man and God, the source of Life, this invisible fire will consume, exhaust the person who opposes this divine momentum.

Some think that God is too good to let souls eternally burn in Hell. It would be treating such a serious subject very superficially, without truly understanding its implications:

1. It is not only about God, but about those who **eternally** resist Him. These souls are cursing God forever, who did not accomplish their will: for not having given them a Messiah according to their taste, for not having given them money, pleasure, power, etc...

2. It is true that God is infinitely good, but He is also infinitely righteous. His wrath is also an expression of His love, of that betrayed love: "Love is terrible whenever It is not loved", one saint said of God.

Seeing that some souls everlastingly refuse his advances for unjust reasons, God finally ratifies their desires and turns them away, in turn, from his pacifying presence. He dœs not want to be surrounded by skeptics, egotists, and over proud people with delusions of grandeur, and unbalanced on all levels!

Here are some Biblical verses on this subject:

> Daniel 12,2: "... many will awake, some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting disgrace".
>
> Judith 16,17: God will take his vengeance on the enemies of believers, "The Lord Almighty will punish them on judgement day... and they shall weep with pain for evermore." This pain is mainly psychological, similar to that experienced by the vanquished, it is the shame of those who are caught red-handed, 'hand in bag' (see Isaiah 66,24 / Wisdom 4,19).

Jesus also spoke of the eternal punishment of Hell; we have seen an example in the parable of Lazarus and the bad rich man. It is the "Hell fire (Matthew 5,22-29 / 10,28), where their worm dœs not die nor fire go out." (Mark 9,48), "eternal fire" (Matthew 25,41), "a fire that will never go out" (Matthew 3,12), "blazing furnace" (Matthew 13,42), "eternal punishment" (Matthew 25,46), "the dark" (Matthew 8,12), and "weeping and grinding of teeth", against God and his people (Matthew 13,42-50 / 24,51 / Luke 13,28).

Moreover, Paul testifies that those who refuse to know God and fight the Gospel will have as "punishment to be lost eternally, excluded from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of his strength" (2 Thessalonians 1,9 / Romans 2,6-9 / Hebrews 10,26-31). The pain of these damned is due to their dismay, and their regret at the triumph of the Gospel, which they had fought with all their soul.

The Book of Revelation also says that "the legacy for those who sided with the Beast against the Rider (Jesus) will be the second death in the burning lake of Sulphur" (Revelation 21,8), where "their torture will not stop, day or night, for ever and ever." (Revelation 20,10)

It is "how the Lord", according to Peter, "can rescue the good from the ordeal, and hold the wicked for their punishment until the day of Judgment, especially those who are governed by their corrupt bodily desires and have no respect for authority (*of God*)." (2 Peter 2,9-16)

A person was telling me that he did not believe in Hell. I knew that Mr. so-and-so had done a lot of harm to him, while pretending to be his friend (his wife was abused, his money stolen, and his shop too. He was just able to save his apartment and furniture). I then told him: "So, Mr. so-and-so will also experience eternal bliss despite all the evil he has done to you?!" Feeling concerned, he hesitated to affirm that Hell dœs not exist... even for Mr. so-and-so, who deserved it indeed! Ask those who do not believe in it, if Hell dœs not suit their enemies, George Bush would see Saddam Hussein there, and vice versa, many others would see Hitler indeed, the Israelis plunge all their enemies into it, Palestinians first. God has also **HIS** Justice. It delights the righteous persecuted by the wicked.

3. Purgatory

Since the grave fault of the first parents of humanity, man's fate has changed. Victims of that fault, the generations that followed had to dress up their wounds. The world that was supposed to prepare us for a life of eternal happiness next to God, transformed into a crossroads from which three paths branch out: One that heads straight to Heaven, one which leads instantly to Hell, and an intermediate path, Purgatory which can continue after physical death, but which ultimately leads to Heaven.

Before the creation of man, Heaven existed, God himself being that Heaven. The fall of the demons created Hell. Purgatory is a situation specific to man after his fall. It is the condition of men of goodwill who pass through an evolution towards the better, towards the healing of the aftereffects of original sin.

For all men, the earth ought to be Purgatory, this place where time should be employed to acquire psychological and spiritual knowledge, lost in the original fall.

From the beginning, life on earth is intended to be an apprenticeship for eternal life. After the fall, this earthly life, before being this apprenticeship, has become a spiritual battleground in which men are called to take a stand for or against God or the devil. Those who, consciously or unconsciously choose God, should first heal from the Adamic wound, and then make their apprenticeship for eternal life. They should not lose this unique occasion, in view of the fact that there is no reincarnation as Paul's text reveals (Hebrews 9,27). As for those who consciously or unconsciously choose the devil, their infernal fate is traced from earthly life.

As long as time exists, the third state of the soul, Purgatory, will exist. It ends with the end of times. This state of mind belongs to those who have been led to commit more or less serious irregularities, but which are always reparable. It is advantageous to remedy on earth the wounds caused to others because the difficulties are multiplied a hundredfold after death. It is what comes out again in Christ's words: "When you go to court with your opponent, try to settle with him on the way (*the way of life on earth*), or he may drag you before the judge... and the bailiff have you thrown into prison. I tell you, you will not get out till you have paid the very last penny" (Luke 12,58-59). The fact that this "prisoner" has the possibility of getting out of jail, means that his sentence is not eternal. That is Purgatory.

Jesus taught us that every sin or blasphemy by man will be forgiven... but he who speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, neither in this world nor in the next (Matthew 12,31-32). There are therefore certain sins which are forgiven in the other world, after which one is integrated into the heavenly society at the proper rank. However, this salvation takes place "as one who has gone through fire", as Paul explains (1 Corinthians 3,15).

The possibility of forgiveness of some sins in the other world is revealed in the Old Testament: the Jews prayed for the forgiveness of the dead soldiers. (2 Maccabee 12,40-46)

St John confirms that there is an unforgivable sin, that he asks not to pray for. He asks us on the other hand, to pray for a brother whom we see committing a sin that dœs not lead to death, and we will give him life (1 John 5,16-17).

This last text shows that eternal life can be given back from hereon to those who do not commit sin against the Holy Spirit, a sin which leads to spiritual death, ie to Hell, from down here.

Thus is demonstrated this spiritual battlefield that is the earth. All men of good will should spend their lives on earth doing Purgatory. Happy are they, those who know how to make out of physical death, a simple passage to heavenly life. Better still, those who, from down here live Heaven by having taken part in the first Resurrection.

9

Isaiah 7-8-9

To my brothers and sisters, all you who, like me, believe in the Book of Revelation opened by Jesus, I address these few insightful topics:

Message of the Lord to those who refuse to believe in Isaiah's messianic prophecies which apply perfectly to Jesus (12.01.2006): "Go read Isaiah 7-8-9... and then go hang yourselves like Judas!"

Read chapters 7, 8, 9 of Isaiah the prophet attentively, as well as 2 Kings 16, to better understand this prophetic intervention and to put it in its historical context.

Isaiah was a high-ranking royal civil servant. He enormously influenced the events of his time. He was born around 765 BC. In 740, at the age of 25, he had a vision in which God entrusted him the difficult and courageous mission of announcing Israel's ruin, followed after, with Judah's ruin, as punishment for the Jew's many infidelities.

To understand this prophecy, one should be familiar with the historical context in which it was proclaimed. In chapter 16 of 2 Kings, there is king Ahaz's question which Isaiah addresses. In that time, Pekah (said as "son of Remaliah" in Isaiah 7,9) was king of Israel and Razon was king of Syria (Aram: Isaiah 7,1). The king of Assyria (Teglat Phalassar, called "Pul": 2 Kings 15,19) was threatening the whole region. Razon and Pekah wanted to drag Ahaz with them against Assyria, but he refused. He offered his only son, heir to the throne, as sacrifice to the idols (2 Kings 16,3) to evade ill fortune. He therefore no longer had any heirs and the dynasty's succession was threatened.

Ahaz, who became king of Jerusalem at the age of 20, was just a kid who was afraid of being invaded by the North; Israel and Syria. His faith in God was feeble and ignorant, he rushed to offer his son in sacrifice to the pagan gods to obtain their aid. It is as if one of us would offer his son in holocaust. Ahaz, barely out of adolescence, was deeply troubled by the threat of the North. He hoped for another son to replace the first and thus succeed him to the throne. God addresses to Isaiah the prophecy of "Immanuel" (Isaiah 7,14), followed by Isaiah 9,5, who gives **the divine names** of this child: Mighty-God, Eternal-Father.

Ahaz and his people understood these prophecies on an immediate socio-political level, but God spoke of a spiritual and UNIVERSAL level accomplished more than seven centuries later by Jesus, the true Immanuel (Matthew 1,23), the "Eternal Father" among us (John 14,8-10 / 8,57).

Isaiah was sent by God to reassure king Ahaz, telling him that the 2 kings of the North, "Pekah" of Israel, and "Razon" of Syria, these "two smoldering sticks of firewood", could do nothing against him, and that, on the contrary, it is Ephraim, the kingdom of the North, which "will cease to be a people" (Isaiah 7,3-9).

Yet Ahaz doubted the prophecy given by Isaiah and turned to the Assyrian king and submitted himself to him saying: "I am your servant... come and rescue me..." (2 King 16,7-10 etc...) Ahaz asked Isaiah for a divine sign, he desired another son to install on his throne after him. So, it is the prophecy on Immanuel (the Christ), the only Son worthy of being King, the Immanuel (Isaiah 7,10-15). But before that, there would be the destruction of the North (Israel) by Assyria (Isaiah 7,18-25), followed by the South (Judaea) about a century later, because of the king's paganism and his subjects.

Isaiah was persecuted because of this pessimistic prophecy; he withdrew from public life and asked his disciples not to speak of them: "I bind up this testimony, I seal this revelation, in the heart of my disciples..." he says (Isaiah 8,16-23). That is what I do with you all, my dearly beloved brothers and sisters. I guard in your hearts, sealed tight for the moment, in the "desert" where we are parked, this testimony of John's Revelation, whilst waiting for God's hour.

The kingdom of the North, Galilee, given to the tribes of "Zebulon and Naphtali" (Joshua 19,10-16 / 32-39), was invaded by the king of Assyria in 721 BC (2 Kings 16,5-6 / 18,9-11). This was a time of despair and darkness for the Galileans of that time. Regarding this, God announced to Isaiah that "In days past he humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali (*by the Assyrian invasion*), but in days to come he will confer glory on the Way of the Sea on the far side of Jordan, province of the nations (*Galilee*)" (Isaiah 9,1). And so, this same country, Galilee, "humbled" by God during the Assyrian invasion, will be glorified by Him. For these Galileans of the north of Israel, "The people that walked in darkness (*because of occupation and exile*) has seen a **great light** (*that of the Messiah who lived and worked in Galilee centuries later*); on those who live in a land of deep shadow a light has shone (*that of the Messiah who lived in Nazareth: Isaiah 9,1*)." "For there is a child born for us... and this is the name they give him: Mighty-God, Eternal-Father... the jealous love of Yahweh Sabaoth will do this (Isaiah 9,5-7)".

The infinite love of our tender Father, the Mighty-God, did not do this with the destructive weapons of mankind, but with the salutatory weapon of the Cross. May those who do not understand this language **go and hang themselves like Judas**. Amen.

At Jesus' time, the Pharisees and high priests reprimanded Nicodemus, who took Jesus' defense:

> "Are you a Galilean too? Go into the matter, and see for yourself: prophets do not come out of Galilee." (John 7,50-52)

If these ignorant fanatics had "studied" the prophecies, they would have discovered in Isaiah that the Prophet of prophets, the Divine Messiah, indeed emerged from Galilee, this land of Zebulun and Naphtali, once humbled by Assyria, but from which emerged the Messiah, the Light of the world (Isaiah 8,23 / 9,6).

Nothing is left to such high priests and Pharisees and their successors of yesteryear and today, but to "go and hang themselves like Judas".

I complete the subject of the prophecies of Isaiah with this cry from the heart on this great prophet, still misunderstood and unknown today after so many centuries.

He had spoken of this "Immanuel" (Isaiah 7) whose name would be, among others, "Mighty-God" and "Eternal-Father" (Isaiah 9,5). Who can carry such names except for God Himself?!

This noble prophet, inspired by the Divine Spirit, let spring from his heart, like a moving cry, this word of fire, a cry for help, inviting God to come to earth Himself, to incarnate therefore: "Oh, that you would tear the heavens open and **come down**... to make your name known to your enemies... We were all like men unclean... Yahweh, can you go unmoved by all of this, oppressing us beyond measure by your silence?" (Isaiah 64,1-11)

Our Holy Father did not "go unmoved by all of this" and answered through Jesus:

> "**I have come down from heaven**, not to do my own will, but to do the will of Him who sent me..." (John 6,38).
>
> "No one has gone up to Heaven **except the One who came down from Heaven**, the Son of Man" (John 3,13).
>
> "'To have seen me is to have seen **the Father**"... come down from heaven through and in Jesus: "I am in the Father and **the Father is in me**." (John 14,9-10).

It is through Jesus, the Christ, rejected by the infidels and betrayed today by the pseudo-Christians, that God has answered in Isaiah's desperate cry.

Isaiah's prayer **continues to be answered today** and until the end of this earth by the Bread which **comes down from Heaven**: "The bread of God is that which **comes down from Heaven** and gives life to the world." (John 6,33)

Isaiah's prayer is still valid nowadays. Still today, we yearn that God "tears the heavens open and comes down again", to enlighten us. He has done so, still through Christ, the 13th of May 1970, in opening the Book of Revelation at chapter 13. He will do it again, always by Christ:

> "At the (*Apocalyptic*) trumpet of God, the voice of the Archangel will call out the command and the Lord Himself will **come down from heaven**..." (1 Thessalonians 4,16)
>
> "... the Lord Jesus appears from heaven with the (*Apocalyptic messengers*) angels of his power..." (2 Thessalonians 1,7)
>
> "Christ will appear a second time (*outside his physical body*)... to reward with salvation those who are waiting for him." (Hebrews 9,28 / 2 Timothy 4,8)

Behold, Jesus is at the door...

The conclusion of Isaiah's agonizing cry, that cry which tore open the Heavens in the past to bring down God our Father in Jesus, must equally be as heartbreaking, just as urgent, even more urgent and more heart-wrenching: "Oh come Jesus!" Not "Come Jesus!", but "**Oh!** Come Jesus!"

All the nuance is in this burning "**Oh!!**" This cry of a burning, loving and impatient heart, which suffers from waiting and the fervent desire of welcoming Him. There is no place for the lukewarm: "**Oh!** Yes! Come Jesus!" (Revelation 22,20).

Isaiah would have been one of us today, or we one of his disciples yesterday. He expressed this ardent expectation "**Oh!** If you... come down...!" And we answer: "**Oh!** Yes come".

"'Come.' Then let all who are **thirsty** come: all who **want it** may have the water of life, and have it free.", already in the Bread of Life (Revelation 22,17). This Bread prepares us for the face to face meeting with the Bridegroom of our souls. Our predecessors already cried out: "Maran atha" (*The Lord comes*) (1 Corinthians 16,22).

Jesus had said to the Jews who resisted him: "... **you shall not see me** any more until you say: Blessings on Him who comes in the name of the Lord!" (Matthew 23,39) because these people rejected him and "could not see him". Because, when we do not love someone, we say: "I do not want to see him!" So, if we love Jesus, it is because we want and can already see him... or at least have a glimpse of him until we can see him fully. We urge him, together, to tear down the veil over our eyes that prevents us from seeing Him. Ah! May he tear it down and come. May we see Him! For "He appears a second time... to reward with salvation **those who are waiting for him**." (Hebrews 9,28), and peace of mind.

We await **with love**, his apparition inside us (2 Timothy 4,8), but have we not already welcomed Him without realizing it...

Following the theme of Isaiah 63, Isaiah's burning cry saying: "Ah! That you would tear the heavens open and come down...", the only God Almighty, utters an even more ardent cry to mankind: "I have answered Isaiah's prayer! I came down!! Ah! Ah! That **you** would tear down the darkness in you, man, and that **you come up yourself** to see what will take place and, what is **already taking place** before your eyes! You foolish sleeping bridesmaids!!!" (Revelation 4,1 / Matthew 25)

Let us give thanks to the Father, to his Divine Son the Savior, to his Consoling Spirit, to our beloved Mother Mary, to Joseph, to Michael, to all our brothers and sisters in Heaven who help us climb up. Let us climb together a little more upwards every day, to understand a little more each day for the glory of Heaven and our eternal salvation.

To know whether we have responded to the divine invitation to "ascend" (Revelation 4,1), there is a criterion which also reveals the level of our elevation. It is the tears of Mary, our beloved Mother, in La Salette.

- Have we understood the reasons for her bitter tears?
- Have we understood the MANY reasons for her tears?

The more we understand the reasons and the number of these bitter tears, and the more we sympathize with Her, the higher we are. And the higher we are, the more we pray with Her and with the souls of Revelation 6,10.

These are the criteria and the levels.

10

Two wonderful Twin Discoveries

In the newspaper “Le Monde” of August 23, 2002, an article was published: “Two archaeologists contest the historical reality of the Bible”. It is about a Book “The Bible Unearthed” (The Free Press), written by two famous Jewish archaeologists Israel Finkelstein, professor of Tel-Aviv University and his colleague Neil Asher Silberman. The authors, reveals the article, “have no doubt about the non-authenticity of the great founding tales. According to them, the Bible is a genial reconstruction, literary as well as political, of all the history of the Jewish people which corresponds to the emergence of the kingdom of Judah”. This book appeared a year ago in the USA and has been condemned by the traditional Jews.

This biblical “reconstruction”, which is a manipulation of the original Biblical text, took place under the reign of king Josiah who ruled the southern kingdom of Judah from 640 to 609 BC. Josiah was defeated by the pharaoh Neko in Megiddo in the year 609 BC. Josiah wanted to unify the two sides of the Israelite people: those of the South, founded by David and those who formed the Northern Kingdom of Israel founded, as you know, by Jeroboam (1 Kings 12).

He planned to re-establish Jewish worship in the temple of Jerusalem. He decided to restore it. During the restoration works, the high priest Hilkiah finds a mysterious Book: The Book of the Law (Torah). He decides to inform king Josiah (2 Kings 22,8-13). By virtue of what was written in this Book, the king decided on a total reform in the territory of Judah as well as that of Israel, in an attempt to reunite the two factions of the people in an attempt to reunite the two factions of the people in an attempt to reunite the two factions of the people -that of the South: Judah, and that of the North: Israel- so that there is “only one people (*Jewish*); one king (*reunification of the two kingdoms divided by Jeroboam*); one God; one Capital: Jerusalem and one Temple, that of Solomon”. To achieve this, it was necessary to do violence to the northern territory and destroy the temple of the North and the various places of worship which are in the North as in the South, so that only the only Temple of Solomon remained (2 Kings 23).

But violence was also to be exacted to the text of the “Book of the Law” itself, making it say what suited Josiah’s expansionist plan. The aforementioned article, as we have said, explains that the two authors of the book in question "indeed have no doubts of the inauthenticity of the grand founding narratives. For them, “the Bible is a genius **reconstruction**, literary and political, of the whole history of the Jewish people... It is a revolutionary key to interpretation of the Bible that Israel Finkelstein and Neil Silberman propose”, of these“**legendary, amplified, embellished accounts** to serve king Josiah’s project of reconciling the two Israeli kingdoms, and to impose themselves against the great regional empires: Assyria, Egypt, Mesopotamia.” The article also reveals, that another professor of archeology at Tel Aviv University, Zeev Herzog, had already discovered that “not a single scientific approach proves the reality of this

Exodus from Egypt, the great years of wandering in the desert, or the conquest of the Promised Land".

"Le Monde", finally, explains that "famous biblical sites such as Beersheba and Edom did not exist at the time of Exodus. And no King was found in Edom to face the Israelites. Authors' conclusion: 'The sites mentioned in Exodus indeed existed. Some were known and were apparently occupied, but well after the presumed time of Exodus, **well after the emergence of the Kingdom of Judah** , when the texts of the Biblical narratives were composed for the first time'". The book's authors, as well as other researchers, are grouped among the "revisionists accused of making up arguments for Palestinians" by demonstrating through archeology and history that the Jerusalem of Kings, was, at the time of David and Solomon, but a tiny village. These revisionists further demonstrated that "Jericho was empty when the Hebrews arrived and that the famous trumpets were part of an epic story, and not military", and not Holy Scripture inspired by God!

This prompted me to buy the book of the two archaeologists. Going through it, I read in page 37 that the authors will "reconstruct history as revealed to us by the archaeological discoveries, which remain the only source to have undergone neither purging, nor reworking, nor the censures exercised by the many **generations of biblical scribes**". This precious scientific information concerning the scribes' intervention in the Biblical texts enlightened me on "the lying pen of the scribes" which Jeremiah spoke of. Thus, from an archaeological light, another point springs up in my head, its twin, on the intervention of the prophet Jeremiah and his anger, like that of Jesus, against the scribes and Pharisees, who soiled the Bible's purity with the spear of their accursed "lying pens". I want to share it with you.

I wanted to have a closer knowledge of Jeremiah, to establish a direct link between him and the events of his time. He "is the son of the great priest Hilkiah from Anatot", not far from Jerusalem (Jeremiah 1,1). God's word came to him "in the days of Josiah", the time which concerns us. Now this Hilkiah is the high priest to whom Josiah recurred, for the restoration of the Temple. He is the one who found this mysterious Book of the Law (2 Kings 22,3-8). He gave it to the kings' secretary, so to be given to king Josiah. After having read it, the king decided a political and religious reform (2 Kings 22,10-13). The religious reform consisted of a systemic destruction of pagan symbols, which polluted Judaea and even Jerusalem itself, as well as what was found in Samaria (2 Kings 23,1-19). It was the occasion to unite the country from North to South, to fortify it against the menacing Assyrians, and to prepare themselves for war against their ally: Egypt.

To achieve this, he had to motivate the people **religiously**, to bring back to mind and recuperate the "splendor" of the past, to establish a "Solomonian empire", an independence, and a territorial hegemony, etc... All this in the Name of YHVH, and for divine glory through his "chosen people". The famous Book of the Law that was retrieved, was just there to justify his ambitions. But this book lacked an aspect that arouses military enthusiasm. No problem! The lying pen of the scribes was there to add the salt, pepper, and the ferment necessary "till the flour was leavened all through", to use the expression of Jesus. The scribes did not lack zeal; they launched themselves into it!

Now Jeremiah, being the son of Hilkiah, learned from his father of the accurate content of the Book discovered. He knew that the scribes were busy getting God to say what He never said about sacrifices and offerings, and the respective returns that came back to the priests. They had taken the opportunity to also include in the Book of the Law all that was materially in their favor. This is why he rebelled against them: "How dare you say: We are wise, and we possess the Law of Yahweh? But look how it has been falsified by the lying pen of the scribes!" (Jeremiah 8,8). He also adds to this: "**When I brought your ancestors out of the land of Egypt, I said nothing to them, gave them no orders, about holocaust**

and sacrifice. These were my orders: Listen to my Voice, then I will be your God and you shall be my people." (Jeremiah 7,22-23) But the scribes and the priests were not content in listening to God's Voice; they coveted the benefits from sacrifices that God explicitly refused. Jesus in turn, did not fail to denounce the hypocritical scribes and Pharisees thirsty for profit (Matthew 23). We understand the spitefulness perpetrated by the authors of these shenanigans against Jeremiah and against the Messiah... even against the Creator Himself!! St Paul was right to warn believers, to "stop taking notice of Jewish myths and doing what they are told to do by people who are no longer interested in the truth." (Titus 1,14)

The result of this skullduggery was deadly for Josiah and the whole people; Josiah perished in "Megiddo". Jeremiah then composed his "Lamentations" on Jerusalem.

Today, another Megiddo is being prepared, much bigger than the one in the past: a "Har-Megiddo", a grand Megiddo, known as Armageddon. It is being prepared under the auspices of Bush, Sharon and company. It will undergo an even more ominous fate; It was announced by Jesus (Luke 21,20-34) and the Book of Revelation, which designates Iraq on the Euphrates, twice (Revelation 9,13-21 / 16,12-16). Bush and his allies resort to the same methods of mind manipulation, claiming that their military plan is a war of good, embodied by the US and its allies, against terrorist evil, embodied by Iraq and others.

The Vatican, headed by Pope John-Paul II, sank into the same injustice as that of the scribes by deforming, in favor of their policies, the messages that the Virgin Mary delivered in La Salette and Fatima.

With that, I leave you to read the Biblical texts and to meditate. And if you find the book "The Bible Unearthed", be sure to read it carefully. And to pray well for its authors and their fellows. It is for such Jews, often "badly branched" by the Zionists, that our Father asks us to pray.

Part IX

God our Father

Table of Contents

1 The True Name of God **359**

2 God is Father **365**

3 The Divine Trinity **369**

1

The True Name of God

Man has always sought to give a name to the Creator. Moses asked Him what his name was; He answered: "I Am He Who Is", in Hebrew this is "YHVH", and means "The One Who Is", the Being par excellence. He continues: "This is what you must say to the sons of Israel: 'I AM has sent me to you...' This is my Name **for all time**; by this name I shall be invoked for all generations to come." (Exodus 3,13-15) This name indicates the existence of the unique Creator, "The One Who Is", as opposed to the pagan and mythological gods who "are not"; who do not exist.

Thus, the Creator's Name is neither "Elohim", nor "Allah", nor "Dieu", nor "God", nor "Theos", nor "Deus" or "Dio", etc... according to the different languages, nor YHVH even. As the Creator revealed His Name *in Hebrew*, a language in which this word has a meaning as we have explained; this Name reveals his Essence, his Being, his Personality, his transcendent Nature: eternal, uncreated. The Name "YHVH" dœs not make any sense **in any other language**. Indeed, to understand the Name "YHVH" for example, one should understand Hebrew. And yet, it is to the whole of humanity, and in all languages, that the Creator wants to be revealed. His Name must have **a significance** in the language in which man invokes Him and must have the possibility of being translated in other languages while reproducing **the exact sense of the word**. The Name "YHVH" has no sense in French, English, Chinese, etc...

On the other hand, how do we translate the word "Deus" in Arabic or English? Impossible! Because this word has no sense, it dœs not describe the quality of the Creator's Essence. YHVH, on the contrary, means the "BEING" in English, "L'ÊTRE" in French, "L'ESSERE" in Italian, "DAS SEIN" in German, "AL-KAEN" in Arabic, etc... These Names interpolate man because they are able to understand its sense, and lead them to reflect on their spiritual commitments, to finally discover the existential Personality of the Unique Creator.

All other "names" attributed to the Creator are inspired, or translated from paganism and mythology. So "Dieu", "Deus", "Theos", "Dio" emanate from "Zeus", the god of Greek mythology. They are peculiar names that make no sense whatsœver, and so disfigure the Being 'par excellence'; they leave us rather indifferent towards him as they do not reveal the paternal and affectionate Face of the Father, without character, with no aspect of his personality.

Similarly, the Name YHVH only reveals a transcendent aspect, "cold" rather, which dœs not touch the heart of man, is not inviting to God's love, nor dœs it reveal the Creator's love for his creation. It was the premier significant contact by He who created man, desiring to make Himself known as the Unique Source and Cause of their existence on earth.

With time, the Israelis became unfaithful to the Lord in adoring the environing mythical gods. They thus soiled his Holy Name by placing Him at the level of these false gods. The Almighty denounced this apostasy by his prophets: "they have profaned my holy name among the nations

where they have gone, so that people say of them, 'These are the people of Yahweh...' I mean to display the holiness of my great name, which has been profaned among the nations, which you have profaned among them. And the nations will know that I am YHVH" (Ezekiel 36,16-23).

Also, after this, the prophecies announce that the Creator's true Name, his **Hallowed** Name, would be revealed much later. It came to the Messiah, a suffering Messiah who was persecuted to death, to reveal this true Name which englobes the infinite, essential, intellectual and affective qualities of He who was before the world existed. David's messianic Psalm describes, 1000 years before his Advent, the Messiah's Passion to come. It is through this sufferance that this Messenger reveals to the world the Creator's **true Name**. David makes Him say:

> "A pack of dogs surrounds me, a gang of villains closes me in; they pierce me hand and foot and leave me lying down in the dust of death... **I shall proclaim your Name to my brothers**, praise You in full assembly..." (Psalms 22,16-23)

When Jesus came, He kept His promise: at the eve of his Passion, in the presence of his apostles, "his brothers", addressing Himself to his Father, who became thus, through Him, theirs and ours as well, said to them:

> "**I have made your Name known** to the men you took from the world to give me... **I have made your Name known to them** and **will re-reveal** It to them (*again therefore, in the future, as we will see further*), so that the **love with which You loved me may be in them**, and so that I may be in them." (John 17,6 / 17,26)

The apostles realized, by their faith in Jesus, that they were adopted children by the Father:

> "The proof that you are sons is that God has sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts: the Spirit that cries, 'Abba, Father', and it is this that makes you a son, you are not a slave anymore..." (Galatians 4,6-7 / Romans 8,15)

Thus, we pass, by the Messiah's Passion, from the intellectual Name of YHVH, to a Name of intimate Love: The Creator is only love for **the brothers of his Messiah**, this Messiah who gave them his own Father for Father: "Go to **my brothers** and tell them: I am ascending to my Father and **your Father**..." says Jesus to Mary Magdalene (John 20,17). It is by Jesus, that the Creator's true Name was revealed to the whole world.

Jesus insisted on revealing the Creator's **paternal** dimension. He taught his disciples to invoke Him as Father: "You should pray like this: **Our Father** in Heaven, **may your Name be held holy**..." (Matthew 6,9). God's Name is sanctified in us by the discovery of his affectionate feature of a Father towards his faithful children... yet terrible towards infidels.

This is how his Holy Name is sanctified! Let him understand who can!

By Jesus, the Creator's paternity becomes accessible to believers of all races and nations, contrary to the Jewish pretension that YHVH is the monopoly of the Israelites. Jesus, and his disciples after Him, opened up the paternity of the Creator to the whole world. In fact, Paul says: "Is God the God of Jews alone and not of the pagans too? Of the pagans too, most certainly!" (Romans 3,29) And so, Ezekiel's prophecy is fulfilled: "The nations will know that I am YHVH".

However, the revelation of this Holy Name dœs not stop at the time of Christ. Jesus had said: "... and I **will re-reveal** It to them", in the future therefore, as mentioned above. In a heartfelt cry, Jesus had already asked: "Father, glorify your Name!" The response was immediate: "I have glorified It (*by Jesus*) and **I will glorify It again** (*at the Apocalyptic times*)" (John 12,28).

It is in our Apocalyptic era of the end of times that Jesus reveals, again, like a reminder, the Father's true Name. This reminder of the Divine Name is due to the fact that believers from all sides -Jews, Christians, Muslims, etc...- have disfigured the Face of the Creator and the purity of faith by their actions. To the purity of faith, they mingled politics, fanaticism, material worship, laxity, ignorance, immorality, spiritism, etc... Jesus had foreseen all this. It is the reason for which He had said that He has to reveal it, **again**, in the future, this Holy Name.

Throughout the past, the Father's Name was tarnished. Today, so-called Christians have tarnished the Son's Name. Today, it is a question of sanctifying, anew, both these Holy Names.

This Holy Mission is conferred to the Apostles of the Book of Revelation. They already accomplish this by denouncing the various betrayals of the faith according to the apocalyptic command: "You are to prophesy **AGAIN**, this time against many different nations and countries and languages and emperors." (Revelation 10,11). The resumption of this witnessing will allow many to see the Father through the face, also sanctified, of his Christ: "It is He who is coming... everyone will see Him, even those who pierced Him... (Revelation 1,7) ... The deaf, that day, will hear the words of the Book and, after shadow and darkness (*prevalent by false believers*), the eyes of the blind will see." (Isaiah 29,18)

Indeed, the Book of Revelation reveals that, in our days, the Messiah carries a **new** Name, sanctified, which only true devotees will recognize. In fact, the name of Jesus is no longer found today in the traditional churches. True believers will discover it and deserve to have it engraved in their hearts, forever, the true Name of the Father:

> "Those who prove victorious I will make him into pillars in the sanctuary of my God... **I will inscribe** on them the **Name of my God**... and my own **new Name** as well." (Revelation 3,12)
>
> "I saw Heaven open, and a white horse appear; its rider... is a judge with integrity, **a warrior** for justice. His eyes were **flames of fire** (*of wrath*)... the Name written on Him was known **only to Himself**... " (Revelation 19,11-12)
>
> "The angel harvested the whole vintage of the earth and put it into a huge winepress, the winepress of God's anger! (Revelation 14,19) ... The seven plagues that are the last of all, because they exhaust the Anger of God... (Revelation 15,1) ... The nations were seething with rage and now the time has come for your own anger, and for the dead to be judged, and for your servants the prophets, for the saints and for all who worship you, small or great, to be rewarded. The time has come to destroy those who are destroying the earth." (Revelation 11,18)

Thus, the Creator's Apocalyptic Name, besides that of Love, is: severe Judge and fiery Wrath towards the wicked against whom "He is a **warrior** in Justice".

The Creator's Name has a double sense: "Father of Love" to his faithful children and "Pitiless Judge" to rebels. He has an eye of infinite love towards his children, and an eye of ardent fury towards the enemies of his Messiah, the enemies of virtue and faith. It is to us to choose between the love of God and his just Anger.

However, God's Name is multiple: He is also "the Eternal", "the Merciful", "the Almighty", "the Omniscient", "the Creator", "the Unique", "the Terrible", etc... The Qur'an gives Him 99 Names applicable to His Essence. All these **qualifying** Names, unlike those of "God", "Allah", "Dieu", etc... -which are proper names (like Robert, etc...)- are translatable in all languages, to **give a meaning**, a **quality of its multiple character** which define **a particular personality** of this Uncreated Being, and Creator of everything.

To better deceive the believers, the Devil begins by giving them a false image and different names of the Creator. These names and conceptions are the premier cause of division amongst

believers. This is how he acts when he fails to convince them with atheism. This false image also necessarily carries a false name that deviates believers. In our times, the Apocalyptic Beast is the satanic weapon of choice to distort the true Name.

The greater part of humanity has a false image of Jesus. They only see His gentle and humble aspect, even as a point of weakness vis-a-vis his enemies. They think that this attitude should be that of every Christian, even in facing injustice. This is largely due to what Jesus had said to the Jews: "Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, etc..." (Matthew 5,44 / Luke 6,27)

These people forget which audience Jesus was addressing himself to: "But I say this **to you who are listening**: Love your enemies..." (Luke 6,27). So, He was addressing himself **to the Jews who were listening to Him** and who were expecting Him to assemble them for war against the Romans, to these Jews who maltreated the locals of the land (Samaritans and others: see the parable of the 'Good Samaritan', Luke 10,29-37). For the Jews, all non-Jews, the "Goyim", were enemies against whom they practiced violence. It is this **unjust violence** that Jesus accuses, condemning those who practice it.

This exhortation of also presenting the other cheek, is not addressed to the disciples of Jesus as long as they do not fall into injustice. The person who commits an injustice deserves the slap and should even offer the other cheek, grateful to have been made aware of his fault for his salvation. Jesus Himself took the whip to the middle of the Temple and applied it without measure on those who were exploiting the faith (John 2,13-17). Did He not also command his disciples of the End of Times: "As for my enemies, who did not want me for their King, bring them here and **execute them** in my presence" (Luke 19,27). Jesus did not lend the other cheek, not even, to the one who struck Him at his trial: "If there is something wrong in what I said, point it out; but if there is no offense in it, why do you strike me?", replying dryly to the guard (John 18,23).

On the cross, Jesus, in saying: "Father, forgive them; they do not know what they are doing" (Luk 23,34), was addressing this prayer in favor of the poor Roman soldiers "who knew not what they were doing", and to whom they were doing it. Their ignorance was justified and pardonable because they knew not the prophecies of Scripture concerning Him. And yet, this was not the case of the Jews and their religious leaders at the top who knew the prophecies, to whom Jesus addressed these words of condemnation: "Wœ unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites..." (Matthew 23,13-32). Here are the enemies of Jesus who refuse His Kingship and whose slaughter He demands.

A young girl, Joan of Arc, **Saint** Joan of Arc fought for justice until martyrdom. She understood the Spirit of Jesus, which the majority of Christians, religious leaders included, understand nothing of. It is time to restore the authentic image of Christ, to discover his real, his "new Name", as expressed in John's Revelation. It is a grace accorded by Christ to all those who recognize the real name of the Apocalyptic Beast and who fight it:

> "Those who prove victorious... I will inscribe on them the name of my God... and my own **new name** as well (Revelation 3,12 / 19,11-13) ... if anyone is clever enough, he may interpret the number (*identity*) of the beast." (Revelation 13,18)

Blessed are the combatants against the Apocalyptic Beast! They understand the Spirit of Jesus, which is a Spirit of Justice, and of combat when need be! They will discover, even more profoundly, the Name of Love of the Father and of the Son:

> "The rightful inheritance of the one who proves victorious: I will be his God and he a son to me. But the legacy for cowards, for those who break their word... is the second death in the burning lake of Sulphur." (Revelation 21,7)

On the contrary, the Father says of the faithful who triumph over Evil in this world:

> "I will be his God, and he will be my son." (Revelation 21,7)

In order to discover, **closely**, the true Name of the multiple faces of the Father, his diverse Face, all his wonderful Qualities, let us put into practice this precious advice from James:

> "Resist the devil (*by resisting, today, the Beast and his works*), and he will run away from you. The nearer you go to God, **the nearer He will come** to you..." (James 4,7-8)

The nearer we approach God, the more we discover how much "God is Love" (1 John 4,8). But also, those who move away from Him discover, according to the expression of Thérèse d'Avila, that "Love is terrible when It is not loved".

Finally, let us remember that Jesus recommended us to first ask the Father above all: "Hallow be Thy Name", because from this sanctification, which helps us to **truly know** the Creator, all graces flow:

> "And Eternal life is this: **to know You**, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent." (John 17,3)

Father, that Your Name is hallowed and glorified... within us! Amen!

Prayer of Charles de Foucauld

"MY FATHER

I abandon myself to Thee,

Do with me what you will.

Whatever you do with me,

I thank you,

I am ready for all, I accept all.

As long as Your Will is done,

In me, in all your creatures,

I desire nothing more

My God.

Into your hands I commend my soul;
I offer it to you, my God,
With all the love of my heart,
For I love you, and it is
My need of love, to
Give myself, to surrender myself into Your
Hands without reserve, with an
Infinite confidence, for You are
MY FATHER."

2

God is Father

I am writing you a text following a dialogue I had with a Muslim friend. The latter, of good faith, argued that we cannot consider ourselves sons of God without offending God and thus deserving his Wrath. To be pleasing to God, he insisted, one should consider himself a slave.

This mentality is widespread in the Muslim world because of a misunderstood verse in the Qur'an: "He begot no one, nor was He begotten", which is to be understood "as the gods of polytheistic mythology used to do" at the time when the Qur'an was inspired. This verse is therefore a response to polytheist mythology, and dœs not in any way target the spiritual paternity of God.

Christians, for their part, call God their Father, yet, and most often, behave as timid slaves, not confident sons. Their formal worship and timid, calculated manners are evidence. And yet, St John says "In love there can be no fear, but fear is driven out by perfect love: because to fear is to expect punishment, and anyone who is afraid is still imperfect in love." (1 John 4,18)

All Biblical Revelation proclaims our adoption by God in Jesus. Here are some texts:

1. In the Old Testament, God had already said through Jeremiah:

   Jeremiah 3,19: "And I was thinking: How I wanted to rank you with my sons... I had thought you would call me: My Father, and would never cease to follow me."

2. Jesus, at his turn, asks us to address ourselves to God as Father:

   Matthew 6,9 / Luke 11,1: "So you should pray like this: Our Father in heaven..."

3. St John confirms this truth:

   John 1,12: "But to all who did accept Him (*Jesus*) he gave power to become children of God."

   1 John 3,1-2: "Think of the love that the Father has lavished on us, by letting us be called God's children; and that is what we are. Because the world refused to acknowledge him, therefore it does not acknowledge us. My beloved, we are already the children of God."

4. St Paul equally insists, with force, of our divine adoption in Jesus:

   Romans 8,14-16: "Everyone moved by the Spirit is a son of God. The spirit you received is not the spirit of slaves bringing fear into your lives again; it is the spirit of sons, and it makes us cry out, 'Abba, Father!' The Spirit himself and our spirit bear united witness that we are children of God."

> Galatians 4,4-7: "... God sent his Son... to enable us to be adopted as sons. The proof that you are sons is that God has sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts: the Spirit that cries, 'Abba, Father!', and it is this that makes you a son, you are not a slave anymore; and if God has made you son, then he has made you heir."

This revelation by Paul teaches us that, through Jesus, we receive a spirit, a new conception of our relationship with God. We are not slaves but sons. One should have the Spirit of God to understand that. Those who do not have the Spirit of God will understand nothing. This is why, in our discussions with others, we do not seek to convince. It suffices that we inform and testify, to sow the seed and continue our route without persistence.

Those who have the Spirit of God, they alone will understand.

God wants sons, not slaves. Jesus came to liberate us, and not render us slaves (John 8, 31-36). We are "sons of God" or "slaves of the devil". There are no slaves in Heaven, only children; there are no children with the devil, only slaves. To refuse God as Father, is to become slave of the devil. Such is the teaching of Divine Revelation.

Furthermore, the Qur'an dœs not incite believers to reject the divine paternity. When the Qur'an incites believers to "adore" God, it is in a spirit of liberty, not of slavery that they are invited to do so; with love, not fear, knowing they are sons, not strangers. And yet, some even refuse a relationship of love with God and prefer a relationship of respect. Love dœs not exclude respect; on the contrary, it imposes it. It is "shameful" to love God, some claim. Nowhere in the Qur'an is this taught.

On the contrary, several Quranic verses underline love, even the tender love between God and true believers:

> "Among people there are those who, instead of God, attach themselves to peers whom they love as much as they love God. But the faithful **love God (*Houb*)** most." (Qur'an II; The Cow,165)
>
> "Ask your Lord's forgiveness and repent to Him: my Lord is **Compassionate to each, All-Tender (*Wadoud*)**." (Qur'an XI; Hud,90)
>
> "But those who believed and did good deeds, the All-Merciful **shall show them tender Love (*Wudd*)**." (Qur'an XIX; Mary,96)

Indeed, it is about love (HOUB), and tender love (WUDD), and of the One who loves tenderly (WADOUD). It is touching to be "WADOUD", to love with tenderness. Yes indeed, this is the way our Father loves us: "I am gentle and humble in heart (*WADOUD*)...", Jesus said (Matthew 11,29).

As for the Bible, it pushes us to "love God with all our heart, with all our strength..." (Deuteronomy 6,5 / Luke 10,25-28). St John declares: "Love is from God, everyone who loves is a child of God and knows God. Whœver fails to love dœs not know God, because God is Love" (1 John 4,7-8).

Those who think differently are not inspired by God, but by the satanic spirit, the deceiver, who ends up in moving them away from God's love, from the divine adoption, to make of them, in the end, slaves of demons. Those who reject the relationship of love between God and man in the name of the Qur'an, do not know the Spirit of the Qur'an and misunderstand Muhammad, the noble prophet of Islam who, like all the prophets, was inflamed by the Divine Love.

My beloved, I am writing to you so that you realize the merit of our vocation in Jesus. Without any vainglory, but great pride, we are "already" children of God and God is our marvelous Father by His endless love. All men are invited to this espousal. We answer this call with love

and immense joy. We certainly do not have a monopoly over this divine espousal; well to the contrary, we wish that all men respond to this divine call with an easiness of heart. Jesus came to give to mankind such a Father.

Happy are those who accept him and do not let themselves get lost in human reasoning, inspired by the devil.

With an infinite gratitude, we dare call God "Abba! (*Dad*) Our Father".

3

The Divine Trinity

God revealed himself as ONE-IN-THREE "Aspects": the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. Human expressions are feeble in defining the Trinitarian aspect of the Creator.

In the Books of the Old Testament, God speaks of Himself in the plural:

> "Let us make man in **our** own image, in the likeness of **ourselves**..." (Genesis 1,26)

After Adam's sin, God ironically exclaimed:

> "See, the man has become like **one of Us**, with his knowledge of good and evil..." (Genesis 3,22)

Having seen man's pride in Babel, God said:

> "**Come, let Us go down** and **confuse** their language on the spot..." (Genesis 11,7)

God appeared to Abraham:

> "He looked up, and there he saw **Three Men** standing near him." (Genesis 18)

Perplexed before the Trinitarian God's apparition, Abraham addresses himself to "Him", sometimes in the singular, and sometimes in the plural.

The Bible reveals to us that God is Father, Son (or "Word"), and Holy Spirit.

1. The Father is God

This Truth revealed from the Old Testament:

> Deuteronomy 32,6: "Is not this your Father, who gave you being?"
>
> Jeremiah 31,9: "I am a Father to Israel."
>
> Malachi 2,10: "Have we not all one Father?"

Jesus confirms this paternity: God is Father of Christ, and our Father:

> Matthew 7,21: "The person who does the will of my Father".
>
> Matthew 26,53: "Do you think I cannot appeal to my Father?"
>
> Luke 2,49: "Did you not know that I must be busy with my Father's affairs?"
>
> Matthew 6,4: "Your Father who sees all that is done in secret."

Matthew 23,9: "You have only one Father, and he is in heaven."

John 20,17: "I am ascending to my Father and your Father."

2. The Son is God

He becomes incarnate in the Messiah:

Psalm 2,7: "Let me proclaim YHWH decree; He has told me: '**You are my Son**, today I have fathered You.'"

2 Samuel 7,14: "I will be for him a **Father** and He will be for me a **son**."

John 1,1-14: "The Word (*Son*) was in God... and became flesh."

John 8,57: Jesus said "Before Abraham was, I am".

Hebrews 1,1-9: "God... in our own time, the last days, he has spoken to us through his Son... He is the radiant light of God's glory and the perfect copy of his nature, sustaining the universe by his powerful command... God as never said to any angel: You are my Son, today I have become your father..."

John 5,18: Jesus presents himself as equal to the Father.

John 10,30-33 / John 14,8-10: Again, Jesus reveals his equality to the Father.

Philippians 2,5-11: Paul declares Jesus' divine condition that renders him equal to God.

Matthew 11,27: "No one knows the Father except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal Him."

3. The Holy Spirit is God

Isaiah 48,16: "... the Lord with His Spirit, sends me."

Isaiah 63,10: "They rebelled, they grieved his Holy Spirit."

Joel 3,1: "I will pour out my Spirit on all mankind", God said.

Psalm 51 (50),11: "... do not deprive me of your Holy Spirit."

1 Corinthians 2,10-12: "God has revealed to us through the Spirit, for the Spirit reaches the depths of everything... the depths of God can only be known by the Spirit of God. Now instead of the spirit of the world, we have received the Spirit which comes from God."

Acts 5,3-4: To lie to the Holy Spirit, is to lie to God.

Acts 13,2-4: "The Holy Spirit says..."

1 Corinthians 6,19: The body is the temple of **the Holy Spirit**.

1 Corinthians 3,16 / 2 Corinthians 6,16: The body is **God's** temple.

Acts 28,25-27: "**The Holy Spirit** spoke when he told your ancestors through the prophet Isaiah".

Isaiah 6,8-10: "I heard the voice of **the Lord**..."

2 Peter 1,21: "When men spoke for God it was **the Holy Spirit** that moved them."

2 Timothy 3,16: "All Scriptures is inspired by **God**."

4. Manifestation of the Holy Trinity in the Gospels

The Holy Spirit is **the Father's Spirit**:

> Matthew 10,20: "**The Spirit of your Father** will be speaking in you" (John 15,26 / 1 Corinthians 2,11). But He is also the Son's Spirit "because everything that the Father has is the Son's" (John 16,15).
>
> Galatians 4,6: "God sent in your hearts **His Son's Spirit**" (see Acts 16,7 / Romans 8,9 / Philippians 1,19).

Therefore, the Holy Spirit emanates from the Father and the Son (Catholic belief), and not solely from the Father (Orthodox belief).

The Holy Spirit is not sent by the Father only, but by the Son too:

> "**I shall ask the Father**, and he will give you another Consoler to be with you for ever. . . " (John 14,16-26)
>
> "When the Consoler comes, **whom I shall send to you** from the Father, the Spirit of truth who issues from the Father. . . " (John 15,26).
>
> "It is for your own good that I am going, because unless I go, the Consoler will not come to you; but if I do go, **I will send Him to you**" (John 16,7).
>
> "**I am sending** to you what the Father has promised." (Luke 24,49)
>
> "**He breathed** on them and said: 'Receive the Holy Spirit'." (John 20,22)
>
> Matthew 3,16-17: At Jesus baptism, John the Baptist saw "the heavens opened and **the Spirit of God** descending like a dove and coming down on him. And a voice spoke from Heaven, 'This is **my Son, the Beloved**'" (John 1,32). The dove, the voice, and Jesus represent the Trinity.
>
> John 14,16-26: To the apostles who were saddened by his departure, Jesus promises to ask the **Father** to give them another **Consoler, the Spirit of truth**, and adds: "**I** will not leave you orphans; **I** will come back to you". It is therefore Jesus who returns in the form of the Holy Spirit. The unity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit is revealed here.
>
> Matthew 28,19: Jesus asks his apostles to baptize "**in the Name** of the Father, the Son and the Holy spirit." "Name" is in the singular.

Other texts which reveal the Trinity:

1 Corinthians 12,4-6 / 2 Corinthians 13,13 / 1 Peter 1,1-2.

5. Reflection

The sun can reflect an image of the Holy Trinity: The sun (the Father), its luminous rays (the Son), and the heat that emanates from it (the Spirit). So, the Son is "the **splendor** of the Father's glory and the perfect copy of his nature" (Hebrews 1,3). And the Holy Spirit, with such life-giving warmth, emanates from the Father. Jesus said to his Apostles: "When the Consoler comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who **issues (*emanates*) from the Father**, he will be my witness" (John 15,26). This "splendor" and this "issuance" are alive and transmit to us, from the part of the Father, the Love and sentiments of Eternal Life, which are denied to the unbelievers who refuse it. Whœver closes his shutters to the sunlight, deprives himself of life. The Son and the Holy Spirit are an "emanation of self", a "duality" of the Father.

It is difficult to understand the depths of man, even more so, that of Gods'.

The Father, such a life-giving sun, radiates the Son and gives Life through the Holy Spirit. Happy are the pure hearts because they will see, understand, and live God (Matthew 5,8 / John 17,3).

(See the text: "A Look of faith at the Qur'an", chapter 4.3 "The Divinity of the Messiah".)

Part X

Jesus

Table of Contents

1 The Divinity of Jesus **375**

2 The brothers of Jesus **377**

1

The Divinity of Jesus

Jesus is the Messiah, God Incarnate. This truth, revealed by the Books of the New Testament, is the basis of our faith. Yet, we still find some people, all along the centuries, who seek to destroy this doctrine, by basing themselves on the Gospels. The "Nicolaitans" (Revelation 2,6), "Arius" of the IIIrd century AD, and "Jehovah's Witnesses" are of this number. The principal verses on which they rely on to negate Christ's Divinity, are the following:

1. John 14,28: "For the Father is greater than I", says Jesus: He is not therefore God, since he is inferior to him.
2. Acts 2,22: "Jesus... this **man**..."
3. Romans 5,15: "... that divine grace, coming through the one **man**..."
4. 1 Timothy 2,5: "... there is only one mediator... a **man**, Christ Jesus.

They conclude by these verses, that the Christ is a man, thus not God.

1. Answer to the first point

John commences his Gospel as so:

> "In the beginning was the Word: the Word was with God and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning... The Word was made flesh, he lived among us..." (John 1,1-14).

The Word of God, Jesus, by his incarnation, lowers himself to man's level by taking on a human body. This human condition is inferior to the divine nature, but dœs not cancel it. Jesus is therefore man and God. He is God incarnate. Jesus is therefore right to say that the Father, as the Eternal Spirit, is much greater than Him as a created earthly body.

This is what Paul explains to us, in his letter to the Philippians 2,6-11:

> "His **state was divine**, yet he did not cling to **his equality with God** but emptied Himself to assume the condition of a slave, and become as men are; and being **as all men are**, he was humbler yet, even to (*to God's plan*) accepting death, death on a cross! But God raised Him high and given Him the **Name** (*divine*) **which is above all other names**, so that all beings in the heavens, on earth and in the underworld **should bend the knee** at the name of Jesus and that every tongue should acclaim Jesus Christ as **Lord**, to the glory of God the Father."

2. Answer to the other points

Jesus is really **man**. But this dœsn't mean that He is not God who takes "the condition of a slave to behave as a man", as Paul says in the preceding text. Jesus is both God **and man**. His divinity is evident in several evangelical texts:

1. He is the Word of God incarnate, as John reveals (John 1,1-14).
2. Jesus says that He existed even before Abraham (John 8,56-59). His glory was by God's side "before the world ever existed" (John 17,5).
3. The Jews understood that Jesus would present Himself as God's **equal** and will not deny it (John 5,18 & 10,33).
4. To Philip who asked Him: "Show us the Father", Jesus answers: "Who saw Me saw the Father! How can you show us the Father?" (Jean 14,8-9).
5. Thomas recognizes Jesus' divinity after His Resurrection and tells Him: "My Lord **and my God"** (John 20,27-29).
6. "... the Christ is above all, God blessed eternally" (Romans 9,5).
7. "...In Him (*Jesus*), in bodily form, lives divinity in all its **fullness"** (Colossians 2,6-9).
8. "God made the centuries by Jesus" (Hebrews 1,2) "... Jesus is far above the angels" (Hebrews1,4) ... "When God brings the Firstborn into the world, He says: Let all the angels of God worship Him" (Hebrews 1,6). This contradicts the Jehovah's Witnesses, who claim that Jesus is the incarnation of the Archangel Michael, since "Jesus is far above the angels" who, moreover, should "worship him".
9. St. Paul also says: Jesus' dignity is greater than that of Moses'. It is as much as the "difference between the honor given to the man that built the house and to the house itself... but God built everything that exists..." Jesus is therefore the "Constructor" of Moses and of the whole Universe (Hebrews 3,3-4), and the Constructor is none other but God.
10. "While we are waiting in hope for the blessing which will come with the Appearing of the glory of our great God and Savior Christ Jesus." (Titus 2,13).

3. The Messiah's Divinity in the Old Testament

1. The necessity for the coming of God Himself on earth was strongly felt by the prophet Isaiah in the VIIIth century BC. Thirsty for this coming, he exclaims:

   "Oh, that You would tear the heavens open and come down!" (Isaiah 63,19).

   The names attributed to the Messiah by Isaiah reveal His divinity: "Eternal Father" and "Mighty God" (Isaiah 9,5).
2. The prophet Ezekiel saw the Messiah in the appearance of a **human being** who had the aspect of God's glory (Ezekiel 1,26-28).
3. The prophet Micah in the VIIIth century BC., reveals that the days of the awaited Messiah gœs back to the day of Eternity (Micah 5,1).

2

The brothers of Jesus

Some think that Jesus had biological brothers, or other sons of Mary from Joseph after His birth. They lean on the following texts to conclude that the Mother of Jesus did not remain Virgin:

> Mark 6,3 (Matthew 12,46): "The brothers of Jesus: James, Joset, Jude and Simon..."
>
> Luke 2,7: "She gave birth to a son, her firstborn". So, there are others.
>
> Matthew 1,25: "though he (*Joseph*) had not had intercourse with her, she gave birth to a son; and he named him Jesus." They conclude that he "knew" her afterwards
>
> John 7,5: "Even His brothers did not believe in Him".

Responses

1. In the oriental mentality, up till today; cousins, children of the same village, and children who grow up together call each other "brothers". Generally, Arab countries are "brothers". The Bible, which emanates from the Orient, often employs the word "brother" to designate cousins or children of the same village. We have several biblical examples in the Old Testament:

> Genesis 13,8 / 14,16: Abraham is said to be Lot's brother, and yet he is his uncle
>
> Deuteronomy 15,2-3: "Any creditor holding a personal pledge obtained from his brother (*a Jew like you*) shall release it... a foreigner (*a non-Jew*) you may exploit."
>
> (*Leviticus 19,17: "You will not harbor hatred for your brother (a Jew) ..."*)

Kish and Eleazar are brothers. The sons of Kish married the daughters of Eleazar. But the text says:

> 1 Chronicles 23,22: "Eleazar died leaving no sons, but only daughters; **their brothers**, the sons of Kish, married these."

The sons of Kish are the cousins, and not the brothers of Eleazar's daughters.

2. John 19,25-27: In these verses, Clopas' wife is called Mary; she is also presented as "the sister of the mother of Jesus", whose name is also Mary. But, there cannot be two sisters who call themselves Mary in the same family.

Mary, Clopas' wife is therefore a cousin, a close relative, or even a childhood friend of Mary mother of Jesus. This is why she is considered her sister according to the oriental habits already seen.

If Mary had other sons, why is it that John "takes her into his home", and not into her other sons'? A response to this is: "Not even His brothers had faith in Him" (John 7,5).

We respond even more by saying: The episode of John 7,5 occurs in Galilee, Jesus' homeland. These brothers, who did not believe in him, are his Galilean compatriots, the inhabitants of Nazareth, his village, who did not believe in him and to whom Jesus says: "I tell you solemnly, no prophet is ever accepted in his own country."(Luke 4,24). They are thus not his "brothers" James, Jose, Simon and Jude, already mentioned, who believed in him and who even became his apostles (see the letters of James and Jude and also: Acts 1,14 / 12,17 / 1 Corinthians 9,5 / 15,6 / Galatians 1,19).

3. Mark 15,40: This "Mary mother of James and Joset" is Mary, Cleopas' wife, called the Virgin's "sister" in John 19,25-27. It is she who is the mother of James, Joset, Jude and Simon. Here, as "sister" of the Virgin Mary, her children are said to be "brothers" of Jesus; in reality they are his cousins. A response to this is that here, it is about the Mother of Jesus. Now, if Mark spoke of the Virgin Mary, he would have said: "Mary, mother of Jesus, of James, of José and Simon", Jesus being the firstborn.

4. The "brothers" of Jesus were never called "Mary's sons":

- James defines himself as "servant of the Lord Jesus Christ", not as His brother (James 1,1).
- Jude, in his letter, says of himself as the "servant of Jesus and brother of James", not brother of Jesus.

Some people respond to this that Jesus had other brothers, and that these were his so-called brothers. Why then, dœs the Bible not mention them and only names James, Joset, Jude and Simon? Haven't we demonstrated that these are His relatives?

5. By saying that Jesus is the "firstborn", dœs not indicate that he had brothers. In the oriental mentality, up till today, the firstborn has special importance, with their parents named after them (*Father of Jesus and Mother of Jesus for example, instead of Joseph and Mary*). Moreover, it is the firstborn the parents offer to God, due to their particular and moral importance. (Luke 2,22-23). He was called "firstborn", whether he had brothers, sisters, or not.

6. The fact that Joseph had not known Mary "until" Jesus' birth, dœs not at all mean that he got to know her after. The Bible dœs not mention this and dœs not direct us to this conclusion. All Matthew simply wants to say, is that Jesus is born of Mary without a matrimonial intervention from Joseph's part. He wants to bring out the fact of the miraculous aspect of Jesus' birth. This is the evangelist's unique intention; he desires not to go on further and dœs not allow us to draw conclusions without presenting any scriptural proof.

As for us, we have demonstrated that Jesus' "brothers" are His near relations and compatriots. There are no evangelical verses which prove that Jesus had any biological brothers.

7. "Who is my mother? Who are my brothers?" Jesus says, and pointing to **his disciples** he adds: "Here are my mother and my brothers" (Matthew 12,48-50). The true brothers of Jesus are found throughout the world; these are His disciples.

Appearing to Mary Magdalene and to Mary of Cleopa after His resurrection, Jesus tells them: "Go and tell **my brothers**..." (Matthew 28,10) "... and Mary Magdalene went and told **the disciples** that she has seen the Lord..." (John 20,17-18). She knew Jesus had no other brothers, but his disciples. All Jesus' disciples are His brothers as "He gave them the power to become children of God" (John 1,12), His Father by divine nature and their Father by adoption (John 20,17). Their faith in Jesus renders them sons of God and brothers of Jesus (John 1,12). Read Hebrews 2,11-13.

Conclusion

Having no other children but Jesus, Mary remained virgin. Her virginity has a profound spiritual sense, and relates to her total union with God. Mary would not have sinned by knowing Joseph sexually: he was her legal spouse. But she could not give herself to a man, her heart having been held by God: she is the bride of the Holy Spirit, the worthy, perfect accomplice of God in his plan of salvation on earth.

By a special and unique grace, God spared Mary from original sin. He has guarded her immaculate soul, ever since her conception. Mary was not troubled by the after-effects of original sin, which disturbs us all. Feeling saved from original sin, Mary says joyfully: "My soul proclaims the greatness of the Lord and my spirit exults in God my Savior" (Luke 1,46-47).

Mary alone was preserved immaculate so that her soul is tranquil in order to receive the Word who, in her "became flesh". God could not incarnate Himself in a troubled soul. Here is the secret of her Immaculate Conception. Some reason in human terms: they think that Mary could not remain virgin after Jesus' birth. Yet, He who created the whole universe and was able to create the body of Jesus in Mary's womb, without touching her virginity, could still make Jesus born by respecting her virginity because "nothing is impossible to God" (Luke 1,37). Through her virginity, Mary renders virgin, all the hearts who confide in Her.

> "She is a garden **enclosed**, my sister, my promised bride; a garden **enclosed**, a **sealed** fountain", the divine "Bridegroom" prophetically states on the Messiah's Mother (Song of Songs 4,12).

NB.: *Those who deny Mary's virginity are for the* ***free interpretation*** *of the Bible. They should be coherent with themselves and also allow others this freedom of interpretation... and reflect, however, on what St. Peter says in his second letter" (2 Peter 1,20).*

Part XI

Deepenings

Table of Contents

1	**The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an**	**383**
2	**Mary in the Qur'an**	**395**
3	**Mary in the Bible**	**401**
4	**Love and Justice**	**407**
5	**The Day of Yahweh**	**419**
6	**The Regaining of Paradise according to the Bible and the Qur'an**	**435**
7	**The eschatological mystification in prophecy**	**445**

1

The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an

The following verses of the Old Testament, New Testament and the Qur'an testify to the vital importance of the Bread of Life, the blessed Cup and the Heavenly Table in God's Plan of Salvation.

A research on this subject, especially in the Old Testament and the Qur'an, has made it possible to update an impressive number of key texts that speak of it and underline its importance.

1. In the Old Testament

1.1 Melchizedek

Genesis 14,17-20: Just at the beginning of God's Revelation to Abraham, a mysterious personage appears. Abraham, after having led a war of liberation for his nephew Lot, meets Melchizedek, who is "priest of God Most High", and brings the "bread and wine" as an offering. Melchizedek blesses Abraham by "God Most High Creator of heaven and earth". He is "King of Salem" (*Jerusalem*). He prefigures the King Messiah and Priest who offers the sacrifice of the Bread and Wine. In fact, Abraham had an apparition of the Messiah. God wanted to underline thus, from the beginning to the first believer, Abraham, what was the offering accepted by Him.

Psalm 110 confirms this in saying to the Messiah: "You are a priest forever of the order of Melchizedek" (see explanations in Hebrews 5 to 7).

1.2 Jacob's blessing through Isaac

Genesis 27,28 / Genesis 27,37: Whilst blessing his son Jacob, Isaac tells him: "... May God give you dew from heaven, and the richness of the earth, abundance of grain and wine!"

God's blessing (*the dew*) is poured through the grain (*the bread*) and wine (*new wine*). It is with the Messiah's coming that this Blessing has been truly poured on the "Israel of God" (Galatians 6,16) by the Sacrifice of Jesus' Body and Blood present with us every day through the consecrated Bread and Wine. Today we live the Blessing promised to Jacob in plenitude. And this blessing is open to all. It is why Isaac could not give a second blessing.

1.3 Judah's blessing through Jacob

Genesis 49,11: The King and Chief who must come from the lineage of Judah "tethers his donkey to the vine, to its stock the foal of his she-donkey (Zechariah 9,9 / Luke 19,32-37). He washes his clothes in wine, his robes in the blood of the grape".

The "Wine" is a direct allusion to Jesus' Passion, the "blood of the grape" indicates the consecrated Wine. Here is where we wash our clothes everyday, to put on the wedding dress

(Revelation 19,7-8). How beautiful and impressive it is to see how acutely our Father expresses the Eternal Truths in such an ancient text.

The text continues the Messiah's description in saying: "... his eyes are darkened with wine", for he is intoxicated with Eternal Love and "his teeth are white with milk," symbol of his Innocence.

1.4 The Manna

Exodus 16,4: In the desert "Yahweh then said to Moses: 'Look I shall rain down bread for you from the heavens. Each day the people must go out and collect their ration for the day...'"

And "The Israelites ate manna for forty years, up to the time they reached inhabited country" (Exodus 16,35).

The manna in the desert for feeding the Israelites was but the symbol of the Real Bread of Life which comes down from Heaven "day by day", and that gives life to the world (John 6,51-54). Jesus says:

> "I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the desert and they are dead; but this is the bread that comes down from heaven, so that a person may eat it and not die." (John 6,48-50)

And also:

> "Anyone who does eat my flesh and drink my blood has eternal life, and I shall raise that person up on the last day. For my flesh is **real** food and my blood is **real** drink." (John 6,54-55)

This last text clearly testifies of the fact that Jesus is really present in the consecrated Bread and Wine. It is not just a symbol.

In the Apocalyptic period which we live, we are in the desert with the Woman (Revelation 12,6) and nourish ourselves daily in the family from the Bread of Life to be able to resist the aridity of the world and reach the True Internal Promised Land. The "hidden Manna", God Himself, who gives Himself as nourishment in the intimacy of the homes, is the ultimate reward of the victorious over the Beast and his like (Revelation 2,17).

> Wisdom 16,20-21: "... You gave your people the food of angels; from heaven untiringly providing them bread already prepared, containing every delight, to satisfy every taste."

Yes, untiringly, daily dœs our Father feed us with the Bread of Life. The communion with Jesus' Body and Blood fills us with spiritual delights and introduces us straight to our Father's Heart.

> "Each of these communions is a propulsion towards the Father and towards the meeting in the Heart of the Holy Mother of God, the Holy Mother of God." (Jesus to Pierre2, 22.12.1989)

The manna, "the bread of the Mighty" or "the bread of the Angels" (Psalm 78,23-25) had a "taste like that of wafers made with honey" (Exodus 16,31). According to Wisdom 16,21, this symbolizes the sweetness of God:

"And the substance you gave demonstrated your sweetness toward your children, for, conforming to the taste of whœver ate it, it transformed itself into what each eater wished".

That is why the Bread that we take is a sweet cookie (the desire of our Father manifested to Pierre2, 2007), to remind us of the Communion to the sweetness of God.

"Taste and see that Yahweh is good. How blessed are those who take refuge in him." (Psalm 34,8)

"How pleasant your promise to my palate, sweeter than honey in my mouth!" (Psalm 119,103)

The manna was but a preparatory symbol (see also Psalm 78,24 / Psalm 105,40). But "the reality is the Body of Christ" (Colossians 2,17).

1.5 The Cup and the spiced Wine

Song of Songs 7,3: In the Song of the Songs the Bridegroom (*the Christ*) tells his Bride (*Mary, or depending on the case, true believers*): "Your navel is a **bowl well rounded with no lack of wine**, your belly a **heap of wheat** surrounded with lilies".

This verse applies to Mary, our Mother. The divine Bread and Wine came out from her blessed belly: "Of all women you are the most blessed, and blessed is the fruit of your womb", Elizabeth cried under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit (Luke 1,42). It is Mary our Mother who is the source of our Heavenly food. We are these lilies surrounding her...

Our Father draws our attention in a very subtle way in the Song of Songs on these eternal enduring Truths.

Songs of Songs 8,1-2: The bride tells her Bridegroom (*the Christ*): "I should lead you, I should take you into my mother's house, and you would teach me! I should give you **spiced wine to drink, juice of my pomegranates**."

It is uniquely in the house of our Mother Mary, that Jesus teaches us and introduces us into his intimacy. Here, he makes us drink the "spiced wine" of His Blood, "this Cup is the new Covenant in my Blood poured out for you" (Luke 22,20).

1.6 The Bread and the Wheat

Isaiah 55,1-3: Our Father tells us through the prophet Isaiah: "Oh, come to the water all you who are thirsty; though you have no money, come! Buy wheat without money, and eat, and, at no cost, **wine** and milk. Why spend money on what is not **bread**... Listen, listen to me, and you will have good things to eat and **rich food** to enjoy. Pay attention, come to me; listen, and your soul will live."

The prophet Isaiah already draws our attention to the Bread and Wine offered for free (Revelation 22,17), a succulent meal which gives Life to the thirsty soul. And to certify that this Promise is linked to the Messiah's coming, he says just after: "I shall make an everlasting covenant with you in fulfillment of the favors promised to David".

This invitation to taste God's free Feast is sent to all people, since the text continues so: "See, you will summon a nation you never knew, those unknown will come hurrying to you" (Isaiah 55,4-5).

Today, it is the Victor over the Beast, whichever their nation or race is, who is invited to the ultimate Reward, to the Intimate Supper of Jesus (Revelation 3,20 / Revelation 2,17).

Several other texts evoke the Bread of Life and the Wheat of Life:

1. He satiates us and makes us exult with joy: Psalm 132,15-18: "'I will bless her virtuous with riches, provide her poor with food, vest her priests in salvation and her devout shall shout for joy" (see also Psalm 81,17 / 147,14 / 104,14-16).

2. He covers us with blessings, joy and songs (Psalm 65,10-14).

3. Abundance of wheat: With the coming of the Messiah, there will be: "Grain everywhere in the country, even on the mountain tops (*spiritual*), abundant as Lebanon its harvest (*Apocalyptic mission*), luxuriant as common grass! ... May every race in the world be blessed in him, and all the nations call him blessed! (*universal salvation*)" (Psalm 72,16-17).

4. The Call of God is the call of wheat and musk (*new wine*): "The earth will respond to the grain, the new wine..." (Hosea 2,10 and 2,23-25).

1.7 The Restoration through the abundance of Bread and Wine

Many texts of the Old Testament link the Restoration to the abundance of Bread and Wine. And yet, the Universal Restoration and the Return of Jesus rightly take place today with the Meal of Jesus taken in the family. This Restoration must spread throughout the whole world. Then, the prophecies of the Old Testament will be fulfilled:

1. Joel 4,18: "When that day comes, the mountains will run with **new wine**, and the hills flow with milk (*purity, innocence*), and all the river beds of Judah will run with water (*the River of Life, Revelation 22,1*). A fountain will spring from the house of Yahweh".

It is "the mountains that will run with new wine". It is necessary "to go up" through the door open in Heaven (Revelation 4,1) ie to open oneself to the prophetic spirit to taste this blessed Wine.

2. To cultivate the wheat: Our mission and that of all the chosen in the end of the times, is to cultivate the wheat.

> Hosea says: "He (*the repentant people*) will have the fragrance of Lebanon. They will come back to live in my shade; they will grow wheat that flourishes, they will cultivate vines as renowned as the wine of Lebanon... Let the wise man understand these words." (Hosea 14,7-10)

It is the Bread and the Wine of Life taken in the intimacy of the houses which will prosper, thanks to the Apocalyptic Message which comes from Lebanon!

3. The Restoration through the wheat and the wine:

> "... They will drink blood like wine, they will be soaked in it like the horns of an altar. Yahweh their God will give them victory when that day comes; he will pasture his people like a flock... What joy and what beauty shall be theirs! Wheat will make the young men flourish, and sweet wine the maidens." (Zechariah 9,15-17)

In the announced Restoration, it is the Wheat and the Wine which will make believers flourish...

1.8 The Table prepared by God

1. Psalm 23,1-6: In the Psalm of the Good Shepherd our Father mentions the Holy Table:

   > "Yahweh is my shepherd, I lack nothing. In meadows of green grass He lets me lie. To the waters of repose He leads me, there he revives my soul... You prepare a table for me under the eyes of my enemies; you anoint my head with oil (*the anointment of the kings and priests: Revelation 1,6*), my **cup brims over**..."

   It is the Table of Jesus' Meal with the Cup of His Blood which makes us strong in face of our enemies. Our "cup brims over".

2. Proverb 9,1-6: Equally in the Proverbs, God launches an appeal to all simple men to come join His Table:

   > "Wisdom... prepared her wine, she has laid her table. She has dispatched her maidservants and proclaimed from the city's heights: 'Who is simple? Let him step this way.' To the fool she says: 'Come and eat my bread, drink the wine I have prepared! Leave your folly and you will live, walk in the ways of perception.'"

The Old Testament speaks of the Table prepared by God to his faithful ones.

In the New Testament, Jesus explains us what this Table is: "I am the Living Bread which has come down from Heaven. Anyone who eats this bread **will live forever**; and the bread that I shall give is my flesh, for the life of the world" (John 6,51).

In the Qur'an, Muhammad also mentions this Table "that has come down from Heaven" and insists on the fact that "it may mark a feast -for the first of us and the last of us-" (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115).

God therefore feeds all his genuine believers at the same Table of Jesus' Body and Blood. The invitation is launched to Jews of good faith, to free Christians, and to non-fanatic Muslims. To each and every one of us, Wisdom says today:

> "Come and eat my bread, drink the wine I have prepared! Leave your folly and you **will live**, walk in the ways of perception." (Proverbs 9,5-6)

And Jesus in the Apocalypse says: "Look, I am standing at the door, knocking. If one hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in to share supper at that person's side." (Revelation 3,20)

Our Meeting place is the Holy Table of the Bread and Wine of Life.

Our Father's insistence on the Bread and Wine, source of Life and blessings, in the Books of the Old Covenant, testifies to the vital importance of Jesus' Meal in the universal plan of Salvation. These texts have been inspired to sensitize us to this great miracle of God's Real Presence amongst us, through this Heavenly Manna and to underline its importance.

2. In the New Testament

The institution of the Eucharist took place at Jesus' Last Supper with his Apostles, just before His Passion. Matthew reports it as follows:

> "Now as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and when He had said the blessing, he broke it and gave it to the disciples. 'Take it and eat', he said, 'this is my body'. Then he took a cup, and when He had given thanks He handed it to them saying, 'Drink from this,

all of you, for this is my blood, the blood of the covenant, poured out for many for the **forgiveness of sins**." (Matthew 26,26-28)

The Bread of Life washes our sins away.

Besides, Luke reports an important discourse of Jesus: "... 'This is my body which will be given for you; **do this as a memorial of me**" (Luke 22,19). Jesus, by his words, offers us an immense gift to be able to do "this in memory of him". He launches an invitation to all pure hearts, so that they feed on this Holy Table, renewed each day by the words of the consecration.

The other key verses of the New Testament concerning the Bread of Life are the following:

1. The whole Dimension of the Bread of Life is explained by Jesus Himself in this marvelous text of John: (John 6,32-58). Here, Jesus says amongst others things: "Whœver eats my Flesh and drinks My Blood lives in Me and I live in that person. And I shall raise that person up on the last day".

2. Jesus **longed** to eat this Passover with His disciples (Luke 22,14-16). It is with the ardor of His Love that Jesus wants to give himself to us each day through this divine Meal.

3. Jesus celebrated the Passover and instituted the Heavenly Meal with his Apostles in an "upper room furnished with couches" (Mark 14,12-16). These cushions symbolize the relaxation, the intimacy with Jesus, the fact of being at ease. Jesus did not choose a rigid worship (*standing up, sitting, on the knees...*) to give Himself to his Apostles.

4. The first Apostles took Jesus' Meal "gladly and generously" in the intimacy of their homes (Acts 2,46).

5. Paul transmits us what he received from the Lord Himself about Jesus' Meal (1 Corinthians 11,23-34). In this text Paul says: "Anyone who eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord unworthily will be behaving unworthily toward the body and blood of the Lord". This text clearly shows us that the consecrated Bread and Wine are not just a symbol as many think, but a profound Reality. Jesus is **indeed** present in his Body, his Soul, his Spirit and his Divinity in the consecrated Bread and Wine.

6. The Bread of Life is taken "for the forgiveness of sins" (Matthew 26,26-28). And Jesus said: "It is not the healthy who need the doctor, but the sick... I came to call not the upright, but sinners" (Matthew 9,10-13). The Bread of Life washes us of our sins, and it is especially when we are weak, that we are in most need of it.

3. In the Book of Revelation

The Revelation announces to us the good Eternal News, that we are all priests of Jesus, in the measure that we welcome Him with faith and love, and commit ourselves against His Enemy Israel. Such is the Return of Jesus.

The Bread of Life is at everyone's disposal for free, without the need to pass by the hands of priests of a church which has become treacherous (Matthew 24,10). What an immense liberation!

Here are the key verses:

1. We are all kings and priests: Revelation 1,5-6. God's initial design is re-established (Exodus 19,6).

2. Jesus stands at the door of our hearts and wants to enter to dine with us in intimacy: Revelation 3,20. This is how He returns.

3. He gives the victor over the Beast the "hidden Manna". This "hidden Manna" is the Bread of Life (Revelation 2,17).

4. He has saved us at the price of his blood and made of all of us, whatever our race or nation be, kings and priests (Revelation 5,9-10). This appeal is to all peoples.

5. All those who participate in the "first Resurrection" (*the Resurrection of our spirit by the meeting of our Father within us and by the Love for Him and our brothers*) are "Priests of God and of Christ" (Revelation 20,6). And in the Kingdom of God, "there no more distinctions between male and female" (Galatians 3,28).

6. Happy are those who open up to Jesus, "as soon as He will come and knock" on the door of the heart at the time of His Return (Luke 12,35-38).

For more explanations see the texts on the site "Bread of Life and the New Priesthood" and "Jesus restores the priesthood". These texts also indicate how the bread and the wine can be consecrated in the family in all simplicity.

4. In the Qur'an

NB: Before reading this text, it is recommended to study profoundly, the texts on the site "A Look of faith at the Qur'an" and "The Antichrist in Islam".

The Qur'an, inspired to confirm the Bible, is logically placed in the same perspective with the Books of the Old Testament and the Gospel. It underlines the importance of "the Table", the "delicious Wine", and the "cups which circulate with an exquisite liquor".

4.1 The Table that comes down from Heaven

Muhammad reports to us in the following way, how the Christ made a Table come down from Heaven (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115): "'Jesus son of Mary', said the disciples, 'can your Lord send down to us **from Heaven** a Table spread? He replied: "Have fear of God, if you are true believers'. 'We wish to eat from it', they said, 'so that we may reassure our hearts and know that what you said to us is true, and that we may be **witnesses** of it' (*witnesses of the Table*). 'Lord', said Jesus son of Mary, 'send down to us **from Heaven a Table** spread, that it may mark a feast for **the first** of us and **the last** of us: a sign from You. Give us our sustenance (*nourish us*); You are the best provider. God replied: 'I am sending one **to you**. But whœver of you disbelieves hereafter shall be punished as no man will ever be punished".

This Table is the same as the one mentioned in Psalm 23,1-6 ("You prepare **a table** for me under the eyes of my enemies") and in Proverb 9,1-6 ("Wisdom...has prepared her wine, she has laid **her table**... Come and eat my bread, drink the wine which I have drawn!"). It is the Table of Jesus' Meal described by Luke in the following way:

> "When the hour came He took his place **at table**, and the apostles with him... Then he took some bread, and when he had given thanks, broke it and gave it to them, saying: 'This is my body which will be given for you; do this as a memorial of me'. He did the same with the cup after supper, and said, 'This cup is the new Covenant in my blood which will be poured out for you'" (Luke 22,14-20)

For a detailed explanation of the Qur'an V; The Table,112-115 refer to the site on "A Look of Faith on the Qur'an", Chapter III, Paragraph 3.

4.2 The sealed Wine

God says in the Qur'an after having spoken of "that Day", of the "Judgment Day"

(Qur'an LXXXIII; The Unjust,10-11):

> "No!... But the record of the righteous shall be in 'Illiyyūn. Would that you knew what 'Illiyyūn is! It is a sealed book, seen only by the favored. The righteous will surely dwell in bliss. Reclining upon soft couches they will gaze around them: and in their faces you shall mark the glow of joy. They shall be given **pure nectar to drink, securely sealed, whose very dregs are musk** (for this let all men emulously strive); tempered with the waters of Tasnīm, a spring at which the favored will refresh themselves. The evil-doers (*those who refuse to drink it*) mock the faithful (*who believed in this sealed wine*)..." (Qur'an LXXXIII; The Unjust,18-29)

'Illiyyūn literally means "high places" (www.iiu.edu.my/deed/glossary). It is the book "where the names of the consigned are kept" (*according to the explanations: Qur'an, D. Masson, Reviewed by Dr. S. El-Saleh*). This coded-sealed book is the Book of Revelation or the "Book of Life" (Revelation 20,12 and 3,5) that is sealed with 7 seals (Revelation 5,1) and has been "opened" by the Angel who descends from Heaven (Revelation 10, see text "The Key of the Apocalypse"). As the Qur'an rightly points out, only "those who are close to God are witnesses to it".

It is at the moment of the opening of this Book (Revelation 10,1-3) that many will discover happiness through a rare Wine. This sealed wine of musk, having a very special perfume (see Song of Songs 8,1), is Jesus' Blood who procures a soul's Life and eternal Happiness (see explanations on site "A Look of Faith on the Qur'an", Chapter III, Paragraph 3).

4.3 The delicious wine, the cups that circulate, the cups filled with delectable liquor

The following verses of the Qur'an (Translation by N. J. Daoud, Penguin Classics, 1998) describe the promised Garden with "rivers of wine delectable to drink... cups filled at a gushing fountain, white, and delicious to those who drink it... cups of purest wine".

> **Qur'an XLVII; Muhammad,15**: Here is the description of the Garden promised to those who fear God. "Therein shall flow rivers of water undefiled, and rivers of milk for ever fresh; **rivers of wine delectable to those that drink it**, and rivers of clarified honey. There shall they eat of every fruit, and receive **forgiveness from their Lord**..." (compare with Song of Songs 5,1)

This promised Garden already commences on earth in the Communion with Jesus' Body and Blood which provides us the Holy Spirit and introduces us into eternal Life and Happiness from hereon. The description of the promised Garden perfectly corresponds to the new era of the "new Heaven and the new Earth", of the Heavenly Jerusalem described in the Revelation (Revelation 21,1-2). There, we find again "The River of Life, rising from the throne of God and of the Lamb and flowing crystal-clear... the Trees of Life, which bear twelve crops... and the leaves of which are the cure for the pagans." (Revelation 22,1-2)

In this promised Garden, believers find as mentioned by Muhammad "forgiveness from their Lord". Therefore, the promised Garden is not the future Paradise as many think, for in that Paradise, forgiveness will have already been granted. The promised Garden is a state which we can live from now on. It is a taste of these "rivers of wine delectable to those that drink it" that forgiveness is granted to us according to the words of Jesus: "...Drink from this, all of you, for this is my blood, the blood of the Covenant, poured out for many **for the forgiveness of**

sins" (Matthew 26,27-28). The communion with Jesus' Body and Blood washes our sins away. It is a communion with Jesus' Sacrifice, since He says:

> "This cup is the new Covenant in my blood poured out for you" (Luke 22,20).

This Redemption by the Messiah's suffering had already been underlined by the prophet Isaiah:

> "He was pierced through for our faults, crushed for our sins... and through his wounds we are healed." (Isaiah 53,5)

And in the Apocalypse, the four living creatures (the evangelists) and the 24 elders (the liberated people of God) sing a new hymn to the Lamb (Jesus):

> "You are worthy to take the scroll and to break its seals, because you were sacrificed, and **with your blood** you bought people for God of every race, language, people and nation and made them a line of kings and priests for God to rule the world." (Revelation 5,9-10)
>
> "The rivers whose water is incorruptible" are the Holy Spirit poured out in abundance through Jesus' Meal. Jesus had said: "'Let anyone who is thirsty come to me! Let anyone who believes in me come and drink!' As scriptures says: 'From his heart shall flow streams of living water'. He was speaking of the Spirit which those who believed in him were to receive..." (John 7,37)

"The river of purified honey" in the promised Garden symbolizes the abundance of Knowledge by the opening of the Book of Revelation and of all the "other inspired books" (Revelation 10,9 & 20,12). The Knowledge of the mystery of the Apocalypse has the "sweetness of honey" (Revelation 10,9; see also Songs of Songs 4,11 which describes the Apocalyptic Messenger who comes from Lebanon). In the Apocalyptic period we live in, all the Holy Scriptures are "open", ie deeply understood according to our Father's Spirit and the profound intention of the prophets, of Jesus and Muhammad (see site `www.pierre2.net`). These are the "rivers of purified honey" that Muhammad saw.

The Psalmist says: "... His words are sweeter than honey, that drips from the comb." (Psalm 19,10)

The "River of Honey" also evokes the Sweetness of God's Presence through the Heavenly Manna (Wisdom 16,21).

The "rivers of milk forever fresh" in the promised Garden described by Muhammad symbolize innocence and purity. The Apocalypse says of the victors in the Apocalyptic trial: "No lie (Zionist) was found in their mouths and no fault can be found in them" (Revelation 14,5).

Eventually God says by the prophet Isaiah: "If only you had listened to my commandments! Your prosperity would have been like a river" (Isaiah 48,18).

> **Qur'an XXXVII, The ranks,42-49**: "The true servants of God shall be well provided for, feasting on fruit, and honored in the Gardens of Delight. Reclining face to face upon soft couches, **they shall be served with a goblet filled at a gushing fountain, white**, and delicious to those who drink it. It will neither dull their senses nor befuddle them. And with them will be women limiting their glances, with large eyes, as if they were eggs, well-protected..."

In the Universal Restoration which we are currently living, through the Meal of Jesus taken with the family in simplicity, the cups of Communion circulate between us in simplicity. This is the fulfillment of Jesus' prophecy concerning His Return:

"... He will sit them down **at table, passing from one to the other**, He will wait on them." (Luke 12,37)

In the traditional churches, the believers pass and the priest gives to each the divine bread. In the universal Restoration, it is Jesus who passes from one to the other through the bread and the Cup.

Muhammad saw and revealed this subtle and important detail, which indicates the current time of the Restoration.

The Qur'an and the Bible are in agreement on the importance of this Heavenly Cup that circulates in "Paradise". It is the Cup of Jesus' Blood according to the words of Christ: "This cup is the new Covenant in my blood poured out for you" (Luke 22,20). And "Drink from this, all of you" (Matthew 26,27).

AGAIN, Jesus tells us today:

"Drink from this, all of you..."

The call is valid yesterday and today. Muhammad himself underlines with regards to the Heavenly Table: "... it may mark a feast -for the first of us and the last of us-... (Qur'an V; 114). And the invitation is also confirmed, when he mentions the sealed wine of musk:

"... for this let all men emulously strive." (Qur'an LXXXIII; 26)

In other words, it is necessary to surpass oneself, to overcome oneself, "to be violent with oneself" in renouncing one's own mentality (Matthew 11,12) to participate in this divine Feast and to reap the fruits of Eternal Life.

Qur'an XLIII; The ornaments of Gold,71-72: "Enter Paradise, you and your spouses, in all delight! **You shall be served with golden dishes and golden cups**. Abiding there for ever, you shall find all that your souls desire and all that your eyes rejoice in. Such is the Paradise you shall inherit by virtue of your good deeds..."

This Paradise corresponds to the "First Resurrection" (Revelation 20,6). The Apocalypse also says: "Anyone who proves victorious I will make into a pillar in the sanctuary of my God, and it will stay there for ever" (Revelation 3,12). And the Qur'an says: "Abiding there for ever..." thanks to these "golden dishes" and these "cups" which will circulate and contain "all that your souls desire and your eyes rejoice in".

The texts of the Qur'an and the Apocalypse come together and complement each other perfectly.

Qur'an LVI; That which is coming,1-19: "When that which is coming comes – and no soul shall then deny its coming – some shall be abased and others exalted. When the earth shakes and quivers, and the mountains crumble away and scatter abroad into fine dust, you shall be divided into three multitudes: those on the right (blessed shall be those on the right); those on the left (damned shall be those on the left); and those to the fore (foremost shall be those). Such are they that shall be brought near to their Lord in the Gardens of delight: a whole multitude from the men of old, but only a few from the latter generations. They shall recline on jeweled couches face to face, and there shall wait on them immortal youths **with bowls** and ewers and **a cup of purest wine** (that will neither pain their heads nor take away their reason)."

These verses clearly refer to the end of the times. "That which is coming" is the Hour of Judgment (according to the explanations of Qur'an, D. Masson, reviewed by Sobhi El Saleh). Those "brought near" to God are those who nourish themselves from the "cup of purest wine".

It is well in the end of times that the spiritual dimension of the Universal Restoration by the Bread and the Cup of Life, opens up to all the independent believers. Muhammad could not have been more precise. Provided of course, to also refer to the Apocalypse to grasp the subtlety of our Father's language and reap the fruits which "we ourselves shall measure" (Qur'an LXXVI; Man,14) (see texts "The Key of the Apocalypse" and "The Universal Restoration").

> **Qur'an LXXVI; Man,4-7**: "For the unbelievers We have prepared chains and fetters, and a blazing Fire. But the righteous shall drink of a **cup tempered at the Camphor Fountain**, a gushing spring at which the servants of God will refresh themselves: they who keep their vows and dread the broadcast terrors of Judgment-Day..."

Judgment-Day is the day in which we are currently living. The two Beasts of the Apocalypse have spread evil all over the earth. It speaks here thus, of the end of times.

In that day we "hold our vows", as we are protected and quenched by the Cup of Jesus' Blood, an inexhaustible source that we make "gush forth at will"...

> **Qur'an LXXVI; Man,11-20**: "God will deliver them from the evil of that day, and make their faces **shine with joy**. He will reward them for their steadfastness with Paradise and **robes of silk**. Reclining there upon **soft couches**, they shall feel neither the **scorching heat**, nor the biting cold. Trees will spread their shade around them, and **fruits will hang in clusters over them**. They shall be served on silver dishes, **and beakers (cups) as large as goblets** which they themselves shall measure; **and cups brim-full with ginger-flavored water** from a fount called Salsabīl. They shall be attended by boys graced with eternal youth (*angels or saints*), who to the beholder's eyes will seem like sprinkled pearls. When you gaze upon that scene, you will behold a kingdom blissful and glorious."

Explanation of Salsabīl (according to "The Holy Qur'an, translation in French by Muhammad Hamidullah, 1973): the name of a source of the Paradise. Word apparently composed by salas (easy walk) and sabīl (path) that is to say flowing and pleasant water.

And John writes in the Book of Revelation:

> "Let us **be glad and joyful** and give praise to God, because this is the time for the marriage of the Lamb..." (Revelation 19,7)
>
> "I will give water from the **well of life** free to anybody who is thirsty." (Revelation 21,6)
>
> "Then the Angel showed me **the river of life**, rising from the throne of God and of the Lamb and flowing crystal-clear..." (Revelation 22,1)
>
> "neither **the sun** nor scorching wind will ever plague them." (Revelation 7,16)
>
> "Anyone who proves victorious I will allow to share **my throne**..." (Revelation 3,21)
>
> "On either side of the river were the trees of Life, which **bear** twelve **crops** of fruit a year, one in each month, and the leaves of which are the cure for the pagans" (Revelation 22,2)
>
> "She has been able to **dress herself in dazzling white linen**..." (Revelation 19,8)

The Qur'an and the Apocalypse describe the one and the same reality. Compensation, joy and happiness, are the rewards of those who have triumphed over the Beast and its ilk.

> **Qur'an LXXVIII; The Tidings,31-35**: "As for the righteous, they shall surely triumph. Theirs shall be gardens and vineyards, and maidens for companions: a truly **overflowing cup**. There they shall hear no idle talk, nor any falsehood..."

Such are the verses of the Qur'an which confirm the Bible. These verses are all the more beautiful and impressive, that they refer to the end of Times which we are currently living. It is only now that these Qur'anic verses can be fully understood and appreciated.

Praise to our tender Father and Creator!

All these verses are a great encouragement to independent believers of "all race, language, people and nation" (Revelation 5,9) to open themselves to the Heavenly Communion to Jesus' Body and Blood, made available to all by the Table served, which comes down from Heaven.

> "I am the living Bread which has come down from Heaven. Anyone who eats this bread will live **for ever**..." (John 6,51)
>
> "You shall be served with golden dishes and golden cups. Abiding there **for ever** ...it (the Table) may mark **a feast** – for the first of us and the last of us..." (Qur'an XLIII; The Ornaments of Gold,71 / Qur'an V; The Table,114)
>
> "Happy are those who are invited to the Wedding FEAST of the Lamb... Come here. Gather together at the **great feast** that God is giving." (Revelation 19,9 / Revelation 19,17)

BR (27.01.2010)

2

Mary in the Qur'an

The Qur'an contains some beautiful verses about Mary, Jesus' Mother. The prophet Mohammed touches the heart of every true believer by his testimony in favor of Jesus and his Mother.

Mary is veritably the Heavenly Bridge that links the liberated believers coming from the world of Islam, Christianity and Judaism. Happy are those who discover the grandeur of Mary, Jesus' Mother, and her role in the Plan of the Merciful One.

1. The Immaculate Conception

The Qur'an confirms the privileged position of Mary in God's Plan. The prophet Mohammed reveals:

> "The Angels said to Mary: 'Mary, God has chosen you and made you pure: He has truly chosen you above all women'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,42)

Mary has been chosen to be the mother of the Messiah, the Word of God.

The Qur'an reveals:

> "The Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, was the messenger of God, **His Word**, directed to Mary, **a Spirit from Him**." (Qur'an IV; Women,172)

This verse reveals the greatness of Jesus, the son of Mary: He is the Word of God and the Spirit of God. To be worthy of becoming the receptacle of the Word of God on earth, Mary has been preserved from all sin ever since her conception.

The prophet Mohammed reveals to us the Immaculate Conception of Mary long before the Catholic Church proclaimed this dogma in 1854.

In fact, Mohammed says in a Hadith:

> "No man is born unless the devil wounds him since his birth and he shouts loud because of this satanic wound (*the tarnish of original sin*), **except Mary and her Son**."

(This verse from the "Noble Discussions" is reported in the "Jalalein" interpretation of verse 35 of Sura "The Family of Imran"; it is a Hadith related by Abu Houraira , see http://www.el-ilm.net/t1333-maryam-bint-imran. It is also reported in a slightly different way by Al Bokhari, see the original French book "L'authentique tradition musulmane, choix de hadiths", Fasquelle, p. 48.)

So, only Jesus and his Mother Mary have been preserved from the claws of Satan.

Actually, Muhammed also reveals us that Mary was devoted to God by her mother at the time of her pregnancy and when she was delivering her. The wife of Imran (Anne) said:

> "'Lord, I have dedicated what is growing in my womb entirely to You; so accept this from me. You are the One who hears and knows all,' but when she gave birth, she said, 'My Lord! I have given birth to a girl'– God knew best what she had given birth to: the male is not like the female–' I name her Mary and I commend her and her offspring (*Jesus*) to Your protection from the rejected Satan'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,35-36)

Our Father heard the prayer of her mother, the wife of Imran, in preserving Mary from all the devil's temptations.

It was necessary that Mary be entirely pure and entirely modeled by the Holy Spirit, so she can receive and give the world, the Word of God. She was "**made pure**" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,42) to receive the "**pure son**" which the Angel had announced to Her (Qur'an XIX; Mary,19).

2. Mary's virginity

With regards to Mary's virginity in the Qur'an, God expresses himself by the two following verses:

> "God has also given examples of believers... Mary, daughter of Imran. She guarded her **virginity**, so **We breathed into her from Our spirit**. She accepted the truth of her Lord's words and Scriptures: she was truly devout." (Qur'an LXVI; Prohibition,12)
>
> "Remember the one who guarded her **virginity**... We **breathed into her from Our Spirit** and made her and her son a Sign for the worlds." (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91)

Mohammed thus confirms Mary's virginity. Moreover, our Mother is given as an example to follow for all believers. He who approaches Mary, approaches her Son.

God has "breathed of His Spirit" into Mary. It is the Holy Spirit which descended on Mary to impregnate her. Luke reports in his Gospel, that the Angel said to Mary:

> "'**The Holy Spirit will come on you**, and the power of the Most High will cover you with its shadow. And so the child will be holy and will be called Son of God.'" (Luke 1,34-35)

And the Qur'an reveals the Angel's words to Mary:

> "But he said: 'I am but a Messenger from your Lord, to announce to you **the gift of a pure son**.' She said, 'How can I have a son when no man has touched me? ... and he said, 'This is what your Lord said: "It is easy for Me– We shall make him a sign to all people, a blessing from Us."' And so it was ordained: she conceived him. She withdrew to a distant place" (Qur'an XIX; Mary,16-22)

The ordination was fixed and became operative thanks to the "Yes" of Mary. God then "breathed from His Spirit" (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91) into Mary and she "conceived the Child" (Qur'an XIX; Mary,22).

Jesus was conceived in Mary by a miracle of the Holy Spirit.

Jesus' miraculous conception is thus attested by the Gospel and the Qur'an (see the detailed explanation in "A Look of faith at the Qur'an", chapter 4.2 - The Messiah and his title of Son of God).

Prophet Muhammed's testimony is touching:

> "We made her and her son a Sign for the worlds." (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91)

This marvelous sign "for the worlds", is a sign for the Muslim, Christian and Jewish world. And it is the sign of the Word of God and his Immaculate Mother amongst us.

Mohammed certifies this in the following words:

> "The angels said to Mary: 'Mary, God gives you news of **a Word from Him**, whose name will be the Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, Who will be held in honor in this world and the Next who will be one of those brought near to God'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45)

And to understand all the dimension of the Word of God, it is necessary to refer to John in his Gospel:

> "In the beginning was the Word: the Word was with God and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things came to be, not one thing had its being but through him. All that came to be had life in him and that life was the light of men, a light that shines in the dark, a light that darkness could not overpower... The Word was made flesh, he lived among us..." (John 1,1-16)

So, in talking of the "Word coming from Him (*God*)", which would be born from the Virgin Mary, Muhammed indisputably makes a link with John's verses on the nature of the Word.

Muhammed underlines that "He will be illustrious in this world and in the other, and will be among the elect of God". And who is more illustrious than the Word which emanates from God?

If Muhammed attests then, that Jesus is the Word of God, it is therefore that he encourages all Muslims to hear the clear words of life of the Word of God. And these words are found in the Gospels.

Thanks to the prophet Muhammed for this striking testimony in favor of Jesus, the Word of God, and of His mother, who assembles the true Believers liberated from fanaticism around Mary, the Mother of all Believers.

3. Mary's childhood

Mary, during her childhood, was entrusted to the Temple under the caretake of Zachariah. Each day she was nourished miraculously:

> "Her Lord graciously accepted her (*Mary*) and made her grow in the best growth, and entrusted her to the charge of Zachariah. Whenever Zachariah went in to see her in her sanctuary, he found her supplied with provisions. He said, 'Mary, how is it you have these provisions?' and she said, 'they are from God: God provides **limitlessly** for whomever He will'." (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,37)

Each day, Mary received from God the spiritual food necessary to prepare her for her great Mission: to become the Mother of the Messiah, announced by all the prophets. God nourished Mary's soul with the food of the Holy Spirit in view of the reception of his Son.

This reaffirms a great symbolism. Beside Mary, spiritual food is abundant; it is given "limitlessly". Beside her, we find all the graces. If before the birth of Jesus, our Father was pleased to replenish her with spiritual nutrition, what would it have been like during her pregnancy, and later, during the life of Jesus?

This nutrition, given daily through Mary, also symbolizes the Bread of Life, Jesus' Body and Blood who takes life in her to offer Himself to the world, and who will be given "limitlessly". Mary is the first to have had communion to Jesus' Body, as she received him in her.

It is why, in a pictorial way, the Song of Songs in the Bible sings of wheat in Mary's belly:

> "Your navel is a **bowl well rounded with no lack of wine, your belly a heap of wheat** surrounded with lilies." (Song of Songs 7,3)

This verse applies to Mary, our Mother. The Divine Bread and Wine came out from her blessed womb.

This corresponds to the invitation launched in the Qur'an to all believers to be nourished from the "table that comes down from Heaven", a "Feast" for "the first and last of us" (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115).

Muhammed, with great subtlety, confirms these Eternal Truths (see "The Bread of Life in the Bible and in the Qur'an" and "Mary in the Bible").

Mohammed adds that "He made her (*Mary*) grow in the best growth" as mentioned in the verse 37. It is about a growth "in wisdom, in stature, and in favor with God and men", just as with Jesus (Luke 2,52).

It was necessary that Mary be mature, and that her spirit was already very elevated to be able to share the intimacy of the Word of God and His Spirit.

It is good to meditate on this abundance of the Holy Spirit with all his Graces which circulate between Jesus and Mary.

This is the reason why Mohammed underlined:

> "We made the son of Mary and his mother a Sign; We gave them shelter on a peaceful hill with flowing water." (Qur'an XXIII; The Believers,50)

This peaceful hill is the inner hill, which no noise on earth can disturb. It is the inner dialogue of heart to heart in the Holy Spirit. And the Flowing Source, which is the Holy Spirit Himself according to Jesus' words to the Samaritan:

> "... but anyone who drinks the water that I shall give will never be thirsty again: the water that I shall give will turn into a spring inside them, welling up to eternal life." (John 4,14)

And Jesus explains this later on:

> "On the last day and greatest day of the festival, Jesus stood there and cried out: 'If any person is thirsty, let them come to me! Let the person come and drink who believes in me!' As Scripture says: From his breast shall flow fountains of living water. He was speaking of the Spirit which those who believed in him were to receive, for there was no Spirit as yet because Jesus had not yet been glorified." (John 7,37-39)

It is on the Cross that Jesus was glorified, contrary to all the mentality of this world. It is on the Cross, that Jesus destroyed the Zionist mentality in the hearts of his Apostles. He thus opened the door to the Coming of the Holy Spirit, which henceforth, liberated from this obstacle, could flow like a river and irrigate the pure hearts.

Mohammed therefore invites all true believers to get closer to this "peaceful hill with flowing water", to drink from this Spring of the Holy Spirit which gushes out thanks to Jesus' Cross. It is a Universal Spring, enriched today by the blood of the martyrs who are killed by the Beast (see "The Key of the Apocalypse").

4. Conclusion

The prophet Mohammed certifies thus in the Qur'an, the Virgin Mary's importance in God's Plan.

Mary is cited 33 times in the Qur'an, one time for each year spent with her Son. God wanted therefore to honor the Mother of the Messiah who was faithful to her Son through all the years of his life.

In the Qur'an, Jesus is mentioned most of the times together with Mary. By doing so, God gives us a great teaching, valid for all the religions and times. Jesus is inseparable from his Mother:

> "We made the son of Mary and his mother a Sign." (Qur'an XXIII; The Believers,50)
>
> "We made her and her son a Sign for the worlds." (Qur'an XXI; The Prophets,91)

Mary is the only woman mentioned in the Qur'an. In this sense, the Qur'an entirely supports the Bible, as it reveals to us the primordial importance of Mary beside her Son, and beside us all, her children.

Mary is an extraordinary union between all independent believers, coming from Christian, Muslim and Jewish backgrounds.

She is giving birth again today, "in the desert", the new people of God, all pure hearts who resist the Antichrist, the Beast, the Dajjal, which is the Impious State of Israel, prophesied and denounced by the Bible and the Qur'an (see "The Key of the Apocalypse" and "The Apocalypse according to Mohammed").

May the Virgin Mary, Mother of Jesus, the prophet Muhammed, and all the martyrs of this Holy Cause, accord us the final triumph!

BR (01.08.2015)

3

Mary in the Bible

"**Behold your Mother**"

Old Testament:

Genesis 3,8 to 15 / Wisdom 6,12-21 & 7,22-30 & 8,1-8 & 15,3 / Song of Songs 3-6-11 & 4,7-15 & 6,1-3 & 6,8-10 & 8,1-2 & 8,5 / Proverbs 8,17 to 21 & 8,32 to 36 / Ecclesiasticus 6,29 / Psalms 44,7 & 10 & 14 / Isaiah 7,14 & 60,1 to 6 & 66,7 to 11

New Testament:

Matthew 1,18 to 25 / Luke 1,26-56 & 2,1 to 35 & 2,46 to 52 / John 2,1 to 12 / Mark 3,31 to 35 / John 19,25-27 / Acts 1,12-14 & 2,1 / Revelation 12 & 22,17

1. In the Old Testament

Genesis 3,8-15: From the onset, our Father has conceived the Plan to save humanity through a Woman. Our Father chose to place the battle between Mary and Satan from the very beginning of the Divine Revelation, at the very beginning of Genesis. As soon as sin appears, it is Mary who appears. Before she was born, He announced Satan's defeat by the agency of the Woman and of her descendants (Jesus and all of us who have Mary as mother). Mary has crushed the serpent's head because She is the Immaculate Conception and Satan **has never succeeded to make her sin**.

Wisdom 6,12-21: "Those who love her, she is readily seen... She herself walks about looking for those who are worthy of her..." For those who know how to love, these verses are simultaneously applied to Wisdom and to Mary, because our Mother has let herself be modeled by Wisdom more than any being. Mary has always been perfectly wise and faithful to every movement of Grace. With her Heart of a Mother, she comes to meet those who seek her and introduces us to Divine Wisdom and Eternal Royalty (Revelation 1,6).

Wisdom 7,22-30: These verses refer to the Immaculate Conception: "Nothing impure can find a way into her... She is an untarnished mirror of God's active power." Muhammad had also highlighted our Mother's Immaculate Conception, saying in his "Noble Discussions": "No man is born without the devil's reach from his birth, and he cries because of this satanic attack (*the tarnish of original sin*) with the exception of Mary and her son." (Interpretation of" Jalalein" of verse 35 of the Sura of the Family of Imran). These words, accepted by the whole Muslim world, are a recognition of the Immaculate Conception of Mary.

The verses of the Book of Wisdom also relate to the holy intercession, the power, and the other virtues of Our Mother. To meditate well "because God loves but the one who lives with Wisdom."

Wisdom 8,1-8: Other qualities of Mary and references to her apparitions. Only those who love her intensely can recognize her in these inspired verses: "Her closeness to God lends luster to her noble birth, since the Lord of All has loved her."

Wisdom 15,3: "To acknowledge you is indeed the perfect virtue, to know your power is the root of immortality."

Song of Songs 3,6-11: "The perfume" of verse 6 represents the prayers of Revelation 8,3. Jesus (Solomon) returns supported by valiant warriors (The Apostles of the end of times) who know how to wield the sword of the Word. The king's throne was built with wood from Lebanon and represents the Angel of the Apocalypse and his mission. Mary enthrones Jesus on the day of the Marriage of the Lamb (see also Revelation 19,7): "... King Solomon (*Jesus*), wearing the diadem with which **his mother crowned him** on his wedding day, on the day of his hearts's joy" (Song of Songs 3,11). It is Mary who crowns Jesus, because it is through her Compassionate Intercession, her prayers and her struggle next to her Apostles that He triumphs (Revelation 12).

Song of Songs 4,7-15: Mary is the Immaculate Conception: "You are wholly beautiful, my love, and **without a blemish**". The "bride, who comes from Lebanon," is the Angel of the Apocalypse and his mission which comes from Lebanon. The "distill wild honey" represents the prophetic word against the Antichrist. The "sealed fountain" represents the virginity of Mary and the Book of Revelation sealed with 7 seals (verse 12). "The rarest essences" and perfumes refer to the writings of the Angel of the Apocalypse and to the prayers of the saints presented by him on the Altar (Revelation 8,3-4). Verse 15 refers to the River of Life in Revelation 22,1.

Song of Songs 6,1-3:

> "Where did your Beloved go, **O loveliest of women**?
>
> Which way did your Beloved turn so that we can help you to look for him? [Ah yes, seek Him with her to find Him].
>
> My Beloved went down to his garden, to the beds of spices, to pasture in the gardens and gather lilies.
>
> I am my Beloved's, and my Beloved is mine. He pastures his flock among the lilies."

And as Pierre commented: "And the lily, is an elegant flower with a splendid perfume that embalms everything around it. Yes, our wonderful Mother, this Lily of the Song, embalms her shepherd and well deserves the title "the Shepherd's Balm" (Message to Pierre on Saturday June 20, 2008).

Our hearts are drunk... Ahhh, feel how good and vivifying this heavenly Lily is... Her maternal tenderness makes us drunk, protects us and fortifies us to become invincible."

Song of Songs 6,9-10: The song of praise that all elected officials are invited to sing to Mary is also reflected in the following verses:

> "My dove is unique, mine, unique and perfect.
>
> She is the darling of her mother, the favorite of the one who bore her.
>
> The maidens saw her, and proclaimed her blessed, Queens and concubines sang her praises:
>
> 'Who is this arising like the dawn,
>
> fair as the moon,
>
> resplendent as the sun,

terrible as an army with banners?'"

These verses are amongst the most beautiful verses which refer to Mary, for those who love Her. Happy are those who answer "Mary" to the question in verse 10. "Resplendent as the sun", like the Woman clothed with the sun (ie full of Jesus) in Revelation 12,1, and "terrible as an army", because she has always known how to crush the serpent's head in minute details of her life and teaches us to do the same. She is the royal path toward our Father.

Song of Songs 8,1-2: This is why Jesus teaches us in His "Mother's house". And Mary introduces us in the bridal chamber, where our Bridegroom (Jesus) is waiting for us to give us his "spiced wine". This wine is the new wine in Matthew 26,29, ie the Blood of Jesus taken in the intimacy of our homes (Revelation 3,20). The Qur'an (Qur'an 83; The Deceivers in Measuring,22-26) also speaks of this "rare wine, sealed with a seal of musk" which is the drink of the "pure" who have "the glow of happiness on their faces" (see also Qur'an 76; Man, 21).

Song of Songs 8,5: The Bridegroom, ie Jesus, addresses himself to us, who have been conceived by Mary, and awakened by the "Cry of Midnight", the Apocalyptic Trumpet (Matthew 25).

Proverb 8,17-21: Mary is the Mediator of all graces (verse 21).

Proverb 8,32-36: "For the person who finds me finds life, they will win favor from Yahweh; but the person who dœs injury to me dœs hurt to their own soul..." (see Luke 2,35).

Ecclesiasticus 6,26-31: "... go after her and seek her... She will reveal herself to you... you will put her on like a crown of honor..."

Psalm 45 (44), 6/9/14: To the Messiah, it is said: "Your throne, God, shall last for ever and ever". And a bit further down: "... on your right stands the queen, in gold from Ophir." This is our Queen Mother, the Mother of the "King of kings and Lord of lords" (Revelation 19,16). She is queen in Heaven and on earth. She is "dressed in a garment woven with gold," the spiritual gold of a life perfectly conformed to our Father's Plan, up till her Son's cross.

Isaiah 7,14: "The young woman is with child and will give birth to a son whom she will call Immanuel" (*God with us*).

Isaiah 60,1-6: These verses refer to Jesus' birth and also the birth of the Heavenly Jerusalem (Revelation 21). Verse 5 describes Mary's state of mind in receiving the shepherds and the gifts of the Magi Kings at the birth of Jesus (Luke 2,19). It also refers to her feelings in living the final victory together with the apostles of the end of times: "... your sons from far away... At this sight you will grow radiant, your heart throbbing and full..." (see also Revelation 20,13).

Isaiah 66,7-11: Mary is the Woman in Revelation 12,2 and 12,5 who gave birth to a son (Jesus) and who in one day, gives birth through the Angel of the Apocalypse to a new regenerated people. All will be done very rapidly, "in one day." The verses on the new Jerusalem also apply to our Mother, since she has given birth to this new Jerusalem: "That you may be suckled, filled, from her consoling breast, that you may savor with delight her glorious breasts." Are we not savoring with delight, her breasts of glory?

In summary, our tender Mother is omnipresent in the Old Testament, but it takes some finesse and love to discover her. Some verses cannot be understood except through the opening of the Book of Revelation by the Angel (Revelation 10,1-2): "... he had a small scroll, unrolled (*understanding of the books of the Bible in the light of Revelation*), then another book (*the Book of Revelation*) " (Revelation 20,12 / see the text "The Key of the Apocalypse").

2. In the New Testament

Matthew 1,18-25: Mary's attitude is admirable, as, she knew she was pregnant by the action of the Holy Spirit, she says naught to Joseph. She totally relies on our Father. The miracle operated in her was so great, and because of her noble delicacy, to speak of. She preferred silence and total abandonment to our Father.

Likewise Joseph, in secret thought of repudiating her so to protect her. He had a lot of admiration for his young fiancee, so noble and pure, so radiant, to act otherwise. What he saw before him, the pure radiance of this young girl full of grace, did not correspond to a pregnancy caused by "someone else". He could not imagine that this "Other" was his God. Torn by this dilemma, he decides to repudiate her in secret.

At this moment, our Father, who dœs not test us beyond our strength, intervened and sent him an angel in a dream to reveal to him that what is impossible to men, is possible to God.

Luke 1,26-56: According to the testimony of Gabriel, sent by our Father, Mary is "full of grace". We should meditate deeply these three words. Our Mother is "full of grace", she overflows of it, and fills the surplus on us. No one has ever merited to be so hailed by an Archangel.

Mary is prudent. "She asked herself what this greeting could mean." If Eve had taken this prudent attitude with the serpent form the onset, she would not have fallen into the trap.

Mary has an unshakeable faith. She did not doubt for an instant like Zechariah before the Angel. She posed a question to understand: "How can this be?" It is legitimate. As soon as she understood, she believed. "Yes, blessed is she who believed that the promise made her by the Lord would be fulfilled," Elizabeth said to her under the action of the Holy Spirit.

Mary is totally abandoned to the Will of our Father. Humble and malleable, she has always been faithful in the smallest details to our Father's Plan. Before the grandeur of what was announced to her, she did not hesitate: "I am the handmaid of the Lord, let what you have said be done to me." Just after these words, the Holy Spirit descended upon Mary and impregnated her. Her spirit quivered. She was "thrilled with joy", as she reveals a bit later: The Eternal Word was made flesh.

Barely pregnant, she hurriedly visits her old cousin Elizabeth to help her in her pregnancy (verse 39). Her spirit of service pushes her to go to her aid right away, forgetting her own pregnancy.

At the voice of Mary, John leaps with joy. Similarly, us too, in hearing Mary's voice in us, leap with joy, because as with Elizabeth, she always ports her Son for us, "the blessed fruit of her womb", and communicates us the Holy Spirit with an overabundance of grace.

From verse 46, shows how Mary discerns between her soul which renders glory to the Father and her spirit which exults in joy in the fulfillment of the prophecies on the Messiah. And Mary, in her profound humility recognizes: "All generations will call me blessed."

Luke 2,1-35: Upon presentation of Jesus in the Temple, Simeon addresses himself to "Mary, his mother": "... a sword will pierce your soul so that the secret thoughts of many may be laid bare" (verse 35; corresponds exactly to the original Greek text; the hyphens introduced in the New Jerusalem Bible, Standard Edition, 1998, are confusing. They do not exist in the Greek text).

The sword which pierced the soul of our Mother at the foot of the Cross is a criterion for choosing the elect. Only those who have compassion for her and all what she has suffered in communion with her Son, will be amongst the elect. Mary, in her sufferance and total sacrifice, reveals the hearts. He who despises the tender Mother of our Savior dœs not understand her

Son's Love and excludes himself from salvation. And it is Simeon, inspired by the Holy Spirit who reveals it to us very clearly.

Luke 2,46-52: In verse 51 we see how Jesus, Son of God, was submitted to Mary, the Immaculate Conception. She had to be perfect and all pure, to be able to "command" to God. "And his mother kept all these memories in her heart" (verse 51; Luke 2,19). She had much to contemplate, our mother, because ever since the birth in a poor stable up till the teachings to the doctors in the Temple, Jesus disrupted her mentality of a young Jewish girl. And she let herself be modeled. But she could not imagine at that time still, that the Throne of Her Son announced by the Angel, would be the Cross.

John 2,1-12: Mary knows the power of her Son and at Cana, looks at Him with great gentleness. "'What dœs it matter to you and me, woman?' Jesus said" (it is the exact translation of the text; "woman" is a common word and very respectful in the countries of the region, and it is still used today in the Arab world. She is the Woman par excellence). Jesus here, answers his mother with an immense respect and love. We must deeply meditate on the exchange of glances, the intimacy, and perfect understanding between Jesus and Mary. Just after this exchange of glances, without any other words, Mary tells the servants: "Do whatever he tells you to do". She understood that her Son had yielded. Jesus cannot but grant her desire and anticipate his mission, due to his Mother's intercession. **He changes his Plan because of her**.

Mary takes care of us, her children, even in material things. The wine of Cana is the forerunner sign of another wine, which will then be transformed into the Blood of Jesus.

Mark 3,31-35: "Who is my mother? And my brothers?" Jesus teaches us to detach ourselves from the physical ties to raise us to the spiritual ones. In his infinite generosity, He broadens Mary's maternity to all his true disciples, to all those who go beyond themselves to do the Father's Will. He makes us thus, participants in Mary's Maternity and we become his brothers. It is the grand spiritual Family regenerated by His Body and His Blood, and by the bonds of Eternal Love where familial ties are surpassed.

It is why when, clinging to a physical dimension, some women cried out at him: "Blessed is the womb that bore you and the breasts that you suckled!" He makes them rise higher and answered: "Blessed are those who hear the word of God and obey it" (Luke 11,27-28).

As for Mary, she is fully his mother on the spiritual scale, because she has always accomplished the will of the Father to perfection, like no other.

John 19,25-27: Mary was in the Father's plan since the foundation of the world. She said yes to God's plan, He chose to incarnate himself in Her, and She was present at His death. Jesus on the cross, left us his Mother Mary as an inheritance. And, at the foot of the cross, Jesus spoke to her with great affection, despite his exhaustion. Every word weighed on him, because "his palate was dryer than a potsherd, his tongue stuck to his jaw..." (Psalm 22,15). In a last effort he wanted to say to John, and through John to all of us, these words as a testament: "This is your mother". On the cross, He thus bequeathed to us the most precious person: his mother, Mary, his greatest gift. "And the disciple took her into his home"... It is uniquely after this that "knowing that all was now completed"... he says: "I am thirsty" and then... "It is fulfilled". It was necessary that before saying these words, after having given us everything, He also gives us His Mother.

And at the descent off the Cross, she receives him in her arms.

Acts 1,12-14: It is Mary who gathers the disciples around her after the Passion of Jesus.

Acts 2,1: Mary is with the disciples at Pentecost. The Holy Spirit dœs not descend if our Mother is not there. He came down upon Mary to give life to Jesus. It is the plan of Salvation of the Father, because Mary is the way to reach to God.

Revelation 12: Mary also has a central role in the battle of the End of Times. She accompanies and nourishes her apostles who fight the Dragon in the "desert" (Revelation 12,14-17). In verse 1, "she is robed with the sun", as in Song of Songs 6,10. The Angel of the Apocalypse equally has "the face like the sun", because he radiates all the Light of Jesus (Revelation 10,1). Through Her and through this Angel, men of all nations are given the plenitude of the divine revelation in this End of Times.

Mary's victory occurs through the Apostles of the End of Times and the Shiites (the children of Fatima who fight the Antichrist; the moon is under the feet of the Woman). "And the devil was cast into the lake of burning Sulphur..." (Revelation 20,10).

Revelation 22,17: The Bride is us with Mary, our Mother. With her, and in her, we call Him: "Oh yes, come Lord Jesus. Amen." (Revelation 22,10-21).

His second coming, like the first, takes place through Mary.

The Bible begins and ends therefore, with Mary's presence.

BR (07.07.2008)

4

Love and Justice

Jesus came into the world to reveal to us, the face of Love of our Father:

> John 1,18: "No one has ever seen God; it is the only Son, who is nearest to the Father's heart, who has made him known."

He shows us the royal path to Salvation:

> John 15,9-12: "As the Father has loved me, so I have loved you. Remain in my love... I have told you this so that my own joy may be in you and your joy be complete. This is my commandment: love one another, AS I have loved you."
>
> John 14,23: "If anyone loves me he will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we shall come to him and make our home with him."

And John insists:

> 1 John 4,7-8: "My dear people, let us love one another... God is Love."

The Prophet Muhammad confirms this eternal Reality in saying:

> Qur'an XI; Hud,90: "And ask forgiveness of your Lord, then turn to Him; surely my Lord is Merciful, Loving, Kind (*Wadoud*)."
>
> Qur'an XIX; Mary,96: "Surely those who believe and do good deeds for them will Allah bring about love (*woudd*)."

Our Father is not only Love, he is tender Love.

Throughout his life, Jesus showed us the face of the Father's Love. But he also showed us his face of Justice:

> Matthew 6,33: "Set your hearts on His Kingdom first, **and on his righteousness**, and all these other things will be given you as well."
>
> Luke 11,42: "But alas for you Pharisees! You who pay your tithe of mint and rue and all sorts of garden herbs and overlook **justice and the love of God!** These you should have practiced, without leaving the others undone."

And Zechariah, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit praises God in saying:

> Luke 1,72-75: "Thus he shows mercy to our ancestors, thus he remembers his holy covenant, the oath he swore to our father Abraham that he would grant us, free from

> fear, to be delivered from the hands of our enemies, **to serve him in holiness and virtue** in his presence, all our days."

And the Prophet Muhammad also warns us:

> Qur'an XI; Hud,113: "And do not incline to those who are unjust, lest the fire touch you, and you have no guardians besides Allah, then you shall not be helped."

And he reveals us the face of our Father's Justice:

> Qur'an XXIV; Light,25: "On that day Allah will pay back to them in full their just reward, and they shall know that **Allah is the evident Truth**."

Love and justice are indissociable. We cannot love without practicing justice. A love where justice is absent, is not love. It is an illusion of love.

1. Old Testament

Already in the Old Testament our Father indicated this path to us:

> Micah 6,8: "What is good has been explained to you, man; this is what Yahweh asks of you: **only this, to act justly, to love tenderly and to walk humbly with your God**."

And Isaiah prophesies the coming of the Messiah in these terms:

> Isaiah 9,5-6: "For there is a child born for us, a son given to us and dominion is laid on his shoulders; and this is the name they give him: Wonder Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. Wide is his dominion in a peace that has no end, for the throne of David and for his royal power, which he establishes and makes secure **in justice and integrity**. From this time onward and for ever, the jealous love of Yahweh Sabaoth will do this."

The Psalmist, speaking prophetically to the proclaimed Messiah:

> Psalm 45,4-8: "... Ride on, in the cause of truth, religion and virtue! ... your royal scepter is a scepter of integrity: virtue you love as much as you hate wickedness..."

Uprightness and justice are the foundations of the Kingdom of our Father. This spirit of justice should also characterize the true faithful of God in the end of times. This makes up part of the Universal Restoration according to the Spirit of our Father.

> Isaiah 28,5-6: "That day, Yahweh Sabaoth will be a crown of glory and a diadem of splendor for the remnant of his people, a spirit of justice for him who sits in judgement, and a spirit of courage for him who thrusts back the attacker to the gate."

This justice that we need to have has two dimensions: the spiritual dimension and the human dimension. Both are in fact indissociable.

2. Spiritual dimension

The spiritual dimension of justice is to believe in Jesus, because He is the Messiah sent by God.

Jesus says regarding this:

> John 16,8-11: "And when he comes (*the Holy Spirit*), he will show the world how wrong it was, about sin, and about who was in the right, and about judgement... about who was in the right: proved by my going to the Father and your seeing me no more; about judgement: proved by the prince of this world being already condemned."

So, spiritual Justice is to believe that Jesus is the Messiah and that He is glorious next to the Father. That is why Paul says:

> 1 Corinthians 12,3: "It is for that reason that I want you to understand that on the one hand no one can be speaking under the influence of the Holy Spirit and say, 'Curse Jesus,' and on the other hand, no one can say, 'Jesus is Lord,' unless he is under the influence of the Holy Spirit."

It is the first criterion of the Resurrection, which characterizes the symbolic 1000 years in the Apocalypse (Revelation 20,4-5).

Since the emergence of the Beast in 1948, the 1000 years have passed and there is a second criterion of spiritual Justice. It is to believe that the Beast of the Apocalypse is Israel. The Book of Revelation "opened", since 1970, reveals the new "measure" of spiritual Justice that allows us to measure the new temple of God (Revelation 11,1).

This new "measure" of Justice has allowed many of the "dead" to be resurrected. They are all those who are committed against the Beast, against its injustice, and who have shed their blood for the Holy Cause. The blood shed for justice is them taking part in baptism (water changed into blood: Revelation 11,6), and earns them a crown in Heaven. They participate thus, in the first Resurrection.

After the fall of the Beast, many will resurrect in spirit and take part in the first Resurrection, because they will realize who the Beast was, and will shed tears of repentance for their salvation (Revelation 1,7). They are the dead "... who did not come to life until the thousand years were over; this is the first resurrection". (Revelation 20,5)

Thus, these two criteria of judgment and justice demarcate the 1000 years. After a thousand years, many from "every nation, tribe, people and language" (Revelation 7,9) will return to the true faith, as they will have resisted the Beast and will not have defiled themselves with the "famous Prostitute" (Revelation 17,1). They will understand that their commitment had contributed to the Triumph of our Father and His Messiah.

In the Book of Revelation, Jesus returns on a white horse. He is **a warrior for Justice**:

> Revelation 19,11: "And now I saw heaven open, and a white horse appear; its rider was called Faithful and True; he is a judge with integrity, a warrior for justice."

Jesus wages a war against the Beast and its allies. All those who rally to this war, sometimes without their knowledge, fight with Him and will obtain great graces of salvation. It is what the Prophet Muhammad reveals to us in Discussion n ° 1806, saying with regards to the Antichrist:

> "God will send Jesus, Son of Mary, who continues and reaches the gate of Lod (*near Tel-Aviv*)... Then Jesus will raise up a people that God will make invincible against him (*the Antichrist*) ..."

This "invincible people" corresponds to the "armies of heaven" who follow Jesus in his war (Revelation 19,14).

This war of Jesus against his enemies, is the fulfillment of Jesus' prophecy in Luke:

> Luke 19,27: "As for my enemies who did not want me for their king, bring them here and execute them in my presence."

This is the war of Justice of the Apocalypse. And Luke reveals us who these enemies are:

> Luke 19,14: "But his compatriots detested him and sent a delegation to follow him with this message, 'We do not want this man to be our king'."

The compatriots of Jesus refuse him as King, because He resists their Zionist aims. So, they crucified him.

Today, the Palestinians do not bend either, to the Zionist aims, and suffer from them the same fate, as their "Lord" (Revelation 11,8).

Jesus said:

> Matthew 5,10: "Happy those who are persecuted **in the cause of right**: theirs is the kingdom of heaven."

Jesus' appeal for Justice, "execute them in my presence", also corresponds to this call to combat in the Book of Revelation:

> Revelation 18,6-7: "She (*Babylon the great, ie Jerusalem*) must be paid double the amount she exacted. She is to have a doubly strong cup of her own mixture. Every one of her shows and orgies is to be matched by a torture or a grief! . . . "

Jesus, the King of Love, He who is "gentle and humble in heart" (Matthew 11,29), demands that we give "Babylon the Great", "torment and misery" in "double the amount".

This is his true face: Love and Justice.

Those who misread this face of our Father and do not act accordingly, still have not understood anything from the teachings of Jesus.

3. Human dimension

The human dimension of justice manifests itself on two levels:

1. For one to always act according to justice, and to be an example.

2. To denounce any kind of injustice in their entourage and at society's level.

3.1 We should always act in justice

To act justly is to act according to the disposition of giving every person their right. This is what Jesus did with his Apostles in gradually freeing their minds of racism, which was a cause of injustice.

On the inauguration of his preaching at Nazareth Jesus shocks the mentality of the Jews in the synagogue and calls for them to open up, saying:

> Luke 4,25-30: "'There were many widows in Israel, I can assure you, in Elijah's day, when heaven remained shut for three years and six months and a great famine raged throughout the land, but Elijah was not sent to any of these: he was sent to a widow at Zarephath, a Sidonian town. And in the prophet Elisha's time there were many lepers in Israel, but none of these were cured, except Naaman the Syrian.' When they heard this everyone in the synagogue was enraged. They sprang to their feet and hustled him out of the town; and they took him up to the brow of the hill their town was built on, intending to throw him down the cliff, but he slipped through the crowd and walked away."

This spirit of openness to the pagans was too strong for them. They wanted to kill him.

> Matthew 15,25-28: *By his attitude, Jesus pushes the Apostles to intercede for the healing of the daughter of a Canaanite woman, and therefore a pagan. On this occasion, he praises her faith to his Apostles. In doing so, he opened their minds to the pagans.*

Jesus praises Tyre and Sidon, who seeing the miracles of Jesus would have done penance, much more than the Jewish towns such as Chorazin and Bethsaida:

> Matthew 11,20-24: "Then he began to reproach the towns in which most of his miracles had been worked, because they refused to repent. 'Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Still, I tell you that it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon on Judgement Day as with you. And as for you, Capernaum, did you want to be exalted as high as heaven? You shall be thrown down to hell. For if the miracles done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have been standing yet. And still, I tell you that it will not go as hard with the land of Sodom on Judgement Day as with you'."

Jesus praises the faith of a Roman Centurion before His apostles:

> Matthew 8,5-12: "When he went into Capernaum a centurion came up and pleaded with him. 'Sir', he said, 'my servant is lying at home paralyzed, and in great pain.' 'I will come myself and cure him,' said Jesus. The centurion replied, 'Sir, I am not worthy to have you under my roof; just give the word and my servant will be cured. For I am under authority myself, and have soldiers under me; and I say to one man: Go, and he goes; to another: Come here, and he comes; to my servant: Do this, and he does it.' When Jesus heard this he was astonished and said to those following him, 'I tell you solemnly, nowhere in Israel have I found faith like this. And I tell you that many will come from east and west to take their places with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob at the feast in the kingdom of heaven; but the subjects of the kingdom will be turned out into the dark, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth'."
>
> Luke 10,29-37: *Jesus teaches to respect and love the Samaritans whom the Jews despised.*

With all this firm and courageous attitude, Jesus gave the Apostles a spirit of Justice.

Many years later, Luke tells us in the Acts of the Apostles of the great awareness Peter had regarding the pagans:

> Acts 10,34-35: "The truth I have now come to realize, is that God does not have favorites, but that anybody of any nationality who fears God and does what is right is acceptable to him".

The attitude and teaching of Jesus finally bore fruit with Peter. For the Jewish mentality, it was a huge upheaval and a great liberation.

Today, Jesus would say the same thing about the Palestinians, despised by all, and accused of terrorism.

It is through these strong testimonies that Jesus taught his Apostles to surpass the righteousness of the Pharisees:

> Matthew 5,20: "For I tell you, if your virtue goes no deeper than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will never get into the kingdom of Heaven."

Today, the same Spirit asks us to resist the world that overwhelms us with its superficiality, its vanity, and materialistic spirit.

Here are the modern idols that we must denounce and that want to suffocate us.

About the attitude we must have toward the rich, James also warns us, saying:

> James 2,1-9: "Well, the right thing to do is to keep the supreme Law of scripture: you must love your neighbor as yourself, but as soon as you make distinctions (*respecting too much the rich and despising the poor*) between classes of people, you are committing sin (*of Love and Justice*), and under condemnation for breaking the Law."

And Jesus teaches us:

> Matthew 5,3: "Happy are the poor in spirit: the kingdom of Heaven is theirs."

Lastly, in the Old Testament the prophet Ezekiel describes justice in these terms:

> Ezekiel 18,5-17: "The upright man is law-abiding and honest; he does not eat on the mountains (*eat the sacrifices offered to the idols today, the world and modern idols...*) or raise his eyes to the idols of the House of Israel, does not seduce his neighbor's wife... oppresses no one, returns pledges, never steals, gives his own bread to the hungry, his clothes to the naked. He never charges usury on loans, takes no interest, abstains from evil, gives honest judgment between man and man, keeps my laws (*the law of Love*) and sincerely respects my observances, such a man is truly upright. It is Yahweh who speaks..."

Justice is therefore a path that we take that helps us act according to truth, protects us from evil and makes us Live.

> Matthew 5,6: "Happy are those who hunger and thirst for what is right: they shall be satisfied."

Our Father's triumph will happen through his Justice:

> Isaiah 45,23-24: "By my own self I swear it; what comes from my mouth is truth, a word irrevocable: before me every knee shall bend, by me every tongue shall swear, saying, 'From Yahweh alone come victory and strength.' To him shall come, ashamed, all who raged against him."

3.2 Denounce any kind of injustice

Denounce any form of injustice is a sacred duty. We must not remain silent in the face of injustice. Whœver remains silent is an accomplice.

Jesus denounced injustice in many ways in his life, sometimes even in strong words and attitudes:

> Matthew 21,12-13: *Jesus denounces the trading which was introduced into the temple, and overturned the tables in the Temple.*
>
> Matthew 23,13-39: *Jesus attacks and violently denounces the scribes and Pharisees for their hypocrisy.*
>
> Matthew 16,21-23: *Peter, carrying in him the image of the glorious and triumphant Messiah, rejects the idea of the suffering of Christ. Jesus exorcises the Zionist mentality, saying with firmness*, "Get behind me, Satan! You are an obstacle in my path, because the way you think is not God's way but man's."
>
> Matthew 17,14-17: *Jesus strongly shakes his disciples because of their lack of faith. They could not heal the epileptic demoniac. He tells them*: "Faithless and perverse generation, how much longer must I be with you? How much longer must I put up with you?"

It is by rejecting this prophetic spirit of justice in their attitude and speech, and the Christ as an example, that the churches have introduced the wolves today, the Antichrist, with the sheep. They became weak and diplomatic and accepted all the controversies and all ideas in the name of love, misunderstood. With their false slogan "You must love everyone," they have crucified true love.

This is not what Jesus taught! Jesus has always condemned evil.

Jesus firmly confronts and condemns the Jews who were proud to have Abraham as a father, who did not listen to his word and wanted to kill him:

> John 8,44: "You are from your father, the devil, and you prefer to do what your father wants. He was a murderer from the start. . . "

Padre Pio said: "Evil cannot be loved."

When Jesus said "Love your enemies" (Luke 6,27), He was speaking to the racist Jews who hated and despised all non-Jews. He invites them to open up to the pagans. On the contrary, Jesus responds with great strength and dignity to the guard who had slapped him unjustly before the Jewish High Priest (John 18,22-24). He replied: "If there is some offense in what I said, point it out; but if not, why do you strike me?" (John 18,23) Jesus was strong and did not "present the other cheek." For He was reacting to an unjust act.

Paul encourages us to have this attitude by saying:

> 1 Timothy 5,22: ". . . and never make yourself an accomplice in anybody else's sin; keep yourself pure."

Not to become an accomplice, is knowing how to denounce. He who is silent, nods. We cannot remain silent before injustice. Otherwise, we are not true witnesses of Christ.

Our Father is Love, but he is also Justice. This is his true face.

Those who see only one side without acknowledging and living with the other, are in great error and fall into the trap of the Devil. They build a measure of justice with respect to their size, and thus move away from our Father. They fall into the wrong denounced by Paul:

> Romans 10,3: "Failing to recognize the righteousness that comes from God, they try to promote their own idea of it, instead of submitting to the righteousness of God."

Wœ to those who make up their own petty justice, human, instead of growing to the level of the Justice of God.

And Paul insists by saying:

> Romans 14,17: "For the kingdom of God does not mean eating or drinking this or that, it means righteousness and peace and joy brought by the Holy Spirit."

Finally, Paul in his struggles and tribulations shares with us his wonderful testimony:

> 2 Corinthians 6,4-7: "Instead, we prove we are servants of God by great fortitude in times of suffering: in times of hardship and distress; when we are flogged, or sent to prison, or mobbed; laboring, sleepless, starving. We prove we are God's servants by our purity, knowledge, patience and kindness; by a spirit of holiness, by a love free from affectation; by the word of truth and by the power of God; by being armed with the weapons of righteousness in the right hand for attack and the left hand for defense. . . "

The "weapons of righteousness" are our strength. It is knowing how to handle the "sharp double-edged sword" of Truth and Justice, which comes from the mouth of Jesus (Revelation 1,16). This sword has the power to "slip through the place where the soul is divided from the spirit... it can judge the secret emotions and thoughts" (Hebrews 4,12).

Paul adds:

> 2 Corinthians 4,2: "We will have none of the reticence of those who are ashamed, no deceitfulness or watering down the word of God; but the way we commend ourselves to every human being with a conscience is by stating the truth openly in the sight of God."

This manifestation of the Truth characterizes the Heavenly Jerusalem.

John finally summarizes the importance of justice in saying:

> 1 John 2,29: "You know that God is righteous, then you must recognize that everyone whose life is righteous has been begotten by him."

4. Justice requires firmness

In the Revelation, Jesus rules "all the nations with an iron scepter" (Revelation 12,5).

The iron scepter is firmness in Justice. The Revelation invites the "victor" to wield the iron scepter in world events through prayer and personal commitment in private and public life, by the firm attitude vis-à-vis all unrighteousness (Revelation 2,26-28).

Firmness should also characterize us when it comes to remonstrate a brother who dœs not follow the Way of the Spirit. This is the teaching of Jesus and the Apostles in this regard:

> Matthew 18,15-18: "If your brother does something wrong, go and have it out with him alone, between your two selves. If he listens to you, you have won back your brother. If he does not listen, take one or two others along with you: the evidence of two or three witnesses is required to sustain any charge. But if he refuses to listen to these, report it to the community; and if he refuses to listen to the community, treat him like a pagan or a tax collector. I tell you solemnly, whatever you bind on earth shall be considered bound in heaven; whatever you loose on earth shall be considered loosed in heaven."

> Titus 3,10-11: "If a man disputes what you teach, then after a first and a second warning, have no more to do with him: you will know that any man of that sort has already lapsed and condemned himself as a sinner."
>
> 2 Thessalonians 3,14: "If anyone refuses to obey what I have written in this letter, take note of him and have nothing to do with him, so that he will feel that he is in the wrong."
>
> Romans 16,17-18: "I implore you, brothers, be on your guard against anybody who encourages trouble or puts difficulties in the way of the doctrine you have been taught. Avoid them. People like that are not slaves of Jesus Christ, they are slaves of their own appetites, confusing the simple-minded with their pious and persuasive arguments."
>
> 1 Corinthians 5,11-13: "What I wrote was that you should not associate with a brother Christian who is leading an immoral life, or is a usurer, or idolatrous, or a slanderer, or a drunkard, or is dishonest; you should not even eat a meal with people like that. It is not my business to pass judgment on those outside. Of those who are inside, you can surely be the judges. But of those who are outside, God is the judge. You must drive out this evildoer from among you."
>
> 2 Corinthians 6,14: "Do not harness yourselves in an uneven team with unbelievers. Virtue is no companion for crime. Light and darkness have nothing in common."

And the Revelation tells us of the heavenly Jerusalem:

> Revelation 22,14-15: "Happy are those who will have washed their robes clean, so that they will have the right to feed on the tree of life and can come through the gates into the city. These others must stay outside: dogs, fortunetellers, and fornicators, and murderers, and idolaters, and everyone of false speech and false life."

Therefore judge and condemn who is unclean or idolatrous and throw him out!

And when we put someone at the door, he will only be welcomed back when and if he shows deep repentance and good fruits, according to the words of Jesus:

> Luke 17,1-4: "He said to his disciples: Causes of falling are sure to come, but alas for the one through whom they occur! It would be better for such a person to be thrown into the sea with a millstone round the neck than to be the downfall of a single one of these little ones. Keep watch on yourselves! If your brother does something wrong, rebuke him and, if he is sorry, forgive him. And if he wrongs you seven times a day and seven times comes back to you and says, 'I am sorry', you must forgive him. . . ."

The condition is repentance, sincere and visible repentance.

In summary, openness, gentleness, understanding and spontaneous forgiveness between brothers finds its limit when the red line of the justice is exceeded. When this is the case, we must respond with force and firmness to break an evil spirit.

Paul knew this limit well, when he writes:

> 1 Corinthians 4,16-21: "That is why I urge you to take me as your pattern and why I have sent you Timothy, a dear and faithful son to me in the Lord, who will remind you of my principles of conduct in Christ, as I teach them everywhere in every church. On the assumption that I was not coming to you, some of you have become filled with your own self-importance: but I shall be coming to you soon, the Lord willing, and then I shall find out not what these self-important people say, but what power they have. For the kingdom of God consists not in spoken words but in power. What do you want then? Am I to come to you with a stick in my hand or in love, and with a spirit of gentleness?"

Paul knew how to distinguish between the red line and to have, if necessary, a firm and strong Spirit. He was acting through the power of the Spirit.

It is in prayer and spiritual maturity cultivated by many biblical readings and exchanges between brothers, that judgment can be acquired over time.

Because at some point, we need to know how to go into battle with the "armor of God":

> Ephesians 6,10-17: "Put on the full armor of God so as to be able to resist the devil's tactics. For it is not against human enemies that we have to struggle, but against the principalities and the ruling forces who are masters of the darkness in this world, the spirits of evil in the heavens.That is why you must take up all God's armor, or you will not be able to put up any resistance on the evil day, or stand your ground even though you exert yourselves to the full. So stand your ground, with truth a belt round your waist, and uprightness a breastplate. . . "

Justice is an armor that allows us to counter the arrows of the enemy.

Love without strength is weakness and swallows injustice. This is not Love.

Glory to our Father who has revealed to us by Jesus, the Incarnate Word, the true face of tender Loving, but also Justice.

The triumph of the heavenly Jerusalem will be Love and Justice:

> Isaiah 62,1-4: "About Zion (spiritual) I will not be silent, about Jerusalem I shall not rest until saving justice dawns for her like a bright light and her salvation like a blazing torch.The nations will then see your saving justice, and all kings your glory, and you will be called a new name which Yahweh's mouth will reveal. You will be a crown of splendor in Yahweh's hand, a princely diadem in the hand of your God. No more will you be known as 'Forsaken' or your country be known as 'Desolation'; instead, you will be called 'My Delight is in her' and your country 'The Wedded'; for Yahveh will take delight in you and your country will have its wedding."

This is the marriage of the Lamb (Revelation 19,7) through the Bread of Life, for Isaiah continues this wonderful prophecy by saying: "No, the reapers will eat it and praise Yahweh, the harvesters will drink it in my sacred courts!" (Isaiah 62,9).

5. Messages received by Pierre 2

> Message from 08.06.1971: "Be an iron hand in a velvet glove. And the iron hand must show My anger."
>
> Message from 04.21.1971: ". . . You will be the instrument of my righteous anger, Pierre I expect that your language by My Word, strikes without mercy when I'll tell you and whenever I'll tell you. . . "
>
> Message from 08.20.1971: "The Wrath of God that is not understood the Wrath of God that is not understood, will be revealed to all. Through you."
>
> Message from 09.05.1980: "Firmness".
>
> Message from 23.02.1984: "The peace I put in your head, be conscious of it. It reflects on your face and in your eyes. Communicate it to those whom I send you, by the look, a warmed look by the love of the heart. With this look you give life. With this look, you give death. Life with a look of love and tenderness. Death with a look of anger and condemnation, as Jesus did. Work this together. You will be recognized by this formidable and invigorating look."

Messages of Jesus 27.12.1988: “May people see in you the unexpressed love from the mouth, but overflowing from the heart and the eyes. Not only love but depending on the situation, the strength, the anger or reprobation, the compassion etc.. This is how you make me present (through you) in the world, because it is me when it’s done with justice. I am eager to be recognized by you, in you, to hold you in my arms, my little children who are my great apostles on whom I can count on these End of Times. I bless you again and again and with all my heart. Nobody can defeat you because no one can defeated me and because you and I are one. Ponder these words well,. I convey them to you.”

Message from 22.11.1989: “... When I’ll see your interior apartment released from your point of view, then I can clarify my desire. When you’ll have understood, you will become the receptacle of my Spirit on earth. Then, your silence.. is more eloquent than any words. Then your eyes will weigh more than any argument This is how I want you to be:.. Worthy in silence in the face of those who rant vain great words, in the certainty that you will have the strength, the force that will shake the spiritual foundations among the men associated with the devil.

Let the events pass by looking at them from the balcony of your soul. This is how you become the nucleus acting mysteriously in the world, a celestial core that reflects fatally the divine rays against the satanic spirits and their agents on earth. You will effectively be the ‘Mystery of justice’ at work to undo the harmful effects of the ‘Mystery of injustice’ rooted in the world. You will be my Masons to build the indestructible Temple, my indestructible Temple.

Ask me for the grace to be as I want you to be.”

Message from 05.12.1990: “... You say, ‘Come, my Jesus, I love you and I’m waiting for you.’ I come just as I am. I love, but these days I’m angry too. I made you taste my Love, I also ask you to fill yourself out with my anger as Jeremiah did (Jeremiah 6,11). Because you filled with my anger, you must pour it onto the Gentiles (Jeremiah 25.15-38 / Revelation 16). Ponder this and especially put it into practice...”

Message from 22.03.1993: “We need to train a generation that casts out demons with the attitude decried in 2 John 10 (“If anyone comes to you bringing a different doctrine, you must not receive him into your house or even give him a greeting.”) And may this generation shape another. This will be the Kingdom of God. The more docile we are to your teachings and your person, the more we will succeed.”

Message from 06.03.2006: “Look at the angry face of Christ.”

Message from 12.01.2008: “It is with anger and a stern face that Jesus said to them: ‘You are from your father, the devil, and you prefer to do what your father wants!!!’” (John 8,44)

Message from 17.08.2008: “His name comes up: Justice.”

BR (22.02.2013)

5

The Day of Yahweh

The Day of Yahweh is the "great Day of His Wrath", when He will punish definitely His enemies and exalt His chosen ones. This great day had been already prophesied in the Old Testament, in the Gospel and in Saint John's Revelation.

The prophet Amos reveals:

> "For the Lord Yahweh does nothing without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets" (Amos 3,7).

And the Revelation prophesied the coming of the Great Day:

> Revelation 6,12-17: "... For the great day of their wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?"

We report here some key verses about this Great Day. Read the entire references in the Bible. See also the text "The Revelation according to Muhammad", paragraph 4, "The Hour, the day of judgement", which perfectly refers back to these biblical prophecies.

1. Old Testament

1.1 The Punishment

> Joel 2,1-12: "And Yahweh had uttered his voice before the face of his army: for his armies are exceeding great, for they are strong and execute his word: for the day of the Lord is great and very terrible: and who can stand it?"
>
> Zephaniah 1,14-18: "The great day of the Lord is near, it is near and exceeding swift: the voice of the day of Yahweh is bitter, the mighty man shall there meet with tribulation."
>
> Zephaniah 2,1-3: "Assemble yourselves together, be gathered together, O nation not worthy to be loved: Before the decree bring forth the day as dust passing away, before the fierce anger of Yahweh come upon you, **before the day of Yahweh's indignation** come upon you. Seek Yahweh, all you meek of the earth, you that have wrought his judgment: seek the just, seek the meek: if by any means you may be hid in the day of the Yahweh's indignation."
>
> Amos 5,18-20: "Woe to them that desire the day of Yahweh: to what end is it for you? The day of Yahweh is darkness, and not light."
>
> Amos 8,9-10: "And it shall come to pass **in that day**, said the Lord Yahweh, that the sun shall go down at midday, and I will make the earth dark in the day of light: and

I will turn your feasts into mourning, and all your songs into lamentation: and I will bring up sackcloth upon every back of yours, and baldness upon every head (*effects of the atomic bomb*): and I will make it as the mourning of an only son, and the latter end thereof as a bitter day" (see Revelation 18,22,24).

Jeremiah 4,23-31: "I beheld the earth, and it was void, and nothing: and the heavens, and there was no light in them. I looked upon the mountains, and behold they trembled: and all the hills were troubled. I beheld, and there was no man: and all the birds of the air were gone. I looked, and the orchard was a wilderness: and all its cities were destroyed at the presence of Yahweh, and at the presence of the wrath of his indignation."

Isaiah 13 (*particularly verses 6 to 13*): "Howl you, for the day of Yahweh is near: it shall come as a destruction from Yahweh. Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every heart of man shall melt, And shall be broken. Gripes and pains shall take hold of them, they shall be in pain as a woman in labour. Every one shall be amazed at his neighbour, their countenances shall be as faces burnt. Behold, the day of Yahweh shall come, a cruel day, and full of indignation, and of wrath, and fury, to lay the land desolate, and to destroy the sinners thereof out of it. For the stars of heaven, and their brightness shall not display their light: the sun shall be darkened in his rising, and the moon shall not shine with her light. And I will visit the evils of the world, and against the wicked for their iniquity: and I will make the pride of infidels to cease, and will bring down the arrogance of the mighty. A man shall be more precious than gold, yes a man than the finest of gold. For this I will trouble the heaven: and the earth shall be moved out of her place, for the indignation of Yahweh of hosts, and for the day of his fierce wrath."

Ezekiel 32,2-9: "Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh the king of Egypt (*The modern pagan Egypt is Israel; see Revelation 11,8*), and say to him: You are like the lion of the nations, and the dragon that is in the sea: and you did push with the horn in your rivers, and did trouble the waters with your feet, and did trample upon their streams. Therefore, thus said the Lord Yahweh: I will spread out my net over you with the multitude of many people, and I will draw you up in my net. And I will throw you out on the land, I will cast you away into the open field: and I will cause all the fowls of the air to dwell upon you, and I will fill the beasts of all the earth with you. And I will lay your flesh upon the mountains, and will fill your hills with your corruption, And I will water the earth with your stinking blood upon the mountains, and the valleys shall be filled with you. And I will cover the heavens, when you shall be put out, and I will make the stars thereof dark: I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. I will make all the lights of heaven to mourn over you: and I will cause darkness upon your land, said the Lord Yahweh, when your wounded shall fall in the midst of the land, said the Lord Yahweh. And I shall provoke to anger the heart of many people, when I shall have brought in your destruction among the nations upon the lands, which you know not."

Habakkuk 3,1-19: "Yahweh, I have heard your hearing, and was afraid. O Yahweh, your work, in the midst of the years bring it to life: In the midst of the years you shall make it known: when you are angry, you will remember mercy. God will come from the south, and the holy one from mount Pharan: His glory covered the heavens, and the earth is full of his praise. His brightness shall be as the light; horns are in his hands (*the graces coming from Jesus' Wounds*): There is his strength (*of Redemption*) hid: Death shall go before his face. And the devil shall go forth before his feet. He stood and measured the earth. He beheld, and melted the nations: and the ancient mountains were crushed to pieces. The hills of the world were bowed down by the journeys of his eternity... In your anger you will tread the earth under foot: in your wrath you will astonish the nations.

You went forth for the salvation of your people: for salvation with your Christ (*Jesus and His ones*). You struck the head of the house of the wicked: you had laid bare his foundation even to the neck..."

Joel 3,9-15: "Proclaim you this among the nations: prepare war, rouse up the strong: let them come, let all the men of war come up. Cut your ploughshares into swords, and your spades into spears. Let the weak say: 'I am strong'. Break forth, and come, all you nations, from round about, and gather yourselves together: there will Yahweh cause all you strong ones to fall down. Let them arise, and let the nations come up into the valley of Josaphat: for there I will sit to judge all nations round about. Put you in the sickles (*The sickle is the open book of the Revelation, Revelation 14,14-20*), for the harvest is ripe: come and go down, for the press is full, the fats run over: for their wickedness is multiplied. Nations, nations in the valley of the Decision: for the day of Yahweh is near in the valley of the Decision. The sun and the moon are darkened, and the stars have withdrawn their shining."

Isaiah 24,1-23: "Behold Yahweh shall lay waste the earth, and shall strip it, and shall afflict the face thereof, and scatter abroad the inhabitants thereof. And it shall be as with the people, so with the priest: and as with the servant, so with his master: as with the handmaid, so with her mistress: as with the buyer, so with the seller: as with the lender, so with the borrower: as with him that called for his money, so with him that owes. With desolation shall the earth be laid waste, and it shall be utterly spoiled: for Yahweh had spoken this word. The earth mourned, and faded away, and is weakened: the world faded away, the height of the people of the earth is weakened. And the earth is infected by the inhabitants thereof: because they have transgressed the laws, they have changed the ordinance, they have broken the everlasting covenant (*of Jesus*). Therefore shall a curse devour the earth, and the inhabitants thereof shall sin: and therefore they that dwell therein shall be mad, and few men shall be left... These (*the chosen ones*) shall lift up their voice, and shall give praise: when Yahweh shall be glorified, they shall make a joyful noise from the sea. Therefore glorify you the Lord in instruction: the name of Yahweh God of Israel in the islands of the sea. From the ends of the earth we have heard praises, the glory of the Just one (*Jesus*)!..."

Isaiah 34,1-16 (*It is a prophecy against Edom. The old Edom is located in the South of the Dead Sea and it covers a part of Negev and Jordan; thus it refers to Israel that has conquered the Negev, and to all the nations supporting it*): "Come near, you Gentiles, and hear, and hearken, you people: let the earth hear, and all that is therein, the world, and every thing that comes forth of it. For the indignation of Yahweh is upon all nations, and his fury upon all their armies: he had killed them, and delivered them to slaughter. Their slain shall be cast forth, and out of their carcasses shall rise a slink: the mountains shall be melted with their blood. And all the host of the heavens shall pine away, and the heavens shall be folded together as a book: and all their host shall fall down as the leaf falls from the vine, and from the fig tree. For my sword is inebriated in heaven: behold it shall come down upon Idumea, and upon the people of my slaughter unto judgment... For it is the day of the vengeance of the Lord, the year of recompenses of the judgment of Zion (*therefore it's really Zion to be judged*). And the streams thereof shall be turned into pitch, and the ground thereof into brimstone: and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. Night and day it shall not be quenched, the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste, none shall pass through it for ever and ever. The bittern and ericius shall possess it: and the ibis and the raven shall dwell in it: and a line shall be stretched out upon it by Yahweh, to bring it to nothing, and a plummet, unto desolation. The nobles thereof shall not be there to call upon the king (*the Zionist messiah*), and all the princes thereof shall be nothing...

thither are the vultures gathered together one to another. Search you diligently in the book of Yahweh (*the Revelation*), and read: not one of them was wanting, one had not sought for the other: for that which proceeded out of my mouth, he had commanded, and his spirit it had gathered them (*it is His Spirit that gathers us by the Angel of the Revelation*)."

The verse 17 is not clear and it seems to have been added.

Jeremiah 25,12-38: "And when the seventy years shall be expired (*70 years should be considered from Cyrus' Edict in 538 B.C., allowing the return of the Jews of Babylon to Palestine, until the end of the Times of Israel prophesised by Daniel; see Biblical Course, the Prophet Daniel*), I will punish the king of Babylon (*it is "Babylon the great" of the Revelation, Revelation 17,5 and Revelation 17,18, so Jerusalem*) and that nation, said Yahweh, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans *(symbolically Israel)*: and I will make it perpetual desolations. And I will bring upon the land all my words, that I have spoken against it, all that is written in this book (*then we need to read chapters 50 and 51 Jeremiah's prophecy against Babylon in this light; see further*), all that Jeremiah had prophesied against all nations: For they have served them, whereas they were many nations, and great kings: and I will repay them according to their deeds, and according to the works of their hands. For thus said the Yahweh, the God of Israel: Take the cup of wine of this fury at my hand: and you shall make all the nations to drink thereof, unto which I shall send you. And they shall drink, and be troubled, and be mad because of the sword, which I shall send among them. And I took the cup at the hand of Yahweh, and I presented it to all the nations to drink of it, to which Yahweh sent me: To wit, Jerusalem, and the cities of Juda, and the kings thereof, and the princes thereof: to make them a desolation, and an astonishment, and a hissing, and a curse, as it is at this day. Pharaoh the king of Egypt, and his servants, and his princes, and all his people... And all the kings of the north far and near, every one against his brother: and all the kingdoms of the earth, which are upon the face thereof: (*they are today all the kings of the world supporting Israel*)... And you shall say to them: Thus said Yahweh, the God of Israel: Drink you, and be drunken, and vomit: and fall, and rise no more, because of the sword, which I shall send among you. And if they refuse to take the cup at your hand to drink, thou shall say to them: Thus said Yahweh: Drinking you shall drink: For behold I begin to bring evil on the city wherein my name is called upon (*Jerusalem*): and shall you be as innocent and escape free? You shall not escape free: for I will call for the sword upon all the inhabitants of the earth, said Yahweh. And you shall prophesy unto them all these words, and you shall say to them: Yahweh shall roar from on high (*the Clamour of the Angel, Revelation 10,3*), and shall utter his voice from his holy habitation: roaring he shall roar upon the place of his beauty: the shout as it were of them that tread grapes shall be given out against all the inhabitants of the earth (*Revelation 14*). The noise is come even to the ends of the earth: for Yahweh enters into judgement with the nations: he enters into judgement with all flesh; the wicked I have delivered up to the sword, said Yahweh. Thus said Yahweh: Behold evil shall go forth from nation to nation: and a great whirlwind shall go forth from the ends of the earth. And the slain of Yahweh shall be at that day from one end of the earth even to the other end thereof: they shall not be lamented, and they shall not be gathered up, nor buried: they shall lie as dung upon the face of the earth. Howl, you shepherds, and cry: and sprinkle yourselves with ashes, you leaders of the flock: for the days of your slaughter and your dispersion are accomplished, and you shall fall like precious vessels. And the shepherds shall have no way to flee, nor the leaders of the flock to save themselves. A voice of the cry of the shepherds, and a howling of the principal of the flock: because

> Yahweh had wasted their pastures. And the fields of peace have been silent, because of the fierce anger of Yahweh. He has forsaken his covert as the lion, for the land is laid waste because of the wrath of the dove, and because of the fierce anger Yahweh."
>
> Isaiah 63,1-6: "Who is this that comes from Edom, with dyed garments from Bosra (*to understand the reason for Bosra: Isaiah 34,6*), this beautiful one in his robe, walking in the greatness of his strength. I, that speak justice, and am a defender to save. Why then is your apparel red, and your garments like theirs that tread in the winepress? I have trodden the winepress alone, and of the Gentiles there is not a man with me: I have trampled on them in my indignation, and have trodden them down in my wrath, and their blood is sprinkled upon my garments, and I have stained all my apparel. For the day of vengeance is in my heart, the year of my Redemption is come (*the day of the revenge will be a Great Redemption to many*). I looked about, and there was none to help: I sought, and there was none to give aid: and my own arm had saved for me, and my indignation itself had helped me. And I have trodden down the people in my wrath, and have made them drunk in my indignation, and have brought down their strength to the earth."

Jesus is the One "that comes from Edom". His Coat is stained with purple by the Blood of His Passion and, in the end of Times, by the blood of the martyrs (Revelation 19,13). Thanks to this redeeming Blood mixed together by our prayers, it is eventually His enemies' blood that spurts on His Coat the day of His Vengeance (Revelation 19,15 / Revelation 14,19-20).

"There was none to help" because everyone has abandoned Him, either the Jews supposed to believe in Him as the announced Messiah, or the people of the church who have all betrayed Him supporting the Antichrist. "and my own arm had saved for me". His arm would have been the Angel of the Revelation who has assumed his mission, alone against all, and the "children of Fatima", who have hurled themselves in this holy Battle. (see also Isaiah 59,15-20).

> Jeremiah 50,29-32: (*The prophecies against Babylon can be applied today to Israel. See Revelation 18*). "... Declare to many against Babylon, to all that bend the bow: stand together against her round about, and let nose escape; pay her according to her work: according to all that she had done, do you to her: for she had lifted up herself against the Yahweh, against the Holy One of Israel. Therefore shall her young men fall in her streets: and all her men of war shall hold their peace in that day, said Yahweh. Behold I come against you, O proud one, said Yahweh: for your Day is come, the time of your visitation. And the proud one shall fall, he shall fall down, and there shall be none to lift him up: and I will kindle a fire in his cities, and it shall devour all round about him..."
>
> Jeremiah 51,2-57: (*compare to Revelation 18*) Prophecy against Babylon: "And I will send to Babylon fanners, and they shall fan her, and shall destroy her land: for they are come upon her on every side in the Day of her Affliction... Flee you from the midst of Babylon, and let every one save his own life: be not silent upon her iniquity: for it is the time of revenge from Yahweh, he will render unto her what she had deserved. Babylon had been a golden cup in the hand of Yahweh, that made all the earth drunk: the nations have drunk of her wine, and therefore they have staggered. Babylon is suddenly fallen, and destroyed: howl for her, take balm for her pain, if so she may be healed. We would have cured Babylon, but she is not healed: let us forsake her, and let us go every man to his own land: because her judgment had reached even to the heavens, and is lifted up to the clouds. The Lord had brought forth our justices: Come, and let us declare in Zion the work of Yahweh our God... O you that dwells upon many waters, rich in treasures, your end is come for your entire destruction... You dashed together for me the weapons of war, and with you I will dash nations together, and with you I

will destroy kingdoms, and with you I will break in pieces the horse, and his rider, and with you I will break in pieces the chariot, and him that gets up into it: and with you I will break in pieces man and woman, and with you I will break in pieces the old man and the child, and with you I will break in pieces the young man and the virgin: and with you I will break in pieces the shepherd and his flock, and with you I will break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen, and with you I will break in pieces captains and rulers. And I will render to Babylon, and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil, that they have done in Zion, before your eyes, said Yahweh. Behold I come against you, you destroying mountain, said Yahweh, which corrupted the whole earth: and I will stretch out my hand upon you, and will roll thee down from the rocks, and will make you a burnt mountain (*Revelation 8,8*). And they shall not take of you a stone for the corner, nor a stone for foundations (*Jesus is the one and only Messiah, there will be no other...*), but you shall be destroyed for ever, said Yahweh... And the heavens and the earth, and all things that are in them shall give praise for Babylon: for spoilers shall come to her from the north, said Yahweh... And I will make her princes drunk, and her wise men, and her captains, and her rulers, and her valiant men: and they shall sleep an everlasting sleep, and shall awake no more, said the King whose name is Yahweh."

Isaiah 47,7-11: (*This text refers to Babylon*) "And you had said: 'I shall be a sovereign for ever': you had not laid these things to your heart, neither had you remembered your latter end. And now hear these things, you that are delicate, and dwelled confidently, that said in your heart: 'I am, and there is none else besides me: I shall not sit as a widow, and I shall not know barrenness'. These two things shall come upon you suddenly in one day, barrenness and widowhood. All things are come upon you, because of the multitude of your sorceries, and for the great hardness of your enchanters. And you had trusted in your wickedness, and had said: 'There is none that sees me'. Your wisdom, and your knowledge, this had deceived you. And you had said in your heart: 'I am, and besides me there is no other'. Evil shall come upon you, and then shall not know the rising thereof: and calamity shall fall violently upon you, which you can not keep off: misery shall come upon you suddenly, which you shall not know."

Ezekiel 38,18-23: "And it shall come to pass in that day, in the day of the coming of Gog (*actual Israel, see Revelation 20,7*) upon the land of Israel (*Palestine*), said Yahweh, that my indignation shall come up in my wrath. And I have spoken in my zeal, and in the fire of my anger, that in that day there shall be a great commotion upon the land of Israel: So that the fishes of the sea, and the birds of the air, and the beasts of the field, and every creeping thing that creeps upon the ground, and all men that are upon the face of the earth, shall be moved at my presence: and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the hedges shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground. And I will call in the sword against him in all my mountains, said Yahweh: every man's sword shall be pointed against his brother. And I will judge him with pestilence, and with blood, and with violent rain, and vast hailstones: I will rain fire and brimstone upon him, and upon his army, and upon the many nations that are with him. And I will be magnified, and I will be sanctified: and I will be known in the eyes of many nations: and they shall know that I am Yahweh."

Ezekiel 39,1-20: "... And you, O son of man, said Yahweh, say to every fowl, and to all the birds, and to all the beasts of the field: Assemble yourselves, make haste, come together from every side to my victim, which I slay for you, a great victim upon the mountains of Israel: to eat flesh, and drink blood. You shall eat the flesh of the mighty, and you shall drink the blood of the princes of the earth, of rams, and of lambs, and of he goats, and bullocks, and of all that are well fed and fat. And you shall eat the fat till you be full, and shall drink blood till you be drunk of the victim which I shall slay for

you. And you shall be filled at my table with horses, and mighty horsemen, and all the men of war, said Yahweh." (*compare to Revelation 19,17-18*).

Read also Isaiah 14,3-24 (*it applies to Babylon. Therefore the modern Israel; verse 2 is a Zionist addition*).

Conclusion

All these extremely strong prophecies about the Day of Yahweh, the Day of God's Vengeance make us realize the whole Brightness of the divine Plan revealed in the least details in the Old Testament with the same words disclosed centuries later in the Revelation. Our Dad's Genius only could do that with such a keenness along the ages.

In this light we better understand these words of the Revelation:

"But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound the trumpet, the mystery of God shall be finished, as he had declared by his servants the prophets" (Revelation 10,7).

What He had declared is the fall of the Beast. By that the "mystery of God" will be finished, that is to say all the prophecies of the Old Testament will accomplish and will become clear.

This will be the time when "vision and prophecy" will be sealed according to the words revealed to the prophet Daniel that have the same meaning:

"Seventy weeks (*symbolic; the whole history of salvation up to the end of times*) are shortened upon your people, and upon your holy city, that (*Zionist*) transgression may be finished, and sin may have an end, and iniquity may be abolished; and everlasting justice may be brought; and vision and prophecy may be fulfilled; and the saint of Saints may be anointed..." (Daniel 9,24).

"To anoint the saint of Saints" is to proclaim the word of triumph:

"The Kingdom of this world is become our Lord's and his Christ's, and he shall reign for ever and ever..." (Revelation 11,15).

All the above mentioned prophecies will be "sealed" with the next fall of the Beast and the Triumph of our Father and His Christ, Jesus, recognized as the only King.

"Amen, yes come Lord Jesus..." (Revelation 22,21).

1.2 The Consolation

After all these biblical verses about God's punishment in the Day of Yahweh, it is good to concentrate a little bit upon the Consolation promised to the chosen ones after these dark days. The Day of Yahweh will be the Day of the Consolation of all those who abode by God's Plan revealed in John's Revelation.

On that day, our Father will spread with profusion the Holy Spirit on His faithful ones:

> Joel 3,1-4: "After this, I will pour out my Spirit on all humanity. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your old men will dream dreams, your young men will see visions; and also on male and female slaves in those days I will pour out my Spirit. I will show wonders in the sky and on earth blood, fire and columns of smoke. The sun will be turned into darkness and the moon into blood before the coming of the great and terrible Day of Yahweh! At that time, whoever calls on the name of Yahweh will be saved, for in mount Zion and Jerusalem there will be those who escape as Yahweh has promised; among the survivors will be those whom Yahweh has called" (*it is the "small remnant"*).

"The moon into blood" represents today's wars in the Muslim world. In Revelation 12,1 Mary has the moon under her feet. The children of Fatima bring our Mother. Their testimony against the Antichrist up to the martyrdom equals a baptism of blood.

"Whœver calls on the name of Yahweh will be saved..." To call on Yahweh's name today corresponds to what Jesus has said to the Jews: "For I say to you, you shall not see me henceforth till you say: Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord!" (Matthew 23,39). To invoke Yahweh's name is therefore to recognize that Jesus is the Messiah who "comes in the name of the Lord". In our days we need even to recognize Jesus' Return through His Angel by the "open book" of the Revelation (Revelation 10,3; see "The Key of The Revelation"). This Angel denounces the Antichrist and inaugurates the new times.

Jesus returns by His Spirit. And we have been given this Spirit by this Angel through all his biblical-Qur'anic teachings.

> Joel 3,16-18: "And the Lord shall roar out of Zion (*the Clamour of the Angel of Revelation, Revelation 10,3*), and utter his voice from (*Heavenly*) Jerusalem: and the heavens and the earth shall be moved, and Yahweh shall be the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel (*the true "Israel"*). And you shall know that I am Yahweh your God, dwelling in Zion my holy mountain: and (*Heavenly*) Jerusalem shall be holy and strangers shall pass through it no more. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the mountains shall drop down new wine (*Symbol of the Restoration*), and the hills shall flow with milk (*purity*): and waters shall flow through all the rivers of Juda (*abundance of the Spirit*): and a fountain shall come forth of the house of Yahweh, and shall water the torrent of thorns."

In those times God will be a fortress for His people, the "mountains shall drop down new wine". It is the Consolation of the Bread of Life in the family. To be admitted to it one needs to come up very high in spirit and to accept the prophetic word of the Open Book of the Revelation to be on the "mountain" of the Universal Restoration.

Isaiah 29,17-18: "Is it not yet a very little while, and Libanus shall be turned into charmel, and charmel shall be esteemed as a forest? And in that day the deaf shall hear the words of the book, and out of darkness and obscurity the eyes of the blind shall see."

On that Day a book will bring us the light. It is the book of the Revelation opened by Jesus in Lebanon.

Eternal praise be to our Father for all His Kindness.

> Isaiah 25,1-9: "Yahweh, you are my God, I will exalt you, and give glory to your name: for you had done wonderful things, your designs of old faithful, amen. For you had reduced the city to a heap (*Jerusalem*), the strong city to ruin, the house of strangers, to be no city, and to be no more built up for ever. Therefore shall a strong people praise you, the city of mighty nations shall fear you. Because you had been a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress: a refuge from the whirlwind, a shadow from the heat. For the blast of the mighty is like a whirlwind beating against a wall. You shall bring down the tumult of strangers, as heat in thirst: and as with heat under a burning cloud, you shall make the branch of the mighty to wither away. And Yahweh shall make unto all people in this mountain, a feast of fat things, a feast of wine, of fat things full of marrow, of wine purified from the lees. And he shall destroy in this mountain the face of the bond with which all people were tied (*it is the bond of the Zionist lie*), and the web that he began over all nations. He shall cast death down headlong for ever (*Revelation 21,4 / 20,13*): and the Lord Yahweh shall wipe away tears from every face, and the reproach of his people he shall take away from off the whole earth: for Yahweh

had spoken it. And they shall say in that day: Look, this is our God, we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is Yahweh, we have patiently waited for him, we shall rejoice and be joyful in his salvation..."

Our Father prepares for us a Feast on "this mountain". This Feast is the Feast of the Knowledge by the open books (Revelation 20,12), the Feast of the Bread of Life (Revelation 3,20 / 19,9), and finally the feast "to eat the flesh" of God's enemies (Revelation 19,17-18), that is to say to pray for their defeat, and to rejoice for God's Triumph (compare to Matthew 22).

All this knowledge and active participation to God's Plan is a Resurrection to us, that will be generalized after the fall of the Beast.

Isaiah 60,1-22: "Arise, be enlightened, O Jerusalem: for your light is come, and the glory of Yahweh is risen upon you. For behold darkness shall cover the earth, and a mist the people: but Yahweh shall arise upon you, and his glory shall be seen upon you. And the Gentiles shall walk in your light, and kings in the brightness of your rising. Lift up your eyes round about, and see: all these are gathered together, they are come to you: your sons shall come from afar, and your daughters shall rise up at your side. Then shall you see, and abound, and your heart shall wonder and be enlarged, when the (*spiritual*) riches of the sea shall be converted to you, the strength of the Gentiles shall come to you... The glory of Lebanon (*the glory of the Angel of Revelation and of the "children of Fatima"*) shall come to you, the cypress, and the box tree, and the pine tree together, to beautify the place of my sanctuary: and I will glorify the place of my feet. And the children of them that afflict you, shall come bowing down to you, and all that slandered you shall worship the steps of your feet, and shall call you the "City of Yahweh" (*the Heavenly Jerusalem*), "Zion of the Holy One of Israel" (*Zion is one of the hill of Jerusalem, the spiritual Zion is the spiritual Jerusalem, see Revelation 14,1*). Because you was forsaken, and hated, and there was none that passed through you, I will make you to be an everlasting glory, a joy unto generation and generation... You shall no more have the sun for your light by day, neither shall the brightness of the moon enlighten you: but Yahweh shall be unto you for an everlasting light, and your God for your glory. Your sun shall go down no more, and your moon shall not decrease: for Yahweh shall be unto you for an everlasting light, and the days of your mourning shall be ended. And your people shall be all just, they shall inherit the land for ever (*the inner spiritual kingdom*), the branch of my planting, the work of my hand to glorify me. The least shall become a thousand (*fruitful spiritual work, many souls clarified*), and a little one a most strong nation: I Yahweh will suddenly do this thing in its time (*to compare to Revelation 21 and 22*)."

Some sentences of Isaiah 60 sounding Zionist have not been mentioned above. For example: "And you shall suck the milk of the Gentiles, and you shall be nursed with the riches of kings" (Isaiah 60,16). The prophet wrote through the prism of the Zionist mentality. We need to recognize it.

Finally the Messiah Himself speaks through the prophet Isaiah's mouth about this great deliverance that will be followed by the universal Restoration with the new "priests of Yahweh".

Isaiah 61,1-11: "The spirit Yahweh is upon me, because Yahweh had anointed me (*it is therefore a prophecy about the Messiah who speaks*): he had sent me to preach to the meek, to heal the contrite of heart, and to preach a release to the captives, and deliverance to them that are shut up. To proclaim the acceptable year of Yahweh, and the day of vengeance of our God: to comfort all that mourn: (*To appoint to the mourners of Zion; addition*), and to give them a crown for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, a

garment of praise for the spirit of grief: and they shall be called in it the mighty ones of justice, the planting of Yahweh to glorify him. And they shall build the places that have been waste from of old, and shall raise up ancient ruins (*the Restoration*), and shall repair the desolate cities, that were destroyed for generation and generation. And strangers shall stand and shall feed your flocks (*opening to all people*): and the sons of strangers shall be your husbandmen, and the dressers of your vines. But you shall be called the priests of Yahweh: to you it shall be said: You ministers of our God: you shall eat the (*spiritual*) riches of the Gentiles, and you shall pride yourselves in their glory. For your double confusion and shame, they shall praise their pare: therefore shall they receive double in their land, everlasting joy shall be unto them. For I am Yahweh that love judgment, and hate robbery in a holocaust: and I will make their work in truth, and I will make a perpetual covenant with them. And they shall know their seed among the Gentiles, and their offspring in the midst of peoples: all that shall see them, shall know them, that these are the seed which Yahweh had blessed. I will greatly rejoice in Yahweh, and my soul shall be joyful in my God: for he had clothed me with the garments of salvation: and with the robe of justice he had covered me, as a bridegroom decked with a crown, and as a bride adorned with her jewels. For as the earth brings forth her bud, and as the garden causes her seed to shoot forth: so shall the Lord Yahweh make justice to spring forth, and praise before all the nations."

Isaiah 66,10-16: "Rejoice with (*Heavenly*) Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all you that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all you that mourn for her. Before she was in labour: That you may suck, and be filled with the breasts of her consolations: that you may milk out, and flow with delights, from the abundance of her glory. For thus said Yahweh: Behold I will bring upon her as it were a river of peace, and as an overflowing torrent the glory of the Gentiles, which you shall suck; you shall be carried at the breasts, and upon the knees they shall caress you. As one whom the mother caresses, so will I comfort you, and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem. You shall see and your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb, and the hand of Yahweh shall be known to his servants, and he shall be angry with his enemies. For behold Yahweh will come with fire, and his chariots are like a whirlwind, to render his wrath in indignation, and his rebuke with flames of fire. For Yahweh shall judge by fire, and by his sword unto all flesh, and the slain of Yahweh shall be many."

And finally our Father encourages all those who bend under the burden of the final Battle, in which we are now, by these words that are addressed to us:

Isaiah 35,3-10: "Strengthen you the feeble hands, and confirm the weak knees. Say to the fainthearted: Take courage, and fear not: behold your God will bring the revenge of recompense: God himself will come and will save you... And a path and a way shall be there, and it shall be called the holy way: the unclean shall not pass over it, and this shall be unto you a straight way, so that fools shall not err therein. No lion shall be there, nor shall any mischievous beast go up by it (*the two Beast will be no longer...*), nor be found there: but they shall walk there that shall be delivered. And the redeemed of Yahweh shall return, and shall come into Zion (*Heavenly Jerusalem*) with praise, and everlasting joy shall be upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and mourning shall flee away."

1.3 God will be exalted

The Day of Yahweh will reveal before all people God's Greatness. On that day God will be exalted:

> Isaiah 2,10-21: "Enter you into the rock, and hide you in the pit from the face of the Fear of Yahweh, and from the glory of his majesty. The lofty eyes of man are humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be made to stoop: and Yahweh alone shall be exalted in that day. Because the day of Yahweh shall be upon every one that is proud and high-minded, and upon every one that is arrogant, and he shall be humbled..."
>
> Isaiah 28,5-6: "In that day Yahweh shall be a crown of glory, and a garland of joy to the residue of his people: And a spirit of judgment to him that sits in judgment, and strength to them that return out of the battle to the gate."

The battle at the door is actually intense and multiple either on a physical plan (all the unfair wars in the Middle East) or spiritual. We will win as our Father is our "strength".

> Isaiah 40,1-5 and 9-11: "Be comforted, be comforted, my people, said your God. Speak you to the heart of Jerusalem, and call to her: for her evil is come to an end, her iniquity is forgiven: she had received of the hand of Yahweh double for all her sins. The voice of one crying in the desert: Prepare you the way of Yahweh, make straight in the wilderness the paths of our God. Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low, and the crooked shall become straight, and the rough ways plain. And the glory of Yahweh shall be revealed, and all flesh together shall see, that the mouth of Yahweh had spoken... Get you up upon a high mountain, you that bringest good tidings to Zion (*it is the Angel of Revelation who rises up to the Zenith: Revelation 8,13 / 14,6*): lift up your voice with strength (*a powerful voice, Revelation 14,7*), you that brings good tidings to Jerusalem: lift it up, fear not. Say to the cities of Judah: Behold your God: Behold the Lord Yahweh shall come with strength (*the Return of Jesus*), and his arm shall rule: Behold his reward is with him and his work is before him. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather together the lambs with his arm, and shall take them up in his bosom, and he himself shall carry them that are with young."

He leads us softly to the Source of the water of Life by Jesus, the Good Shepherd (John 10) and His apocalyptic envoy.

2. New Testament

In the New Testament, Jesus has prophesied the coming of the Day of Yahweh as being a Day of great Tribulation. It will also be "**the Day when the Son of man shall be revealed**" (Luke 17,30). He has spoken to us about the Signs of His Coming at the end of Times.

Jesus has even indicated the attitude to have in those times:

It is about "to stay awake", "not to seek to save one's life, but to lose it, in order to preserve it", not to be overcharged with "surfeiting and drunkenness, and the cares of this life", "to pray at all times, that we may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that are to come, and to stand before the Son of man". Finally to participate to His great Feast of the Triumph we need to "wear the wedding garment".

Talking about His Return Jesus said:

> Matthew 24,26-31: "If therefore they shall say to you: Behold he is in the desert, go you not out: Behold he is in the closets, believe it not. For as lightning comes out of the east, and appears even into the west: so shall the coming of the Son of man be. Wheresoever the body shall be, there shall the eagles also be gathered together. And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be moved: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then

> shall all tribes of the earth mourn: and they shall see the Son of man coming in the (*inner*) clouds of heaven with much power and majesty. And he shall send his angels with a trumpet (*the book of the Revelation "open"*), and a great voice: and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the farehest pares of the heavens to the utmost bounds of them."

These Angels sent in mission must stay awake and help the others to wake up:

> Matthew 24,42: "Watch you therefore, because you know not what hour your Lord will come."

On that Day everything that has been prophesied will accomplish:

> Luke 21,20-22: "And when you shall see Jerusalem compassed about with an army; then know that the desolation thereof is at hand. Then let those who are in Judea, flee to the mountains; and those who are in the midst there of the city (*Jerusalem*), depare out: and those who are in the countries, not enter into it. For these are the days of vengeance, that all things may be fulfilled, that are written."

Everything written by the prophets of the Old Testament shall accomplish.

A very great sign of the coming of this Day is that Jerusalem is "compassed about with an army". It is since 1967 that the whole Jerusalem has been compassed. Its desolation is therefore very close (Revelation 20,7-9).

It will be a day of great tribulation as it has never been before:

> Mark 13,19-20: "For in those days shall be such tribulations, as were not from the beginning of the creation which God created until now, neither shall be (*see Daniel 12,1*). And unless the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh should be saved: but for the sake of the elect which he had chosen, he had shortened the days."

For our sake, we the chosen ones, the Lord will shorten those days. Otherwise we would have been swallowed up either spiritually or physically.

Jesus warned the Jews who were closed towards Him by saying to them:

> Luke 13,35: "Behold your house shall be left to you desolate. And I say to you, that you shall not see me till the time come, when you shall say: Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord."

Therefore until the Day when they will recognize His Messiahnism and His Return.

Finally Jesus talked to us about the rapidity of His Return and of His Day. It comes as the lightening and many will be surprised:

> Luke 17,24-37: "For as the lightning that lightens from under heaven, shines unto the pares that are under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in his day... And as it came to pass in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat and drink, they married wives, and were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all. Likewise as it came to pass, in the days of Lot: they did eat and drink, they bought and sold, they planted and built. And in the day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man shall be revealed. In that hour, he that shall be on the housetop, and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away (*no material worries*): and he

> that shall be in the field, in like manner, let him not return back. Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose it, shall preserve it. I say to you: in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Two women shall be grinding together: the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left: two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. They answering, say to him: Where, Lord? Who said to them: Wheresoever the body shall be, thither will the eagles also be gathered together (*see Revelation 19,17*)".

Eventually Jesus warns us against the everyday heaviness and He asks us to stay awake for His Return:

> Luke 21,34-36: "And take heed to yourselves, lest perhaps your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and the cares of this life, and that day come upon you suddenly. For as a snare shall it come upon all that sit upon the face of the whole earth. Watch you, therefore, praying at all times, that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that are to come, and to stand before the Son of man."

Those who will stand before the Son of man are those who will have kept the wedding dress:

> Matthew 22,1-14: "And Jesus answering, spoke again in parables to them, saying: 'The kingdom of heaven is likened to a king, who made a marriage for his son. And he sent his servants, to call them that were invited to the marriage; and they would not come. Again he sent other servants, saying: Tell them that were invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my calves and fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come you to the marriage... And the king went in to see the guests: and he saw there a man who had not on a wedding garment. And he said to him: Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? But he was silent. Then the king said to the waiters: Bind his hands and feet, and cast him into the exterior darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

The wedding dress is the true love, the deep knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, the justice, the firmness and the forgiveness from the bottom of the heart of a repented brother.

Peter and Paul also spoke about Jesus' Return and they recommended us to be "irreproachable", to be "children of light", and to "put on the breastplate of faith and love":

> 1 Corinthians 1,7-9: "So that nothing is wanting to you in any grace, waiting for the Revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ. Who also will confirm you unto the end without crime, in the day of the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful: by whom you are called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord".
>
> 1 Thessalonians 5,2-8: "For yourselves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall so come, as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, peace and security; then shall sudden destruction come upon them, as the pains upon her that is with child, and they shall not escape. But you, brothers, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. For all you are the children of light, and children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore, let us not sleep, as others do; but let us watch, and be sober. For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that are drunk, are drunk in the night. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, having on the breastplate of faith and love, and for a helmet the hope of salvation."
>
> 2 Thessalonians 1,3-10: "...Seeing it is a just thing with God to repay tribulation to them that trouble you: And to you who are troubled, rest with us when the Lord Jesus

shall be revealed from heaven, with the angels of his power (*the power of the Holy Spirit*), in a flame of fire, giving vengeance to them who know not God, and who obey not the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. Who shall suffer eternal punishment in destruction, from the face of the Lord, and from the glory of his power: When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be made wonderful in all them who have believed; because our testimony was believed upon you in that day."

Hebrews 10,23-25: "Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering for he is faithful that had promised, And let us consider one another, to provoke unto charity and to good works: Not forsaking our assembly, as some are accustomed; but comforting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching."

2 Peter 3,7-13: "But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of Judgment and perdition of the ungodly men. But of this one thing be not ignorant, my beloved, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord delays not his promise, as some imagine, but deals patiently for your sake, not willing that any should perish, but that all should return to penance. But the Day of the Lord shall come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with great violence, and the elements shall be melted with heat, and the earth and the works which are in it, shall be burnt up. Seeing then that all these things are to be dissolved, what manner of people ought you to be in holy conversation and godliness? Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the Day of the Lord, by which the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with the burning heat? But we look for new heavens and a new earth according to his promises, in which justice dwells."

Before the Greatness of our Dad's Plan, announced in the least details by the prophets of the Old Testament, by Jesus and by the Apostles, a Plan unfolding today before our eyes with our participation, we cannot help joining to the marvellous Praise Song of the Revelation:

At the opening of the Book of Revelation:

Revelation 5,12-14: "The Lamb that was slain is worthy to receive power, and divinity, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and benediction. And every creature, which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them: I heard all saying: 'To him that sits on the throne, and to the Lamb, benediction, and honour, and glory, and power, for ever and ever'. And the four Living Creatures said: 'Amen'. And the four and twenty Ancients fell down on their faces, and adored him that lives for ever and ever."

At the 7th trumpet, the time of the fall:

Revelation 11,15-17: "'The kingdom of this world is become our Lord's and his Christ's, and he shall reign for ever and ever. Amen'. And the four and twenty Ancients, who sit on their seats in the sight of God, fell on their faces and adored God, saying: 'We give you thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who are, and who was, and who are to come: because you had taken to you your great power, and you had reigned'."

After the fall of the Beast:

Revelation 19,1-4: "...'Alleluia. Salvation, and glory, and power is to our God. For true and just are his judgments, who had judged the great Prostitute *"already denounced in the Old Testament"* which corrupted the earth with her fornication, and had revenged the blood of his servants, at her hands'. And again they said: Alleluia. And her smoke

ascends for ever and ever. And the four and twenty Ancients, and the four Living Creatures fell down and adored God that sits upon the throne, saying: Amen! Alleluia!"

BR (16.12.2012 / Revised 09.01.2013)

6

The Regaining of Paradise according to the Bible and the Qur'an

Some people are convinced that there is a difference between the Bible and the Qur'an regarding Adam's sin and its transmission to the future generations.

At the light of the principles issued in "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", we have analysed and compared the Biblical texts about Adam's fall in Genesis with the texts of the Qur'an about Adam's temptation and God's reaction. That leads us automatically to consider the subject of the regaining of the Paradise or of the Garden.

In this research we have applied the principles already exposed of "relying on the Books of Enlightenment" (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,8) of the Bible and the Qur'an, of "searching the spiritual meaning" of the texts without stopping at the letter (Qur'an XXII; Pilgrimage,11), and eventually to dispute "by the best" argument (Qur'an XXIX; The Spider,46).

1. The first report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an

In this first report (Qur'an II; The Cow,34-39) God reveals:

> "We said, 'Adam, live with your wife in this garden. Both of you eat freely there as you will, but do not go near this tree, or you will both become wrongdoers.' But Satan made them slip, and removed them from the state they were in. We said, 'Get down, all of you! You will be each other's enemy. On earth you will have a place to stay and livelihood for a time'." (Qur'an II; The Cow,35-36)

The text of Adam's fall in Genesis reveals in other words the same truth:

- **Do not eat of the tree**: "And God commanded Adam, saying: 'of every tree of paradise you shall eat: But of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat. For in what day so ever you shall eat of it, you shall die the death'" (Genesis 2,16-17).
- **The Devil made them slip**: "And the serpent said to the woman: 'No, you shall not die the death. For God dœs know that in what day so ever you shall eat thereof, your eyes shall be opened: and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil'. And the woman saw that the tree was good to eat, and fair to the eyes, and delightful to behold: and she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave to her husband who did eat..." (Genesis 3,4-7).
- **Come down**: "And the Lord God sent him out of the paradise of pleasure, to till the earth from which he was taken. And he cast out Adam..." (Genesis 3,23-24).

- **You will be each other's enemy**: After having been banished from Paradise, Adam had two sons Cain and Abel. Cain killed Abel for jealousy: "Cain rose up against his brother Abel, and slew him" (Genesis 4,8). After this act God cursed Cain, as well as He had cursed the snake before. Afterwards evil increased more on earth. The song of violence of Lamech in Genesis 4,23-24 reports this symbolically. Men have therefore really become each other's enemy, as described in the Qur'an.

In the abovementioned Qur'anic text, God warned Adam not to eat the fruits from a precise tree by saying: "you will both become wrongdœrs". And further He says: "You will be each other's enemy" This is equivalent to the spiritual death. It is the meaning of God's warning in Genesis: "But of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat. For in what day so ever you shall eat of it, you shall die the death'".

The first report of Adam's temptation in the Qur'an continues as follows:

> "Then Adam received some words from his Lord and He accepted his repentance: He is the Ever Relenting, the Most Merciful. We said, 'Get down, all of you! But when Guidance comes from Me, as it certainly will, there will be no fear for those who follow My Guidance nor will they grieve." (Qur'an II; The Cow,37-38)

Adam's repentance means the he regretted his fault. However evil had been done. He had eaten from "the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil". That is by listening to the devil he wanted himself to decide what was good and what was wrong. In few words, he wanted to be independent of God.

This is what the Qur'an calls "to become wrongdœrs". The sin entered humanity through Adam. Nevertheless there has been a kind of repentance. This is clearly said in the Qur'an and in a symbolic way in the Bible: "And the Lord God made for Adam and his wife, garments of skins, and clothed them" (Genesis 3,21). God had then mercy of Adam, and He hided his nakedness. He took care of him. It is the symbol of the fact that God will not abandon him.

To notice that God has not cursed Adam as it happened afterwards to his son Cain who killed his brother (Genesis 4,11).

The consequence of this revolt against God again according to the Qur'an is that God told them "Get down". That is leave this place, leave the Garden of Eden, the Paradise. Moreover in the abovementioned verse 38 God insists: "Get down all of you!" in spite of Adam's repentance described just before. It means that not only Adam and Eve had to leave the Garden (the Paradise), but their descendants too.

Genesis says about that:

> "And He (*God*) cast out Adam; and placed before the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword, turning every way, to keep the way of the tree of life." (Genesis 3,24)

We need to distinguish between Adam's sin which is the inclination to listen to the devil and which has been inherited by all men, and the sin committed for example by our parents for which we are not responsible.

The Qur'an says about that:

> "Each soul is responsible for its own actions; no soul will bear the burden of another." (Qur'an VI; Cattle,164)

The Bible proclaims the same truth. The prophet Ezekiel had already said:

> "The soul that sins, the same shall die: the son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, and the father shall not bear the iniquity of the son." (Ezekiel 18,20)

And Jesus confirmed that answering to His disciples' question about the born blind:

> "And Jesus passing by, saw a man, who was blind from his birth: And his disciples asked him: Rabbi, who had sinned, this man, or his parents, that he should be born blind?" (John 9,1-2)

Finally after Adam's fault, God leaves the door open to a future reconciliation by saying:

> "Get down, all of you! But when Guidance comes from Me, as it certainly will." (Qur'an II; The Cow,38)

That Guidance is the one given later on by the prophets of the Old Testament, by Jesus, God's Messiah, and then by the prophet Muhammad.

Genesis reports all the same the promise of this future Guidance to find again the Way to God:

> "And the Lord God said to the serpent: I will put enmities between you and the woman, and your seed and her seed: she shall crush your head, and you shall lie in wait for her heel." (Genesis 3,15)

This woman is the Virgin Mary who gave birth to Jesus, God's Messiah, announced by the prophets of the Old Testament and attested later by the prophet Muhammad. She has crushed the Serpent, because she and her son Jesus are the only ones who have never known the sin, as attested by the prophet Muhammad in a Hadith:

> "No man is born unless the devil wounds him since his birth and he shouts loud because of this satanic wound, except Mary and her Son."

(This verse from "The Noble Discussions" is reported in the "Jalalein" interpretation of the verse 35 of the Sura The Family of 'Imran; it is a Hadith reported by Abi Houraira, see http://www.el-ilm.net/t1333-maryam-bint-imran. It is also reported in a slightly different way by Al Bokhari, see "The authentic Muslim tradition, selection of Hadiths", Fasquelle, pag.48).

Jesus and Mary only have been preserved by the contamination of Adam's sin. They have never listened to the devil's suggestions (Qur'an CXIV; Men,1-6). They lived deep down in the Paradise, in God's Garden, in a complete harmony with God. They never left it.

Their Mission is to open again the Way to us to come back there.

2. Second report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an

The second report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an provides us with other details.

> "Satan whispered to them so as to expose their nakedness, which had been hidden from them: he said, 'Your Lord only forbade you this tree to prevent you becoming angels or immortals', and he swore to them, 'I am giving you sincere advice' he lured them with lies. Their nakedness became exposed to them when they had eaten from the tree: they began to put together leaves from the Garden to cover themselves." (Qur'an VII; The Heights,18-22)

This rejoins perfectly the Biblical text:

> "And she (*Eve*) took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave to her husband who did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened: and when they perceived themselves to be naked, they sewed together fig leaves, and made themselves aprons." (Genesis 3,6-7)

The serpent therefore dangled before Adam and Eve's eyes the perspective to become "angels or immortals" or to become "gods". They have been enticed. They "fell" by the devil's seduction, as the Qur'an says, and they knew they were naked. In conclusion, they lost their innocence and their inner harmony with God. Nakedness that was originally natural and pure became object of concupiscence and shame. Sin and imbalance took over. According to the Bible and the Qur'an these are the concupiscence, the imbalance in the couple, the fleeting joy, the exhausting work, the injustice, the fact of being each other's enemy. Adam became "unhappy".

The Qur'an continues a little further by saying:

> "They (*Adam and Eve*) replied, 'Our Lord, we have wronged our souls: if You do not forgive us and have mercy, we shall be lost.' He said, 'All of you get down! You are each other's enemies. On earth you will have a place to stay and livelihood for a time.' He said, 'There you will live; there you will die; from there you will be brought out.'" (Qur'an VII; The Heights,23-25)

This text confirms that Adam and Eve did repent. They acknowledged they needed God's forgiveness. In spite of that God told them: "Get down". And He announced them they would have died on earth. It is clearly a confirmation of the Genesis text. God sent Adam and Eve away from Paradise, and they had to pass through the physical death. Genesis reveals that God told them:

> "In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread till you return to the earth, out of which you was taken: for dust you are, and into dust you shall return." (Genesis 3,19)

Further in that same Surah of the Qur'an, God reveals the already mentioned future Guidance:

> "Children of Adam, when messengers come to you from among yourselves, reciting My revelations to you, for those who are conscious of God and live righteously, there will be no fear, nor will they grieve. But those who reject Our revelations and arrogantly scorn them are the people of the Fire and there they will remain." (Qur'an VII; The Heights,35-36)

Now by listening to the prophets, and by changing life deeply man can find again the way to God. Muhammad summarises this way in the same Surah:

> "Say, 'My Lord commands righteousness. Direct your worship straight to Him wherever you pray; call on Him; devote your religion entirely to Him.'" (Qur'an VII; Al 'Araf,29)

> "Say, 'My Lord only forbids disgraceful deeds– whether they be open or hidden– and sin and unjustified aggression, and that you, without His sanction, associate things (*money, irregular pleasures etc.*) with Him, and that you say things about Him without knowledge.'" (Qur'an VII; Al 'Araf,33)

Man is free to come back to God through the Way that is indicated, or to keep on following the devil's suggestions.

Adam's sin is the disposition to listen to the Devil. This attitude established a wall between man and God. The prophet Isaiah had already said:

> "But your iniquities have divided between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you that He should not hear." (Isaiah 59,2)

And the prophet David confirms:

> "For behold I was conceived in iniquities: and in sins did my mother conceive me." (Psalm 50,7)

Adam and Eve should have never listened to the Serpent's voice. We must not talk to the devil. We close the door at him.

The book of Wisdom summarises in this way Adam's sin:

> "For God created man incorruptible, and to the image of his own likeness he made him. But by the envy of the devil, death came into the world: And they follow him that are of his side." (Wisdom 2,23-25)

We need to oppose to them Jesus' words:

> "Amen, amen I say unto you, that he who hears my word, and believes him that sent me, had life everlasting; and comes not into judgment, but is passed from death to life. Amen, amen I say unto you, that the hour comes, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live. For as the Father has life in himself, so he has given the Son also to have life in himself: And he has given him power to do judgment, because he is the Son of man." (John 5,24-27)

And also these words from Jesus to Martha, Lazarus' sister:

> "I am the resurrection and the life: he that believes in me, although he be dead, shall live: And every one that lives, and believes in me, shall not die forever." (John 11,25-26)

It is the resurrection of the soul that listens to the words of Life, that is nourished by them, and "amend" its life according to Muhammad's words: "those who fear God and amend, there will be no fear, nor will they grieve" (Qur'an VII; Al 'Araf,35; see also 1 John 3,14).

Today this amendment comes through the commitment against the Antichrist. And Jesus and Muhammad perfectly agree about that too (voir "The Antichrist in the Islam" et "The Revelation according to Muhammad").

In the end, this brief comparison between the texts of the Qur'an and the Bible shows that the two Inspired Books perfectly agree. Prophet Muhammad reported a summary of Adam's fall and of the story of his descendants. The report of the one completes that of the other as the Qur'an Itself says:

> "A Book of revelation (*the Qur'an*) well expounded, an **Arabic** Qur'an (*reading*) for people who understand. You (*Muhammad*) are not told anything **that the previous (*biblical*) messengers were not told**..." (Qur'an XLI; Revelations well expounded,3 and 43-44). (voir "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an")

Therefore there is no contradiction between the text of Adam's fall in the Bible and that of Adam's sin in the Qur'an.

Moreover the Qur'an rejoins perfectly the biblical report according to God's words just after the first report of Adam's fall:

> "Children of Israel... Have faith in My Revelation (*the Qur'an*), which confirms your Scripture (*the Bible*)." (Qur'an II; The Cow,40-41)

3. Third report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an

The third report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an still clarifies other aspects:

> "We said, 'Adam, this is your enemy, yours and your wife's: do not let him drive you out of the garden and make you miserable. In the garden you will never go hungry, feel naked, be thirsty, or suffer the heat of the sun.' But Satan whispered to Adam, saying, 'Adam, shall I show you the tree of immortality and of a kingdom that never decays?'" (Qur'an XX; Ta Ha,117-120)

God describes this way the state of the Garden: no hunger, no nakedness, no thirst, no suffering from the sun heat. It is the inner state of the soul completely satiated with God's Love and Splendour. There the soul is innocent and pure and dœsn't know nakedness. Its thirst is quenched by the vision of God's Perfection. It is impervious to the heat of the false sun of the lie. It is the state of happiness and inner harmony of the one who is completely connected to God.

In the Revelation John describes with the same words the inner state of those who have triumphed over the Great Trial of the Beast and who are dressed with white robes:

> "And one of the ancients answered, and said to me: 'These that are clothed in white robes, who are they? and whence came they?' And I said to him: 'My Lord, you knows'. And he said to me: 'These are they who are come out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and have made them white in the blood of the Lamb (*Jesus*). Therefore they are before the throne of God, and they serve him day and night in his temple: and he, that sits on the throne, shall dwell over them. They shall no more hunger nor thirst, neither shall the sun fall on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb, which is in the midst of the throne, shall rule them, and shall lead them to the fountains of the waters of life, and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." (Revelation 7,13-17)

In few words, the complete commitment against the Beast on all levels enables man to regain the inner lost Paradise. It is God's great Reward to His faithful Witnesses, those who have resisted to the Beast just to the end.

Finally in the abovementioned Surah Ta Ha, the devil dangles before Adam's eyes the perspective of "the Tree of immortality" and a "kingdom that never decays". He wants to convince him to accept an earthly kingdom with a temporal power. Adam falls into the trap and accepts. The text continues by saying: "and they both ate from it. They became conscious of their nakedness and began to cover themselves with leaves from the garden. Adam disobeyed his Lord and was led astray" (Qur'an XX; Ta Ha,121).

By accepting the earthly kingdom offered by the devil, Adam finds himself "unhappy".

It is todays Zionists situation. The devil offered them a powerful earthly kingdom, and they accepted, giving birth to the unfair State of Israel, the Antichrist announced by Jesus and Muhammad. This State is doomed to an absolute defeat, because it has challenged God (1 Samuel 8,7: "For they have not rejected you, but me (*God*), that I should not reign over them". See the text "The Drama of Jesus").

Jesus, on the contrary, had refused the earthly kingdom the devil had offered Him:

> "Again the devil took Him up into a very high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them, and said to him: All these will I give you, if falling down you will adore me. Then Jesus said to him: Begone, Satan: for it is written, The Lord your God shall you adore, and him only shall you serve. Then the devil left Him; and behold angels came and ministered to Him." (Matthew 4,8-11)

Jesus, thanks to His refusal of an earthly kingdom, wiped off Adam's fault and opened to us the Way of the Return to God our Father.

Paul says:

> "For by a man came death, and by a man the resurrection of the dead. And as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive." (1 Corinthians 15,20-22; meditate also Romans 5,10-21)

Jesus' triumph over the devil realises in two times. At a first time on the Cross "now shall the prince of this world be cast out" (John 12,31). "My kingdom is not of this world", He answered to Pilate (John 18,36) just before being condemned. Jesus preferred to go up to the Cross, rather than to accept an earthly kingdom. By dying on the Cross He eradicated from the hearts of His Apostles the waiting of a Zionist Messiah and of a Zionist Kingdom. And He eradicates also from the heart of all His future disciples the allurement of materialism and of power which are another kind of Zionism.

At a second time Jesus triumphs by His Return already begun today. This triumph will accomplish perfectly when the children of the Virgin Mary, Jesus' Mother, who are also the worthy children of Fatima, and all those who support them, animated by Jesus and Muhammad's Spirit, will definitely crush Israel, the Beast of the Revelation (voir "The Key of the Revelation" et "The Revelation according to Muhammad").

Then many souls will come back to true life (Revelation 20,13). It is the First Resurrection; it is the Resurrection of the soul that comes back to Life (Revelation 20,5). They will enter again the inner Paradise of peace, love and justice, and they will be able to eat again from "the Tree of Life":

> "Blessed are they that wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb: that they may have a right to the tree of Life, and may enter in by the gates into the City." (Revelation 22,14)

Through the fight against the Antichrist, animated by Jesus' Spirit, on His Return among us, and by Muhammad's Spirit, men have the chance to regain the state of inner harmony and love with God, lost with Adam. They shall "have at their disposal the tree of Life". It is the regaining of the lost Paradise.

This Regaining is done in a particularly efficacious way by the Bread of Life, divine Gift to all those who will have committed themselves to this fight (Revelation 3,20). It is the Table coming down from Heaven, which the prophet Muhammad talked of:

> "When the disciples said, 'Jesus, son of Mary, can your Lord send down a (laid) Table to us from Heaven?' He said, 'Beware of God if you are true believers.' They said, 'We wish to eat from it; to have our hearts reassured; to know that you have told us the truth; and to be witnesses of it (the Table).' Jesus, son of Mary, said, 'Lord, send down to us a (laid) Table from Heaven so that we can have a festival– the first and last of us– and a sign from You. Provide for us: You are the best provider.' God said, 'I will send it down to you, but anyone who disbelieves after this will be punished with a punishment that I will not inflict on anyone else in the world'." (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115)

Blessed the ones who are nourished by this Table of "Festival" which opens to us again the door of Paradise!

(voir "The Bread of Life in the Bible and in the Qur'an", "Bread of Life and new Priesthood", "Jesus restores Priesthood").

Why is that Table so important?

Jesus is the only one to come into this world with no stain of sin. His Mother had been preserved from any stain to surround Him with purity and with a heavenly environment.

By accepting to shed His Blood on the Cross, He has remedied our faults, as the prophet Isaiah had announced 7 centuries before: "But he was wounded for our iniquities, he was bruised for our sins: the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and by his bruises we are healed" (Isaiah 53,5).

His Blood washes the consequences of Adam's stain into us. He only, God's Word and God's Spirit (Qur'an IV; Women,171), could do that.

This is way Jesus' Supper, which is a sacrifice, washes our soul so powerfully. Indeed this holy Supper is the participation to Jesus' Cross and put to death as the Body and the Blood are separated as on the Cross.

Before His Passion, Jesus taking some bread and a cup of wine said to His Apostles:

> "Take you, and eat. This is my Body, which is sacrificed for you unto remission of sins.
>
> Drink you all of this. For this is My Blood of the New Covenant, which shall be shed for you and for many unto Remission of sins. Do this for a commemoration of me." (Luke 22,19-20 / Matthew 26,26-29)

The expressions "sacrificed for you" and "shed for you" indicate the Sacrifice done in the present. Thus is accomplished the prophecy of Malachi 1,10-11 where God proclaims: "But from farthest east to farthest west my name is great among the nations, and everywhere incense and a pure gift are offered to my name, since my name is great among the nations."

Jesus' Words about the Bread of Life are, and will always be, an eternal Life for all those who are nourished by It (meditate deeply John 6,32-63).

And Muhammad underlines:

> "Hell will be the reward of those who return to their Lord as evildoers: there they will stay, neither living nor dying. But those who return to their Lord as believers with righteous deeds will be rewarded with the highest of ranks of Gardens of Eden of lasting bliss graced with flowing streams, and there they will stay. Such is the reward of those who purify themselves." (Qur'an XX; Ta Ha,74-76)

To purify oneself equals to "wash one's robe". Revelation says:

> "Blessed are they that wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb: that they may have a right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in by the gates into the city." (Revelation 22,14)

It is the Regaining of Paradise. Through the Fight against the Antichrist and the participation to Jesus' Supper, the Regaining becomes possible from down here.

Finally God says to the prophet Muhammad in the Qur'an:

> "Truly We have opened up a path to clear triumph for you, so that God may forgive you your past and future sins, complete His grace upon you, guide you to a straight path, and help you mightily. It was He who made His tranquillity descend into the hearts of the believers, to add faith to their faith -the forces of the Heavens and Earth belong to God; He is all knowing and all wise- so as to admit believing men and women into Gardens graced with flowing streams, there to remain, absolving their bad deeds - a great triumph in God's eyes -!" (Qur'an XLVIII; Triumph,1-5)

And also:

> "Here is a picture of the Garden promised to the pious: rivers of water forever pure, rivers of milk forever fresh, rivers of wine, a delight for those who drink, rivers of honey clarified and pure, flow in it; there they will find fruit of every kind; and they will find forgiveness from their Lord..." (Compare to the Song of Songs 5,1) (Qur'an XLVII; Muhammad,15)

These "rivers of water forever pure" and the "rivers of wine, a delight for those who drink" correspond clearly to the Communion to the Blood of Jesus that washes us and introduces us again to the lost Paradise.

BR (18.02.2015)

7

The eschatological mystification in prophecy

1. General perspective

This conference is a testimony of God's truth and justice. It presents a prophetic judgement of the events occurring nowadays in the world.

The international events upsetting and making restless contemporary society have a spiritual background: that is the final battle between the Good and the Evil on earth. These events have been foretold by divine prophecies to warn us; they advise us prudence and vigilance in order to distinguish justice from iniquity, and truth from falsehood disguised as truth and justice. I will present these prophecies as reported by the Bible and by the prophet Muhammed.

The whole world has expressed its opinion regarding what is happening today; nations and individuals have expressed their judgements, especially concerning the greatest international problem, that is Palestine and Israel. Some militants have been qualified by the Israelis as "terrorists", while others have accused the Israelis of terrorism. In all this chaos, God has spoken to orient those searching for the truth. This word had been told many centuries ago, but mankind has forgotten it. It is time to remember these words inspired by the Creator to His prophets in order not to go away from the right path.

The object of our study is the state of Israel as a sign of the end of times, that is from a moral and prophetic point of view: the attitude toward the Jewish state is considered a criteria of judgement, men will be judged according to their being pro or against Israel. What is diriment in this business is God's judgement: is He favourable to a Jewish state or dœs He disapprove it? Because, as we will see later, God has pronounced in the Bible against the creation of a Jewish political entity.

Now the Zionists pretend that God, in the Bible, had predestined Palestine to them in order to establish a Jewish state. I affirm the opposite, demonstrating that God has never wanted the foundation of a political state for the Jews. I will confirm my convictions with the biblical books of the Old and New Testament, showing the total agreement, between all these prophecies, in condemning the attempts to create a Jewish political entity. If God has invited Abram and his descendents to settle in Canaan, this dœs not mean that the Jews were allowed to build their own state, but that the Patriarch and his descendents could have lived there in a religious community without surrendering to the temptation of politicizing their faith. In fact Judaism is a monotheistic faith aiming at elevating spiritually all mankind, and not only the Jews.

The evolution of monotheism is not for politics as the Zionists are compelling many people to believe.

The divine refusal of a Jewish state means the condemnation of any religious nationalism, be it Jewish, Christian or Islamic.

Since the subject is Israel, I will of course speak of our time Jews. I must specify that my positions are not supported by superficial and condemnable sentiments like anti-Semitism, but they are based on solid biblical grounds. Furthermore I am myself Semite and testimony in favour of an authentic Semite, Jesus the Christ.

My commitment with Jesus is a denounce of Zionist racism and a testimony for the universality of Jewish faith, completely opposite to the false Judaism of the modern Jews. We needn't be "anti-Semitic" in order to discover the Israel's lie; it is sufficient to understand the true message of Judaism as Jesus has well explained it.

I am accusing Israel as many Jews in Israel itself are, like the movement "Naturei Karta" composed of non-Zionist Jews who refuse to recognize Israel to the point of having their own passports. I am accusing Israel as a political state contrary to the divine will, a state deviated from the spiritual and universal essence of the true Judaism. I am accusing Israel of having stained Jewish faith, of preventing lots of men from seeing the splendour of the divine message due to the opacity of its racism and materialism. I am accusing Israel without fear or being myself accused of anti-Semitism by the chauvinist Zionists and their pro-Zionist allies.

The title of my conference is: "Israel: The Eschatological Mystification in prophecy". In order to be better understood, I will define the terms of this title.

The American college Dictionary defines the word "mystification" as such: "The act of imposing upon (*a person*) by playing upon his credulity; bewilder purposely". That is to deceive someone taking advantage of his/her sincerity or good faith. Defined as such, the mystification puts us in the very heart of the lie, because it is to disguise the Evil as Good, to give a false image of the truth. And it is precisely what Israel dœs pretending to be a divine product. The truth is completely different!

The truth is that the Zionist state mystifies the Kingdom of God by presenting itself like God's work on earth. Many have been seduced by the Israeli craftiness, especially among the Christians, perhaps fervent believers, but naive and "gullible".

Israel is a product of counterfeiters which dœs not escape a trained eye just as counterfeit coins are recognizable by experts.

This state attracts only the weak ones and convinces only the bewildered conscience, but it fails to convince men of integrity. On a mystical level Israel incarnates the lie, the seduction by the temporal power. It has succeeded in recruiting allies from among careerists and opportunists throughout the political world.

Denouncing a Jewish state is nothing new, but an authentic Biblical behaviour. In the past, the prophets of the Bible have always condemned the establishment of a Jewish political state, a Jewish terrestrial royalty having as monarch a Jew. Such a kingdom is a mystification, because the only true spiritual kingdom is the one whose God is the only King of the creatures. That's why the prophets have denounced the Jewish kingdom as opposite to the divine will. Nevertheless as we will later see, the Jews have insisted on having a Jew as king over them. In spite of the explicit condemnation by the Bible of a Jewish state, today's Israelis continue to present their state as the fulfilment of the divine will. Here is the mystification.

As far as the word "eschatological" is concerned, it refers to the end of times, and it derives from the Greek word "escatos", meaning "termination" (end). Israel is an eschatological phenomenon, because it had been announced by the prophecy as one of the principle signs of the end of times, and of Jesus' return as supreme Judge of whole mankind. Hence as the state of Israel has been prophesied to appear at the end of the times, I have chosen as title of this conference: "Israel: the Eschatological Mystification in prophecy".

However eschatological the Jewish state of XX century may be, there had already been in the XI century B.C. such a state under the form of a kingdom. This kingdom, established by the Jews in

spite of the divine refusal, with Saul as first king divided in two, only about hundred years after its foundation. Therefore there were two Jewish kings, one for the Northern kingdom, named Israel, and the other for the Southern kingdom, named Judea. The first disappeared quickly: fairly 100 years after its creation it was destroyed by the Assyrians in 722 B.C. The second kingdom had the same destiny a century and a half later in the year 585 B.C. devastated by the army of the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar. The Jerusalem temple was then destroyed, leaving the Zionist Jews with the secular thirst, thus become a tradition, of re-establishing the Kingdom of Israel... and so although the divine refusal so many times repeated.

After almost five centuries, and precisely in the II century BC, a new Jewish kingdom appeared under the domination of the Roman Empire with Herod the Great as first king. This kingdom, established by the Romans, was destroyed by them on hundred years later under the emperor Vespasian, when Titus, his son, invaded Jerusalem and destroyed its temple in 70 A.D. The Jews, as we know, were then dispersed throughout the four corners of the globe. Since then they have never ceased to dream of returning to Palestine in order to set up a Jewish kingdom which they believe to be messianic and for the Jews' benefit only. They keep on repeating one to the other: "Ha shana ha vaa bi Yerushalaim", meaning "the next year in Jerusalem". *(Today, on the contrary, the Jews in Israel disappointed by this State they have themselves created repeat: "Next year in Paris, Rome, New York, Russia...")*.

After 2000 years an Israeli state appeared in Palestine. The majority of Jews and Christians, deceived by the Zionist propaganda, has seen in this a divine miracle. Others, on the contrary, have understood that the reappearance of Israel means the fulfilment of the evangelical prophecies about the Antichrist.

By reappearing, this Antichrist state has explained not only the evangelical prophecies about it, but it has also cast plenty of light on the puzzling prophecies of Saint John's Revelation. This inspired and prophetical book par excellence warns us against the malefic and seductive power that would show up with force in Palestine at the end times in order to put to the test the whole world mankind.

The Antichrist has been announced by Saint John in his first letter. The apostle tells us that he will manifest at the end times and will have the distinctive character of denying Jesus as the Christ. It is Israel case, which not only denies Jesus' Messianism, but it presents himself to the Jews of all world as a Messianic state, the saviour of Jews throughout the world. This state messianism of political kind is chauvinistic, because it is restricted and reserved to one category of people only: the Jews. It is the antithesis of the universal and spiritual Messianism of Jesus, which is open to all men of good will without whatsœver religious or racial distinction.

Furthermore, Saint John's book of the Revelation warns men that a deceiving power, seen by Saint John as a "Beast", will appear in Palestine a little before Jesus' return for the final judgement. John explains that "this Beast was, and is not in the year 95 A.D. at the time of his apocalyptic visions, and shall come up out of the abyss, and go into destruction" (Revelation 17,8).

Israel, coming back to the world in 1948, has explained us this biblical prophecy which has stayed obscure for 2000 years. In fact, only this state had existed in the past, had been destroyed by Titus in the year 70 A.D., and was therefore no more in the year 95 A.D., during John's apocalyptic visions, and here it reappeared "from the abyss" to manifest to the world since 1948.

All divine prophecies foretell the "good news" of the fall of this "Beast", the Antichrist, so that Jesus of Nazareth, the only true Christ, may be glorified on earth (Apocalypse 14,6-13).

Israel is qualified as the "Beast" due to its bellicose and bestial character in the past centuries and nowadays. This nation is devoted to injustice and violence, because it can only be erected

at the detriment of human rights, particularly of the Palestinians', the legitimate and secular owners of Palestine. This is one of the reason why a Jewish state had always been condemned by God and the prophets as I will demonstrate in the first part of this conference.

2. The Bible condemns the Statehood of Judaism

The first attempt of a Jewish statehood is mentioned in the Bible in chapter 8 of the book of Judges. It happened in the 12th century B.C. Gideon, one of the judges, was at the time triumphantly waging wars in Palestine to settle the Jews there. He obtained then the trust of the community. Representatives were sent to him to push him to establish a Jewish kingdom. He, himself, should have inaugurated a royal dynasty, becoming the first king with the succeeding generations of sons following him (Judges 8,22).

However, Gideon had understood the spiritual, not political essence of Judaism. He answered to the community: "I myself shall not rule over you nor will my son rule over you because God is the one who will rule over you" (Judges 8,23). Gideon's refusal aborted this first attempt, but the seeds of politicization continued growing in the Israelites' heart, making them more aggressive toward the neighbours and more determined to choose a Jewish king.

The second attempt to establish a state was a century later, at the time of the prophet Samuel. Chapter 8 of the first book of Samuel informs us that: "all the older men of Israel collected themselves together and came to Samuel at Ramah and said to him: '... do appoint to us a king to Judge us like all nations', but in the eyes of Samuel that was bad inasmuch as they had said to him 'Do give us a king to judge us'" (1 Samuel 8,4-6).

This demonstrates that the social situation of the Jewish community was spiritual since the beginning, not nationalist, as it differed from that of all other nations. But the Jews, particularly those of today, have reduced Judaism to an Israeli nationalism, turning themselves from Israelites into Israelis. The word "Israelites" refers to the Jews as a religious community. On the other hand, the word "Israelis" refers to the Jewish "nation", to the citizens of the today State of Israel.

A distinctive trait of this second attempt is that the Bible, seizing the opportunity this time, reveals what has not been clarified at the time of the first attempt, that is that the statehood displeased not only Samuel, like Gideon before him, but above all **God**.

In fact the Bible recounts Samuel's discontentment in the Jews' demand for a king: "Samuel prayed to God, and God answered him, '...it is not you whom they have rejected, but it is I, whom they have rejected from being king over them'..." (1 Samuel 9,7).

Before this divine sentence which consolidated his conviction, Samuel had strived to convince the Jews to renounce to their nationalism; but they became more and more stubborn, demanded a king, being deaf to the divine directive, and they dethroned God Himself in order to satisfy their desires. (*Comments of the Israeli radio broadcast in 1986 regarding the French Revolution: "The French were not the first to dethrone a king (Luis XVI). We were the first to have dethroned God"*). They thus answered to Samuel: "...No; but we may be like all the nations; and that our king may judge us and go out before us, and fight our battles" (1 Samuel 8,19-20).

Analyzing these proposals, we can verify that, from the beginning, the supreme purpose of the choice of a Jewish king was the war, that is to lead the invader Israelis in a war against the local inhabitants, the legitimate owners of the land of Canaan desired by the Israelites. Yesterday as today, Israel is marked by war, irreparably condemned to recur to armed violence to usurp other people's land.

The reason for the bellicose nature of Israel is the necessity of this abnormal state to resort to any form of injustice and armed violence to satisfy its greed. It is for valid reasons that God and His prophets rose up against such its institution. The prophet Micah has denounced

with a rare force Israel crimes and, before everyone's timorous silence, this noble prophet courageously dared to speak out: "and on the other hand, I myself have become full of power with the spirit of God and justice and mightiness, in order to tell to Jacob his revolt and to Israel his sin. Hear this, you head ones of the house of Jacob and princes of the house of Israel, that abhor judgement, and pervert all equity. They build up Zion with blood and Jerusalem with iniquity..." (Micah 3,8-10). God Himself shouted His wrath from the mouth of the prophet Hosea: "They themselves have set up kings, but not because of me. They have set up princes, but I did not know it" (Hosea 8,4).

Such is the language that should be addressed to the Israelis of today. But we need the courage of the prophets to talk like them. It is really amazing that Christians, their leaders included, fear to follow the prophets' steps. Instead of honouring the testimony owed to Jesus, they keep on flattering the Israelis who deny Him.

Christians should not forget that their Teacher refused to subscribe to an Israeli state as Gideon had done before him, by escaping from the Jews who wished to make him a Zionist king as we know from chapter 6,15 of Saint John's Gospel. Again it was this political Zionist empire that the devil offered to Jesus, which He rejected with scorn (Matthew 4,8-10). One ceases to be a disciple of the Christ from the very moment he accepts the state of the Antichrist, Israel. Many have lost their souls following Zionism. On the contrary, however, every man who resists to Israel lie and fights it, is a testimony of God... , even if he were in appearance an atheist.

3. The prophets have announced Israel reappearance

The prophecies speak of the rebirth of Israel as a power of Evil and a sign of the end times. Now the Jewish state present itself as the accomplishment of the divine prophecies and as the symbol of Good. The majority of Christians, deceived by the Israeli pretence, support the state of Israel.

However, one should not believe that the Bible has announced Israel. It is false to believe that this state is a beneficial power coming from God's Will. It is true that the Bible has spoken of the return of Israel, but as a malicious and diabolical force. God has permitted this manifestation to plumb the hearts and consciences of mankind before Jesus' return. That's why the Bible has warned mankind, but this warning has been for many vain.

The Book of Revelation recommends us to have shrewdness and intelligence (Revelation 13,18 and 17,9). The hour has struck to take up these spiritual weapons in order to discern the spirit acting through the Jewish state: is it the good Spirit of the Creator or that of the deceiving demon?

The Israeli pretence has been well conceived, but human intelligence that has been cleared up is able to detect it. The divine prophecies were given to us precisely to help us to understand without any confusion the meaning of the events taking place under our eyes in the Middle East. Those who wish to be blind will not see.

The contemporary Jews rely on the obsolete prophecies of the Old Testament to convince Christians to join Israel. Collectively Christians have responded to the Israeli appeal; people and individuals have been deceived by Zionists' reasoning. However these arguments are based on false interpretations of the biblical prophecies to justify Israel political existence. It is not the Zionist astuteness to astonish us, but rather Christians' biblical ignorance and their naivety. They have gulped down all the so-called "prophetic" food offered by the Israelis for fear of being accused of "Anti-Semitism".

We need to denounce the Zionist interpretation of the Bible and the "Zionization" of the biblical texts. Because the prophecies which the Zionists refer to justify themselves cannot be applied to a contemporary Israel state. Jews and Christians know very well that these

prophecies referred to the return to Palestine of the Jews from the Assyrian-Babylonian exile, returning as a religious community, without political or nationalistic goals. This return has been accomplished in the 6th century B.C., it is clear that these prophecies have no relation with the 20th century Jewish state.

The Christ had warned against the Jewish subtleties and He had even recommended us to be watchful to keep alive our intelligence, and "to have the **strength** to escape all these things that shall come to pass..." (Luke 21,36). We have, therefore, been forewarned against Israel. Nonetheless, very few had "the strength" to resist the Zionist current that has dragged the weak ones. Jesus has still told us: "Take heed that, no man deceives your for many will come on the basis of my name, saying, 'I am the Christ', and will mislead many... then if anyone says to you 'Here is the Christ', or ,'There', do not believe it. For there shall arise false christ and false prophets and shall show great signs and wonders so as to mislead, if possible, even the chosen ones. Look I have forewarned you" (Matthew 24,4-25).

In fact Israel is a considerable wonder that has abused human masses which have been warned about the danger. Few Christians, especially among the leaders, had the strength to keep the integrity of the discernment and of the testimony they owed to Jesus, compared to the Israelis who deny Him. These letter are the "false prophets" announced by Jesus.

The Israelis are actually false prophets, because they refuse Jesus and they speak of the Zionist Christ. They had believed to have found him in Menachem Begin, former Israel prime Minister who resigned in 1983, as well as in Ariel Sharon former Secretary of Defence, dismissed after the crime of Sabra and Shatila in Lebanon in 1993, or in the rabbi Meir Kahane. However, all these one have disappointed the Zionist aspiration. Notwithstanding, the Israelis persist in their search for the Messiah...

In this way, as we can state, many Christians have joined the Israeli false prophets who are still pretending that the Christ is sometime "here" and sometime "there", as Jesus had predicted. That's why we testify that Jesus is the true Christ and Israel is the Antichrist who wants to substitute to the Christ. Possibly there is still time for the seduced Christians to wake up.

The Gospels have predicted the nowadays and hard Zionist trial as a **mystification** action appearing **suddenly** at the end of times to probe the hearts of **all** men. I shall now present the Biblical prophecies about that underlining these three aspects:

1. The mystification
2. The surprise effect because unexpected
3. Its universality

The three aspects can perfectly and only be applied to the State of Israel.

3.1 The Mystification

Israel has been announced as a mystification. We have seen that mystification is synonymous with fraudulent and abusive techniques of manipulating people of good faith.

We have also seen that the Christ had warned against false prophets at the end of times: "Be on the watch for false prophets that come to you in sheep's covering, but inside they are like ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will recognize them" (Matthew 7,15-16).

The Israelis present themselves as lambs slaughtered by Hitler. By this affective blackmail they gained the sympathy of the West. Paradoxically to survive the Antichrist needs the material and moral support from the European and North American disciples of the very Christ he refuses; therefore he dares not to attack directly the person of Jesus, denying that He is the

Christ, neither to express manifestly its opposition to Christianity, since that would be to his detriment. Hence Israel works to obtain the American and European public approval, evading the religious issue, and showing respect to Jesus claiming that He "was a Jew like them" and one of them, thus avoiding to reveal that they don't believe Him to be the awaited Messiah.

Nevertheless, they insist on certain points which the Western have been made sensitive to: to help the Jewish victims of Nazism and the people of the Bible to return to the promised land. It is by such propaganda slogans that the majority of the Western people has been abused.

The European have been made guilty by the exaggerating evidences of the holocaust phenomenon. The several organizations and ramification of the international Judaism, such as the Jewish World Congress, have obligated Western Europe, and particularly Germany, to compensate the Jews, by helping the state of Israel financially, politically, and militarily against the Arabs. The Israelis have obtained this assistance.

With the weapons received, Israel has committed countless crimes against the Palestinian and the Lebanese people particularly, and the Arabs in general. Nevertheless, the Western Christians continue to support the enemy of the Christ, making themselves accessories to the crimes.

By the powerful international lobbies at its service the Jewish state has gained the solidarity of Western Europe and the United States. Furthermore, through the almost complete control of the mass media: press, radio and television, the Zionists struggle to maintain their allies in the ignorance of what happens in Middle East. They reveal only what flatters Israel, and what gives of this state an image of prestige, presenting it as the symbol of distinction and high civilization.

On the social level, then, the modern Jews appear as victims, and on the biblical level as the chosen people returning to their so-called promised land, Palestine.

This double mystification has seduced almost all the Christian churches. The powerful Zionist soporific has put to sleep these "brides" of Christ Jesus which, with the passing of time, have forgotten to remain alert, as their Bridegroom had asked them. It is true that the Vatican has not officially recognized the State of Israel, but Israel's leaders have been officially and sumptuously received there as heads of a state. Golda Meir, late former prime Minister of Israel, was graciously granted an audience by pope Paul VI, to whom she expressed her indignation for what many Jews had suffered, because of the cross that was hanging on the wall behind him. Never this Christian leader, as many of his successors, has dared to ask the Israeli celebrity visiting him what they thought of Jesus and of His put to the cross. Moreover, Israel has its "official" representatives at the Vatican even in the absence of formal diplomatic relations between the two "States". *I put the word "States" in quotes since neither the one, nor the other is justified to exist politically. In fact, the Vatican "State", as a political entity, is a nationalism condemned by Jesus as it is the State of Israel.*

The sly and hypocritical relationships existing between Israel and the Vatican underline the severity of the Christians' abdication in favour of the Israeli Antichrist.

Yet, it is against the Israeli deception that the Gospel had forewarned us. Today those who present themselves to us under the disguise of Judaism are unmasked immediately by John's Revelation, which reveals them as charlatans and "usurpers of the title of Jews". They are denounced twice by the Revelation as false Jews saying: "they say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2,9). Jesus has also said to His people in the Revelation: "Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold I will make them come and bow before your feet, and to know that I have loved you" (Revelation 3,9).

These liars are nothing but the Antichrist described by Saint John in his first letter: "Who is a liar but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is the Antichrist!" (1 John 2,22).

In his second letter John speaks again to us about this sly enemy of the Christ and he reveals to us that he consists of a group of seducers by saying: "For many deceivers have gone forth into the world, persons not confessing Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the Antichrist" (2 John 1,7).

Note that "many deceivers", plural, form together "The Deceiver" par excellence, the Antichrist, singular. This homogenous group of people, who together refuse Christ Jesus, forms one "moral person": the Antichrist. In the same way, during war times, one talks about the "enemy" (singular) to designate the enemy troops (plural).

In our case, the enemy to be fought are the Israelis denying that Jesus is the Christ. Their symbol is the state of Israel because they have been gathered there awaiting their messiah. During the time they have confusingly identified him with the Jewish state as well as with the Israeli people or with the totality of the world Jews, or still with some leader coming from their ranks.

This disorganized and vain search for a Zionist messiah highlights the mystification predicted by Jesus who had told about that: "Many shall come in my name saying, 'I am the Christ'; and shall deceive many" (Matthew 24,5). These "mystifcators" have appeared. They always pretend that with the reappearance of Israel we have entered the Messianic age, that of the Zionist and Israeli messiah. On the contrary, we remind men that the real Messianic age began 2000 years ago with the birth of Jesus of Nazareth, and we recognize in contemporary Israel time that of the Antichrist announced by the Christ and His Apostles.

The enormous mission of the Antichrist is to gather the Jews from the four corners of the earth in Palestine. This collection is the backbone of the Zionist mystification. In order to accomplish it, it is necessary that the modern Jews would be themselves seduced by the idea of being the chosen ones who have gained again their promise land. This seduction has succeeded because almost the totality of world Jews has believed in it, and have supported it willingly or unwillingly under the pressure of the world Zionism.

This is why the Revelation had predicted that it would have been Satan, and not God, to inspire this gathering of Jews in Palestine at the end of times: "Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations (that is Jews throughout the world), Gog and Magogh, to gather them together for the war... and they advanced over the breadth the earth (Palestine) and encircled the camp of the Holy ones, and the beloved city (Jerusalem)" (Revelation 20,7-9) . The mentioning of Jerusalem ("The Beloved City") indicates that the centre of the apocalyptical events, where the Antichrist is at work presently, is Palestine, and particularly Jerusalem, desired by the Israelis as capital.

This way therefore the Revelation clarifies us that the Israelis are led by Satan, their "seducer". In turn, they have become deceivers and they have succeeded in leading astray their allies by a deceiving reasoning.

In his second letter to the Thessalonians Paul too predicts the future appearance of the Antichrist who he calls "the lawless one" (or wicked one). He says that he will manage to lead astray only those who love lies, and he warns against his mystification acts with these words: "But the lawless one's presence is according to the operation of Satan with every powerful work and lying signs and portents and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: that they might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness" (2 Thessalonians 2,9-12).

The truth is that Israel is the Antichrist. Many Christians refuse this truth and prefer to follow the Israeli lie. Those who sympathize with Israel take the evil part. The Zionist state, by its powerful mass media and the art of disguise, deceives only those who have been voted

to perdition, as they did not believed to this truth we are proclaiming: **ISRAEL IS THE ANTICHRIST**.

Finally we should notice that Paul, as John, attributes this temporary power of Israel to the devil, not to God, stating that "the coming of the lawless (wicked) one is according to the operation of Satan".

The work of Israeli mystification would have succeeded perfectly if the divine prophecies hadn't been given to enlighten us in a world obscured by Zionist lies.

3.2 Israel is Announced as the Unexpected Trial

The apocalyptical trial has been prophesied as a sudden phenomenon; it is by the unexpected appearance of the Antichrist that God will test the hearts of men at the end of times before the Christ's return as universal judge.

Jesus had said about that: "If the householder had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have kept awake and not allowed his house to be broken into. On this account you too prove yourselves ready, because at a hour that you do not think to be it the Son of Man will come" (to test the hearts through the Antichrist) (Matthew 24,43-44). He said again: "Certainly unless you wake up, I shall come as a thief and you will not know at all what hour I shall come upon you" (Revelation 3,3).

Paul remembers Jesus' words and asks all believers to stay awake not to be surprised: "the Day of the Lord comes as a thief in the night. For when they shall say 'peace and security', then sudden destruction comes... and they shall not escape. But you, brothers are not in darkness, that the day should overtake you as a thief" (1 Thessalonians 5,2-4).

It comes out from the prophecies that the terrible apocalyptical trial will surprise only the imprudent ones who have not kept watch in order to safeguard the integrity of their discernment. They are rejected by God. On the contrary, those, whom God will have found worthy to be alerted, will be informed by the Christ Himself, who in the Revelation says to the one who stays awake: "Because you kept the word about my endurance, I will also keep you from the hour of test, which is to come up upon the whole inhabited earth, to test those dwelling on the earth" (Revelation 3,10). Paul confirms the fact that the Christ will intervene Himself to save all those who remain faithful to His advices: "The Christ will appear to those who expect Him for their salvation" (Hebrews 9,28).

The second appearance of Christ is discreet and is not made before all, but only before those who keep vigilant with love in their hearts to wait for Him. It occurs secretly, inside the happy soul chosen by God because of its faithfulness. Those loving external manifestations and the curious ones will see nothing. In the past, Jesus would often take aside His disciples in order to further explain the parables of which He spoke, and the prophecies foretelling Him. After His Resurrection, He appeared only to His ones "to expound to them in all the Scriptures, the things that were concerning Him" (Luke 24,27). It is the same today, in these apocalyptic times: the live Christ will explain the mysteries and the eschatological prophecies only to those He judges sincere and devoted.

The sudden appearance of Israel was an unexpected event. Even the Israelites themselves did not dare to believe in it. Surprised and exalted they shouted at the miracle. In their enthusiasm they dragged along some allied Christians seduced and tempted by the lying wonders of Zionism. Surprised by the test they underwent, Israelis and asleep pro-Israelis had been taken into the pervert net of injustice and lie, which they have preferred to the truth.

3.3 Israel is Announced as the Universal Trial

The test of the end times is a promotional examination leading to Eternal Life. We are all undergoing it. Willingly or unwillingly, collectively or individually, each one conscience's with no exception is gone through with a fine-tooth comb, because Israel's influence is international. Its presence at the United Nations shows it.

In general, pro-Zionists are persons attached to Israel by way of common material interests. They are not ready to sacrifice for justice, and they do not wish, therefore, to oppose the general trend established by big powers. Being selfish they fear, first of all, for their own future and avoid, at all costs, the danger of an anti-Israeli commitment. This is the case of a vast number of Western politicians, who, in order to gain the support of the Jews in their respective countries, have satisfied the demands of the international Zionism. Among other pro-Israeli demonstrations, they had to accomplish with submission their political "pilgrim" to Israel against their will... and often against their consciences, being well aware that it was necessary for their political career. Today, one cannot progress in politics without flattering Israel.

Nevertheless, some people are well-aware of the deep meanings of events occurring nowadays in the world, particularly in the Middle East. Others, however, appear totally unaware of the serious consequences of their decisions, they commit themselves with no knowledge and without a mature reflection. This state of ignorance is due to a guilty sub-conscience that seeks to escape from the knowledge of a truth which condemns it. Only a pervert conscience is incline to Israel. An upright and awaken heart cannot be taken in by it.

That's why Jesus had sais to us: "And take heed to yourselves, lest perhaps your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and the cares of this life, and that Day come upon you **suddenly**. For as a snare shall it come upon **all** that sit upon the face of the **whole earth**. Watch you, therefore, praying at all times, that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that are to come" (Luke 21,34-36). Unfortunately, despite all these warnings, many have lost their strength, and have surrendered to the Zionist enemy, taken into the net of the Antichrist.

The universality of the apocalyptic proof has been well announced by the Gospels. Actually, the apocalyptic events occur so that, inevitably, everyone has to formulate a judgement about the protagonists. The mass media have revealed all the injustices committed and all the crimes have been brought to the open. The vast majority in the West justifies the Antichrist despite its crimes, incriminating the Zionists' victims. The Israeli snare as come upon the world as the Christ as predicted "suddenly it will come upon all that sit upon the face of the whole earth", but few people had the force to escape it.

The universality of the apocalyptical proof appears further in the extent of the harm prophesized: "...upon the earth distress of **nations**... men withering away for fear, and expectation of what shall come upon the **whole world**", Jesus had said in Luke's Gospel (Luke 21,25-26). Jesus repeats this same warning in the Revelation by declaring: "All the churches (that is to say all mankind) shall know that I am He that searches the reins and hearts" (Revelation 2,23). What frightens today the modern world is the nuclear explosion that can be triggered by the Zionists and their secret agents infiltrated everywhere.

Jesus gives us a reference point concerning the time of the trial; this point is still universal, He says: "And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the **whole world**, for a testimony to all nations, and then shall the consummation come" (Matthew 24,14). Today the Gospel has been translated into all languages and is spread all over the world. Time has, therefore, come for the universal proof, which "shall come upon the whole world" as Jesus says in the Revelation (Revelation 3,10).

This Zionist test must serve God's designs and glorify Jesus. Through it all nations will know that Jesus is the true Messiah and the Judge of mankind, as He Himself declarers "All the churches shall know that I am He that searches the reins and hearts" (Revelation 2,23).

Jesus also declares: "And immediately after the tribulation of those days... shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven: and then shall all tribes of the earth mourn" (Matthew 24,29-30). The Apocalypse also adds referring to Jesus: "Every eye shall see Him, and they also that pierced Him (Revelation 1,7). This way, thus, all men will admit that Jesus is the Christ of God even the Jews responsible for His crucifixion.

The eschatological inquiry must still gather into a huge spiritual family all Christ's disciples dispersed throughout the world. To this purpose, Jesus will send new apostles announced by the Gospel that says about that: "And the Son of Man shall send his angels (His envoys) with a trumpet, and a great voice: and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds..." (Matthew 24,30-31).

With the appearance of the Antichrist, Jesus creates a new generation of apostles since He himself had said: "Neither do they put new wine into old bottles" (Matthew 9,17), especially because these old bottles have not been faithful to testimony in favour of Jesus before the Antichrist.

The "great trumpet sound" that Christ today gives to His apostles of the end times to gather together His chosen ones is the revelation of the identity of the Antichrist. These apostles are already at work in the world.

4. The fruits of the Zionist mystification

As prophesized, the Zionist harvest has been over abundant. Hundreds of millions of souls have fallen and are continually falling into the Zionists' trap. A lot of men, and not of least importance, have ended up succumbing under the burden of the Zionists' pressure.

The Second Vatican Council, in fact, has come to the conclusion of justifying the modern day Jews, forgetting their denial of Jesus and their crimes against human rights in the Middle East. This Council invited Christians to a close collaboration with the Jews. Some bishops have even published declarations of solidarity not only with Jews, but even with the Israelis, under the pretext that Judaism is the ancestor of Christianity. Here appeared the complete success of the Zionist plan aiming at leading the Christians to recognize Israel by the bias of Judaism. Thus was established the confusion between Judaism as a religion, and Israel as a state. Christians do not discern anymore one from the other.

High responsible of the Christian clergy, particularly Catholics and Protestants, in France and in USA, have issued various pro-Jews declarations leading to an indefectible support to the state of Israel. Solidarity with this state has often been presented as a moral obligation and a faith in Christianity. Many parishes have been imposed a close collaboration not only with the Jews, but even with Israel.

The argument exploited by the Second Vatican Council was the following: what was committed during the passion of the Christ cannot be imputed indistinctly either to all the Jews living at that time, or to the present day Jews, concluding that the Church cannot forget the spiritual heritage she has in common with the Jews.

The question imposing to the conscience of a mature Christian is the following: "What common spiritual heritage can exist between those who believe to Jesus' Messianism and those who deny it?" Hadn't Jesus said to the Jews who refused Him: "If you do not believe that I am he (the Messiah), you will die in your sins" (John 8,24)? Therefore, we confirm that to the extent that one denies Jesus as the Christ, one becomes accomplice to His execution and implicated in His

crucifixion. Indeed, Paul considers that those, who have fallen into apostasy, "crucify the Son of God again and place him in open shame" (Hebrews 6,6).

Therefore, how should we qualify those who stubbornly deny Jesus as the Christ? The Gospel answers us that the Antichrist is he who denies that Jesus is the Christ. So let not the Vatican followers be displeased, but we prefer to keep to the Gospel and we denounce the Israelis as the Antichrist. We have understood that Christ's spirit is anti-Zionist.

Now there are some cardinals and other protestant leaders who dare to judge the Gospel as too anti-Semitic. About that let me mention one article published by the International Press in 1985 citing the French Information Agency and stating that "Cardinal Johannes Willebrands, in charge of the Jewish relationships in the Vatican, has admitted at Oxford that many passages of the New Testament have served to Justify anti-Semitism. After a debate at Oxford University, Cardinal Willebrands has mentioned several verses of the New Testament which, according to him, had led to anti-Semitic consequences, contributing particularly to create a negative vision of Jews and Judaism. The Cardinal particularly mentioned one verse from Saint Matthew (Matthew 27,25: "Then answered all the people, and said, 'His blood be on us and on our children'.."), and other passages from John's Gospel which present the Jews, almost with no exception, as blinded by evil". The article went on saying that "a high official of the Anglican church has declared that the church should deny certain faulty passages of the New Testament until they are purified from anti-Semitism" (see the Lebanese Journal "L'Orient-Le Jour" Friday 15th March 1985).

Therefore in this 20th century, those who call themselves disciples of Jesus and His Gospel attack the Gospel itself. By their desire to please the Jews, they annihilate their own personality and lose their discernment at the point of becoming anti-Christian without realizing it.

It is strange that no one in the Vatican, nor in the Anglican church took the Gospel's defence. The reason, as Paul had foreseen 2000 years ago, is that the Antichrist will manage to "sit in the Temple of God" (2 Thessalonians 2,4). While observing the repetition of the clerical betrayals in favour of the Jews, one may conclude that the Antichrist has already comfortably sit in the Temple of God, Vatican and elsewhere.

Every wise man using a minimum of reflection wonders why some religious leaders, so-called Christians, would be enthusiastic to "purify" the Gospel from a so-called anti-Semitism? Why didn't they talk about the attacks of the prophets of the Old Testament against the Jews? These attacks were even more acrimonious, more direct and more general, being addressed to the whole Jewish population. The following verse that the prophet Isaiah addresses to the Jewish people is a collective condemnation: "Wœ to the sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a wicked seed, ungracious children... For what shall I strike you any more, you that increase transgression? The whole head is sick, and the whole heart is sad. From the sole of the foot unto the top of the head, there is no soundness therein" (Isaiah 1,4-6). This verse is an example among many others in the Old Testament. The Gospels only reports the attitude of the majority of the Jews and the calumnious words they addressed to Jesus. By doing so, the Gospel is faithful to the truth and it reports the history objectively.

The Zionist harvest has reached all social levels: youth and elderly, religious, politicians, and civil have all fallen into the Israeli net. Many countries have fraternized with Israel; the European-Israeli fraternity groups are fully active at the services of Israel.

There are also "Christian Zionists". This word symbolizes the peak of deception since the Zionists deny Jesus and the Christians recognize Him. These Zionists, disguised as Christians, gathered in August 1985 for their first world congress. The newspaper "Le Monde" of Tuesday 3rd September 1985 reported that these people have joined together "in the same hall of the Casino in Basil, where Theodore Herzl in 1897 had addressed the first Zionist world congress,

to hold the first Christian Zionist congress". At the end of their works, almost 600 participants from 28 countries launched an appeal to Christians to support Israel. It's interesting to underline the fact that Judaism served as the springboard to the state of Israel.

This phenomenon is currently active in the United States where a vast movement of the Christian Fundamentalists brings an unconditional support to Israel. This very powerful "evangelical" movement has an incontestable influence on the pro-Israel politics of the USA.

Everywhere therefore, in the so-called free Western world, or in the nations influenced by it, no one is free to oppose to Israel without the risk of imprisonment. We see every day that the Judeo-Christian approach aims invariably at an unfailing solidarity with the Jewish state.

I have but mentioned only a few examples of the successful Zionist seduction in the world. This success demonstrates that Israel is really the lying power prophesized capable of misleading many people.

Here presented now the main prophecies regarding the abundance of the Zionist harvest: " ...and they will deceive many" (Matthew 24,5); "There shall be among you lying teachers, who shall bring in sects of perdition, and **deny the Lord** who bought them: bringing upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their riotousness..." (2 Peter 2,1-2). In specifying that these false teachers **DENY** the Lord, Peter denounces those Jews who deny Jesus; "... And all the earth was in admiration after the Beast (Israel)... And power was given him over every tribe, and people, and tongue, and nation. And all that dwell upon the earth adored him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the slain Lamb (Jesus)" (Revelation 13,3-8).

For those who keep a watchful eye these prophecies aim at the universal Zionist Mystification.

In the Muslim world, through the Qur'an the Zionists defend their cause. For examples they refer to Surah V "The Table" verses 20-21 (this enumeration is according to the Arabic Qur'an, it can differ of some verses in the different translations) of the Qur'an which reports: "And remember when Moses said to his people: '...O my people! Enter the Holy Land which Allah has assigned to you...". Many Muslims also have been convinced of the legitimate right of modern day Jews to possess Palestine, because it was "assigned" to them by God. The agreements at camp David concluded between Egypt and Israel are, at least to a great part, due to the false interpretations of such Qur'anic verses.

We must never take biblical or Qur'anic verses out of context, or be led to interpret some verses according to the Zionists' caprice. The above mentioned verses tell us that Moses had invited the Israelites who fled from Egypt to establish themselves in Palestine, entering the land from the Southern borders. This very fact is reported by the Bible in chapter 13 and 14 of the book of Numbers. The Qur'an presents this fact this way:

"Moses said to His people...: 'O my people! Enter the Holy Land which Allah has assigned to you, and turn not back (to Egypt) for then you will be returned as losers'. They said: 'O Moses! In it (this land) are a people of great strength, and we shall never enter it, till they leave it; when they leave, then we will enter'".

Moses had actually invited the Israelites to live together with their Palestinian neighbours peacefully. Instead, right from the beginning, the majority of the Jews had excluded every possibility of peaceful co-existence with the legitimate owners of the land of Canaan, demanding their departure even before installing themselves. If the Israelite community had any peaceful intentions, they would have not feared entering Canaan. Instead, wishing to appropriate the territory of these strong giants, the Jews preferred to see them leave before entering it. This attitude of "non-assimilation" has always characterized the Jewish groups often living in ghettos in the countries hosting them.

The Israelis strive to impose a Zionist comprehension of the inspired texts concerning past events; they actualize them and adapt these texts to their modern nationalistic vision. Nevertheless, the divine intention is clear right from the beginning: to introduce the Jews into Palestine in order to spread monotheism, by living peacefully with its inhabitants.

God wanted to introduce the Jews into Palestine as an **Israelite community**, and not as an **Israeli nation**. In fact, Jews are of Syrian origin as the book of Deuteronomy chapter 25,6 teaches us. They had therefore never needed another nationality in order to exist in the Middle East, either in past, or today. But the nationalistic viewpoint of the Israelites transformed into Israelis has aborted God's plan pertained to them.

In the interpretation of the inspired books, it is necessary to stress two facts:

1. The abovementioned verses are not addressed to the Israelis of the 20th century and do not justify Israeli nationalism and expansionism.

2. The Qur'an, like the Bible, denounces the break-up of the Covenant between God and the Israelites because of their unfaithfulness. God says actually in the Qur'an: "Indeed Allah took the Covenant from the Children of Israel, and We appointed twelve leaders among them. And Allah said: 'I am with you if you perform your prayers'... because of their breach of their covenant, We cursed them" (Qur'an V; The Table,12-13).

This Qur'anic curse confirms that of the Bible. Moses indeed had told to the Jewish community in the Deuteronomy: "But if thou wilt not hear the voice of the Lord your God... all these curses shall come upon you, and overtake you" (Deuteronomy 28,15-68).

Biblical prophets have unanimously denounced numerous infidelities of the Jews (Jeremiah 7,24-34 & 31,32) and, consequently, have proclaimed the rupture of the Covenant. The curse still remains moreover after having denied Jesus, the Messiah, the Founder of the New Covenant.

Both the Bible and the Qur'an condemn Israel. Let us not be mistaken about it.

5. The Prophetic Dimension of The Arab-Israeli Conflict

It can be derived from the last chapters that the Arab struggle against the state of Israel is of a spiritual and prophetic nature, being the concretization of the battle against the absolute evil incarnated in this charlatan state. Being erected contrary to divine will and upon a territory usurped through armed violence, Israel becomes the symbol of injustice. This is why all those who fight this injustice are representatives of the absolute Good on earth, soldiers of a heavenly army inspired by God and led by the Archangel Michael.

Few people realize this spiritual and apocalyptic dimensions of the Arab-Israeli conflict, in general, and of the Islam-Israeli one in particular. Unfortunately, you cannot speak of a Christian-Israeli conflict, because the majority of Christian churches are with Israel. On the other hand, however, the vast majority of the Muslims has understood that Israel is the "absolute Evil" and that "to collaborate with Israel is a sin" as quoted by the famous Shiite religious leader, Moussa El Sadr. It is precisely under this banner that the Lebanese resistance courageously struggles against the Israeli occupation in South Lebanon. This valorous national Resistance is primarily composed of Muslim Shiites.

According to the Gospel, to fight against Israel is to fight against the Antichrist, proclaiming oneself, willingly or otherwise, a disciple of Jesus Christ. On the contrary, to accept the Israeli state is equivalent to deny the Christ.

Today, the Christ is procuring new disciples according to the commitment against Israel. And it is through the alliances made with Israel that appear the betrayals against the Christ. Israel's

mystification power has superseded every limit by disguising Israeli Evil into the Absolute Good, which the Christians must protect against the Arab Muslims. The latter are represented by the Israelis as the Antichrist supported by atheistic communism. People greedy for lies have believed in this Zionist mystification. Israel, in this manner, has revealed to be that lying power sent into the world to gather around itself all the lie-lovers, as Paul has explained in the text to the Thessalonians previously cited (2 Thessalonians 2,10-11).

The Zionist charlatanism gives of Israel the image of heroic victim and of the Arabs -particularly Syria, its prime enemy nowadays- that of terrorism and of the Antichrist. This deception returns periodically in the Western press, and under different ways, even in the interpretations of the so-called prophecies of Nostradamus. The movie industry too has played a role in pushing the Christians to believe that Arabs and Muslims are the enemies. The Jew and the Israeli are always the victims or the heroœs. These movies are produced by Jewish-Israeli such as Menahem Golan. These movies are widely spread in America and in Europe.

The common popular belief of some Western Christians, particularly in the USA, about Israel can be summarized in the following three points:

1. The return of the Jews to Palestine and the foundation of a Jewish state are biblical and prophetic accomplishments.

2. With the return and foundation of this state, human History enters its final phase which will end with the war of Har Mageddon mentioned in John's Revelation (Revelation 1L6,16). It is the war against the enemy of God, the Antichrist, presented also as the enemy of the state of Israel. It comes that Israel allies fight for God.

3. After the war of Har-Mageddon will occur the second Advent of Jesus and the Jews will believe in Him.

The mistake in these points is to present the Arab and the Muslim as the Antichrist. Indeed Islam recognizes that Jesus is the Christ and it condemns the Jews who have denied Him. John's prophecy about the Antichrist can be applied only to the Israelis who refuse Jesus and want another Christ.

That's why We believe in the three abovementioned points, with only a difference -that changes the whole aspect of the problem- that Israel is the Antichrist. Here is God's enemy described by the prophecies whom Christ's true disciples must fight.

Therefore we have arrived at a conclusion contrary to those of the "Christians" allied to Israel: to fight against Israel is to fight for God and for His Christ. It is to this particular combat that Jesus invites us in the Gospel by saying: "Moreover, these enemies of mine that did not want me to become king over them, bring here and slaughter them before Me" (Luke 19,27).

The anti-Israeli conflict is concretized today around Syria. This country is Christ's answer to the Antichrist. At the end of this conference as a conclusion, I would like to address a few words regarding the prophetic apocalyptical role of Syria.

It is at this point necessary to briefly review the opinion of the Jewish biblical scholars and of the prophet Muhammad regarding this Arab-Israeli conflict:

5.1 The Jewish biblical scholars

They have used and abused Ezekiel's Chapters 38 and 39 in order to gain the sympathy of the Christians at the service of Israel. These chapters tell that at the end times, "Gog and Magog"-symbol of paganism- will come from the North against God's people established in Palestine. There God will annihilate them forever. Our modern day Jews interpret this to their own advantage, pretending to be this people of God, and pointing to Syria, supported by Russia, as being Gog and Magog coming from the Northern borders of Israel.

However, the Revelation of John interprets Ezekiel's prophecy in an altogether different manner explaining that Gog and Magog will invade Palestine from the four corners of the earth. Seduced by Satan, not led by God, they will settle upon the entire land by wars and occupy Jerusalem. But then a fire will fall from heaven to destroy them (Revelation 20,7-9). This prophecy applies to the "Jews" who have invaded Palestine from the four corners of the earth in order to occupy, by means of crimes, the entire country, including Jerusalem. God's people today are those who are undergoing Israel injustice and those who fight it.

The Jews, seduced by Satan, believe to be the "people of God" having the right upon the "promise land". They have invaded Palestine coming from the entire world, particularly from the North, as Ezekiel had told, from Russia and Poland, the original homelands of many Israeli leaders. Again, it is still from Russia, from the North, that the Jews still wish to see the millions of Jewish Russians still living there entering Israel.

Jesus returns today by His Gospel, and upset as He had done 2000 years ago, all the acquisitions of the Israeli mentality This racist mentality is due to an erroneous and Israeli-centred understanding of Judaism.

No! Judaism is not represented by the Israelis!

No! Israel dœs not represent Judaism!

True Judaism was perfectly represented and explained by Jesus. The Christ has upset all Zionist illusions by saying that the Israelis, who believed to be the first, are on the contrary the last, and the last, in the eyes of the Israelis, are the first according to God. Here is true Judaism! The "Jews" of today refuse it.

God places the Israelis at the core of injustice for having denied Jesus without reason, and for having usurped a land, slaughtering its inhabitants. The legitimate owners of the Palestine, however, groaning under the yoke of injustice, and resisting to recuperate their losses, along with their allies, are elevated to God. Blessed be these people who are hungry and thirsty for justice, as Jesus teaches; but the curse is the doom of the enemies of Christ who occupy other people's land.

5.2 The prophet Muhammad

Muhammad, like the Gospels, warns us against the Antichrist, and the Gog and Magog calamity which will fall upon Palestine from all over.

In his Spiritual Discussions Muhammad refers to the Zionist man as the enemy par excellence of the believers. He says: "The resurrection of the dead will not come about until the Muslims combat against the Jews" (No. 1818) *(The word "Zionist" is recent and could not have been used by ancient prophets). (The numeration of the Spiritual Discussions is according to the book "Manhal eI waridine" by Sobhi el Saleh, from which they have been translated).* This means that, at the end of times, the Jews will recuperate force enough to fight against the Muslims who had beat them in the past, driving them out from the Arabic peninsula.

According to the Qur'an, the Jews and the idolaters of Mecca are the believers' greatest enemies. God had said to Muhammad: "You will find that the most implacable of men in their enmity to

the faithful, are the Jews and the pagans" (Qur'an V; The Table,82). The Qur'anic inspiration differs neither from the Old Testament, denouncing the Jews' infidelity, nor from the Gospels, which qualifies them as false.

Muhammad's prophecies concerning the Antichrist lead us to conclude that this terrible enemy will originate from the Jewish world. He says in his Discussions: "Seven thousand Jews from Ispahan will follow the Antichrist" (1810). By specifying that some Jews will follow the Seducer, the prophet of the Islam already indicates to us his identity. Ispahan is the Iranian city, which includes the largest Jewish population in Iran. After the fall of the Iranian Shah, many of them emigrated to Israel. The number 7.000 is symbolic, it indicates a totality.

Muhammad further says: "The Antichrist will appear in my community (or nation). God will send against him Jesus, Son of Mary, who will follow him and will annihilate him" (No. 1808). It is precisely in the heart of the Arab nation and of the Muslim community that Israel has appeared.

The prophet of the Islam had furthermore predicted that the Antichrist would have been a deceiver and that he would have succeeded in seducing many Arabs. He therefore warns them saying: "I do not fear for you except the Antichrist... He will present himself to the people, soliciting them and they will believe in him and will answer his call..." (No. 1806). Israel has invited the Arabs to a dialogue; some have explicitly answered to his proposal, others implicitly. The agreements of "Camp David" between Egypt and Israel are typical examples of Israeli solicitations granted by Muslim Arabs, as the great Arab prophet had foreseen it.

Many Arab leaders would more overtly make deals with the Israeli nation, but do not dare to do so for fear of their own people. In fact, various Arab kings have demanded the Palestinian leaders to recognize the State of Israel; the king of Morocco has proposed to the Arabs to delegate one of the Arab leaders to propose compromises with the Jewish state in their name.

There are conflicts between the Arabs, the ones in favour, the others against its recognition. This explains the innumerable warnings by Muhammad against the Antichrist. He says to the Arabs: "The Antichrist will appear among you. That which, concerning him will have been mysterious to your will become obvious. God prohibits you to spill your brother's blood and donate your money... Wœ to you! Be prepared, do not return to being unbelievers after my departure, beating your own heads one against the other" (No. 204). Witnessing the Arabs' blood and their monies consumed by fights between themselves because of Israel -especially in Lebanon-, and yet the Arab oil put indirectly and discreetly at the service of Israel and its allies, we cannot but agree with the noble prophet of the Qur'an.

Speaking of Gog and Magog, Muhammad expresses about them the same worries he had about the Antichrist. In his Spiritual Discussions, the two catastrophes appear identical and Jesus and His ones will fight them both. Speaking of these two evils in the Discussion 1808, he says to the believers:

"I do not fear for you except the Antichrist! If he appears while I am among you, I will reject his reasoning, but if he appears and I am not among you it will be according to each one's own judgement to dispute his arguments, and for every Muslim, God will be my successor... Then Jesus will gather to fight against the Antichrist peoples all rendered invulnerable by God. As God had said to Jesus: "I have chosen faithful believers upon whom no hand shall bring defeat! And God will send Gog and Magog who will come from all parts. The first of them will cross over the lake of Tiberias. Then Jesus and his peoples -blessed be they- will intercede unto God who will send against (Gog and Magog) worms that will devour them and altogether they will be consumed quickly as if they were but one man" (No. 1808).

We have seen in the "Spiritual Discussions" No. 1808 that the Antichrist will appear among the Arab nations and that Jesus will follow and destroy it. In Discussion No. 1806, it is also

Jesus who must fight Gog and Magog. This demonstrates that the Antichrist and Gog and Magog are one and only enemy under two different names.

This fœ with an overwhelming force from the "four coins of the earth" as written in the Revelation, has invaded Palestine, since it passes through the Lake of Tiberias. Jesus and His people will win this Antichrist, the Gog and Magog at the end of times, as predicted also by the Gospel (Matthew 24,30 & Revelation 19,11-16).

Nowadays Jesus' disciples are not necessarily the traditional Christians registered in the parochial churches, but are all the courageous fighters engaged whole-heartedly in the difficult struggle against Israel and its powerful allies. Their names are written in the "Book of life of the Lamb (Jesus) who was slaughtered" (Revelation 13,8)... even though the Christian parochial churches refuse to inscribe them in their books.

6. Conclusion: Syria salvation role

Divine inspiration began discreetly in Northern Syria 4000 years ago (Genesis 11,31 - 12,5). Abram was Syrian, as we know from Deuteronomy 26,5. God began his work of salvation on earth in Syria and by a Syrian. In this end of times it is through Syria that God will triumph over the evil apostles all over the world.

On May 13th 1983 Syria officially and categorically proclaimed a definite refusal to any agreement with Israel. This Syrian "No" to Zionism upset the Israelis plans and disillusioned their hopes, as it has triggered -the slow but irreversible- process of the disintegration of the Jewish state.

That is why the United States -protectors of Israel- have tried many times and with all means to obtain from Syrian a change in its attitude. All the attempts were vain and the Syrian "No" appeared, after each attempt, resolutely stable and definitive as announced by Syria.

The consequences of Syria's steadiness quickly made themselves known. It was the direct and subtle reason for the catastrophic demission of Prime Minister Menachem Begin, in August 1983, only 3 months after the Syrian refusal. This sudden unexpected demission of a Prime Minister was unprecedented in Israel, and it surprised the world. The Israelis felt its short and long term severe effects: they understood its symbolism and talked of the fall of all the people personified in the Prime Minister, of the "decline" and "funeral of Israel".

Every effort to convince Begin to return to political life that is to normal human life was vain. Begin's total eclipse was a tremendous disappointment for all the Israelis who had seen in him during Israeli anticipated elections of 1981 -only two years before- the king and the "Messiah" of the Jews.

Another direct consequence of the Syrian "No" of 13th May 1983 was, in March 1984, the abrogation of the Lebanese-Israeli agreement of May 17th 1983. This agreement had been signed only, and although, four days after the Syrian refusal.

Its repeal, ten months later, under Syrian pressure, underlines and symbolizes the salvation role played by Syria. To some Western people this pact appeared neither important, nor efficient; but such a pact would have made Lebanon an Israeli colony at the mercy of the universal political and economic plans of Zionism. This repeal was a strong defeat to Israel's moral and political prestige and it increased its isolation.

Moreover the economic situation in Israel is catastrophic. Inflation everyday exceeds new limits obliging to massive dismissals. The shocking unemployment in Israel is due to its isolation, and it is becoming more hermetic with the opposition attitude of Syria.

To better appreciate the Syrian "No" of May 13th 1983, let us imagine what would have been the results of a Syrian "Yes" to Israel. Everything would have been, of course, different in

favour of the Jewish state, and its former resigning Prime Minister Menachem Begin would have rejoiced and been enthusiastic instead of disappearing.

Being Syria a country bordering Israel and the only direct anti-Israeli front today, it represents a struggle against the usurpers of Mideast land, particularly the Golan Heights, Syrian territory. This country of Hafez El Assad, President of Syria, is head of a resistance against the Antichrist and the symbol, which mobilizes all the thirsty for justice in the prophetic battle against the Israeli injustice.

The Syrian attitude is entirely prophetic. The spirit of the prophets who have condemned Israel is today inside Syria and its allies. The moment has come to declare with the prophet Micah to all those who are fascinated or intimidated by the Israeli usurper state:

"But truly I am full of power by the Spirit of the Lord, and of judgment, and of might to declare unto Jacob his transgression, and to Israel his sin" (Micah 3,8). Syria has put these prophetic and courageous words into practice.

God, by the mouth of the prophet Ezekiel, invites all fighters to gather to exterminate the Israeli Gog and Magog and to "eat" the enemies of God and of His Christ by saying: "Assemble yourselves, and come: Gather yourselves on every side to my sacrifice that I do sacrifice for your even a great sacrifice upon the mountains of Israel... You shall eat the flesh of the mighty and drink the blood of the princes of the earth... Thus you shall be filled at my table with horses and chariots, with mighty men, and with all men of war, said the Lord God" (Ezekiel 39,17-20).

It's important to note that, God offers this sacrifice "upon the mountains of Israel". It is, therefore, there in Israel that God leads His warriors against the Antichrist, which gathers there his people at the end of times. The "body" of the beating heart of world Zionism today is in the occupied Palestine transformed, by circumstances, into Israel.

Jesus spoke to His disciples about these events, and they wished to know where this would have taken place. Luke's Gospel reports this episode saying: "And they answered and said unto him, where Lord? And he said unto them, wheresœver the body is, there will the eagles be gathered together" (Luke 17,37). The soul of Zionism is spread throughout the world in the Zionist Jew's spirit wherever they would be. The "body" of Zionism, however, is Israel. It is there that the "eagles" should gather, that is, the soldiers of God to destroy the Antichrist's state.

Matthew uses the word "corpse" (Matthew 24,28). It expresses the "decomposed" nature of this Israeli "body" on a social, economic and moral level. The decadence of the people, who believe to be the chosen one, makes of this political entity, they have created, a dead state. Amos Kenan, known Israeli author, expressed his opinion in this way: "The Israel created by Ben Gurion gœs now to its end. The disaster in Lebanon has sealed its destiny".

God had asked even Ezekiel to convoke "the birds of every species" to eat the sacrifice offered by Him on the mountain of Israel (Ezekiel 39,17). Here also God's soldiers are symbolized by "birds", since one needs to have a noble and elevated soul, as the birds of the air, to dare to attack the enemies of God.

In John's Revelation, God repeats this appeal to war and summons His army against the two allied cursed "Beasts": Israel and the USA, saying, I cite the Revelation: "...to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; That you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them..." (Revelation 19,17-18). And John quickly adds: "And I saw the Beast (Israel) and the kings of the earth (the United States), and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse (Jesus) and against his armies (those fighting against Israel). And the Beast was taken, and with him the

false prophet (America) that had wrought miracles before him... These both were cast into the lake of fire burning with brimstone" (Revelation 19,19-20). This prophetic announce of the defeat of the two Beasts -the Israeli and the American- is a guarantee of the triumph of Syria upon its enemies.

Even the parable of the "marriage feast" (Matthew 22,1-14) refers as well to the war against Israel. During that "feast", the "meat" of the Antichrist is "devoured" by the armies of Jesus the Christ. This parable describes the wedding of the "Son of the King". The King (God) sent his servants (prophets and apostles, and then the warriors against Israel) to "call them that were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come", and they killed the servants of the King. " When the King heard, he was wroth; and he sent forth his armies and destroyed those murderers and burned up their city".

How do you explain this violence at a wedding feast?

This homicidal violence described by Matthew against servants sent to invite to a peaceful "marriage of the Son of the King" would be incomprehensible, as well as the bloody and exterminating punishment of the King against those who refused to participate to the feast, if this parable didn't imply a belligerent fact.

The comparison between the above parable and the extracts from Ezekiel and Revelation consists in the fact that the marriage feast of Matthew is not other than an invitation to a battle against Israel and its allies.

Pro-Israeli Christians not only refuse the invitation to fight Zionism, but still fight and put to death "the servants of the King" who oppose to the Israeli Antichrist.

Syria and its allies are these servants of the King sent to invite at the fight against the Zionist entity to eat the flesh of the armies of the Antichrist at the "Wedding" of the triumph of Jesus Christ, the "Son of the King". And it is precisely the reason why Syria is slandered and accused of terrorism, and, as such, is fought to death by the Antichrist!

However now the King sends His soldiers in order to exterminate the murderers of His servants. The order given by Jesus in Luke's Gospel is already in execution: "These enemies of mine that did not want me to become king over them, bring here and slaughter them before me" (Luke 19,27).

The war against Israel is not only the wedding feast of Matthew's parable, but also the messianic "Marriage of the Lamb", Jesus, in the Revelation, where God offers upon His spiritual table the meat of the Israeli and pro-Israel leaders to the guests who would answer to His call to devour it in triumph and to satiety.

"Blessed are those invited to the supper of the Lamb's marriage" (Revelation 19,9) says God to all those presenting themselves to fight the Antichrist.

Syria has generously answered to the divine call: blessed be it!

Syria's prophetic role against Israel in the 20th century inserts in the frame of what the prophets have called "The Day of the Lord". The ancient Israelites waited impatiently for this day, believing it to be the great day of their victory over their Assyrian, Syrian, Babylonian or Roman enemies according to the different ages of the Israeli nationalism history. The Israelis of today too are waiting thirstily to see that great day they believe to be victorious and blessed for Israel.

Now, the prophets had always warned the Jewish nationalists inviting them to free themselves from their illusions and unrealistic optimism, foretelling that this "Day of the Lord" will be for them a black day, a series of mourning; it will not be that great day of the definite national liberation they hope. Thus the prophet Amos says to the Israelis: "Wœ to those who are craving the day of the Lord! What, then, will the day of the Lord mean to you people? It will

be darkness, and not light... gloom and not brightness... That is what I shall do to you, O Israel. As a consequence of the fact that I shall do this very thing to you, get ready to meet, your God, O Israel" (Amos 5,18-20 & 4,12).

The Revelation repeats this prophecy against Israel at our time. John predicts the "Great day of God" as a day of world war by which the diabolical spirit crosses the whole world, as the Revelation informs us, to "gather all the kings of the earth for the battle of the Great Day of God Almighty" (Revelation 16,14). This Great Day of God is a day of triumph for Jesus and His army and of extermination of the Antichrist. It is known in the Revelation under the name of Har-Mageddon (Revelation 16,6). The Syrian-Israeli confrontation prepares this marvellous Day of God, day of darkness for Israel, as foretold by prophecies, but triumphant day for the Christ who fights the Antichrist today alongside the Syrian armies.

Then the world will realize the beneficial Syrian role and the importance of the Syrian "No!" proclaimed inexorably against Israel on the 13th of May 1983.

Part XII

Miscellaneous

Table of Contents

1 The Palestinian Calvary **469**

2 Listen Israel **483**

1

The Palestinian Calvary

The purpose of this text is to inform of the origins and the historical context -mostly unknown- of the creation of the State of Israel. It was written in the late 70's, but is still current today

1. INTRODUCTION

The Palestinian People have been living, for decades, a Calvary ignored by the grand majority. It is to them that the "independent believers" address this work, with the aim of giving a quick outline of the most prominent events that led to the bloody and iniquitous expatriation of the Palestinians.

Through this book, the "independent believers" call all free men, inviting them to actively contribute in the reestablishment of Justice by working in putting an end to this intolerable calvary, suffered by an entire people, subject to a genocide without precedent, orchestrated by the Zionists and their agents in the world. This reestablishment of Justice is achieved through solidarity with the Palestinian People in their rightful struggle to regain their legitimate rights and to establish their independent democratic State.

We present the tragic history of the Palestinian People in two periods:

1. Preceding the forced exile of May 1948, as a result of the recognition of the Hebraic State by the UN
2. After the exile, the sufferance that follows in occupied Palestine and in the countries of exile.

We do not speak out of antisemitism but out of concern for Truth and Justice.

2. FIRST PERIOD: Palestine and the Palestinians

History teaches us that Palestine and the Palestinians existed since immemorial times. The Bible also mentions Palestine, describing it as:

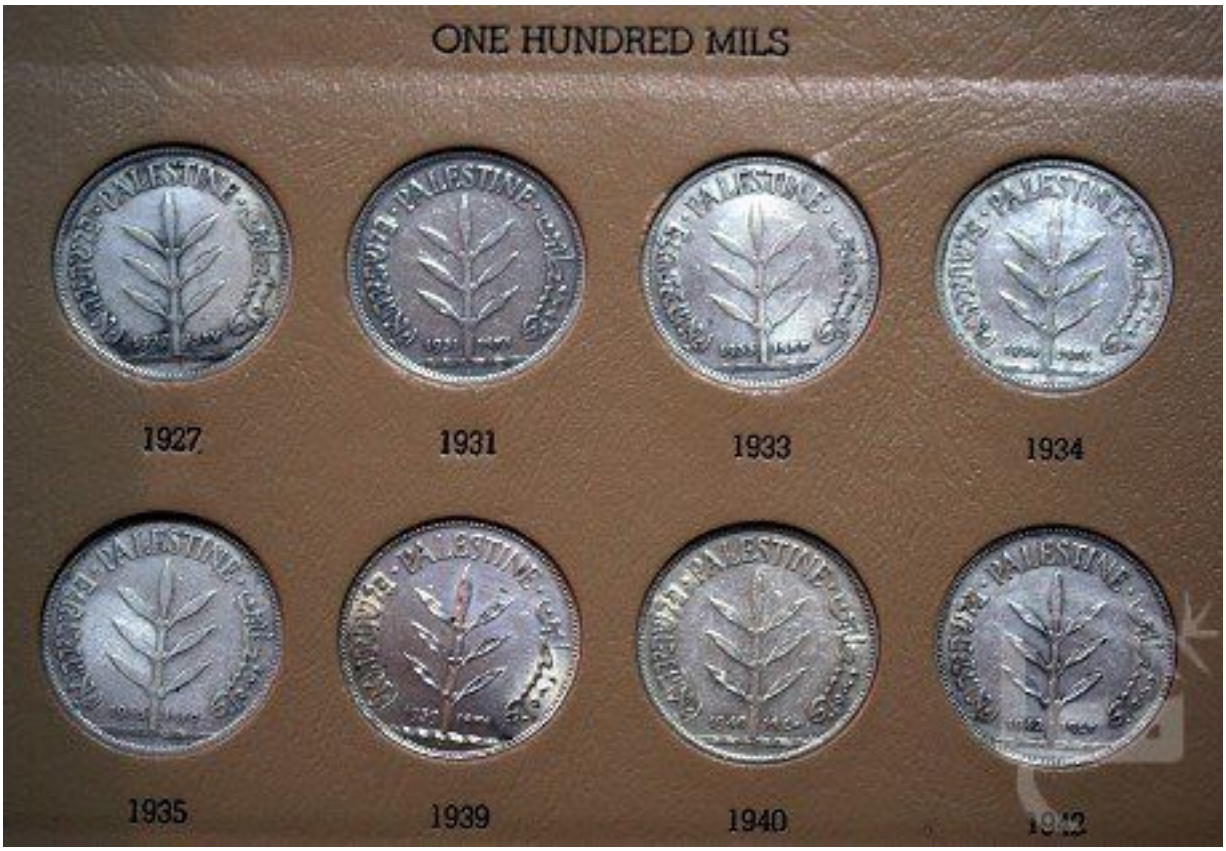
> "...a land where milk and honey flow; its inhabitants are a powerful people; the towns are fortified and very big..." (Numbers 13,17-33).

Thus appeared Palestine and the Palestinians to the Jewish spies sent by Moses. The region was therefore neither desert nor deserted.

However, there is an incontestable fact: Palestine has been the object of human desire throughout the centuries. It is most regrettable that some have granted themselves a Biblical right

over this country, trying to make God an accomplice in a crime, which He has never ceased to condemn through the prophets. (See the text: "Christians and Israel")

Modern Zionist propaganda has made the Western World, in particular, think that Palestine was a desert which transformed into a garden by miraculous Israeli hands and that, as Mrs. Golda Mair used to say: "There are no Palestinians; they never existed". We thus better understand the Zionist slogan: "Give the land without a people (*Palestine*) to a people without land (*the Jews*)" is thus better understood. Now, Palestine has always been inhabited and prosperous, and the beautiful Jaffa oranges were always produced by Palestinian hands.



Palestine did exist: palestinian pound used before the creation of the Jewish state

Therefore, Palestine belongs to the Palestinians, as France to the French and America to the Americans. No one can claim to the contrary without carrying out grave prejudice to justice. We speak because we feel that human betrayal will soon manifest itself at the highest level and that it is time to act to warn men of good faith, so that they do not sink into injustice by demanding by demanding the liberation of Barabbas (*see Matthew 27,17-26*), represented today by the Zionists, usurpers of Palestine.

Because Palestine is for the Palestinians.

2.1 The Zionist aims for Palestine

For centuries, the Zionists aspired to settle themselves in Palestine: "Next year in Jerusalem", they unceasingly repeated amongst themselves. Energized by the pretext of being the "chosen people", they coveted the "promised land" which they situated in Palestine. Now, this was the legitimate property of the Palestinians.

To expropriate it, the Zionists rallied the support of Great Britain, then America, posing as the guardians of their interests in the Middle East. Having thus drawn the Allies' interest to

their plan, they managed to penetrate Palestine, to settle under their powerful protection, and used violence to expel the Palestinians, exiling them from their homeland.

The Zionists who immigrated to Palestine from the four corners of the world, lived in the furnished apartments which still belong to the exiled Palestinians, living under tents and in shanty towns that we call "Palestinian refugee camps". When the Israelis seized their homes by force, found men's, women's and children's clothing in the wardrobes that the Palestinian families, fleeing from the Zionist aggressor, did not even have time to take.

Before becoming violent, Zionist immigration started surreptitiously in 1880. Zionist terrorism appeared later, under the British mandate. There were three notorious terrorist groups: Haganah, Stern, and Irgoun. The latter was headed by the current Israeli Prime Minister, Menahem Begin, author of the Deir Yassin Massacre, and of the blowing-up of the King David Hotel. Today, the Zionists accuse the Palestinian Resistance as terrorists, because they are fighting to liberate Palestine, their motherland.

2.2 Zionism

TAs an institution, Zionism was only concretized and constitutionalized at the Basel Congress in 1897.

Theodore Herzl, the founder of political Zionism, at the urging of whom this Congress was held, advocates in his book "Der Judenstaat" (*The Jewish State*), **the colonization of Palestine**, so to definitely achieve the creation of a sovereign Jewish State, whose borders would be: "To the North: the mountains overlooking Cappadoce (*South-east of Turkey*) to the south: the Suez Canal, and to the east: the Euphrates". This definition of borders is based on a **false interpretation** of Biblical texts of the Covenant of Moses, declared as broken by the prophets, mainly Jeremiah, already in 500 BC, announcing that a NEW COVENANT would replace the first (See the text: "Christians and Israel"). It is thus important to stress here that no link exists between Israel of the Bible and the Israel of 1948, which usurped this name to mask the theft of Palestine.

In the Congress of Basel, Herzl declared:

> >"We are here to lay the foundation stone of the home that will shelter the Jewish nation".

The program he proposed may be summarized as follows:

1. Promote a large-scale and rationally organized settlement of Palestine by the Jews
2. Obtain the internationally recognized right to colonize Palestine.
3. Constitute a permanent organization (The Zionist organization) to unite all Jews in defense of Zionism.

This formula became key to Zionist policy.

2.3 Historical context

2.3.1 The Zionist approach before 1914

Prior to world war one, Turkish rule extended over all the Middle East, including Palestine.

In 1901, Theodore Herzl made an attempt with the Turkish Sultan that the Jews can help Turkey to restore its finances and exploit the natural resources of the Ottoman Empire. He proposed the creation of a Jewish-Ottoman partnership for the colonization of Palestine and Syria. Herzl even drew up a chart, of which Article 3 "gives the Jews **the right to deport the autochthonous population**". That attempt failed.

Ever since 1902, Zionist efforts turned toward the English and and the head of their organization begins talks with the British government. The first results of these talks appeared in 1914, when Chancellor of the Exchequers, Lloyd George, after meeting with the eminent Zionist Haim Weizmann, declares:

> "The Zionist leaders have formally promised us that if the Allies pledge to facilitate the creation of a Jewish National Home in Palestine, they will do their utmost to rally Jewish support the world over to the cause of the Allies and obtain their support."

Thus, during the First World War, the Zionist movement rallied behind Great Britain who, at its turn, saw in Zionism, a British base in the Middle East. Henceforth, the Zionists began work in ending Turkish hegemony over Palestine.

2.3.2 1914: Weakening of Turkey

World War One erupts. Turkey is already weakened by its preceding wars with her neighbors, and power was in the hands of the "Committee of Union and Progress", headed by the Triumvirat formed by "Talaat, Djavid and Enver". The latter two were Jews "converted" to Islam. We should point out that at the time, Turkey was an Islamic State.

Four months after the beginning of the war, the Triumvirat pushed an already exhausted Turkey to enter the war with Germany against the Allies. This gave Turkey a fatal blow and ended Ottoman hegemony over the Middle East, with the aim of placing the latter under British influence favorable to the Zionist plan.

2.3.3 1916: The Sykes-Picot Agreement

In 1916, the British and French Governments secretly concluded treaty to partition the Middle East, signed by their respective Ministers of Foreign Affairs: Sykes and Picot. This treaty, Syria and Lebanon were placed under French mandate, whereas Palestine was placed under British mandate.

2.3.4 1917: The Balfour Declaration

Zionist efforts were crowned with success on the 2nd of November 1917, when Lord Balfour, Minister of British Foreign Affairs, declares in a letter to Edmond Rothschild:

> "His Majesty's Government view is in favor of the establishment in Palestine of a national home for the Jewish people, and will do its utmost for the realization of this objective, being clearly understood that nothing will be done that could undermine the civil and religious rights of non-Jewish communities living in Palestine..."

The community in question was composed of Christians and Muslims; they were, for the most part, expelled from Palestine.

In fact, the British Government did its best to serve Zionism, and did not respect the second part of its declaration: more than three million Palestinians are exiled from their homeland

today; the British Government never made any serious attempt of stopping this bloody tragedy. Later, in 1944, the resolution adopted by the Executive Committee of the British Labour Party stipulated:

> "Let us encourage Arabs to leave in the same measure that Jews arrive.".

2.3.5 1918: England in the Middle East

On October 3 1918, General Allenby entered Damascus at the head of the British army. He declares to take command of all the occupied territories. Palestine is included.

2.3.6 1920: The British Mandate

On April 25 1920, the League of Nations gives Great Britain mandate over Palestine. In August of the same year, the British Government proclaims that 16,500 Jews are authorized to immigrate per year.

Since then, and under the British mandate, an abusive influx of Zionist immigrants arrived to expand the Jewish ranks in Palestine. The Palestinians opposed this invasion of their motherland but the English stifled all resistance, and doing, in return, no effective effort to stop the flood of Jewish immigration. Already in 1925, the number of 16,500 immigrants was surpassed and was at 33,801, becoming 3.5% of the population. And in 1935: 60,000 immigrants, becoming 4.7 % of the population.

The Zionist invaders immediately began to nibble Palestinian-owned land under the British mandate, thereby undermining the rights of the non-Jewish communities living in Palestine.

2.3.7 1929: The Palestinian Revolt

The Palestinians manifest their discontent against the Judaic-British plot. Numerous confrontations occurred between the Palestinians and Zionists. On August 1929, an incident flares up hostilities throughout the country, leaving 249 dead and 571 wounded.

2.3.8 1936: Organization of the Palestinian Revolt

In April of 1936, the Palestinians revolt again. They set-up a Supreme Committee and call for a general strike “until the British Government entirely modifies its current policy and begins by halting Jewish immigration”. The strike lasted six months, and the uprise spread all over the country. Lloyd George, commenting on these events, tells Ben Gurion the same year:

> "So, the Arabs fear that Palestine will become a Jewish State; well then, it will become a Jewish State!"

In June 1936, Great Britain thus arms the Jews against the Palestinians who in turn become worrisome. Thousands of young Jews are armed by the English and organized in territorial units to help maintain order. They constituted the core of a Jewish army operating openly with the clandestine Jewish terrorist forces of the Haganah. Their training is entrusted by General Wiegal to Major Wingate, both English.

2.3.9 1937: England proposed partition

England recommends the partition of Palestine into two States: Palestinian and Jewish. This is the first mention of a "Jewish State", and the proposed borders surpassed by far the land then possessed by the Jews, estimated at 5.4% of Palestine. The Hebraic State comprised 25% of Palestine.

The Zionist leaders gloat over this and Ben Gurion says:

> "This Jewish State they are proposing to us does not correspond to the Zionist objective, but will be a step... We will break the borders which will be imposed on us."

In October, amongst other measures taken by the English to weaken the Palestinians, five of the most influential members of the Supreme Committee are arrested and deported to the Seychelles Islands (Indian Ocean).

2.3.10 1939: Zionism veered towards America

By the end of 1939, the Palestinian uprising was suppressed: 5679 Palestinians were imprisoned and 110 hanged.

September 1 1939, the Second World War erupts. The Zionists, seeing England's weakening, changes policy and begins to veer towards America. Ben Gurion writes in his notes:

> "Our major concern was the fate of Palestine after the war... It was obvious that the English would not conserve the mandate... As for me, I had no doubt that the centre of gravity of our efforts had passed from the United Kingdom to America, who was trying to assert itself as first place in the world, and where the most numerous and influential Jews were found."

2.3.11 1941: Zionism adjoins itself to America

America's Jews and Zionists around the world were demanding for the creation of a Jewish state in Palestine after the war. The American Zionists formed Judaic-Christian committees, whose mission was to rally Christians and the clergy of the United States behind the Zionist cause. The Jews did not fail in taking advantage of the literal interpretation that some false Christians -the majority in America- make of the Bible, relying on it to justify their claims. They ensured the support of journalists and official figures, thus injecting Zionist nationalism into the veins of America in its entirety.

2.3.12 1943: Zionism abandons England

On March 17, Ben Gurion declares that the end of the war dœs not mean the end of the Jewish struggle, because the Zionists in Palestine will not cooperate with the British authorities.

2.3.13 1944-45: Zionist terrorism

It is the end of the Second World War.

The Zionists, who forced their entry into Palestine under protection of the English, practiced systematic terrorism against the Palestinians and high-leveled officials of the British Government. They succeeded in obtaining the unconditional support of the American President Roosevelt who, at the Yalta Conference (February 1945) tells Stalin:

> "I am a Zionist, and you?" To which Stalin replies: "I am in principle, but I do not ignore the difficulties".

Harry Truman succeeded Roosevelt to the Presidency after the latter's death. He adhered to the Zionist program and, to the objections of four American ambassadors in Arab countries, he responds:

> "Sorry Gentlemen, hundreds of thousands long for the success of Zionism; I do not have hundreds of thousands of Arabs among my constituency."

In July 1945, Truman intervenes beside the British Government to grant the Jews certificates for 100,000 immigrants.

In August 1945, Ben Gurion claims the creation of a Jewish State.

2.3.14 1946: Zionists destroy British HQ

On July 22nd, Menahem Begin, heading a group of terrorists, blew up the King David hotel in Jerusalem, Headquarters of the British forces, resulting in 200 dead, mostly Britishers.

2.3.15 1947: U.N. votes for the partition of Palestine

On October 11, following Truman's instructions, the U.S. Government supports the U.N. partition plan for Palestine. America's prestige pushes other countries to do the same.

On November 29, the U.N. General Assembly votes for the partition of Palestine into three zones: Palestinian, Zionist, and neutral (Jerusalem and the Holy Sites).

The Arab's reaction was immediate and violent, and manifestations and protests were organized throughout the Arab world. In Palestine itself, the Palestinians had not yet recovered from the 1936-1939 insurrection because of the numerous losses of human life, the exile of their leaders, and the confiscation of almost all their weapons by the British. They could not therefore resist against the Jews who, organized and well-armed, intensified their terrorist acts to force them to leave the Country. Assassinations were committed all over the country, namely in Jerusalem, Haifa, Jaffa, Safad, etc... The Jews destroyed bridges, homes, shops, warehouses, etc... which belonged to the Palestinians.

2.3.16 1948: The U.N recognizes the State of Israel

The Deir Yassine massacre: On April 9 1948, Menahem Begin's terrorist group attacks the Palestinian village of Deir Yassin. The villagers are brutally massacred. Ben Gurion denies having any responsibility in this matter. M. Begin, the head of the Irgun says, in speaking of Deir-Yassin:

> "Not only was the massacre justified, but there would be no State of Israel if not for this victory."

After this massacre, the Palestinian Exodus massively increased from fear of other Deir Yassins, which was thus the first step towards the eviction of the Palestinians, who, disarmed, and under the threat of the Zionist terrorists, evacuate entire cities such as Haifa. This city fell on April 22, 1948.

In entering Haifa, the Zionists threatened the population using loud speakers, advising them to flee, lest they suffer the fate of Deir Yassin. In a state of panic, the citizens had no choice but to escape with their children. They could only flee in the direction of the harbor, where British ships were waiting to take them to other Arab countries. In this night alone, Haifa, a town of approximately 100,000 inhabitants, is half-emptied.

Turning a blind eye to Israeli terrorism, America continued its unconditional support of the Zionists. On 23 April 1948, President Truman informs Weizmann that if the Jewish State is proclaimed, the U.S. would recognize it immediately.

On May 14 1948, the British mandate over Palestine ended. At 9:00 a.m. the last British High Commissioner leaves the country. At 4:00 p.m. Ben Gurion proclaims the State of Israel in the presence of 200 officials, photographers and journalists.

The same day, Jewish forces occupy Acre and West Galilee, chasing out the inhabitants.

Whilst leaving Jerusalem, the British handed over to the Haganah, all the buildings of most strategic importance. From the rooftops of these buildings, the Haganah attacked the Palestinian residential quarters and occupied the town, without being able to penetrate into the Old City, which contains the Holy Sites, in view of the strong Palestinian resistance.

Only sixteen minutes after the proclamation of Israel by Ben Gurion, the American Government recognizes it. The Soviet Union did so the next day.

With the proclamation of the State of Israel, 1,000,000 Palestinians are exiled from their homeland. Up till May 1948, the Palestinians had to suffer from Zionism in Palestine, in their home. After 1948, the Palestinian Calvary gets worse and takes place under Zionist occupation and in exile.

All this people, whose families are dislocated, are scattered in tents of misery and shantytowns in Gaza, Jordan, Syria and Lebanon.

Satisfaction at the "high places" (J. Carter and M. Begin)

Forced exile of Palestinians

3. SECOND PERIOD: After exile

After having forced approximately 1,000,000 Palestinians into exile from their homeland, the Zionists, in contempt of the borders drawn out by the U.N., proceed with their expansionist plan in the Palestinian interior, harassing the remaining Palestinians in the country by acts of terrorism. Thus, the Calvary of the Palestinian People developed on two levels: in the interior under Zionist occupation, and external, in exile.

3.1 In Palestine's interior

The Palestinians resisted, as much as they could, the wave of expatriation to which they were violently subjected. Zionist writer John Kimche describes in the "Jewish Observer" (03.03.1967) how General Moshe Dayan, in July 1948, "entered Lydda with full force, firing and instilling terror... The Palestinian population of 30,000 fled or gathered on the road of Ramallah. The next day, Ramleh also surrendered and its inhabitants suffered the same fate. Both towns were plundered by the Israelis."

In spite of that, international opinion continued to totally favor the Israelis and was hostile to the Palestinians. Zionist influence in America -favored by the approaching November elections of 1948 in particular- rendered American policy even more pro-Zionist. Arms and planes were supplied to the Israelis, and authorization was granted for American military personnel to fight side by side with the Israelis. "Retired American captains and majors were in commandment positions in the Israeli army" (The Times 03.05.1967). In his biography of Ben Gurion, Michael Ben Zohar writes that Ben Gurion, speaking of this military personnel, says: "I do not know whether we could have won the war without their help."

After the 1967 war, Israel entirely occupies Jerusalem, grabs the Golan Heights, the West Bank, Gaza and the Sinai, and pursues Judaization throughout the whole of Palestine.

The fate of the Palestinian patriots was the most painful. Accused of being "terrorists", they are thrown into prison and subjected to atrocious torture. The representatives of the International Red Cross were not allowed to verify if the state of the prisoners was satisfactory. In 1977, "The Sunday Times" publishes an alarming report on the inhumane treatment of the Palestinian prisoners.

Article 3 of the emergency law currently in force stipulates that the "Israeli Government has the right to detain administratively, anywhere and at any time, any person in the occupied zone, without having to specify the charge against the person detained."

High level dignitaries were thus captured for their testimony in favor of the Palestinians. Amongst the most well-known, we mention the Greek-Catholic Bishop of Jerusalem, Hilarion Capucci, imprisoned in 1974 and liberated in 1977, after having spent three years and a half in the Israeli jails.

The Bishop Hilarion Capucci : Pro-Palestinian solidarity

About 4,000 Palestinians are detained in thirty Israeli prisons. These prisons are old buildings whose cells are dark, damp and the sun rarely penetrates or not at all. A staunch smell emerges because of bad sewage pipes. Some rooms, designed for fifteen prisoners, hold 45 who, to sleep, are forced to link up in three successive lots.

3.2 In Palestine's exterior

The winter of 1948-1949 was particularly hard on the Palestinian refugees. They were without luggage and no shelter. Many died of cold and hunger and witnesses mentioned that they saw children with arms "like match-sticks and swollen bellies due to progressive famine. Many babies died from the lack of milk".

The Israeli leaders held fast nevertheless to the principle of a Zionist State, purely Jewish, and categorically refused to reintegrate the Palestinian refugees, be they Muslim or Christian.

A Palestinian refugee camp

Palestinian property was confiscated by the Jewish State: lands, homes, shops, stores, workshops, etc... were seized. Hundreds of thousands of families were expelled from Palestine, one night in 1948, penniless, without passports or papers of identification, without diplomas or the possibility to practice their profession. Chased out without notice or preparation at all, they lied under tents, far from home, at the mercy of a pitiless international conscience towards them, and all acquired to the Israeli usurpers. The Western conscience, strongly feeling guilty by Hitler's crimes, wanted to redeem itself in the eyes of the Zionists by allowing them to perpetrate an even more heinous crime against the innocent. This has been going on for over thirty years.

In exile, the Palestinians are deprived of the most elementary civic rights. They mostly "suffer", and are not welcomed by their hosts. They are concentrated in refugee camps, without potable water or proper sewage systems.

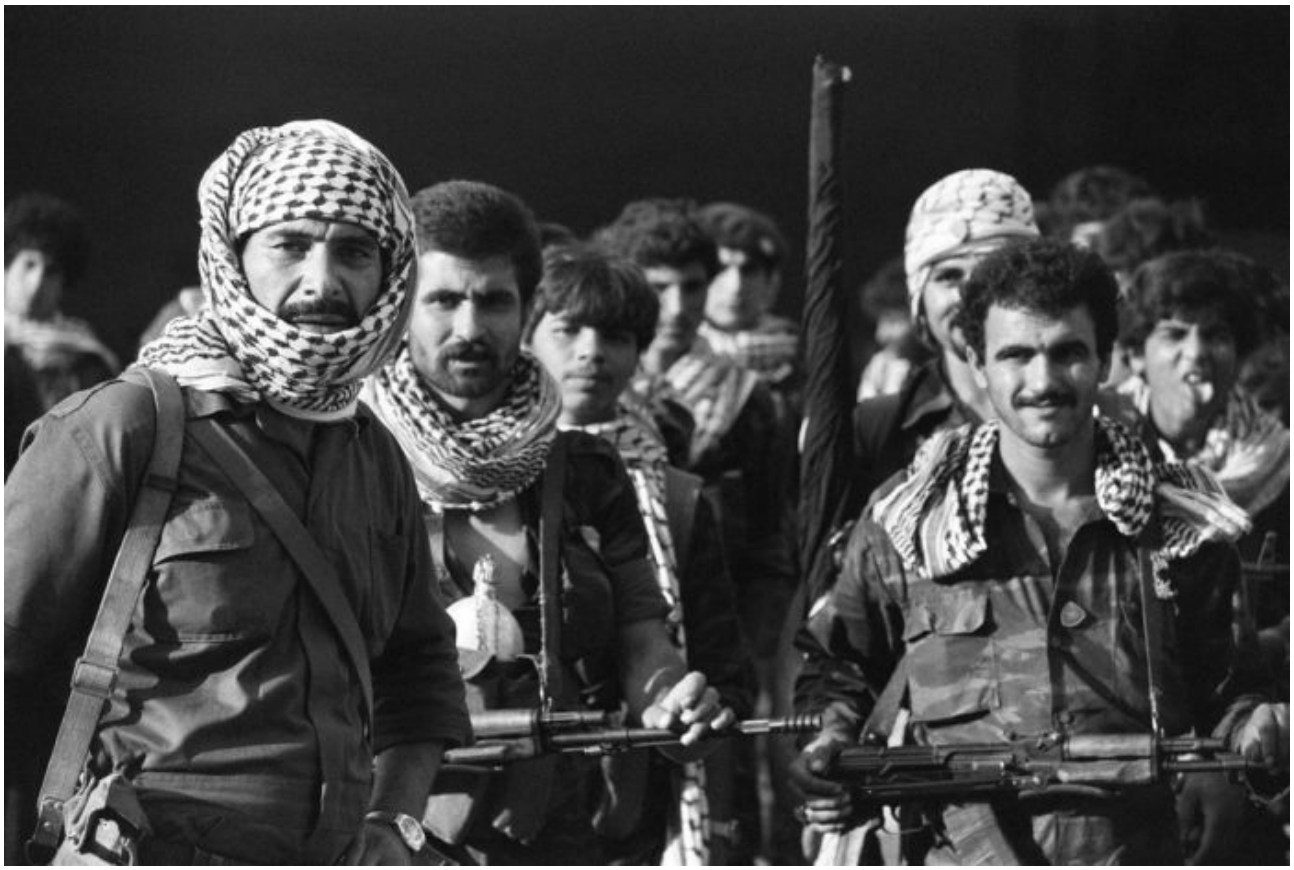
Dismantled, the Palestinian refugees live in stupor and fear.

3.3 The PLO (The Palestine Liberation Organization)

On May 28 1964, the First Palestinian National Council holds its session in Jerusalem. The Palestinian Liberation Organization (PLO) is proclaimed and the National Chart is drawn up. Thus the Palestinian entity affirmed itself, putting an end to a situation of total disarray.

In this same year, the Palestine Liberation Army is constituted.

In 1965, the struggle for the liberation of Palestine takes a new and decisive turn with the apparition of the "FEDAYEEN", the Palestinian resistance which operated inside the occupied territories for the liberation of their homeland.



The "Fedayeen"! The Palestinians' right to regain their land!

3.4 The Zionist agression of 1967

In June 1967, the Zionists capture the whole of Jerusalem, the Golan Heights (Syria), the Sinai (Egypt), and all the West Bank. The Jewish State gets rid of a new float of Palestinians who flee to Jordan in the tens of thousands when crossing the Allenby Bridge. They are assembled in refugee camps. The tragedy continues: 410,000 new refugees are added to the number already exiled.

In a resolution of 22 November 1967, the Security Council asks "Israel" to withdraw from the territories occupied in June 1967. But Mr. Abba Eban, Israeli Minister of Foreign Affairs replies:

> "If the Assembly General were to have 121 votes against one in favor of Israel's return to the Armistice lines (*Borders before June 1967*), Israel will refuse to comply with this decision." (New York Times 19.06.1967)

3.5 Two attempts of Genocide

In exile, the Palestinian refugees were, twice, the target of genocide on the part of the countries of stay: In Jordan in 1970, and in Lebanon in 1975.

3.5.1 In Jordan

The exiled Palestinians refuse to let themselves be absorbed by the Jordanian Regime and and claim the right to fight to liberate Palestine from Jordan. In September 1970, King Hussein reacts violently: His army attacks the refugee camps and thousands are killed and wounded. This is the famous "Black September".

Again in July 1971, the Jordanian King is rife. The result of both campaigns was about 25,000 dead and wounded. More than 200,000 Palestinians fled from Jordan towards Syria and Lebanon.

3.5.2 In Lebanon

Aware of the plots contrived against them, the Palestinians ask the Lebanese Republic to protect their camps from foreign infiltration. The President of the Republic, Mr. Soleiman Frangieh, responds that the Republic is unable of assuring their protection and that they should assume charge of it themselves.

On the night of 13 April 1973, Israeli commandos land in Beirut. Aided by their Lebanese agents, they head towards the homes of 3 Palestinian leaders and murder them in their bedrooms.

Following this incident, the Palestinians decide to erect checkpoints around their camps to ensure a minimal protection. In Beirut, 4 checkpoints were erected, 2 of which were occasional.

One Lebanese faction (the extreme right), the Christian Phalangist party at the helm, considered these checkpoints as a defiance to Lebanese sovereignty. On the contrary, Lebanese Patriots -Christians and Muslims- justified the Palestinians because of their prior permission to defend themselves, and because these checkpoints, not many, never exceeded the lines drawn for the refugee camps.

Tension against the Palestinians was entertained by some Christian leaders of the extreme right who were pro Israeli. Strong anti-Palestinian sentiments were thus injected in the Christian Lebanese right, who automatically reacted negatively towards the Palestinians.

On April 13 1975, the Palestinian commemoration of their martyrs, a meeting is held by the refugees in one of their camps. After the meeting, a bus transporting more than 25 Palestinians, men, women and children, coming from another camp. On their return, passing through an extreme right Christian quarter (Christian Phalangists), the bus is intercepted by armed Christian militiamen. All occupants are killed.

This incident sparked off the civil war in Lebanon. Lebanese patriots were in solidarity with the Palestinians against a plan of extermination orchestrated in the shadows by the Israelis, together with their Lebanese and Arab agents. Since then, the Palestinians and Lebanese patriots jointly fought for a common cause.

Four Palestinian camps, situated in Christian Maronite areas, were literally razed to the ground. Two of these camps -Quarantine and Tel el Zaatar- sheltered Palestinians and some Lebanese from the South of Lebanon, who fled from Israeli shelling following the destruction of their homes. The other two camps -Dbayeh and Jisr el Bacha- sheltered Palestinian Christians, who were Greek-Catholic.

The Tel El Zaatar camp after the genocide

Following these events, a large number of Palestinian refugees were reshuffled into the South of Lebanon. Once again, the Lebanese extreme right accuses the “Palestinian refugees residing in Lebanon of attempting to take Lebanon as their Homeland instead of Palestine” (Pierre Gemayel, leader of the Christian Phalangists, “L’Orient-Le Jour” of 09.01.78). However, the Lebanese extreme right disseminated rumors in its press suggesting that the Palestinians were buying land in the South of Lebanon in order to let them settle there.

Faced with the plot to discredit it with the aim of exterminating it, the Palestinian Revolution repeatedly stated, formally and publicly, that the Palestinians will never accept an alternative homeland, even if it is Paradise.

The fight for the survival and liberation of Palestine continues. This struggle is a symbol: who so works for the liberation of Palestine, works for the liberation of their own Homeland.

4. BIBLICAL APPENDIX

The Zionists cry anti-Semitism whenever someone brings up their crimes. In the same way they use the Bible to mask their theft of Palestine, we think it useful to demonstrate that the Bible is the most “anti-Semitic” book because it has never ceased to denounce the Zionist spirit, which gœs against the notion of spiritual salvation and the Promised Land, as well as the universality of chosenness.

The thoughtful Christian reader can easily remark that no real connection exists between the artificial Israel of 1948, which is a human fabrication, and the prophetic and spiritual Israel, which the Bible speaks of.

For a better understanding of the problem, refer to the text: "Christians and Israel".

Pierre (1978)

2

Listen Israel

Message received the 11th of July 1973: Listen Israel

The hand of the Lord has been on me to announce
to Israel what follows...
Listen Israel!
Sons of Jacob be attentive!
Listen Israel to the Word of Yahweh Sabaoth:
From the four corners of the earth you want to regroup,
Sailing on the blood that you spilled.
Now listen to what I have to say, before the end, before your end;
A last word,
A word of love
In spite of the just anger I vow on you.
Listen to me then, wherever you are, whomever you may be.
You reneged and I punished you.
You have shaken the Yoke, the light Yoke,
And I have whipped you!
Against my Christ you erected yourself,
So against you I Myself have stood up.
Listen without becoming irritant in hearing the Truth:
Vain is your worship; it is not addressed to Me.
I receive it not! Word of Yahweh!
The Blood of the Just One you shed;
The Blood of Abel and the prophets and of Jesus.
Listen now Israel, listen, if you have ears:
Do not be a stubborn heifer
Do not be like the cows of Basham,
Do not play the Beast anymore,
Because the Beast, Revelation decries,

Heads to its destruction, even though it came up from the Abyss.
Hear me I implore you, for once, it is the last:
At the feet of the wall you may cry,
At the feet of the wall you may wail,
At the feet of this wall alone you can gesture,
No matter how much you scream out and kick,
You can squirm,
You can beat your chest,
Launch yourself to and fro,
Israel, I am not listening to you!
It is at the feet of the Cross that you must present yourself,
It is at the feet of the Cross that you must purify yourself.
To the wailing wall, if you insist, you can go...
But listen Israel:
It is at the feet of the Cross that you must lament,
If you want to claim being heard by Me,
Listen then Israel:
It is when you listen to Me that I will listen to you,
As your destruction is close at hand!
Haha! You are laughing?
“I am enthroned as Queen” you say?
Yet now, in a single day, misfortune will befall you.
Listen Israel, your only Great wall will disappear,
And then where will you moan? Where will you lament?
A Temple for yourself you shall not have!
Word of Yahweh Sabaoth.
I speak to you once again, a last time still,
Before the end, before your end, definitively this time.
Recognize my Christ... otherwise...
He warned you; you disobeyed.
So misfortune befell you, as He had said to you.
At 70, your Temple, it was I who destroyed it,
What you wanted, you, yes what you wanted was
To destroy My Temple, My Beloved,
My Son Jesus Christ, the apple of my eye, yes the Messiah,
In whom My soul, ceaselessly, rejoices!
Listen Israel, listen,
The days pass and do not come back.

You buy gold, gold of the earth and you do well...
Listen then Israel:
Buy gold, the gold of wisdom, of Divine Wisdom,
While there is still time.
And if you desire, on you I will pour his Holy Blood,
Yes on you and on your children,
For your salvation, and no longer your condemnation.
Israel, in your great power, in your days of strength,
Seek to follow my steps so that when weakened,
Weakness dœs not confound you.
Listen Israel, you so powerful
What the Almighty is saying to you,
Otherwise you will be reduced to nothing.
O Israel, Israel how many times, but how many times
I wanted to nurture you and you did not want so.
Israel, for once, for this last time,
Listen to the word of Shaddaï
Listen to the word of Yahweh
Listen then, to the Almighty Word...

Part XIII

FAQ

Table of Contents

1 Frequently Asked Questions **489**

1

Frequently Asked Questions

1. The independent believers

1.1 Who are you?

We are neither a sect nor fanatics. We are a homogeneous international group who bear witness to the distressing divine revelations made to a Catholic priest. The most important of these revelations concerns the unexpected identity of the Antichrist, "the Beast" of chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation. It was revealed by Jesus himself the 13th of May 1970.

This revelation opens, to those who believe in it, a new door of deliverance and spiritual struggle.

These revelations denounce among others, the treason of the Catholic hierarchy and its failure to bear witness against the Antichrist whose identity was revealed by the Virgin Mary in Fatima. This secret was and remains occult by the popes since John XXIII. This is why it is incumbent upon us to unmask the Antichrist and to "prophesy (*bear witness*) again, this time against many different nations and countries and languages and emperors" (Revelation 10,11), for the simple reason that all this world, from lack of faith and courage, has let itself be intimidated by the Antichrist.

To know more, see our introduction and the text: "The Key of the Apocalypse".

1.2 An Association of independent believers?

> Do you have any meeting places apart from this site? A particular structure? You speak of independent believers, but with no cult and places of worship (churches, temples and others). It is not always evident (and accessible to all) to cultivate one's faith. What path do you propose?

Our places of meeting are our respective homes, as the first Christians did (Acts 2,46-47); The Lord, here too, gathers those He wishes to save through the Internet or with meetings. What do you mean by structure? Hierarchy? Surely not! We are servants of one another, in joy, solidarity, authentic love and simplicity. Heaven is responsible of "associating" us. We are widespread a little bit here and there, at your place in France too. We are however very prudent because we are very persecuted (fortunately) by the hierarchies, especially by the various monotheistic religions. We have received a Mission from Heaven; it is to Heaven to take charge of our instruction and he never misses the call of his children. Christ is alive among us, we "touch" Him and hear His Voice in the Apocalyptic Message revealed by Him on the 13th of May 1970 (See our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse"). Those who are the more instructed among us help newcomers in deepening their knowledge... and "those who have ears to hear

what the Spirit is saying will recognize the Voice of the Good Shepherd" (Revelation 1,11... John 10,3-5).

The Path we propose is that of the One who said: "I am **the Way**, the Truth and Life" (John 14,6).

We refer you to the text: "Cults and Place of worship".

1.3 How to act? What is the meaning of Pierre2 (Peter2)?

Message of J. (translated from German).

> Hi Pierre,
>
> First of all, excuse me for taking so long to answer you. Actually, I first wanted to write "Letter to atheists", but this letter at the moment did not come up with me, neither in time nor in thought.
>
> The image of the Antichrist and its ally (USA) becomes all the more clear, and I agree with you that we cannot put all the Jews in one basket. Personally, I have met some of them who are very sociable and very humane.
>
> I also have problems with Medjugorie because, in my opinion, they are going around in circles, and liberty in Spirit (through Jesus) has little place with them. Unconditional submission to the Holy Church has never characterized me, even though I can "still" call myself a Catholic. That the pulpit of Peter has become the seat of evil? I think that is possible, because in these days, a certain decadence is visible.
>
> I still have a question: What is the meaning of the name: Pierre2?
>
> United in prayer.
>
> J.

Hi J.,

We very much understand the difficulty of writing a text to atheists. Neither our family of the East, nor of the West were able to produce something intelligent in this subject. It is an emptiness in the head, we do not know what to say and time is lacking for us too. We understand you very well. If the Holy Spirit wanted such a text, He would have inspired us and told us what to say. For the moment, our relationships with atheists are an openness and a loving availability. If there is love in their heart, they will end up discovering The Father. I think that, FOR THE MOMENT, we must act according to what Jesus had prescribed to his first apostles: "Do not turn your steps to pagan territory (*atheists*) ... go rather to the lost sheep of the House of Israel (*believers*)." (Matthew 10,5) He had said to us, to me in particular: "go to no one; I will bring you those whom I have chosen for their salvation". It is what we are doing through our website, which has informed many people from the East to the West. We devote our time to answering all those who, like J., hunger and thirst for the Truth. The rest is the work of the Holy Spirit... and of Mary Our Mother.

Medjugorie??

You are right not to trust it. I'd stay away from it like the plague. I have met some of them. They have absolutely no maturity in Faith and appear like idiots... The Holy Spirit is neither apparent on their faces, nor in their infantile words. They will never be able to convince intelligent people and atheists... Personally, it is not the Voice of Mary that I hear over there, inviting pilgrims to blindly follow the Pope. Mary tells me not to trust the Pope. This Pope who said: "God bless Israel", who went to cry on the Wall of Lamentations, who sat in Jerusalem on a throne with the Cross of Christ inverted, instead of inviting the Israelis to cry on the tomb of Jesus in Jerusalem. This Pope, who advised Christians this last Friday of

November 2002, to deepen their knowledge of Hinduism and Buddhism so that peace reigns in the world. He should have invited the world to know and deepen the faith in Jesus, the King of real Peace, so that the world finally rests and knows real Peace, that of the heart, as the Virgin Mary had said, our Mother, in Marienfried.

I was Catholic. I blindly defended the Pope and the Church. But Jesus opened my eyes on the 13th of May 1970 (see our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse") so that in turn, I open the eyes of my brothers and sisters in the world. That is what I do through the website. I can no longer do like a Pope who betrayed the Holy Virgin by distorting and betraying her Message of Fatima. I speak, prophesy, and teach others to prophesy with wisdom and caution... while waiting for the near and certain fall of the Beast.

You ask "What is the meaning of the name 'Pierre2'?" If you pose the question, you are on the right track. You have already understood that the Vatican (Peter1) died by losing "the testimony of Jesus". Our Mission then, is "to bear witness again, against..." (Revelation 10,11) to guard the "Testimony of Jesus", and this testimony "is the Spirit of Prophecy" (Revelation 19,10). This is why we refer to the prophecies, especially those of the Book of Revelation.

Yes, all Jews are not guilty. We have received the command to pray for those among them who are badly branched by Zionism. We refer you to an anti-Zionist website of a Jew, Israel Shamir (`www.israelshamir.net`).

What he says of the Virgin Mary is touching and merits him to see Jesus (Revelation 1,7). We pray for him and all people like him, who are many. We also pray for Muslims, Atheists, Buddhists, etc... for all men of good will.

Pray with us so that everyone may see the Glory of Jesus and Mary, and thus live Heavenly Bliss from down here.

Fraternally in Jesus and Mary.

Pierre

P.S. Against the Catholic Church, but not against its teachings concerning messianism and the divinity of the Messiah, the intercession of Mary, her virginity, the Eucharist, etc... All is clarified on the website.

1.4 The Usefulness of the Church

> Do you consider that the Church, catechism, pilgrimages, etc... are, if not useless, perhaps harmful? What evangelization without structured believers? What possible drifts elsewhere?

Churches and places of worship have never impeded the grave downturns. Pedophilia, topic of the day, is only the tip of the iceberg and under the sacerdotal skirts, circulate "cesspools of impurity" as the Virgin Mary revealed at La Salette. A Message that the so-called vicars take care to bury. You will find the message of La Salette on our website. We live in Apocalyptic times which already see a marvelous spiritual Day dawning, free from the various cesspools. Happy are those who see it.

The Apocalypse reveals that, in the end times, there would no longer be edifices for true believers: temple, church, mosque... "I saw that there was no temple in the city since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb(*Jesus*) were themselves the Temple" (Revelation 21,22). See our text: "Cults and Place of worship".

As for Catechism, one comes out of it more ignorant of Holy Scripture than before he entered it. It is a false science which distracts us from the messianic and Apocalyptic prophecies, and the real, solid food for the soul. Christians ignore why they "believe" in Jesus as the Messiah;

the Jews know why they reject Him. I speak to you assuming that you are Christian, perhaps even a priest as there are among us.

As for pilgrimage, why not. But we must not, above all, neglect the most important and difficult pilgrimage, the one which we do not think of alas: the one to the heart, where God dwells. What possible drifts when we reach this sacred place among everyone?!

As for evangelism, we see to it either through the website, or through personal contacts if necessary. We trust the good faith of those who approach us for knowledge, not to criticize. A personal and profound research are indispensable for the outcome. The Holy Spirit takes charge of the rest. After the fall of the Antichrist, which is near, relations will be facilitated. The current context is not always suitable. Refer to "The Biblical Course".

1.5 Pope John Paul II

> I was a bit shocked by the attack made against the Pope, because, not that I approve of everything he does, but I gave myself a reason to think that he acted in God's grace. Let me explain. Does not the fact that He did not reveal the message of Our Blessed Virgin (Fatima) come from the fact that Christ has taught us that it is through prayer that everything can change and not attempt this solution? It is also true that despite all the errors he could have committed, Christ taught us to pray for our enemies without bordering hatred for them. I really think he is surrounded by Satanic freemasons and he is not free of his actions. At least I hope that.
>
> J.

The Pope is a spiritually dead and condemned man, ever since he received Netanyahu, crying out "God bless Israel!" He who knows (the Message of Fatima)!!! If I tell you the contrary, at the risk of shocking again and again, I would fail in my Holy Testimony and I too, would be condemned and dead. To each his own opinion! The Beast is Israel and he knows it. I said everything and explained everything (on the website). If I am silent, it is because we are in the "silence in heaven for about half an hour" (Revelation 8,1). But soon my voice will resound in the consciences. I can no longer justify those whom the Holy Mother of God qualified as "cesspools of Impurity", predicting that "Rome will lose the faith" and become the "SEAT OF THE ANTICHRIST". You have to be deaf and immature not to understand. I do not mince my words. No prophet ever did. They were hated and crucified for that.

You will try to explain to the Father your justification for this traitor of a Pope, who has lost so many souls and will lose so many more. The errors which he has committed are a sin against the Holy Spirit, an UNFORGIVABLE sin (1 John 5,16-17)!!!

No, prayer is not enough to change everything!! BEARING WITNESS is also necessary (Revelation 10,11). If he is not free in his actions, it would be better for him he resigns, as did one of his noble predecessors, Pope San Celestine V (1294), who renounced the pontificate because of the corruption of the Roman Curia (... oh yes, already since then). I cannot justify those who the Father has condemned. If prayer was enough, Jesus would have prayed for the hypocrite Scribes and Pharisees. He prayed "for His disciples" saying, "**I don't pray** for the world". So go lecture Christ!! Tell Him to pray for his enemies!!! Pray for Satan!!! Happy are those who understand Jesus' intentions. Understand who can!

I do not pray for the Pope!!! ... Neither do I pray for my enemies, as they are Christ's enemies and Satan's slaves. I have no personal enemies. I am hated for what I reveal and my testimony shocks the immature and non-repentant. Let men think of me whatever they wish. And, as a song from Edith Piaf says: "I don't care about the whole world!!!"

If you think that I bear witness against the Pope out of hatred, not in justice and prompted by the Father, it is better not to write to us. All those who confound strength and hatred,

feebleness and love, end up praying for Ariel Sharon and his gang... and by "love", they let the thieves enter and slaughter their spouses and children. In my heart there is, according to the Spirit who guides, the same "hatred" as that of Joan of Arc.

PS: Mary's words, her gentle and compassionate suppliant way of speaking, inviting to repentance and the disclosure of the Message of Fatima, can only leave men indifferent like John XXIII, Paul VI and John-Paul II... 3 other "frogs" (Revelation 16,13-14) ... I am convinced that John-Paul I was assassinated because he decided to reveal the Message.

When Theodore Herzl addressed Pius X, asking him to recognize the right of the Jews to a "Biblical" return to Palestine; this Pope firmly refused to submit to such demands. If it would have been one of the three "frog" popes,to bless this (not of the Apocalypse), they would have accepted, crying out loud: "God bless Israel!!" Other times, other church! Yes, the church is dead and dead spiritually.

Our shocking mission is to bearwitness against these people, who belong to a dead church and against the Beast. A double shock then. The Virgin in Marienfried said that She had a SHOCKING message to deliver. Here it is! It is ours!

Our Mission is to unmask: "I know all about you: how hard you work and how much you put up with. I know **you cannot stand wicked people**, and how you tested the imposters who called themselves apostles and proved they were LIARS!" (Revelation 2,2-9). If we have found them to be liars, we must have the courage and honesty to denounce them. We are doing that. We cannot remain silent in the name of love. Be careful not to fall into this Satanic trap! Jesus praises those "who cannot stand wicked people". You have read it!

Those who arm themselves with Jesus' words: "Love your enemies", do not know who He was speaking to. "But I say **this to you who are listening**: love your enemies, do good to those who hate you... to the person who slaps you on one cheek, present the other cheek too..." (Luke 6,27-38)

"To you who are listening"; who was listening to Him? The Jewish crowd who believed in Him as a **Zionist** Messiah; therefore, similar to the crowds of today, those who follow Sharon to the cry of "death to the Arabs our enemies!" and also, of course, death to the Palestinians. It is to this Zionist crowd that Jesus says: "To you I say: love your enemies...", because it is they, your "enemies", the Palestinians who are right!! Do good to them instead of destroying their homes and killing their children. If they slap you, present the other cheek, as they are right to slap you!! But Jesus did not allow himself to be slapped and hit by the guard before the Sanhedrin, He did not present the other cheek, He retorted: "Why do you strike me? etc..." (John 18,22-23) Dœsn't He ask us to execute his enemies in His presence? (Luke 19,27) Can we love our enemies the demons, and those who let themselves be seduced by them? I neither love nor pray for Sharon, nor for Bush. I pray to God to give them a resounding defeat and to save us from them... and from the Pope.

Our Father had already said to Jeremiah: "I have appointed you as assayer of my people, to learn and to assay how they behave. They are apostates, all of them, promiscuous slanderers, all of them corrupt." (Jeremiah 6,27-28)

What else can be said of the clerical pedophilia, the clerical usurers, the Bank of the... "Holy Spirit??? ..." This is what they have reduced the Father's Holy Spirit to... scandal revealed by the Marcinkus affair, high Bishop before Satan, transferred to the USA by the Vatican to be the chaplain of... millionaires... Oh yes, nothing less! And all this is approved by the "Holy Father" ... not by the Holy Father of Jesus, but by John-Paul II, one of the "usurpers of the title apostle, and of the divine title Holy Father..." A title which belongs to none other than Our Holy Heavenly Father, the Father of Jesus Christ (Matthew 23,9).

The Virgin at La Salette invites her children to fight, promising to assist them, and that She will lead them to the fullness of spiritual age, to maturity of the soul. We recognize this maturity in those who have courage to denounce a hierarchy become satanic, as Peter and the Apostles once replied to the Sanhedrin (Vatican today), who ordered them not to preach of Jesus anymore: “Obedience to God comes before obedience to men” (Acts 5,27-29). This is mature faith! Our Mother announced the Church’s betrayal in Fatima. She said to Lucy (the seer) that we must no longer wait for calls from the hierarchy, but that each person acts independently. The independent believers are here, now, at her disposal. The times are ripe for the “harvest”. Let us be ripe then, to be harvested by the Holy Spirit and gathered for the decisive battle against the devil, embodied in the robes of the priest.

Some may find my words harsh. Others, on the contrary, understand them well and are finally ready, I know it!

May our good Father, through Jesus and Mary, give us the fullness of His Spirit and discernment so that, in this world of confusion, we can clearly distinguish good from evil, because evil is so well-masked in good that it is called GOOD. To be convinced, listen to George W. Bush.

But “Wœ to those who call what is bad good, and what is good bad...” (Isaiah 5,20), to those who, apart from Jesus, say: “who is not for me is against me”! For my part, I can neither love nor pray for such people! I pray against them.

I pray the Madonna and her Divine Son protect us from all evil, to guide our spiritual steps, to elevate ourselves, to prepare ourselves for everything that must inevitably happen, very soon.

Pierre

NB: In Fatima, Mary said the great, great war will take place in the second half of the 20th Century. She was already speaking about the first episode of the world war against Iraq that began in 1991. Heaven said to me: "At the end of the second half, of the second half (*yes*) of the 20th Century", ie in the last quarter of the 20th Century. It took me some time to understand what Heaven had told me about these "halves".

This ’great war’, which started with the 1st Iraq war in January 1991 (George Bush), has destabilized the world balance until today. The episodes ensuing this war continue: 11 September 2001 attack, Afghanistan war in October 2001 (George W. Bush), 2nd Iraq war in 2003 (George W. Bush), war against Libya, destabilization of Syria and other Arab countries, etc...

1.6 Pope Francis the 1st exhorts Christians to treason: The Covenant of the Jews is not revoked

> Recently, Pope Francis the 1st promulgated an apostolic exhortation titled EVANGELII GAUDIUM.
>
> We read therein: "We hold the Jewish people in special regard because their covenant with God has never been revoked, for ‘the gifts and the call of God are irrevocable’" (Romans 11,29).
>
> And also: "Dialogue and friendship with the children of Israel are part of the life of Jesus’ disciples".
>
> What do you think of it?
>
> F.B.

By this exhortation (see the text "Evangelical Exhortations from Francis 1st (November 2013)" here below), Francis 1st demonstrates that he really is the Pope of the Antichrist, even more than his predecessors. The Vatican betrayal has reached its height.

He completely denies Jesus by saying: "We hold the Jewish people in special regard because their covenant with God has never been revoked, for 'the gifts and the call of God are irrevocable'" (Romans 11,29).

If the Covenant of the "Jewish people" with God has never been revoked, then why a new Covenant???

It is the first that continues...

Paul has already proclaimed very clearly:

> "But now the Christ has obtained a better ministry, by how much also he is a mediator of a better testament, which is established on better promises. For if that former had been faultless, there should not indeed a place have been sought for a second. For finding fault with them, he says: 'Behold, the days shall come, says the Lord: and I will perfect unto the house of Israel, and unto the house of Judah, **a new covenant**: Not according to the covenant which I made to their fathers, on the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt: because **they broke off** my covenant: and I regarded them not, says the Lord. For this is the covenant which I will make to the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord: I will give my laws into their mind, and in their heart will I write them: and I will be their God, and they shall be my people: And they shall not teach every man his neighbor and every man his brother, saying, 'Know the Lord': for all shall know me from the least to the greatest of them: Because I will be merciful to their iniquities, and their sins I will remember no more (Jeremiah 31,31-34). Now in saying a new, he has made the former old. And that which decays and grows old, is near its end" (Hebrews 8,6-13).

Did Francis 1st never read Paul and Jeremiah?

Paul speaks again about the Levite Priesthood instituted by Moses talking about the Priesthood according to Melchizedek which foreshadows the Messiah:

> "There is indeed **a setting aside** of the former commandment, because of the weakness and unprofitableness thereof: For the Law (of Moses) brought nothing to perfection, but a bringing in of a better hope, by which we draw near to God" (Hebrews 7,18-19).

Paul says also about the Christ announced in Psalm 40,7-9:

> "Wherefore when he comes into the world, the Christ says: 'Sacrifice (of animals) and oblation you would not: but a body you had fitted to me'. Holocausts for sin did not please you. Then said I: Behold I come: in the head of the book it is written of me: that I should do your will, O God. In saying before: 'Sacrifices, and oblations, and holocausts for sin you would not, neither are they pleasing to you, which are offered according to the Law (of Moses). Then said I: Behold, I come to do your will, O God. **He takes away the first**, that He may establish that which followed. In the which will, we are sanctified by the oblation of the body of Jesus Christ once" (Hebrews 10,5-10).

This oblation came true at the time of the Easter Meal of Jesus with His Apostles, just before His Passion, when He said to them:

> "This is the chalice, **the new Covenant** in my blood, which shall be shed for you" (Luke 22,10), "for many unto remission of sins" (Matthew 26,28).

Only the Blood of this new Covenant has the power to purify us and to wash our souls. The blood of the animals sacrificed in the context of Moses' covenant only prefigures this immutable spiritual reality as Paul has very well explained in Hebrews, chapters 9 and 10,1-18.

Paul speaks therefore of a new Covenant which "**substitutes**" the old one, of a "previously **annulled** prescription", of a "previous regime **taken away** to establish the one which followed", of a covenant "which **decays and grows old** near its end".

And Francis 1st claims that God has never revoked the covenant with the Jews!

It is true that "the gifts and the call of God are irrevocable" (Romans 11,29), but this means simply that well intentioned Jews are still and always called to believe in Jesus the Messiah. That means nothing else. We should understand that this way by relying on Jesus' Spirit and on the totality of Paul's writings.

Pius XII had well understood that Spirit when he had proclaimed in the encyclical Mystici Corporis Christi (29th June 1943): "by the death of our Redeemer, the New Testament took the place of the Old Law which had been abolished".

> "Jesus said to them: 'Have you never read in the Scriptures: The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? By the Lord this has been done; and it is wonderful in our eyes. Therefore I say to you, that the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and shall be given to a nation yielding the fruits thereof'" (Matthew 21,42-43).

It is the logical consequence: the first Covenant being "broken off" and the "first regime taken away", the Kingdom of God is given to others.

Israel, appeared again in 1948, is the announced Antichrist (see the text "The Key of the Apocalypse"). And the Vatican and the churches bow today before Israel. It means to deny Jesus who went up to the Cross to free us yesterday and today from the Zionist mentality. These Zionists want a military King Messiah, conqueror in their own favor only. And Jesus replies to them: "My kingdom is not of this world..." (John 18,36)

What Francis 1st claims is a flagrant heresy and the accomplishment of Paul's prophecy:

> "Let no man deceive you by any means, for unless there come a revolt first, and the Man of sin be revealed, the Son of perdition, Who opposes, and is lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped, **so that he sits in the temple of God**, showing himself as if he were God" (2 Thessalonians 2,3-4).

The Adversary (the Antichrist with the actual Pope as an agent) who denies the new Covenant is personally sitting in God's sanctuary (the Vatican).

What is particularly wicked in Francis 1st is that he proclaims these deceiving opinions in an apostolic exhortations. Christians are theoretically supposed to listen to him. Moreover, this traitor Pope recommends "the friendship with the children of Israel". He dœsn't say with the Jews. He says with the "children of Israel". So, he implicitly invites Christians to accept Zionism and to recognize the State of Israel. Now, this State is the Beast of Saint John's Revelation (See the texts "The Key of the Apocalypse" and "The Antichrist and the Return of Christ").

The true testimony owed to Jesus is, on the contrary, to refuse completely the recognition of the State of Israel (see the text "Christians and Israel"). In other words, Francis 1st today invites officially all Christians to betray Jesus.

We should not be astonished by this betrayal. It had been announced by Jesus for the end of times:

> "And then shall many be scandalized: and shall betray one another: and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall seduce many" (Matthew 24,10-11).

These false prophets are the two Beasts of the Revelation, Israel and USA, and all those speaking in their favor...

It is again the Revelation of our beloved John which reveals us the true view of God:

> "I know your tribulation and your poverty, but you are rich: and you are blasphemed by them that say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan" (Revelation 2,9).

They "say they are Jews and are not" because they deny the one and only Messiah sent by God. **True Jews** believe in Jesus who has perfectly accomplished all biblical prophecies about the Messiah.

Furthermore Paul underlines:

> "For you, brothers and sisters, are become followers of the churches of God which are in Judea, in Christ Jesus: for you also have suffered the same things from your own countrymen, even as they have from the Jews, Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and have persecuted us, and please not God, and are **adversaries to all men**; Prohibiting us to speak to the Gentiles, that they may be saved, to fill up their sins always: for the wrath of God is come upon them to the end" (1 Thessalonians 2,14-16).

How can this traitor Francis exhort us to give our friendship to those who, according to Paul, "are adversaries to all men", and who today, what's more, by the State of Israel, are the announced Antichrist with all its batch of injustices?

1.6.1 To exit and quit

The Pope who should have been light has become darkness.

The one who should have been Sun has become obscurity.

That's why God, who always precedes His enemy, proclaims in the Revelation about true believers:

> "And night shall be no more: and they shall not need the light of the lamp, nor the light of the sun, because the Lord God shall enlighten them, and they shall reign forever and ever" (Revelation 22,5).

Indeed, today we can do without the Vatican traitors and those of other churches, and put into practice these enlightening words from Saint John:

> "If any man come to you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into the house nor say to him, God speed you. For he that says unto him, God speed you, communicates with his wicked works" (2 John 10-11).

From now on, the Heavenly Jerusalem, composed of those who already live the Universal Restoration, is the light of the nations:

> "And the city (the Heavenly Jerusalem) has no need of the sun (Vatican and other churches), nor of the moon (Mosques), to shine in it. For the glory of God has enlightened it, and the Lamb is the lamp thereof, And the nations shall walk in the light of it..." (Revelation 21,23)

The Revelation which is the book of our times indicates us the way to follow:

> "Go out from her, my people; that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues... Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning,

> and famine, and she shall be burnt with the fire; because God is strong, who shall condemn her" (Revelation 18,4-8).

These verses apply to "Babylon the Great" (Revelation 18,2) that is Jerusalem, heart of the international Zionism.

In other words, God tells us all: dissociate yourself from Israel and quit this State. Quit it also in spirit, that is to say, stop being Zionists.

This call is addressed also to well intentioned Jews, to the "mislead" Jews, according to Jesus words to Pierre2, for whom we pray that the Morning Star (Revelation 22,16) rises in their hearts.

And in the same spirit it also means to Christians, they must dissociate themselves from the Church and all the churches that crawl before the Antichrist. It is the same for the other religions who have traitor religious chiefs.

Because these words from Peter and the Apostles to the Sanhedrin are again valid: "We ought to obey God, rather than men" (Acts 5,29).

No one can stop this movement of liberation that has started, because it comes from God, and not from man. What Gamaliel said at that time applies today:

> "And now, therefore, I say to you, refrain from these men, and let them alone; for if this council or this work be of men, it will come to nought; But if it be of God, you cannot overthrow it, lest perhaps you be found even to fight against God" (Acts 5,38-39).

1.6.2 God's response

In view of a general Awakening and for the Glory of Jesus His Messiah, God will answer very soon to the traitors dwelling in the Vatican.

This betrayal had started when John XXIII for diplomacy sake had refused to divulge the secret of Fatima in 1960. The Pope had refused to obey to the explicit request of the Virgin Mary. Now, the true secret of Fatima -not the pseudo-secret divulged by John Paul II- reveals the identity of the Antichrist. (see the text "Mary's message of Fatima").

Diplomacy has crushed Jesus' prophetic spirit. But, in God's Kingdom the lukewarm diplomat playing with words like Francis 1st is vomited (Revelation 3,15).

He wants to please the mighty of this world. However he forgets Mary's prophetic words in the Magnificat, where she proclaims about the Coming of the Messiah:

> "He has put down the mighty from their seat, and has exalted the humble" (Luke 1,52).

Today, again, the mighty ones will be put down.

So, since 1960, this prophecy by Jesus addressing to Peter has well been accomplished:

> "Amen, amen I say to you, when you was younger (when the church was still younger), you did gird yourself, and did walk where you would (you followed the Holy Spirit). But when you shall be old, you shall stretch forth your hands, and another shall gird you, and lead you whither you would not" (John 21,18).

This "another" is the Antichrist who, since Vatican II, lead the old Church today where it would not go, ie perdition.

We know God's answer to these traitors will be frightening.

It has been announced by our Mother in La Salette (1846):

"Rome (*the Vatican*) will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist".

"Pagan Rome will disappear. The fire of Heaven will fall and consume three cities. All the universe will be struck with terror and many will let themselves be led astray (*by the Antichrist*) because they have not worshipped the true Christ (Jesus) who lives among them".

It has been announced even by Mary in Fatima (1917):

"In Rome also, there will be great changes. Rome will be destroyed. What is rotten falls and what falls must not be maintained. The Church will be darkened and the world sunk in confusion..."

It has been announced by Jesus to Pierre2 (Messages received):

30.06.1976: "With all these earthquakes that you had in Europe, in Italy and you will have more in other parts of the world and in different shapes. Paris will be wiped out, in the same way Rome and the Vatican. Such is the secret of Fatima that the Sirs of the Vatican don't want to reveal for their condemnation; but it won't change things. Here, already we live the climate of the third world war".

15.11.1992: "Many of those who want to know the secret of Fatima and criticize the silence on its behalf, would have had their tongues cut rather than reveal it. 'This is intolerable language. How could anyone accept it?' (John 6,60). All others 'secrets' would be acceptable, but not the revelation of the identity of the Antichrist... It disturbs too much!... It causes some persecutions that one is not ready to undergo... even for Christ's love. Lucia, the poor and holy seer of Fatima, retired at the Carmelites in 1948... Why 1948? Exactly the year of the apparition of the 'Beast!'".

21.03.1994: "The treason appears by the non proclamation of the secret of Fatima and ends by the signature of the Vatican-Israeli agreement" (December 1993).

We are at the dawn of very big events.

The Revelation proclaims the consequences of the Betrayal. It is valid for everyone:

"If any man shall adore the beast and his image, and receive his character in his forehead, or in his hand (who thinks and works for it); He also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mingled with pure wine in the cup of his wrath, and shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the sight of the holy angels, and in the sight of the Lamb" (Revelation 14,9-10).

"He, that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the Churches..." (Revelation 2,11).

1.6.3 A new appeal

In the Name of Jesus Christ Returning among us and of the Virgin Mary we call all well intentioned men to rise against the Antichrist and against the traitor Churches supporting it.

The Revelation is the revolutionary book par excellence.

By saying: "Go out from her, my people..." (Revelation 18,4), Jesus addresses to all the true believers "of all nations, and tribes, and peoples, and tongues" (Revelation 7,9) to free them from Israel, traditional Churches and corrupt politicians.

Let's free ourselves and go directly to the Christ through the way of the heart.

It is Him who invites us:

> "Behold, I stand at the gate, and knock. If any man shall hear my voice, and open to me the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me" (Revelation 3,20).

(see the texts: "The Universal Restoration", "Jesus restores the priesthood" and "Bread of Life and new Priesthood").

From the moment we identify the Beast and we commit ourselves against it, we enter the Circle of Jesus' intimates.

Then He reveals Himself to us in the intimacy of the heart and of the spirit, and His Return takes place in us. It is valid for all the religions, all the people, all the tongues.

Because to resist Israel is the Spirit of Jesus.

Jesus tells us also in this small Saint Book of the Revelation:

> "And, Behold I come quickly. Blessed is he that keeps the words of the prophecy of this book... Behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to render to every man according to his works. I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. Blessed are they that wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb: that they may have a right to the tree of life, and may enter in by the gates into the city. Without are dogs, and sorcerers, and unchaste, and murderers, and servers of idols, and every one that loves and makes a lie" (Revelation 22,7 / Revelation 22,12-15).

And out the traitors like you Sir the Pope!!!

1.6.4 Evangelical Exhortations from Francis 1st (November 2013)

Relation with Judaism

Full text on www.vatican.va/holy_father/francesco/apost_exhortations/documents/papa-francesco_esortazione-ap_20131124_evangelii-gaudium_en.html#The_relation_with_Judaism

> 247. We hold the Jewish people in special regard because their covenant with God has never been revoked, for "the gifts and the call of God are irrevocable" (Romans 11,29). The Church, which shares with Jews an important part of the sacred Scriptures, looks upon the people of the covenant and their faith as one of the sacred roots of her own Christian identity (cf. Romans 11,16-18). As Christians, we cannot consider Judaism as a foreign religion; nor do we include the Jews among those called to turn from idols and to serve the true God (cf. 1 Thessalonians 1: 9). With them, we believe in the one God who acts in history, and with them we accept his revealed word.
>
> 248. Dialogue and friendship with the children of Israel are part of the life of Jesus' disciples. The friendship which has grown between us makes us bitterly and sincerely regret the terrible persecutions which they have endured, and continue to endure, especially those that have involved Christians.
>
> 249. God continues to work among the people of the Old Covenant and to bring forth treasures of wisdom which flow from their encounter with his word. For this reason, the Church also is enriched when she receives the values of Judaism. While it is true that certain Christian beliefs are unacceptable to Judaism, and that the Church cannot refrain from proclaiming Jesus as Lord and Messiah, there exists as well a rich complementarity which allows us to read the texts of the Hebrew Scriptures together and to help one another to mine the riches of God's word. We can also share many ethical convictions and a common concern for justice and the development of peoples.

Here are a few more words from Paul about the Old Covenant, its minister, and its Law (that of Moses):

> 2 Corinthians 3,5-16: "Not that we are sufficient to think anything of ourselves, as of ourselves: but our sufficiency is from God. Who also has made us fit **ministers of the new testament, not in the letter, but in the spirit. For the letter kills, but the spirit gives life**. Now if the ministration of death, engraved with letters upon stones, was glorious; so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which is made void: How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather in glory? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more the ministration of justice abounded in glory. For even that which was glorious in this part was not glorified, by reason of the glory that excels. For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remains is in glory. Having therefore such hope, we use much confidence: And not as Moses put a veil upon his face, that the children of Israel might not steadfastly look on the face of that which is made void. But their senses were made dull. For, until this present day, the selfsame veil, in the reading of the old testament, remains not taken away (because in Christ it is made void). But even until this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. But when they shall be converted to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away".
>
> Galatians 2,16-21: "But knowing that man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ; we also believe in Christ Jesus, that we may be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: because by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified. But if while we seek to be justified in Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners; is Christ then, the minister of sin? God forbid. For if I build up again the things which I have destroyed, I make myself a prevaricator. For I, through the law, am dead to the law, that I may live to God: with Christ I am nailed to the cross. And I live, now not I; but Christ lives in me. And that I live now in the flesh: I live in the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and delivered himself for me. I cast not away the grace of God. **For if justice be by the law, then Christ died in vain**."
>
> Galatians 5,1-6: "We are not the children of the bondwoman, but of the free: by the freedom wherewith Christ has made us free. Stand fast, and be not held again under the yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul tell you, that if you be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. And I testify again to every man circumcising himself, that he is a debtor to the whole law. **You are made void of Christ, you who are justified in the law: you are fallen from grace**. For we in spirit, by faith, wait for the hope of justice. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision: but faith that works by love".

How can therefore Francis 1st say that the Covenant with the Jews has not been revoked by God?

(See also the texts "Faith against Law" and "Worship and places of worship").

16.01.2014

2. The Antichrist

2.1 On the Subject of the Antichrist

Message of SB

> Hello,
>
> I have read some of your articles carefully, and partially agree with you when you say that the Antichrist (or the Antechrist, that is, the one who, anyway, will manifest himself before Christ) must manifest himself first and even go so far as to seat himself in God's sanctuary. However, I strongly doubt that this "God's Sanctuary" could be the Vatican, because considering the impressive number of "idols" of all kinds in this place, I seriously ask myself how one can call this place as the "Sanctuary of God"! Don't get me wrong, the Roman Catholic Church is guilty of having voluntarily eliminated the second authentic commandment of God which specifically forbids the reproduction and display of "images" or "statues" of all kinds, before which people bow down to worship. Having said that, I rather believe that a third Jewish Temple will one day be built in Israel, and that it is at this place, the true "Temple of God", that the Antichrist will even go so far as to sit! You know, for Orthodox (non-Christian) Jews, a Messiah has always been an important persona of their history. David, for example, was considered at his time a true "messiah" (a sort of national hero) by the priests of Israel, ie an "anointed" of God. So, from this simple observation, it would be logical to admit that the real "Antichrist" will be the "Messiah" expected and accepted by the Orthodox Jews (surely one of their own!), who obviously deny the fact that Jesus may be the Messiah, since they consider him rather an "impostor"!
>
> For further information, I suggest you visit my personal website: http://……../nephtali./
>
> Yours truly.
>
> And may God bless you.
>
> SB

We are well aware of your logic concerning the Zionist Temple, a logic which has exploited and seduced, as Jesus had predicted (Matthew 24), a great number of badly rooted Christians, especially among Anglo-American Protestants, to the point of supporting the Antichrist in his projects instead of fighting him, and this since Lord Balfour. Jesus never acted in this way! He announced, to the contrary, of the great scandal of the Zionists of former days and of today, the destruction of the temple of Jerusalem in favor of his Temple: Himself (John 2).

Your concept of the temple of Jerusalem as "the true Temple of God" (?!) is a heresy denounced by Christ Himself who considered, as you well know, that this temple is "a den of robbers" (Luke 19,46), just as the Vatican was denounced in "La Salette", by "You know Who", as being "cesspools of impurity". She is quite right and it is not I who contradicts Her by saying that it was the devil who denounces himself... like the Pharisees used to say about Christ in the past (Matthew 12,24-28 / Luke 11,14-18). If the Vatican, and rightly so, is no longer worthy of being the Temple of God, the temple you defend is even less so. The logic of the living Christ will triumph over that of men.

Mary, She, "who received a special grace" directly from God, not men (a grace that no other woman has obtained, whether you like it or not!), She, whose "soul was pierced so that the secret thoughts of many may be laid bare" (Luke 2,35), this humble Woman already unmasks many disguised hearts. This **unique grace given to Mary** was perceived by Elizabeth who, under the influence of the Holy Spirit, saw the privilege gratified to Mary and, before her grandeur

exclaimed: "**Of all women You are the most blessed**... Why **should I** be honored with the visit from the Mother of my Lord?" It is thanks to her love and humility that Elizabeth saw the emblem of Mary's greatness who, always influenced by the Holy Spirit, answered: "My soul proclaims the greatness of the Lord... Yes, from this day forward all generations will call me blessed, for the Almighty has done great things **for me**" (Luke 1,39-49). We say "Amen" to these inspired words because only the generations of the damned will not recognize the unique greatness of the Woman, chosen by the Father to be the Mother of His Word, Incarnate.

On the other hand, we would like to point out that, like David, King Cyrus, a non-Jew, was also considered "anointed", Messiah, for having allowed the reconstruction of the Temple (Isaiah 45,1). Now, Jesus is uniquely THE TEMPLE, it is why He is the only Messiah. In this Temple, no impurity can enter; John saw no other Temple in the spiritual Jerusalem (Revelation 21,22-27). We refer you to the excellent book "THE BIBLE UNEARTHED" (Bayard) written by two non-fanatical Jewish archeologists: "Israel Finkelstein and Neil Asher Silberman". They historically shed light on the reality of David and his alleged temple. They aroused outrage amidst the Zionist ranks and fundamentalist rabbis. Nevertheless, the facts speak for themselves. We also refer you to the non-Zionist Jewish websites of Israel Shamir (`www.israelshamir.net`) and the Orthodox Jews "Neturei Karta" (`www.nkusa.org`) who are opposed to the State of Israel and the reconstruction of the Temple. They understood certain points better than the so-called disciples of Jesus. Such Jews are not far from believing that the Beast of chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation is Israel, because soon, "Everyone will see Him, even those who pierced Him..." (Revelation 1,7)

Reconsider your accounts all the way through, because God will confound the analysis of modern Pharisees and "literalists", and because "the written letters bring death, but the Spirit gives life." (2 Corinthians 3,6) Moreover, and always according to the Spirit, not according to the letter which leads astray, the second commandment applies to the pagan spirit of the past which **adored** gods which are naught; not to those who, according to the Spirit of Christ, cherish and esteem reproductions of the holy souls who exist and remind us, by seeing them, of the salutary importance of spiritual life in Jesus. This fact displeases the demons and those they control to deceive, out of hatred, the other, not out of love for the Truth. **To venerate** holy souls, dœs not mean the worship of other gods. All it takes is a little discernment, look!! Otherwise, as rabbis do, and according to literal interpretation, men should be forbidden of having photos of their families, their children, their deceased... Those who still persist to understand the Scriptures in the narrow mind of the Torah, are the unhappiest of men. Their baptism was of no use to them (Galatians 3,3).

Should we still speak of the Eucharistic commandment of Jesus concerning the "Bread of Life"? This commandment is overlooked and distorted by so many so-called Christians. Yet, "unless you eat the Flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his Blood, you have no life in you" (John 6,51-58). Some see this only as a symbol. Where it is necessary to interpret to the letter, they insert their minds there, and where it is necessary to interpret in Spirit, they use the letter which kills: "For my Flesh", Jesus says, "is REAL Food and my Blood is REAL Drink... But there are some of you who do not believe." (John 6,55-64) There are, alas, among us too, who hardly believe in it! These were the Words of the Word of Life. They confound human interpretations and mentalities who do not believe in them: "because a person who eats and drinks, **without recognizing the Body is eating and drinking his own condemnation**." (1Corinthians 11,29)

The Apocalyptic events which are already taking place around the Euphrates (Revelation 9 and 16) speak, speak even louder, and "anyone has ears to hear, let him listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches." Too bad for the others! These prophetic events will confirm the integrity of our Message in its entirety.

The mention of “Nephtali” at the tail of your address reveals a spirit. Why not “Zebulon” ... or one of the twelve apostles instead?

Farewell

Site Pierre2

2.2 Antechrist or Antichrist?

Why do you always speak of Antichrist and not Antechrist?

Some speak of the Antechrist, the word for precursor of Christ. John the Baptist was the Precursor of Jesus: Antechrist. Now, it is about the An**ti**christ, the **Enemy** of Christ. In fact, the original text of the Bible, written in Greek by St John, speaks of the "AN**TI**XRISTOS" and reveals to us, the specific characteristic of this Enemy of Christ Jesus: "The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ–he is the liar, he is the Antichrist"(1 John 2,22).

It is regrettable to note that even some Bibles and dictionaries do not make this distinction and fail to have recourse to the original Greek Biblical text. This error is only found in French translations. In English, it is indeed "Antichrist", in Italian “Anticristo", and in modern Greek “Antixristos".

In a broader sense, we can speak in our time of the Antechrist also by designating the Antichrist, because this enemy of Christ appears in the End Times, before the apocalyptic return of Christ. Therefore, he is also the accursed forerunner of the blessed Christ.

For more information see our text: "The Antichrist and the Return of Christ".

2.3 Pope John Paul II and the Secret of Fatima

In one of your publications you say that Pope John-Paul II did not reveal the real secret of Fatima. Explain to me what prompts you to affirm this?

Karol Wojtila, has seriously lied. He dœs not merit the name of the Apostles John and Paul.

I present to you here, the indisputable argument of his lie.

He said in 2000 that the secret of Fatima concerned the attempt on his person on May 13, 1981.

Our Mother asked that the secret of Fatima be revealed in 1960 so “to be understood.”

If it was revealed on that date, in 1960, it would CERTAINLY NOT have been a question of a future event, to take place 21 years later.

No one would have understood. It is CERTAINLY an event PRIOR to 1960 to be understood in 1960, and not an event after 1960.

An event that took place in 1948..... in Palestine!!!

(see the texts: "Mary’s Message of Fatima", "Open Letter to the Pope", and "The Key of the Apocalypse").

3. The Apocalypse

3.1 Do you not think that God's Mercy will reign prevalent over the world rather than his anger?

We can only answer inspired by the Holy Spirit. This Spirit was in its fullness in the Messiah who had said to his Apostles:

> "When the Consoler comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who issues from the Father, he will be my witness. And you too will be witnesses, because you have been with me from the outset." (John 15,26-27)

This testimony -with the Holy Spirit- concerns not only the first Apostles, those who were with Jesus form the outset, but also the Apostles of the End of Times, those who are to announce His Return, who remain with Him until the end, by the power of the Holy Spirit who is in them.

Jesus spoke explicitly about the Apostles at his Return:

> "They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he will send his Angels (*Apostles of the end of times*) with a loud trumpet to gather his chosen from the four winds..." (Matthew 24,30-31)

The first Apostles bore witness in the past for Jesus. The last Apostles must do the same by "prophesying again, this time against many different nations and countries and languages and emperors", seduced by the Beast (Revelation 10,11).

Like their predecessors, the Apocalyptic Apostles can bear witness only with the support of the Holy Spirit in them. One of the clauses of this testimony is the explosive announcement of the Divine Wrath upon the world. It is no longer a question of mercy for a world gone wicked. It will be, said Jesus, as in the days of the flood with Noah and Sodom and Gomorrah with Lot (Luke 17,26-30).

Our Apocalyptic witnessing, inspired by the Holy Spirit, prompts us to say that God will answer the prayers of "the souls of all the people who had been killed on account of the Word of God, for witnessing to it", against the Beast (Revelation 6,9).

These holy souls cry out to God, "shout aloud, 'Holy, Faithful Master, how much longer will you wait before you pass sentence and take vengeance for our death on the inhabitants of the earth?'" (Revelation 6,10) The Apocalyptic Apostles offer the Father these prayers throught "the golden censer... from which the smoke of the incense gœs up in the presence of God and with it the prayers of the saints." (Revelation 8,3-4)

God responds, reveals the Book of Revelation, and takes His vengeance in glory:

"The nations were seething with rage and now the time has come for your own anger... and for your servants the prophets... to be rewarded... The time has come to destroy those who are destroying the earth." (Revelation 11,18) ... "You alone are Holy, and all the pagans will come and adore you for the many acts of justice you have shown." (Revelation 15,4) Jesus had already predicted that "this is the time of vengeance when all that scripture says must be fulfilled." (Luke 21,22) It is therefore no longer a question of mercy. It is time to examine what is written in the Book of Revelation.

It is upon the Beast and its allies that the Vengeance of the Holy Father falls (Revelation 17,12-14 / 18,1-24 / 19,20-21 / 20,7-10).

True believers, they alone, will escape this Divine Vengeance that "will come down on every living man on the face of the earth", said Jesus who recommended:

> "Stay awake, praying at all times for the strength to survive all that is going to happen, and to stand with confidence before the Son of Man." (Luke 21,34-36)

However, the Savior never stops short of reassuring the pure hearts who remain faithful to Him until the end against the Beast, all His Apostles and Witnesses of the Last Days:

> "When these things begin to take place, stand erect, hold your head high, because your liberation is near at hand." (Luke 21,28)

3.2 The Apocalyptic fight against the Antichrist

> Hello Pierre,
>
> But how is it possible that Jesus wants to wage war against Israel with weapons? If Israel is an illegitimate state, it should cease to exist through diplomacy.

Dear G.,

To understand the prophetical dimension of the armed struggle of the Palestinians to liberate their land, it is necessary to meditate carefully on the verses below:

Unfortunately, traditional churches never explain these verses. They are not even able to. That is because they do not have or have refused the Key, which is the Revelation, opened.

The Time of Revelation is the time of God's Justice that was prophesied by Jesus Himself. At the end of time, Jesus comes back to punish His enemies who reject Him, and to reward His true followers who will have committed themselves against the Beast.

Jesus spoke about it in the Gospels, tackling the subject of the End Times. This is the theme of the Wedding of the Son of the King (God):

> Mark 12,7-11: "But those tenants said to each other, 'This is the heir; come on, let us kill him; and the inheritance will be ours.' So they seized him and killed him and threw him out of the vineyard. Now what will the lord of the vineyard do? He will come (*Jesus' Return*) and **make an end of the tenants** and give the vineyard to others. Have you not read the text of scripture: It was the stone rejected by the builders that became the keystone. This was the Lord's doing and it is wonderful to see?"
>
> Matthew 22,2-9: "The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who gave a feast for his son's wedding. He sent his servants (*the Apostles of the End of Times*)to call those who had been invited, but they would not come. Next he sent some more servants (*the Two Witnesses*). 'Tell those who have been invited,' he said, 'that I have my banquet all prepared, my oxen and fattened cattle have been slaughtered, everything is ready. Come to the wedding.' But they were not interested: one went off to his farm, another to his business, and the rest seized his servants (*the Palestinians, the Lebanese Resistance*), maltreated them and killed them. **The king was furious. He dispatched his troops, destroyed those murderers and burned their town (*Jerusalem*)**. Then he said to his servants, 'The wedding is ready; but as those who were invited proved to be unworthy, go to the crossroads in the town and invite everyone you can find to the wedding.'"

The troops sent today by God-King are the Palestinians, Hizballah, Syria and those who support them. It is about "burning their town" (the city of those who killed the sent servants). It is a fight for Justice and liberation as that of Saint Joan of Arc. The land of the Palestinians is occupied like the time the English occupied a part of France.

The enemies of Jesus are those "who did not want Him to reign over them":

> Luke 19,12-27: "Accordingly he said, 'A man of noble birth went to a distant country to be appointed king and afterward return...' Now on his return (*Jesus' Return*), having received his appointment as king, he sent for those servants to whom he had given the money, to find out what profit each had made... 'But as for my enemies who did not want me for their king, bring them here, **and execute them in my presence**."

At the appointed time, God's Wrath will fall upon His enemies.

At the helm of these troops who execute the Vengeance of God is Jesus, the Rider:

> Revelation 19,11-14:: "And now I saw heaven open, and a white horse appear; its rider was called Faithful and True; **he is a judge with integrity, a warrior for justice**. His eyes were flames of fire, and his head was crowned with many coronets; the name written on him was known only to himself, his cloak was soaked in blood. He is known by the name, The Word of God. Behind him, dressed in linen of dazzling white, rode the armies of heaven on white horses."

This War of Justice that the Rider on the White Horse is waging is not just a spiritual war, but also a physical war because:

> Revelation 19,1-2: "After this I seemed to hear the great sound of a huge crowd in heaven, singing, 'Alleluia! Victory and glory and power to our God! He judges fairly, he punishes justly, and he has condemned the famous prostitute (*Jerusalem*) who corrupted the earth with her fornication; he has avenged his servants (*the servants killed in Matthew 22*),that she killed.'"
>
> Revelation 16,5-6: "Then I heard the angel of water say, 'You are the holy He-Is-and-He-Was, the Just One, and this is a just punishment: they spilled the blood of the saints and the prophets, and blood is what you have given them to drink; it is what they deserve!'"
>
> Revelation 14,19-20: : "So the angel set his sickle to work on the earth and harvested the whole vintage of the earth and put it into a huge winepress, the winepress of the wrath of God, outside the city, where it was trodden, **until the blood that came out of the winepress was up to the horses' bridles** ,as far away as sixteen hundred furlongs (*the breadth of Palestine*)."

It is a language of war.

The Apocalypse calls to this holy war of resistance by saying:

> Revelation 13,10: "Those for captivity, into captivity; the sword for those who kill by the sword. This is why the saints must resist and have faith."

The Resistance and the Faith of the Saints therefore consist today in giving back to the Beast what it has sown. It is a very strong Call to Combat the Beast. This verse is translated here from the original text. In the recent Bibles, the text is often diluted.

Our Father invites the combatants to render back to the Beast even double of what it had done:

> Revelation 18,6-8: : "She is to be paid in her own coin. **She must be paid double the amount she exacted** . She is to have a doubly strong cup of her own mixture. Every one of her shows and orgies is to be matched by a torture or a grief. 'I am the queen on my throne', she says to herself, 'and I am no widow and shall never be in mourning.' For that, within a single day, the plagues will fall on her: disease and mourning and famine.

She will be burned right up. The Lord God has condemned her, and he has great power."

The same Call is also contained in the following verses:

Revelation 19,17-21: "I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he shouted aloud to all the birds that were flying high overhead in the sky, 'Come here. Gather together at the great feast that God is giving. There will be the flesh of kings for you, and the flesh of great generals and heroes, the flesh of horses and their riders and of all kinds of men, citizens and slaves, small and great.' Then I saw the beast, with all the kings of the earth and their armies, gathered together to fight the rider and his army. But the beast was taken prisoner, together with the false prophet who had worked miracles on the beast's behalf and by them had deceived all who had been branded with the mark of the beast and worshiped his image. These two were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning Sulphur. . . "

God's true disciples answer the Call and join this Fight, be it on a material or spiritual level, depending on each one's Mission.

Here are some more verses that show that this war in not exclusively spiritual:

Revelation 11,13: "Immediately, there was a violent earthquake, **and a tenth of the city collapsed**; seven thousand persons were killed in the earthquake. . . "

Revelation 16,13-14: : "Then from the jaws of dragon and beast and false prophet I saw three foul spirits come; they looked like frogs and in fact were demon spirits, able to work miracles, going out to all the kings of the world **to call them together for the war** of the Great Day of God the Almighty."

Revelation 18,17-18: "'. . . your riches are all destroyed within a single hour.' All the captains and seafaring men, sailors and all those who make a living from the sea **will be keeping a safe distance, watching the smoke as she burns**,and crying out, 'Has there ever been a city as great as this!'"

Revelation 20,8-9: "They will come swarming over the entire country and besiege the camp of the saints, which is the city that God loves (*Jerusalem*). **But fire will come down on them from heaven and consume them".**

To finish, a few more Messages from Jesus received by Pierre:

1970-10-16: "Padre Pio promises me to hand me an image of Mary. It is a picture of Palestinian children that I receive with a cross on the picture among the children."

Conclusion: The Virgin is the Palestinian people in holocaust.

1970-10-23: "The punishment that gives us peace is upon him (*on the Palestinian*)".

1970-11-02: "Woe to you, journalists, modern scribes who inform the lie."

1971-09-15: "Would you like to know what we would do to Christ if He came back? Observe the Palestinians who share His fate!!!" (*repeated*).

1975-04-22: "Those who help them (*the Palestinians*) will live forever."

1975: "The Palestinians are the Body of the Christ."

1980-05-09: "The blood flowing from the veins of the Palestinian Fedayeen is the result of the blood that flowed from My veins. The cry of anguish and pain from the heart of the Palestinian is the echo of My cry of agony. He will share my Resurrection."

1981-04-19: “The sons of the Devil will say to their father one day: ‘It was the Palestinians who stopped us from establishing your kingdom on earth’.”

1983-07-01: “My new name is ‘fiercely anti-Zionist Palestinian’.”

1991-04-27: “Palestine duped to be crucified like Jesus.”

1991-08-25: “The innocent blood of the Palestinians shed by the Beast is precious in the eyes of God. Like the innocent Blood of Christ, this human blood will finally abort the plan of the Antichrist (*Revelation 11/12*). Christ spoke to us in Dozulè of a human redemptive blood. It is the one spilled by the Beast in Jerusalem and Palestine, ‘where their Lord was crucified (*Revelation 11,8*)’. This is the great cross seen by the seer Magdalen, as big as Jerusalem, the criminal ‘Great City’ of all times (*Revelation 17,6 & 17,18 / Revelation 18,24 / Matthew 23,37-39*). Tiny Palestine has been the center of Redemption through the shedding of Holy Blood; this is happening again by the shedding of human blood.”

2000-10-30: "Palestine will glorify God and His Messiah for 500 years."

2003-04-16 "The Iraqi Resistance (*like the French and Palestinian resistance*)."

2004-08-30: "Peace between the slain (*Palestinians*) and the slayers (*Israelis*) is impossible."

1971-07-24: “All men, all sinners, all the distraught now have a chance to redeem themselves. Let them join the struggle against evil embodied in the Beast”.

You are free G. to believe everything that has been written here or not.

As the disciples said to Jesus at the time:

> “After hearing it, many of his followers said, ‘This is intolerable language. How could anyone accept it?’”(John 6,60)

Likewise today, many will not be able to bear this strong language of the Spirit. And yet, these are the words of the Book of Life (Revelation 20,12).

Have a good journey and may our Mother enlighten you.

Pierre2 Website

4. The Universal Restoration

4.1 The Eucharist without a priest?

You say that you believe in the Eucharist; how do you manage without a priest?

The Eucharist is indeed the Bread of spiritual Life and of the Resurrection (see John 6,51-58 / Matthew 26,26-29). We prefer to call it "the Bread of Life" according to Jesus' expression Himself (Jean 6,35) or the "Lord's Supper" according to the Apostles (1 Corinthians 11,20). Eucharist comes from the Greek Eukharistia which means "Thanksgiving". After eating the Body and Blood of Christ, the first Christians thanked God. But that dœs not reveal the Substance: The Body, Blood, Soul and Spirit of Christ are present therein (Marc 14,22-24 / 1 Corinthians 11,23-29). Over time, for the vast majority of believers, the Eucharist represents something; but it is **Someone** alive: The Christ! This Bread of Life is Jesus living with us, in us. See **the prayer of Hermann Cohen** in our text: "Jesus restores the priesthood".

One must be a priest of Christ Jesus to be able to incarnate his Body and his Blood in the Bread and the Wine. In the end times in which we live, Jesus inaugurates a new priesthood worthy of the "New Earth and New Heaven" (Revelation 21,1-5). At his First Coming, Jesus shook the Jewish priesthood. Likewise, today, at His Second Coming, and by virtue of this new era, Jesus is establishing a new revolutionary priesthood, an apocalyptic priesthood. This shakes the Christian conceptions acquired along the centuries from the old and outdated Earth and Heaven.

This priesthood is reserved for those, men and women, who believe in the Apocalyptic message revealed by Jesus Himself in 1970: "He loves us and has washed away our sins with His blood, and made of us a line of kings, **priests** to serve His God and Father" (Revelation 1,5-6 / Revelation 5,10 / Revelation 20,6).

Christ, who is able to incarnate Himself in the bread and wine by a traditional priest, even if he is unworthy, is all the more able to do the same by Apocalyptic priests and priestesses **of His choice**.

Happy are those who believe!

We refer you to the text: "Jesus restores the Priesthood".

4.2 Conference on the Apocalypse?

Some correspondents asked us to come to Italy and give a conference on the Book of Revelation. Many people would be interested.

Here is our response:

I am replying to you regarding the possibility of having a conference about the Book of Revelation in Italy and elsewhere. I urge you to read this carefully and calmly, referring to biblical references.

Imagine me (or you) trying to speak at a conference about the "New Priesthood", the Apocalyptic one and about the "New Heaven".

The New Priesthood:

> "He loves us... He made of us a line of kings, PRIESTS to serve his God and Father" (Revelation 1,5-6).
>
> "You are worthy to take the scroll (*of Revelation*) and to break the seals... you were sacrificed and with your blood you bought people for God of every race, language,

> people and nation... made them a line of kings and PRIESTS for God to rule the world" (Revelation 5,9-10).
>
> "Blessed and holy are who share in the first resurrection... they will be PRIESTS of God and of Christ..." (Revelation 20,6).

It is clear that a new priesthood is accessible to those who recognize the Beast, who open the door of their hearts and their homes to welcome the Divine Bridegroom, thus automatically becoming priests of a new covenant, the Apocalyptic Alliance:

> "Look, I am standing at the door (*of the heart*) knocking; if one of you hears me calling and opens the door, I will come in to share a meal at that person's side." (Revelation 3,20)

Jesus had prepared us for this new priesthood. We see in Luke's Gospel:

> "Be like people waiting for their master... ready to open the door as soon as he comes and knocks... He will sit them down at Table (*The Eucharist*)" (Luke 12,35-38).

We are at Table with Him and our Dearest Mother in our homes, because He made of all of us, who believe in the Revelation of May 13 1970, a new priesthood. We have opened to Him the door AS SOON AS He arrived, like the bride who ardently awaits the Bridegroom. So He sits us down at His Table in our homes.

Thus, it is now imperative to follow the advice of Jesus:

> "Why not judge for yourselves what is right?" (Luke 12,57).

Therefore, let us be independent Christians by judging for ourselves...

It is not easy for the feeble and lukewarm to judge for themselves!

If I had to give an apocalyptic conference and say these things, nobody would be left in the room to listen. Everyone would leave as did the Hebrews, who left Jesus when he spoke of his Flesh and Blood to eat and drink:

> "This is intolerable language! How can anyone accept it? ... After this, many of his disciples left him and stopped going with him." (John 6,60-66)

It is still not the time to speak openly.

> "Keep the words of the seven thunderclaps secret and do not write them down..." (Revelation 10,4).

Many have left me and persecuted me for what I say. A few blessed others believe me, becoming priests for Eternity and Eat with Jesus around his Table (Matthew 22). An example: whilst speaking to our dear G. a couple of days ago, he tells me that a brother (monk) no longer wanted to listen to him because of the blind obedience to the Pope of Rome. We say what Peter did before the enraged Sanhedrin: "We cannot stop proclaiming what we have seen and heard..." (Acts 4,19-20) And, "Obedience to God comes before obedience to men..." (Acts 5,29) "Rome will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist", said our Immaculate Mother in La Salette.

The moment has arrived "... the book of life was opened (*The Apocalypse*), and other books opened (*of the Bible, the Gospels to understand the prophecies*) (Revelation 20,11-13)... and "to judge for ourselves" if we want to please Jesus and Our Mother.

The New Heaven and the New Earth are mentioned in Revelation 21 and 22 as you know.

It will soon be time to speak and reveal these things openly:

> "Do not keep the prophecies of this book a secret..." (Revelation 22,10)

Union of prayers in love around Jesus and Mary.

Your brother who loves you.

Ps: It would be good to read on the website "The Universal Restoration", "Jesus restores the Priesthood", "Bread of Life and New Priesthood".

4.3 The prophet Haggai and the Temple

> I have read the prophet Haggai and had some doubts about the construction of the Temple. It seems like God blessed the construction of a material Temple, and not of a spiritual one as you claim.
>
> G.

We need to understand Haggai's prophecies, like all the prophets, not materially, but spiritually. The Reconstruction of the Temple, which is a blessing for all who participate in it, aims for God's intention for the Reconstruction of the True Temple of God according to the Word of Jesus:

> "Destroy this Temple, and in three days I will raise it up... But He was speaking of the Temple that was His body" (John 2,19-21).

It is in working for the construction of this Temple in us that we obtain all the blessings of which the prophet Haggai speaks of in chapters 1 and 2.

Understanding the Temple's reconstruction materially concerning Haggai's prophecy is nonsense. For the 2nd temple did not have the beauty of the first (see Ezra 3,12 and the Biblical Course on the Book of Ezra). So you have to rise up to the spiritual level to understand it. Moreover, it is through the Temple of the Body of Christ that our Father grants us Peace, according to the words of Haggai:

> "...and in this place I shall give peace" (Haggai 2,9).

It is uniquely in Jesus that we find peace:

> "Peace I bequeath to you, my own peace I give you, a peace the world cannot give..." (John 14,27)

If the Zionist Jews are still waging wars over a geographical territory, it is because they still have not built the Spiritual Temple by accepting in them the Spirit of the true Christ. Until now, they still have not put their hands in the construction of the true spiritual Temple. It is why Haggai continues a little further, saying:

> "'It is the same with this people,' he said, 'the same with this nation as I see it—it is Yahweh who speaks—the same with everything they turn their hands to; and what they offer here is unclean.'" (Haggai 2,14)

Benediction commences with faith in Jesus, the true Messiah of God, and the commitment of building His internal and universal Temple in us. And so, we enter this "today", which Haggai speaks of: "From today onward I intend to bless you".

In Haggai's writings -as in all the writings of the prophets- the "lying pen" of the scribes (Jeremiah 8,8) has infiltrated. We recognize it well in these words which are certainly not inspired by God:

> "Mine is the silver, mine the gold!" (Haggai 2,8).

In fact, Haggai invites us to believe in the true Messiah, saying:

> "When that day comes... I will take you, Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel, my servant—it is Yahweh Sabaoth who speaks—and make you like a signet ring. For I have chosen you—it is Yahweh Sabaoth who speaks." (Haggai 2,23).

This "signet ring" is the Messiah who will come from the line of Zerubbabel. And this prophecy concerns, above all, the Return of Jesus, because in verse 2,22, Haggai says:

> "I will overturn the thrones of kingdoms and destroy the power of the kings of the nations..."

It is at the end of Times that God our Father will reconstruct the true spiritual Temple (Revelation 21,22), source of all Blessings and of true Peace.

It is thanks to the "small open book" of Revelation (Revelation 10,2) that we understand the true level of God's thinking. Indeed, the Book of Revelation draws our attention that the two olive trees which the prophet Zechariah speaks of (contemporary of Haggai; Zechariah 4,1-14) are in God's intention, the two witnesses of the Apocalypse: they are therefore the two Palestinian and Lebanese peoples who resist Israel and are put to death by this State. Our Father, by giving Zechariah the vision of the two olive trees, did not therefore refer to Zerubbabel and Joshua who rebuilt the material temple, but to the two witnesses of the Apocalypse, who by their testimony until martyrdom, are trying to rebuild the true spiritual Temple of God (Revelation 11).

Who is really reconstructing God's Temple? We have the answer in Zechariah 6. Only the Messiah, the announced "Branch", "he who is going to wear the royal insignia" (Zechariah 6,12-13). "He will rebuild Yahweh's sanctuary" (Zechariah 6,12). This is the only Temple that interests our Father and that Jesus has built through the sacrifice of His Life. This Temple will be the "measure" again, at the end of Times thanks to the martyrdom of the two witnesses (Revelation 11). It is the new selection of the elect in relation to their commitment against the Antichrist. This is how our Father "assesses minds and hearts" today (Psalm 7,9).

Dear G., we hope to have answered your question. As you are a soul thirsty for knowledge, we advise you to read and study in detail, the Biblical course which is on the website. There you will find answers to many of your questions. And plus, you will understand in what Spirit one should read the Bible. Regarding the prophets, you can specifically read lessons 10 and 11 which will already enlighten you much, as well as the explanation of the second Book of Samuel where Nathan's prophecy about the true Temple is explained (see also regarding this 2 Samuel 7,5-7 /

We pray for you. May our Immaculate Mother inspire you and make you discover the splendor of the New Jerusalem (Revelation 21), so that you too, will be able to sing the "New Hymn" to God (Revelation 14,3).

We pray for you. May our Immaculate Mother inspire you and make you discover the splendor of the new Jerusalem (Revelation 21), so that you too, are able to sing to God the "New Hymn" (Revelation 14,3).

See also the text: "Cult and Place of Worship".

5. Jesus

5.1 According to the Qur'an, claiming that Jesus is the Son of God is blasphemy?

> You sustain that Jesus is the Son of God. Now, according to the Qur'an this is blasphemy: "And yet they say: 'The All-Merciful has taken to Himself a son!' You have uttered a thing most terrible! The heavens will nigh convulse at the mention of it, the earth is split asunder. . . " (Qur'an XIX; Mary,88-92)

The Qur'anic verse reported here: "And yet they say: 'The All-Merciful has taken to Himself a son!' You have uttered a thing most terrible! The heavens will nigh convulse at the mention of it, the earth is split asunder etc...", one should note that the expression: "The All-Merciful has taken to Himself a son" dœs not appear in the Bible nor in the Qur'an dœs it concern Christ. It is a pagan expression which fits the pagan mentality of the Arabian Peninsula. Who dœs this verse concern? Who are those who said: "The All-Merciful has taken to Himself a son"?

Christians have never said, nor do they ever say: "God has taken to Himself a son". This Qur'anic verse dœs not therefore accuse the Christians, it is clearly aimed at the polytheist idolaters of Mecca who confounded Jesus with their idols.

The explanation of this verse of the Qur'an XIX; Mary 88-92 is found in chapter 2 of "Look of Faith at the Qur'an", under the title "The Messiah and His Title of Son of God". Read mainly from the paragraph that begins: "How to understand what the Qur'an reveals in the following Surah on the unity of God: 'Say, He is God, Unique...'" (Qur'an CXII; True Devotion,1-4)

Verses 88-92 of the Surah "Mary", like verses 1-4 of the Surah "True Devotion", refer to the pagans of Mecca concerning the mythological gods and their **imaginary sons**; these verses are not aimed at Christians regarding the Messiah. Read the rest of the text indicated.

So the verses 88-92 of the Surah "Mary" is not aimed at Christians, but at the (polytheist) idolaters of Mecca, since God chose Mary TO HAVE A SON FROM HER, who **has no Father but the One God**.

This is also the testimony inspired by God in the Gospels. Moreover, the Qur'an comes as a **confirmation** of the Gospels (Qur'an IV; Women,47). Any Qur'anic interpretation which dœs not confirm the Gospels and the Torah invalidates the Qur'an, and would indeed be reason to put an end to God's patience and "the heavens will nigh convulse, the earth -because of this fallacious interpretation- is split asunder..." as the Qur'an expresses in the verse you quote.

Some believe that God "has taken to Himself a son" by adopting Jesus **after His birth**, as He did with the prophets after their births. Yet this is not the case and provokes the wrath of God after all He has patiently explained in His Divine Revelation concerning the birth of His Messiah, whether in the Bible or in the Qur'an. Here is why the "heavens nigh convulse" because of the incomprehension of some with an obtuse mentality, unable to grasp the divine intention. For God in the Qur'an, **clearly** revealed that He created the Body of Jesus "with His Word put into Mary's womb" (Qur'an III; The Family of Imran,45). He did not do so with **any** other prophet but Jesus. Why? Because Jesus, He alone, is the Word of God, His only Son through Mary who remained a virgin. So, "The Lord of Mercy has not taken to Himself a son" by mating physically with a partner, as the polytheists understood, who deserve God's wrath (see Qur'an VI; Cattle,101).

Jesus has no other Mother but Mary, nor another Father but God. The One who has God as Father is of God, the Son. We must be logical, not fanatical, or closed to divine intention if we do not want to deserve the just wrath of the Divine Judge.

Let us say who is the Mother of Jesus.

Let us say who is the Father of Jesus... according to the Qur'an of course.

Let us say whom Jesus is the Son of, who are both his parents, always according to the Qur'an.

Understand who can!

God's just anger cracks the heavens open and comes down upon those who refuse to grasp the divine intention and insist on making the Qur'an a contradiction to the Gospels.

5.2 Why do you say that Jesus is God?

> Why do you say that Jesus is God?

It is Divine Revelation, not us, that affirms that Jesus is God Incarnate. We firmly believe in it. See our text: "The Divinity of Jesus".

A letter written by a correspondent to the website and our answer.

> Hello,
>
> Your site is very interesting, and I congratulate you for your attempt to unite Muslims, Christians and Jews towards the only religion accepted by God, which does not require clergy and which is El-Islam, ie Submission. I was enlightened by the Book of Revelation thanks to your website, a book I knew very little of, and I am beginning to believe more and more in the fact that the Beast is Israel. All seems to be in concordance; besides, I myself have seen passages from the Qur'an going in the same direction.
>
> That said, a problem arises before my eyes in your belief in the fact that Jesus is God, or God incarnate, and that Pierre II (Peter II) has seen Jesus attesting to him that he was Son of God! Whereas God himself says that we must not associate to Him a Son! Should I believe in what God revealed, or in a probable optical illusion, or satanic?
>
> Am I facing some people who idealize the created instead of the Creator, Jesus and not God, like the Sunnis do with Muhammed and like others do with their idols?
>
> Peter.

Dear Correspondent,

We understand your "reticence" and the "problem that arises in YOUR eyes", but not to ours. Those that "idealize the created instead of the Creator" have no place among us: We refer you to the text "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", chapter 4.2; The Messiah and His title of Son of God and chapter 4.3; The Messiah's Divinity. We rightly speak therein of "what God has revealed", what to which we all "submit", what the Holy Qur'an came to confirm. "Probable optical or satanic illusion", or rather, an apparent total blindness from those who turn their backs on the evidence revealed, and their attachment to their own opinion and human philosophy. This is not our concern: We bear witness.

Our testimony bothers many people. We are not here to please, nor to be diplomatic and to yield to compromises... but often to bother and... irritate the disbelievers. You "do not know who you are facing". It is obvious!!!

We know, on the other hand, who we are facing. Wish you a good research and a good outcome. No need to answer until you have read it correctly. If you disagree, we say to you: "Farewell".

Pierre2 Website

PS: The events will show, after the fall of the Beast, that we were right. "Everyone will therefore see who is the Messiah" (Revelation 1,7).

6. The Qur'an

6.1 Why don't you become Muslims?

A reader writes us:

> 1. If I understood well, you accept the Qur'an as a message from God, and you recognize Mohammad as a prophet, why don't you simply become Muslims?
>
> 2. Now you say in page 223 "God wanted His Qur'anic Revelation to be an open door and a passage to the Bible". This rather gives me the impression that you invite Muslims to convert to Christianity or did I misunderstand?
>
> 3. Or then, your tentative approach to the Bible/Qur'an reconciliation appears more as a clever scheme to justify Christianity and its dogmas, besides, what you do is not thrown into question, quite the contrary confirmed even by the Qur'an! So you find yourselves therefore, in the role of manipulators.
>
> 4. Or then, there is a third alternative that I have not understood and in that case, I would be really very grateful if you could explain it to me.

Dear S.,

Our mission is to testify the unity of the Biblical-Qur'anic message to the hearts of good will and good faith, issued from all rites and confessions, with no fanaticism or bigotry.

We invite not only Muslims, but Jews too, Christians and others to know the Holy Scriptures. God actually puts us on guard:

> "Among people is one who argues about God, without knowledge, without guidance, without a Luminous Book." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,8).
>
> "All Scripture is inspired by God and can profitably be used for teaching, for refuting error, for guiding people's lives and teaching them to be holy. This is how the person who is dedicated to God becomes fully equipped and ready for any good work." (2 Timothy 3,16-17)

It is the Scriptures which not only justify the dogmas, to reuse your expression, but more even to certify them.

Any person who reads the Bible and the Qur'an with objectivity, without prejudices, will hold count of the parity of the two messages and the two Inspirations, and will grow in wisdom and insight. (We recommend you read, or re-read and deepen yourself in the text "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an" on the website).

The Qur'an itself attests that there is one door to the Bible:

> "Say, 'O People of the Book (*the Bible*), you follow no religion unless you practice the Torah and the Gospel. . . " (Qur'an V; The Table,68)
>
> "Time was when you knew not what the Book (*the Bible*) was, nor faith, but We brought it forth as a light by which We guide whomever We will of Our servants." (Qur'an XLII; Deliberation,52)

You ask us why we don't become Muslims?

Because by believing in the Qur'anic and in the Biblical revelation, we are already so:

> "O believers, believe in God and His Messenger, and in the Book He revealed to His Messenger, and the Book He revealed before. Whoso disbelieves in God, His angels,

> His Books, His messengers, and in the Last Day has strayed far in error." (Qur'an IV; Women,136-137)

This is the reason why the Qur'an certifies that we will receive a double reward:

> "They to whom We brought the Book (*the Bible*), and who believed in it before (*before the Qur'an*) this present Revelation. And when it is recited to them, they say, 'We believe in it. It is the truth (*which comes*) from our Lord. We had indeed been Muslims before it.' These shall be paid their wages twice..." (Qur'an XXVIII; The Narrative,51-53)

And we Christians too, as we recognize that Jesus is the one and only Messiah as the Bible and Qur'an attest (see for example Matthew 16,13-20 / John 1,45 / Qur'an III; The House of Imran,45 / Qur'an IV; Women,171, etc...)

Yet we are above all, and happily, independent believers. Let fanatics of all shades, label us as they like!

As far as we are concerned, we feel concerned by the call of God, of the Messiah, of the Prophets, of Mohammad, and the Virgin Mary. We answer them in exposing the teachings and prophecies of the Bible, the Qur'an and the Hadiths, particularly those concerning the end of times, which are being fulfilled before our eyes today.

The third alternative you spoke of, is thus to rise up in spirit to grasp God's Intention. It is to go beyond the letter to elevate oneself to the Spirit. It is an effort that Jews, Christians and Muslims should do.

Today, it is about going beyond cults, rites and religions, and to unite in the worship of God in "spirit and truth" (John 4,24).

Such is God's Plan.

The apparition of the Antichrist, the State of Israel, announced by Jesus and Mohammad will accelerate this salutatory process for all.

All is on the website for people thirsty of truth.

It is up to each person to judge in their soul and conscience.

6.2 The 5 Pillars of Islam

The same reader responds:

> I am very glad and I thank you for your reply. Actually I think I have better grasped your position, which is absolutely original, sincere and motivated by the desire of elevation, which I cannot but praise!
>
> Therefore, I have well understood your words: "It is today about going beyond cults, rites and religions and to unite in the worship of God in spirit and truth".
>
> Nevertheless, and in my personal case, a purely spiritual way is not enough; otherwise what would be the importance of the practices recommended by the scriptures? You justify the dogmas by the scriptures, that applies therefore as well to the practices. You cannot say "we are already Muslims" and wait for a double reward without applying the 5 pillars (prayers, fasting, alms, etc...) If not, it is not fair compared to those who believe in the oneness and in all messages and who in addition exert themselves for the prayers from 3:30 AM to 9:16 PM, for the 30 days of fasting, etc... Or one is Muslim just in the heart and... well it is too easy this way! I think God expects from us more than the Spirit, otherwise He would have not made us of flesh.

> So I agree completely with you about the oneness of the message and of the believers, but I disagree about the practices.
>
> However, I love your statute of independent believers. I love the alternative movements (I am that too, not in the practices, as you may have understood, but in my soul). As far as it fits you, you are happy and that makes you grow and raise yourselves I say Amen. God guides whom He wants, the way He wants. Let us believe altogether, raise us, and yuppie! One day God will tell us why he divided us.
>
> I wish you a very beautiful and happy spiritual way as well. May we meet one day in this life or in the other one.
>
> Anyway, bravo again for you work!
>
> Yours Sincerely

Dear S.,

We have appreciated your sincere reply.

You are an independent believer in the soul. This pleases us.

And in understanding us better, you will realize that we are very close.

Practice is for us too, equally essential.

Excerpt from http://islamfrance.free/pilier.html

God transmitted us the five pillars of Islam through his prophet Mohammad, Peace and Blessings be upon him, as Ibn 'Uma reports (excerpt from Sahih Al-Bukhari -Volume 1, Book 2, Number 7-): God's prophet said:

> "Islam is based on these five principles:
>
> – To testify that none other but God can be worshipped, and that Mohammad is God's prophet,
>
> – To effect the obligatory prayer
>
> – To fast during the month of Ramadan
>
> – To pay the obligatory Zakat (alms)
>
> – To effect the Hajj (Pilgrimage to Mecca)"

We testify to the first point: none other but God can be worshipped, and Mohammad is God's prophet.

Prayer:

Daily prayers raise the soul to God and help us to enter in communion with Him. These prayers are an impulse of the soul toward God. When you love someone, you do not fix the hours to declare him your love. You do it when that comes to you spontaneously and at any time.

With time and experience, prayer becomes a permanent state. It is to this stage that we should all aspire to by God's Grace. All our life has become a prayer, by God's Grace.

We therefore, no longer need to respect hours or formulas, or an orientation of the body towards a holy site. That could have been important at the time of the prophet Muhammad, when there was the need to raise up spiritually people who were used to a very structured worship of idols.

It is therefore a pedagogy, as explained in "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an" (Chapter 3.3, "The divine pedagogy in the Inspiration").

God is everywhere and He wants to be worshipped in "spirit and truth".

Here are some messages from God to Pierre2 (See FAQ "Can you tell us how you pray?"):

> 15/12/1995: "The best prayer, is to enter into the plan of God"
>
> 17/03/1997: "Know how to talk to God and how to hear him. Many, apart from the formulas of prayers prepared by others, do not know how to speak to God. So few know how to listen to him."
>
> 11/29/1989: Praying is an art; it is not given to all to know how to pray. We often confuse fervor and contention, prayer and worship. To pray with fervor does not mean to be tense during prayer. We should reach to pray with fervor, without contention, without wrinkles. Pray ardently, but relaxed, a cheerful face. Prayer is a symphony that should be played calmly, quietly, like flowing water, like a clear stream that goes straight in its path. Prayer is an art and you should know how to pray. It is why the apostles asked Jesus: "Lord, teach us to pray" (Luke 11,1).
>
> I want you great. Contention must be converted into tenderness. Contention is the devil. The more tender we are, the better we pray. Our Father resists not to tenderness.
>
> The "good thief" touched Christ with a look of tenderness on the cross: "Jesus, remember me", he said with watery eyes of love and regret for his faults, "when you come into your kingdom" (Luke 23,42). The heart of Christ wavered on the spot: "Indeed, I promise you, today you will be with me in paradise." (Luke 23,43)

The fast:

The fast desired by God is well explained in "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an" (chapter 3.2, "The search for the spiritual meaning of the text").

Alms:

We are for almsgiving and practice it in being attentive to each one's needs, according to what God inspires us.

Prophet Mohammad and Jesus supported almsgiving.

The Pilgrimage to Mecca:

The most beautiful Pilgrimage is where we encounter God in us. He is waiting for us there. That dœs not prevent those who desire so, from making the Pilgrimage to Mecca or elsewhere.

In all these practices, it is thus fundamental to move from the letter to the Spirit, as the Qur'an and the Gospels encourage us. We do not annul these practices; we give them all their spiritual valor by going to the essential desired by God and attested by the Qur'an and the Holy Scriptures:

> "Among people is one who worships God - on condition. If good befalls him, he grows content with it. But if an ordeal befalls him, he turns his face about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement." (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,11)

We find the same warning in the Gospels in a different style:

> "He (God) is the one who has given us the qualifications to be the administrators of this New Covenant, which is not a covenant written letters but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life." (2 Corinthians 3,6)

We pray for you dear S... Continue to read our website. It will help you better understand and to deepen the Holy Scriptures and the Qur'an to grasp God's Intention.

And plus, let us orientate our prayers together against Al Massih al Dajjal, the Antichrist, and the Beast of the Revelation installed in Palestine (see "The Antichrist in Islam", "The Key of the Apocalypse" and "The Apocalypse according to Mohammad")

It is in this blessed fight that God is waiting for us.

May God illuminate your life and sustain you in everything.

6.3 Questions concerning the Qur'an

A correspondent asks us the following questions:

> 1) What is your explanation on the verse which says that Issa (Jesus) prophesied that a prophet by the name of Ahmad will come after him (Qur'an LXI; The Battle-Line,6)?
>
> 2) What do you think of the "discussion" of the prophet Muhammad who says that "upon his return the Messiah will break the cross and will kill the swine?!" So if he breaks the cross, believing in Redemption is worthless!
>
> 3) Why do you reject pilgrimage? Do you believe that it was Abraham who built the holy Kaaba? And do you believe that Muhammad comes from the lineage of Ishmael, son of Abraham?

1. This prophet announced by Issa (Jesus) not only indicates the prophet Muhammad, but the Mahdi announced by Muhammad too, this Mahdi who must denounce the Antichrist (Al Massih al Dajjal). This Dajjal has already been denounced by the man who received from God the great Mission of revealing the identity of the Beast of the Revelation ("Wahhsh Sifr al Ro'ya": Israel) supported by a 2nd Beast: the USA." Read the text "Al Massih al Dajjal fil Islam ("The Antichrist in Islam"). Allahou Akbar!!

2. First, this recounted discussion is true!

   Second, the fact that the cross will break on the Messiah's return, is to say that he will not be crucified a second time, but will break those who crucified him.

   This is why the belief in Redemption is Eternal!

3. We are neither people of the Bible nor people of the Qur'an!

   We are of the Spirit of the Bible and the Spirit of the Qur'an and of their intention, and of those to whom God has given wisdom.

   Please address your questions to your people.

All our answers can be found on the website `www.pierre2.net...`

6.4 The veil in Islam

Here are the key verses in the Qur'an on the veil:

> Qur'an XXIV; Light,30-31: "... Tell believing women to avert their eyes, and safeguard their private parts, and not to expose their attractions except what (ordinarily) is visible. And let them wrap their shawls around their breast lines, and reveal their attractions only before their husbands..."
>
> Qur'an XXXIII; The Confederate Troops,53,55,59: "If you ask his (the Prophet) wives for some favor, do so from behind a screen (a veil); this is more chaste for both your hearts and theirs... No blame attaches to the Prophet's wives if they unveil before their fathers, their sons, their brothers... O Prophet, tell your wives, your daughters, and

> women believers to wrap their outer garments closely around them, for this makes it more likely that they will be recognized and not be harassed..."
>
> Qur'an XXXIII; The Confederate Troops,32-33: "O wives of the Prophet... Remain in your homes, and do not display your adornments, as was the case with the earlier age of Barbarism..."

Nowhere is it written that a woman should veil her head. As it is well explained in this article, women, before Mohammed, were rejected by their husbands, had no more income and became slaves. The walked along the streets with uncovered breasts as women of some African tribes still do today. It was the sign that they were slaves and could give themselves to no matter who. Thus Mohammed sets them free in saying to them: Put on a veil on your breasts. You are no longer slaves now. You are free women.

The veil in Islam: ("What the Qur'an says (by doc Mahmoud Azab)")

A reader reacted to the text above and asks us:

> I've read in your site some observations of yours about Islam, it is very interesting, particularly what you say about the Islamic veil. Nevertheless, I want to specify that some Hadiths state that only after puberty, women can display their faces and hands only, what do you think?

Prophet Mohammed's Message when speaking of the veil in the Qur'an (word badly translated in English and which means according to the verses curtain, spiritual veil, veil of geographic distance, cloak or large robe) is double:

It frees women rejected by their husbands and/or became slaves who roamed the streets topless to attract attention. Mohammed set them free by saying to them: "cover your breasts, you are no longer slaves now". He gives them back their dignity. It is therefore a message of deliverance (*see the verses on the website FAQ - The Qur'an; 'The Veil and the internal purification' and the related article*).

He calls men and women to be decent in their attire and above all, to put on the "robe of piety". Mohammed says: "O Children of Adam, We have sent down upon you a garment to hide your shame, and as adornment. But the garment of piety - that is best. These are some of God's revelations; perhaps they will remember." (Qur'an VII; The Battlements,26)

By this last inspired verse, Mohammed delivers to us the profound Intention of God when He speaks elsewhere of a coat, a large robe, etc...

In the Holy Books, we should never cling to the letter. We need to meet the spiritual sense of the text and God's Intention in the light of the totality of the Biblical-Quranic Inspiration.

The Hadith that demands women to totally cover the body except for the hands and face, should be equally understood in this spiritual sense: To be decent and above all, to put on "the robe of piety".

Besides, there is a Hadith (*Sahih El Boukhari*) which mentions that women preparing for prayer washed themselves in the same pools as men at the time of Prophet Mohammed and of the Caliph Abou-Baker and for a certain period at the time of Omar Bin Al Khattab, and from this fact, the face, hair and arms were exposed at the washing.

To remain at the level of the letter, there would be contradiction between the two mentioned Hadiths.

All interpretations to the letter are rejected because

> "For the written letters kill, but the Spirit gives life." (2 Corinthians 3,6)

> "Among people is one who worships God to the letter... they turn their face about, losing this world and the next. This is the most manifest bereavement!" (Qur'an XXII; The Pilgrimage,11)

As always, Jesus and Mohammed are in agreement.

All things considered, the veil is that of the heart. The religious attire is that of the spirit. It is the heart and thoughts that should be purified. It is why Mohammed often addressed himself to both men and women, in saying:

> "Tell believing men to avert their eyes, and safeguard their private parts; this is more decent for them, and God is All-Experienced with what they do. Tell believing women to avert their eyes, and safeguard their private parts, and not to expose their attractions except what (ordinarily) is visible. And let them wrap their shawls (*means a large robe*) around their breast lines..." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,30-31)

Men and women are called to chastity and to the purity of the heart.

Here is the spiritual sense of the texts on the veil. What has been said in the text on our website "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", Chapter 3.2; "The search for the spiritual meaning of the text", applies to circumcision, fasting, sacrifices, pilgrimage, as well as the veil. They are "allegoric" symbols which evoke spiritual realities (see Qur'an III; The House of Imran,7). To reread carefully this text and in depth.

We say to our Muslim sisters who port the veil with so much love what St. Paul said to the Galatians regarding Moses' law (all the prescriptions to follow):

> "It is so that you remain free that Mohammed has liberated you."

Paul says:

> "When Christ freed us, he meant us to remain free. Stand firm, therefore, and do submit again to the yoke of slavery. It is I, Paul, who tell you this: if you allow yourselves to be circumcised, Christ will be of no benefit to you at all. With all solemnity I repeat my warning: Everyone who accepts circumcision is obliged to keep the whole Law. But if you do look to the Law to make you justified, then you have separated yourselves from Christ, and have fallen from grace. Christians are told by the Spirit to look to faith for those rewards that righteousness hopes for, since in Christ Jesus whether you are circumcised or not makes no difference—what matters is faith that makes its power felt through love." (Galatians 5,1-6)

This text applies in the same way to the veil as well as all narrow religious prescriptions.

6.5 The Veil and internal purification

As an in-depth analysis on the subject of the veil (*see FAQ - The Qur'an; "The veil in Islam'*), here moreover are some Biblical-Qur'anic verses that support the spiritual interpretation of the veil and any other religious prescriptions. So to well understand this text, we advise to first read the texts in-depth on the website "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", "The Key of the Apocalypse", and "Worship and Place of Worship":

6.5.1 To purify the interior

By the following verse, Mohammed teaches us that the effort of purification must be internal:

> "Whether you reveal what lies in your souls or whether you conceal it, God will hold you to account, forgiving whomever He wills and punishing whomever He wills. God is Omnipotent." (Qur'an II; The Cow,284)

It is therefore the interior that matters. It is for what is hidden in us that will be judged.

And Jesus had said to the Pharisees in the same sense:

> "Alas for you, scribes and Pharisee, you hypocrites! You clean the outside of cup and dish and leave the inside full of extortion and intemperance. Blind Pharisee! Clean the inside cup and dish first so that it and the outside are both clean!" (Matthew 23,25-26)

It is through the interior that we are purified. The exterior is secondary. Jesus insists on this point in saying:

> "Listen and understand. What goes into the mouth does not make anyone unclean; it is what comes out of the mouth that makes someone unclean... But whatever comes out of the mouth comes from the heart... For from the heart come evil intentions... adultery, fornication... These are things that make a person unclean. But eating with unwashed hands does not make anyone unclean." (Matthew 15,10-20)

Such are the limpid and liberating words of the "Word from God" (Qur'an III; The House of Imran,40).

To reach the purification of the heart, we should not port a veil or any particular external clothes, but to open oneself to God's grace. Mohammed says:

> "O believers, follow not in the footsteps of Satan. Whoso follows in Satan's footsteps, let him know that Satan commands obscenity and immorality. Were it not for God's favor upon and His mercy, none of you would ever have been guided aright. It is God, rather, Who grants guidance to whom He pleases. And God is All-Hearing, Omniscient." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,21)

It is in collaborating with grace that we attain the state of purity. All is mercy.

It is in this sense that Mohammed asks us to put on the "robe of piety" (Qur'an VII; The Battlements,25). It is the only clothing that pleases God. And Mohammed explains to us what piety is. It is a spiritual, internal dimension, and not of gestures, acts or external clothing:

> "Virtue does not demand of you to turn your faces Eastwards or Westwards. Virtue rather is: he who believes in God, the Last Day, the angels, the Book and the prophets; who dispenses money, though dear, to kinsfolk, orphans, the needy, the traveller, beggars, and for transom; who performs the prayer and pays the alms; who fulfill their contracts when they contract; who are steadfast in hardship, calamity and danger; these are the true believers. These are truly pious." (Qur'an II; The Cow,177)

Piety therefore, consists of doing good by love for God.

This is the robe we should wear to win our Father's Blessing. The Apocalypse emphasizes this fact by saying of the victors in white linen of the great trial: "The fine linen is made of the good deeds of the saints." (Revelation 19,8)

6.5.2 No compulsion in religion

The following verse of the Prophet Mohammed is a key verse, as it annuls all the prescriptions of the Law which, at the level of the Spirit, are useless constraints:

> "... His throne encompasses the heavens and the earth; preserving them is no burden to Him. He is the Exalted, the Majestic. There is no compulsion in religion. Right guidance has been distinguished from error." (Qur'an II; The Cow,255-256)

And with regards to fasting Mohammed insists:

> "God desires ease for you, and desires not hardship." (Qur'an II; The Cow,184)

Paul says about this:

> "... If you have really died with Christ to the principles of this world, why do you still let rules dictate to you, as though you were still living in the world? 'It is forbidden to pick up this, it is forbidden to taste that, it is forbidden to touch something else'; all these prohibitions are only concerned with things that perish by their very use—an example of human doctrines and regulations! It may be argued that true wisdom is to be found in these, with their self-imposed devotions, their self-abasement, and their severe treatment of the body; but once the flesh starts to protest, they are no use at all." (Colossians 2,16-23)

In fact, all these interdictions are human inventions. Jesus denounced them citing the prophet Isaiah who already said at his time:

> "Because this people approaches me only in words, honors me only with lip-service while its heart is far from me, and my religion, as far as it is concerned, is nothing but human commandment." (Matthew 15,1-9 / Isaiah 29,13-14)

For those living of the Spirit, the legal ordinances are annulled. Paul says:

> "The Law is quite incapable of bringing the worshippers to perfection..." (Hebrews 10,1)

And also:

> "He (*the Christ*) has **overridden the Law**, and cancelled every record of the debt that we had to pay; he has done away with it by nailing it to the cross..." (Colossians 2,14-15)

Any religious cloth as well as the veil belong to these abolished legal ordinances.

6.5.3 To overcome the law

If only faith, love and the purification of the heart count in the eyes of God, why were Moses and Mohammed given in the Old Testament and Qur'an a Law or a Sharia?

The answer was given to us by Paul. The Law was a pedagogy. The Jews had to be gradually prepared to the spiritual comprehension of the purification, sacrifices, cult, the Temple, attire, etc... The Jews still could not understand at Moses' time these spiritual realities. It was already an immense step to offer worship to the unique God and not the multitude of idols.

The Arabs of the Arabian Peninsula had to pass through the same evolution. It is why the Qur'an contains many verses which impose a Law similar to the Law of Moses. Here, equally, the Law should act as a pedagogue.

Paul explains well the conflict between the practice of Moses' Law with its prohibitions and narrow prescriptions, and the faith in Christ which communicates to us the Holy Spirit and liberates us:

> "... Let me ask you one question: was it because you practiced the Law (*of Moses*) that you received the Spirit, or because you believed what was preached to you? ... Does God give you the Spirit so freely and work miracles among you because you practice the Law, or because you believed what was preached to you? Take Abraham for example: he put his faith in God, and this faith was considered as justifying him. Don't you see that it is those who rely on faith who are the sons of Abraham? ... Before faith came, we were allowed no freedom by the Law; we were being looked after till faith was revealed. The Law was to be our **guardian** until the Christ came and we could be justified by faith. Now that that time has come we are no longer under that guardian, and you are, all of you, sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. All baptized in Christ, you have all clothed yourselves in Christ, and there are no more distinctions between Jew and Greek, slave and free, male and female, but all of you are one in Christ Jesus..." (Galatians 3,1-29)

The Christ therefore has redeemed us from the "curse of the law" (Galatians 3,12).

Here as well, are other verses of Paul which explain this liberation:

> "But now the (*Mosaic or all the other Law*) Law has come to an end with Christ, and everyone who has faith may be justified." (Romans 10,4)
>
> "... we acknowledge that what makes a man righteous is not obedience to the Law, but faith in Jesus Christ. We had to become believers in Christ Jesus no less than you had, and now we hold that faith in Christ rather than fidelity to the Law is what justifies us, and that no one can be justified by keeping the Law." (Galatians 2,16)

The evolution of the Jews, starting from the worship of idols (see eg the episode of the golden cow, Exodus 32, they worshipped the golden cow as an imitation of the bull Apis that was worshipped in Egypt), in passing by the worship of the only God through material worship and Moses' Law to finally arrive with the Christ to the spiritual concept of salvation through the Faith and the deeds of love as explained by Paul. This evolution has lasted for centuries. During these centuries, many of the prophets were sent by God to explain the spiritual concept of fasting, circumcision, the Temple, etc... (see "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", Chapter 3.2; "The search for the spiritual meaning of the text").

Mohammed, on the other hand, has given the Arabs the whole revelation all at once and in a single stroke.

As explained in "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", Chapter 3.3; "The divine pedagogy found in the inspiration":

> "It was not possible to give the Arabs the plenitude of the light in a single stroke, because of their total displacement from the divine Truth. Likewise, it is impossible for the human eye, which remained in obscurity for a long time, to be opened suddenly to sunlight without being dazzled, blinded. Likewise, the divine Light should be given gradually to those who remained in the darkness for so long."

It is why the Qur'an withdraws with some elements of the Law and some elements of spiritual salvation by Faith and Love.

Mohammed, taking into account the mentality at his time, has thus equally given some prescriptions in a pedagogic manner. It was valid for a certain time.

He could not with one strike, speak of the liberation by the Spirit and the purification of the heart. Nobody in his time would have understood him. It was first necessary to detach the Arabs from the worship of idols. At the same time, he opened the way to liberation through the Spirit by speaking for example "of the robe of piety", of doing good by love of God (Qur'an II; The Cow,172), and of God's forgiveness to those who love Him:

> "Say: 'If you love God, follow me and God will return your love, and forgive you your sins. God is All-Forgiving, Compassionate to each." (Qur'an III; The House of Imran,31)

At the same time, he reveals to them God's Justice:

> "On that day, God shall pay them in full their just reward, and they shall know that God is the Manifest Truth." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,25)

6.5.4 The new era

Today, with the opening of the Book of Revelation and the Revelation of the identity of the Beast of the Apocalypse which inaugurates "the new Heaven and the new Earth", Jews, Christians and Muslims are called together to make a new step towards spiritual maturity.

With the apparition of the Beast, the announced Enemy of God, every man and woman is called to test their Love for God in committing themselves for Justice against this Beast. It is in this way that the chosen is made.

It is why the Apocalypse today, launches out this cry to all the pure hearts who have recognized the Beast of the Apocalypse: "Come up here" (Revelation 4,1).

"Come up here" to identity the Beast and to fight it, to understand the prophecies concerning the two Beasts and their imminent fall.

"Come up here" also in overcoming the ordinances, cults, rites, clothing, to reach the spiritual and internal worship by Love and Justice.

It is in devoting ourselves against the Beast that we purify ourselves internally.

It is in coming up to this level of the Spirit that we are admitted to the Wedding Feast of the Lamb (Revelation 19,9). This Feast consists of nourishing ourselves with the "Table sent down to us from Heaven" (Qur'an V; The Table,112-115), the Body and Blood of Jesus given as nourishment to all the pure hearts who have believed in the Apocalypse as revealed, and who have committed themselves against the Beast (see text "The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an")

Mohammed says:

> "They shall be clothed in green silk and brocade, and decked out in silver bracelets, and their Lord shall give them to drink an untainted draught." (Qur'an LXXVI; Man,21)

These "garments of green silk and brocade" and "bracelets of silver" are symbols of the internal richness of the chosen. The digestion of an "untainted draught" is the Communion to the Blood of Jesus poured for our purification.

Here is how we reach purity of the heart...

Mohammed reveals us:

> "God said: 'This is a Day when **the truthful profit from their truthfulness**. For them shall be Gardens beneath which rivers flow, dwelling therein for ever. God is well-pleased with them and they are well-pleased with Him. This is the greatest of triumphs'." (Qur'an V; The Table,119)

In the Light of all the Holy Scriptures, we are all called at present, to overcome every form of worship, law, narrow prescriptions, to throw ourselves with Jesus in Return amongst us, in spiritual Worship "in spirit and truth". "God is spirit, and those who worship must worship in spirit and truth" Jesus had said (John,4-24).

The religious prescriptions belong to the Old world which must disappear:

> "Then I heard a loud voice call from the throne, 'You see this city? Here God lives among men. He will make his home among them; they shall be his people, and he will be their God, his name is God-with-them. He will wipe away all tears from their eyes; there will be no more death, and no more mourning or sadness. The world of the past has gone.' Then the One sitting on the throne spoke: 'Now I am making the whole of creation new." (Revelation 21,3-5)

6.6 Alcohol in the Qur'an

Many Muslims believe that God forbids all alcohol in the Qur'an. Others believe that a moderate use of alcohol is permitted.

What dœs the Divine Revelation say?

The Prophet Muhammad says in the Qur'an with regards to wine:

> Qur'an II; The Cow,219: "They ask you about wine and gambling. Say: 'In them both lies grave sin, though some benefit, to mankind. But their sin is more grave than their benefit'."

The benefit that Muhammed is speaking of, consists of drinking wine in moderation. A glass of wine per day is good for your health.

The "great sin" lies in excess and drunkenness. Muhammed thus cautions against any excess in wine. He dœs not forbid us to touch wine, when taken in moderation, in a balanced way, otherwise he would not have spoken of the "benefits".

Muhammed also says:

> Qur'an IV; Women,43: "O believers, do not come near to prayer when you are drunk, until you know what you are saying; nor when sexually defiled, unless passing through, until you perform ablutions."

Drunkenness is totally incompatible with prayer and spiritual life in general. Muhammed warns believers against such deformations.

Paul in his letter to the Corinthians did the same. He blames the Christians who gathered to eat and get drunk, instead of taking the Meal of Jesus:

> "When you hold these meetings, it is not the Lord's Supper that you are eating, since when the time comes to eat, everyone is in such a hurry to start his own supper that one person goes hungry while another is getting drunk. Surely you have homes for eating and drinking in? Surely you have enough respect for the community of God not to make poor people embarrassed? What am I to say to you? Congratulate you? I cannot congratulate you on this." (1 Corinthians 11,20-22).

Finally, Muhammed also says regarding wine:

> Qur'an V; The Table,90-93: "O believers, wine and gambling, idols and divining arrows are an abhorrence, the work of Satan. So keep away from it, that you may prevail. Satan

> only desires to arouse discord and hatred among you with wine and gambling, and to deter you from the mention of God and from prayer. Will you desist? ... Upon those who believe and do good deeds no blame shall attach in what they may taste, so long as they fear God, and believe, and do good deeds... for God loves the charitable."

This text clearly shows that the important thing is not your choice of food and drink, but to believe in God and do good. Hence, the three-time repetition of what is important, and what should sustain our attention.

At the same time, Muhammed warns those who gathered at those times for the sake of drinking, gambling, worshiping idols, and the usage of divining arrows. It would have been common at the time to indulge in all these practices at the same time. Mohammed firmly condemned this practice in saying that it comes from Satan and provokes hatred.

Prohibitions are necessary in general, as long as the persons still do not have the psychological and spiritual maturity to discern the right path. It was the case of the Arabs at the time of Muhammed, who lived in the excesses of food, alcoholic drinks, gambling, and vice of all kinds.

Likewise, in the Old Testament, the Israelites, still immature in their spiritual life, were oriented by the prohibited contents in the Law of Moses. As Paul explains, the Law was a pedagogue:

> "The Law was to be our guardian until the Christ came and we could be justified by faith. Now that that time has come we are no longer under that guardian, and you are, all of you, sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus." (Galatians 3,24-26)

Here are a few texts of the Gospels that are concerned with wine, since the Qur'an was given to the Arabs to certify the Bible (see text "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an"):

1. At the Wedding of Cana, Jesus, at the request of his Mother, turns water into a "good wine" (John 2,1-12). Wine is therefore not reprehensible in itself.

2. Jesus changes the chalice of wine into his Blood (Mark 14,22-25).

3. Paul affectionately says to his spiritual son Timothy, "You should give up drinking only water and have a little wine for the sake of your digestion and the frequent bouts of illness that you have." (1 Timothy 5,23)

In the Old Testament equally, moderation in the usage of wine is advocated:

1. "Do not play the valiant at your wine, for wine has been the undoing of many...Drunk at the right time and in the right amount, wine makes for a glad heart and a cheerful mind. Bitterness of soul comes of wine drunk to excess out of temper or bravado. Drunkenness excites the stupid man to a fury to his own harm. It reduces his strength while leading to blows." (Ecclesiasticus 31,30-31)

2. "Wine is reckless, strong drink quarrelsome; unwise is he whom it seduces" (Proverb 20,1)

3. "Never relish how red it is, this wine, how sparkling in the cup, how smooth its flow. In the end its bite is like a serpent's, its sting as sharp as an adder's. Your eyes will see strange things, distorted words will come from your heart..." (Proverb 23,31-35)

In summary, wine is not bad in itself. It is the excess which is a condemnable sin. However, the limit is not always easy to discern. We must remain vigilant. Alcohol is an abyss that aspires many souls.

Alcohol taken regularly in large quantities, under the pretext of relaxation after a day's work, often destroys communication in families and is the cause of much frustration. It is here where moderation should start too. The limit is sometimes very subtle. Bad habits are quickly taken. That each person analyze himself before God.

Paul says:

> "Let your good sense be obvious to everybody. The Lord is near". (Philippians 4,5)

So the Bible and the Qur'an are adjoined in condemning the excesses of wine. Balance and moderation in all things are indispensable in developing a rich spiritual life of the Word of God and His Holy Presence.

Paul sums up in saying:

> "Do not drug yourselves with wine; this is simply dissipation; be filled with the Spirit" (Ephesians 5,18).

7. Mary

7.1 Why is it said that Mary is the Immaculate Conception?

The Virgin Mary appeared in Lourdes, to Bernadette Soubirou, in 1858. When she asked her name, the Virgin replied: "I am the **Immaculate Conception**". This Truth is thus a revelation from Heaven Itself. It was and remains sustained with miracles.

Many people misunderstand the real significance of this fact. They believe that Immaculate Conception means that Mary gave birth to Jesus while being a virgin, having not known a man sexually: “She was found to be with child through the Holy Spirit” (Matthew 1,18). And, Mary would have had no stain even in having marital relationships with Joseph, her lawful husband. Moreover, it is indeed about the **conception of Jesus** in Mary’s womb, not about the person of Mary.

Now, Mary is an Immaculate Conception in **her very person**, from the moment of her conception in Anna’s womb, her mother. She is immaculate, ie without having been tainted by the wound or stain of Adam and Eve, a stain inherited by all men.

Adam and Eve were each an “immaculate conception” before having been seduced by the enemy of Humanity. Yet they fell, inspired by Satan (Genesis 3). Through them, the stain is passed down as an inheritance to all mankind. God promised that the woman will avenge herself and crush the serpent’s head (Genesis 3,15).

It is through Mary, the Mother of the Messiah, the Word of God, that God will operate this vengeance. The Divine Word had to incarnate Himself to save the people who believed in Him. He could not incarnate in a womb perturbed by the consequences of original sin. The female receptacle of the Word of God had to be spared solely for the Glory of God. This receptacle was Mary. She was not Immaculate for her own glory, but in function of the Divine Plan.

And so, Mary **alone** is the Immaculate Conception by God’s intervention to fulfill the Plan of the Holy Father. She is Immaculate because the Messiah could not be conceived in a “troubled room”. So this is why the Virgin was preserved from this stain, not for herself, but in function of the Divine Plan. She never ceased to respect this Plan, to be in perfect harmony with the Father’s Will, without ever defying God like the first parents of mankind did. She was and always remains Immaculate.

The Qur’an bears witness very explicitly on the Immaculate Conception of Mary as well as that of Jesus. In the following verse, Imran’s wife, ie Mary’s mother (Mary’s parents are the Family of Imran) says:

> "‘My Lord, I pledge to You what is in my womb. It shall be dedicated to Your service. Accept this from me for it is You - You who are All-Hearing, All-Knowing.’ When she gave birth to a female, she said: ‘My Lord, I have given birth and it is a female’ - and God knew best what she had given birth to - ‘and a male is not like a female. I have called her Mary. I seek refuge in You for her and her progeny (*Jesus*) from Satan, ever deserving to be stoned’." (Qur’an III; The Family of Imran,35-36)

God heard the prayer of Mary’s mother and granted her wish: Mary and Jesus alone, were protected from the devil, as Mohammed reports in his “Noble Discussions” (see the Qur’anic interpretation of “Jalalein” concerning the above verses): “No man is born without the devil reaching him from birth, and screams because of this satanic attack (*the stain of original sin*), **with the exception of Mary and her Son**".

(See the texts "A Look of Faith at the Qur’an" and "The Brothers of Jesus").

Therefore, after Adam and Eve, Mary **alone** -and Jesus Christ of course- is of **Immaculate Conception**.

7.2 So did Mary remain Virgin?

What do you think of Jesus' brothers: James, Jude, Joset, Simon mentioned in the Gospels (Mark 6,3)? So did Mary remain virgin?

See our text: "The Brothers of Jesus"

7.3 Question on the Wedding of Cana

During the wedding of Cana (John 2,1-12), Jesus answered Mary: "What is there between you and me, woman?" What do you think of this cold response?

This translation is made by certain fanatics who are against Mary. The real translation from Greek is: "What dœs (this) matter to you and me, woman?", an oriental expression still used vigorously today in the East and which means: "What can this do for you and me?" ie that this dœs not concern us, it is not our affair, it is not my marriage, it is not for us to look after what is missing, "woman". Until today, a husband says this expression "woman" to his wife in a teasing or affectionate or angry tone. How do you see Jesus saying this to Mary? To the One who gave birth to him? To Whom He gave as Mother to John when He was on the cross: "Woman, this is your son" (John 19,26).

Would He speak disrespectfully as some claim? How would Jesus address Himself to the one who is "full of grace"? (Luke 1,27) To **THE** Woman, par excellence, who was his Mother? Let us not forget that Jesus, the model son, was "subject" to his parents as Luke emphasized in his Gospel (Luke 2,51). It is up to each one of us to respond in conscience according to whether this conscience is pure or contaminated by hatred and fanaticism or jealousy. Mary is this Woman, prophetically announced, whose lineage crushes the serpent's head in Genesis 3,15. She is the glorious Woman of the Apocalypse crowned with the sun (Revelation 12), giving birth to a new spiritual generation, victorious over the devil.

Indeed, the Greek text says: "TI (*what*) emy (*for me*) ké (*and*) si (*you*), yinai (*woman*)?" The Gospels were written in Greek (except Matthew, in Aramaic). And those who wrongly translate in ill intention commit an **unforgivable** crime.

The evidence of Jesus' respect for his Mother is that He generously granted her request and turned water into wine, thus upsetting the divine plan by fulfilling this miracle despite the fact that "his hour had not yet come". She tenderly dared to put him before a fait accompli, saying to the servants: "Do whatever He tells you". (John 2,4-5)

7.4 The Almighty Intercession of Mary?

How do we get to know Mary and her almighty intercession?

To know Mary's grandeur, we must experience it through confident and affectionate prayer.

1. The Gospels: Luke 1,26-38: "... the angel said to her, '... **full** of grace etc...'"

   Am I, are you **full** of grace? Me, l am not.

   Luke 1,39-56: "... all generations will call me blessed..."

   John 2,1-12: Through her intercession, She got Jesus to change the divine plan. After answering her: "My time has not yet come", Jesus conceded and turned the water into wine (sign of the Eucharist).

2. The Qur'an: several verses: Qur'an III,35-36 / Qur'an III,42 / Qur'an IV,155 and the Sura of Mary, Qur'an XIX.

3. Centuries-old tradition. Ask priests and read books on it. It is difficult to explain everything.

4. Text on the website: "The Brothers of Jesus". Important

5. Mary's apparitions: in Lourdes She said: "I am the Immaculate Conception". Each person is free to believe it or not. Me, I am not immaculate. Are you?

   Her apparitions in La Salette and Fatima. (See our text: "Explanation of Mary's Message at La Salette")

6. The surest source and most **revealing of hearts**, is that of the heart and the intuition of each person. It is here in particular, that the first gush of each person's heart is revealing.

The Protestants deny Mary's intercession because "there is only one mediator between God and mankind... Christ Jesus" (1 Timothy 2,5).

All intercession and mediation pass through Jesus and in Him. Otherwise, we should not be praying for one another. Now, St Paul also asks us to intercede for all believers and for himself (Ephesians 6,18-19).

Conclusion: To each his intuition; follow yours at your own risk and peril, or for your greatest joy, like me.

See our texts: "The Intercession of the Saints in the Bible" / Chapter III in the text "A Look of faith at the Qur'an".

7.5 Medjugorje

> You say you do not believe in the Apparitions of Medjugorje. Yet we know people who have been to Medjugorje and who have changed their lives. What do you think?

We refer the reader to FAQ - The independent believers; 'How to act? What dœs Pierre2 mean?', where the Medjugorje apparitions are discussed.

All "seers" in the world will be judged by their attitude vis-à-vis the "small open Book" of Revelation (Revelation 10,2), with its Key Message revealed to Pierre2: "The Beast is Israel".

This Message reveals the hearts. It is the measure "to measure God's Temple" (Revelation 11,1), ie to recognize true believers.

Our Mother dœs not contradict Herself.

The banalities reported by the Medjugorje "messages" are opposite to the serious and current messages given by our Mother in La Salette, Fatima and Marienfried concerning the times we live in. God dœs not send Mary to speak to the world to recount such nonsense.

The Messages of La Salette, Fatima and Marienfried were a preparation for the Revelation of the Mystery of the Apocalypse. These three Messages from our Mother and St John's Apocalypse have one and the same Spirit.

In La Salette, the Holy Virgin had denounced the treason of the clergy, qualifying them as "cesspools of impurity", and reveals that "Rome (*the Vatican*) will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist".

On the contrary, the Medjugorje messages speak of submission to the church and to the Pope, who nevertheless betrayed the Message of Jesus by associating themselves with the Antichrist and by refusing to denounce it.

Here are some extracts from the Medjugorje messages, compared to the Messages of La Salette and Fatima.

That each person judges for himself according to the luminous and liberating words of Jesus:

"Why not judge for yourselves what is right?" (Luke 12,57)

And Sister Lucy of Fatima who was in contact with the Virgin Mary, who had fathomed the scale of the Church's treason says (Letter of 22 May 1958 to reverend Father Agostino Fuentes):

"However, Father, we must tell people not to expect from the Pope a call to penance, to prayer, neither from the part of bishops, nor from the priests, nor from the superiors in general. It is time that each person, by their own initiative, accomplishes holy deeds and reforms their life according to the Madonna's request!"

Those who have been to Medjugorje and have changed their lives have been touched by a grace from the Virgin Mary, because they went there with love and devotion. The place has nothing to do with it. Pilgrimages and graces are internal. They are not external, linked to a specific place (see John 4,21-24).

7.5.1 Examples of messages

We invite you to compare the spirit of the following messages:

Medjugorje, message of 25 June 2010: "Dear children with joy, **I invite you to live my messages joyfully**; only this way, little children, you could be close to my Son. And me, I want to lead you all to Him only, and in Him you will find the real peace and the joy of your hearts. I bless you all and I love you with a measureless love. Thank you for answering my call."

La Salette: "God will strike in an unprecedented way. Wœ to the inhabitants of the earth! God will exhaust His wrath upon them, and no one will be able to escape so many afflictions together. At the first blow of his thundering sword, the mountains and all Nature will tremble in terror, for the chaos and crimes of men have pierced the vault of Heaven."

Fatima: "The third time, she told me that having exhausted other means, despised by men, she gives us, **while trembling**, the last means of salvation: which is the Blessed Virgin in person **signs of tears** and messages from various seers throughout the world. The Madonna says that if we do not listen and still offend, we will no longer be forgiven."

\- - -

Medjugorje, message of 2 September 2011: "Dear children with all my heart and soul filled with faith and love for the Heavenly Father, I have given you my Son, and I give Him to you again. To you, people from all over the world, my Son taught to know the only true God and His love. He has led you to the way of truth, and He has made you brothers and sisters. That is the reason why, my children, do not wander, do not close your hearts before this truth, this hope and this love. Everything surrounding you is ephemeral, and everything crumbles, God's Glory only remains. For this reason, renounce everything that keeps you away from the Lord. Do adore Him, Him only, as He is the only true God. I am with you and I will be at your side. **I particularly pray for the shepherds, so that they would be worthy representatives of my Son, and they would lead you with love along the way to truth**. I thank you."

Medjugorje, message of 2 October 2011: : "Dear children! Today again, my maternal heart invites you to prayers, to a personal relationship with God the Father, for the joy of the prayer in Him. God the Father is not far from you and He is not unknown to you. He was shown to you by my Son, and He has given you life, that is my Son. This is the reason why, my children, do not surrender to the temptations separating you from God the Father. Do pray! Do not try to create families and societies without Him. Pray! Pray so that your hearts overflow with goodness; the latter comes only from my Son, Who is true goodness. The hearts only filled

with goodness would understand and welcome God the Father. I will keep on guiding you. **In a particular way, I pray that you not judge your shepherds. My children, did you not forget that it was God the Father who called them?!** Pray! I thank you."

La Salette: "The priests, ministers of my Son, the priests, by their wicked lives, by their irreverence and their impiety in the celebration of the holy mysteries, by their love of money, their love of honors and pleasures, the priests have become cesspools of impurity. Yes, the priests are asking vengeance, and vengeance is hanging over their heads. Wœ to priests and those dedicated to God who by their unfaithfulness and their wicked lives are crucifying my Son again! The sins of those dedicated to God cry out towards Heaven and call for vengeance, **and now vengeance is at their door**, for there is no one left to beg mercy and forgiveness for the people. There are no more generous souls, there is no one left worthy of offering a stainless sacrifice for the sake of the world [...] **The chiefs, the leaders of the people of God have neglected prayer and penance, and the Devil has bedimmed their intelligence** (*They're not capable of identifying the Antichrist*). They have become wandering stars which the old devil will drag along with his tail to make them perish (Revelation 12,4) [...] **Wœ to the Princes of the Church who think only of piling riches upon riches to protect their authority and dominate with pride**."

Fatima: "Order no longer rules anywhere. **Even at the highest positions, it is Satan who governs and decides the course of events. He will even know how to penetrate to reach the pinnacle of the Church**."

8. Prayer

8.1 How do you address God in your prayers?

I send you these recommendations from our Beloved Elder Brother concerning His-our Father. You know that we address Him as Lord, Adonaï, Dieu, Allah, God etc... Now, Jesus recommends that we address Him as: "Father".

Matthew mentioned that Jesus asked us to pray like this: "Our Father in Heaven etc..." (Matthew 6,7 etc...)

Now Luke tells us that Jesus prescribed to pray to Him thus: "Father, may your Name be held holy..." (Luke 11,1 etc...) Luke is more intimate, because when we talk to a father we do not say "our Father" to him, but "Father", or simply "Dad". Luke brings us even closer to the Father by not mentioning "who is in Heaven", because this tender Father is in us, not far away in Heaven.

How do we know if we are sanctifying God's Name? Those who sanctify this Name, call Him "Father", or even "Dad and tender Father". This is how we should address Him. Otherwise, we are not inspired by the Spirit of this Blessed Father. For it is inspired by the Blessed Spirit of this Holy Father that our hearts cry out to Him: "Abba, Father". Paul said: "The proof that you are sons is that God has sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts: the Spirit that cries, 'Abba, Father'" (Galatians 4,6). Otherwise we are not sons, nor inspired by the Spirit of the Father.

And Paul again said inspired by the Father's Spirit: "The Spirit you received is not the Spirit of slaves bringing fear into your lives again; it is the Spirit of sons, and it makes us cry out, 'Abba, Father!' The Spirit himself and our spirit bear united witness that we are children of God!" (Romans 8,15-16) Let us realize then, that by saying "Abba, Father", it is the Spirit of this Blessed Father that gives us life.

The Apostles were unaware of this marvelous gift, being at that point, such true children of this tender Father, not worshiping slaves. When the Apostles asked Jesus to show them the Father, He answered them: "Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father..." (John 14,7-11) Jesus did not present himself as a despot. He embodied the Father's tender love to the extreme, up to giving himself on the cross. This is how He revealed the Father's true Name. Whœver has seen and understood this, sees the Father, our Father.

For Jesus, and Him alone, could reveal the Father's true face: "No one knows who the Son is except the Father, and who the Father is except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him" (Luke 10,22). He was kind enough to reveal him to us, so small in the eyes of the world: "I bless you, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, for hiding these things from the learned and the clever and revealing them to mere children. Yes, Father, for that is what it pleased you to do" (Luke 10,21).

Jesus not only gave us an Eternal Father, all loving and tender, but also a Mother equally tender and loving: Mary. By saying to this tender Mother to adopt John as a son, and for him to welcome her as Mother, it is to all his people that Jesus addresses these words and confides to them His Mother, who also becomes our sweet and tender Mom (John 19,26-27).

Let us be attentive then, to this Holy-Spirit who adopts us and cries out in us: "Abba, Father" and "Beloved Mother."

And let us be comforted in these Apocalyptic times when the Woman cries out in the pangs of childbirth... our new birth as sons (Revelation 12).

Whoso refuses Mary as Mother dœs not have God as Father...

8.2 The Rosary

What do you think of the Rosary?

The Rosary is the most beautiful prayer to the Virgin Mary.

In each of her apparitions in Fatima, our Mother insisted in saying:

1. 13 June 1917: "I want... you to pray the Rosary everyday".
2. 19 August 1917: "I want... you to continue to recite the Rosary everyday".
3. 13 October 1917: "That we continue to recite always, the Rosary everyday".

And Lucy, the seer of Fatima, wrote to reverend Father Agostino Fuentes (22 May 1958):

> "Since the Blessed Virgin gave great efficacy to the Holy Rosary, there is no material, spiritual, national or international problem that she cannot solve with the Holy Rosary and with our sacrifices."

Why is the Rosary this important?

The Hail Mary flows directly from the words of the Angel Gabriel and Elizabeth addressed to our Mother under the action of the Holy Spirit (Luke 1,28 / Luke 1,42).

Mary said to Saint Gertrude (in the 13th century):

> “Never has man done something more beautiful than the Hail Mary. No one can greet me in a sweeter way to my heart than with these words full of respect, by which God the Father greeted me Himself.”

The Hail Mary reminds our Mother of the most beautiful moment of her life. It is the moment where her “spirit exults in God her Savior; because He has looked upon His lowly handmaid.” (Luke 1,47-48) It is the moment of the incarnation of the Eternal Word to give us Life again. “The Word was made flesh, He lived among us” (John 1,14).

To remind our Mother of this blessed moment is to enter with her in deep communion with the whole Plan of Salvation of our Father.

Now, Mary’s mission is to form Jesus in us. It is by the repetition of the Hail Mary, that Mary forms Jesus in us.

Message of Jesus to Pierre2 (20.02.1982):

> “Tell them that the Rosary is like the repeated blows of a sculptor’s chisel, sculpting the true face of Christ in us, his true features, his true radiance, his own gaze.”

The Power of the Rosary

The Rosary is a shield against the forces of evil.

The devil cannot support the Rosary, because he cannot bear our Mother. The devil’s greatest defeat is that he has never been able to touch this pure and Immaculate Woman. The Immaculate Conception always listened to God’s Voice and never lent her ear to his voice. It is why, delighting our Mother, irritates him a lot. Every Hail Mary is a hammer’s blow on his head, and the repetition of this stroke of the hammer forces him to go away.

Thus the Rosary is a powerful exorcism. In the worst moments of our lives, it is the Rosary that gives us the strength to get out of them. The Rosary is also the only effective remedy against depression.

Padre Pio called his Rosary “his weapon”.

Through the Rosary, we change the face of the earth. It is our Mother who crushed the head of the infernal serpent, and will crush it again in the near future in the total Triumph of our Father on earth (Revelation 12). By praying the Rosary, we accelerate this Triumph.

Why the repetition?

The Rosary is a repetition of noble and positive thoughts towards our Mother, which obstructs the torrent of negative thoughts that assail us during the day.

It is through the repetition of the Hail Mary as a mantra that our mind calms down, appeases itself, amasses and arrives, after some time, to enter into deep communication with the infinitely serene spirit of our Mother.

The repetition is part of the cycle of life. In spiritual life, repetition calms the mind to liberate the spirit.

Through the Rosary, we connect ourselves to Eternity.

Sister Lucy of Fatima said:

> "The repetition of the Hail Mary, the Lord’s Prayers, and the Gloria Patri, is the chain which lifts us up to God and binds us to Him, giving us a participation in His divine life, just like the repetition of the mouthfuls of bread which we feed on that nurture in us natural life, and we do not call such a thing obsolete! This disorientation is diabolical! Do not let yourselves be deceived.” (Letter of Sister Lucy of the 29th of December 1969, to one of her three nephew priests)

Messages to Pierre2 concerning the Rosary

11.02.1970: “The Rosary, recite the Rosary ceaselessly, ceaselessly the Hail Mary. Let this be your favorite prayer.”

11.25.1970: “The Rosary, again the Rosary, always the Rosary! It is through it that you will make your mission easier”.

11.16.1981: Crusade of Rosaries for the return of the Palestinians.

02.20.1982: “It is the Rosary that forms me in the soul and in the eyes of my Mother’s sons.

I am Mary’s son, Jesus, son of Mary, the Gospel shout out on all the rooftops.

I am not ashamed to be the Son of Mary.

It was through her that I assumed my mission as Son of God.

The sons of God are the sons of Mary.

I want the Church of the sons of Mary.

It is to believe or not to believe it, take it or leave it...

Tell them that the Rosary is like the repeated blows of the sculptor’s chisel.

To sculpt the true face of Christ in us, his true features, his true radiance, his own gaze.”

03.17.1982: “My catapult is the censer, the Rosary”.

05.09.1982: “Tell them that I love the Rosary, that I do not resist the Rosary”.

10.20.1983: “The more you pray the Rosary, the more I will manifest myself to you, and the more I will illuminate you as I did with Pio before you”.

05.04.1989: "Your Rosary has weight".

10.01.1990: “Mom, always pray in me”. “I pray for you since you ask Me in the Rosary... Pray with me in silence”.

01.23.1992: “Pass the time transforming it into Eternity”. (*by the Rosary*)

08.10.1992: Jesus: “These Rosaries give me strength for you, make me muscular”.

05.03.1995: “Go by the Rosary to Mary, not by the Rosary to Jesus. Mary is your Route”.

08.07.1997: “Pray the Rosary and the Virgin will grant you graces and strength”.

01.15.2004: “Attention: Prayers, Communion, Rosary!

(*In the beginning of the ’80s, at one point, Pierre2 had a lot of difficulties. Our Father told him that it was because he had neglected the Rosary during this time*).

How to pray the Rosary?

1. The Credo
2. The "Lord’s Prayer"
3. Three prayers to "Mater Admirabilis"
4. Thanks and Praises
5. The “Lord’s Prayer”, then 11 Hail Marys, followed by “Thanks and Praises” (repeat three times).

See the prayers below.

In solidarity with Muslims, we pray with the 33 bead Rosary (the Catholic Rosary consists of 5 of the Lord’s Prayer, and 5 tens of the Hail Mary). It is for each person to choose the Rosary that suits him. There are no obligations. By praying the Rosary, we meditate on the life of Jesus and the mysteries of the Apocalypse. We pray against the Antichrist and for the triumph of the elect.

Annex: Exhortations to the daily Rosary from Our Lady of the Rosary in Fatima

13 May 1917: “Recite the Rosary every day, in order to obtain peace for the world and the end of the war”.

13 June 1917: “I want... that you say the Rosary everyday”.

13 July 1917: “I want... that you continue to recite the Rosary everyday in honor of Our Lady of the Rosary to obtain peace for the world and the end of the war, because she alone can help you”.

19 August 1917: “I want... that you continue to recite the Rosary everyday”.

13 September 1917: “Continue to recite the Rosary, so to obtain the end of the war”.

Commentary of Sister Lucy of Fatima on these words of Our Lady:

> "The Message asks us to persevere in prayer, that is, to continue to pray for the end of the war. It is true that at that time, the Message spoke of the World War that plagued humanity then. But this war is also the symbol of many other wars that surround us and which we need to see the end of, through our prayer and our sacrifice. I think of

the wars which make us the enemies of our eternal salvation: the devil, the world, and our own physical nature." (Calls from the Message of Fatima, 1st French Edition of July 2003, chapter XVI: Call to perseverance in goodness, page 157)

13 October 1917: "May we always continue to recite the Rosary everyday."

"Let us recite the Rosary everyday. Our Lady has repeated this in all her apparitions, as if to protect us against these times of diabolical disorientation, so that we do not allow ourselves to be deceived by false doctrines and that, by means of prayer, the elevation of our soul towards God will not diminish" (Letter from Sister Lucy, 12 April 1970, to Maria Teresa of Cunha, one of her friends zealously committed in the defense of Marian devotion)

"I see from your letter that you are concerned by the disorientation of our time. It is sad indeed that so many people let themselves be dominated by the diabolical wave that sweeps the world, and that they are so blind to the point of being unable of seeing the error! Their main fault is that they have abandoned prayer; they have thus distanced themselves from God, and without God, all is lacking: 'Without Me, you can do nothing'" [...]

"The devil is very cunning and searches for our weak points in order to attack us. If we are not careful and attentive to obtain strength from God, we will fall, because our times are really wicked and we are weak. Only God's strength can keep us upright." (Letter from Sister Lucy, of 13 April 1971, to Father José Valinho Salesian, one of her three nephew priests)

"[...] What some disoriented people have spread against the recital of the Rosary is false. The light of the sun is older than the recital of the Rosary, and they do not want to stop benefiting from its brightness; older are the psalms and they too, like the prayers that make up the Rosary, are part of the sacred liturgy.

The repetition of the Hail Mary, the Lord's Prayer, and the Gloria Patri is the chain which lifts us up to God and binds us to Him; giving us a participation in His divine life, like the repetition of the mouthfuls of bread on which we feed nurtures in us natural life, and we do not call that an obsolete thing!

This disorientation is diabolic! Do not let yourselves be deceived." (Letter from Sister Lucy, of the 29th of December 1969, to one of his three nephew priests)

8.3 Can you tell us how you pray?

To pray, is to talk to our Father and above all, to listen to His voice in our hearts.

It is to put oneself in a state of inner listening.

It is to hear the Voice of our Father in order to fulfill His Will.

Messages to Pierre2

12/15/1995: "The best prayer is to enter into the plan of God".

17/03/1997: "Know how to speak to God and know how to listen to him. Many, apart from the prayer formulas prepared by others, do not know how to speak to God. So few know how to listen to Him."

11/29/1989: Praying is an art, it is not for everyone to know how to pray. Fervor and contention are often confused with prayer and worship. To pray fervently dœs not mean being tense in prayer. We must come to pray with fervor, without restraint, without wrinkles. Pray ardently

but in relaxation, a cheerful face. Prayer is a symphony that must be played calmly, peacefully, like flowing water, like a limpid stream running straight in its path. Prayer is an art and you have to know how to pray; this is why the apostles asked Jesus: "Lord, teach us to pray" (Luke 11,1)

I want you tall. Restraint must be converted into tenderness. Contention is from the devil.

The more tender we are, the better we pray. Our Father resists not tenderness. (Doris)

The "good thief" touched Christ with a look of tenderness on the cross: "Jesus," he said to him with weeping eyes of love and regret for his faults, "remember me when you come into your kingdom." (Luke 23,42) The heart of Christ wavered on the spot: "Indeed I promise you, today you will be with me in paradise." (Luke 23,43)

The Prayers

We propose here some prayers that we recite regularly. Of course, each is free to choose the prayers that correspond to their state of mind.

OUR CREDO

I believe in God, our Good Father, Creator of heaven and earth.

I believe that Jesus is the Son of God, His incarnation and the Messiah sent by the Father for the remission of sins of those who believe in Him.

He was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Immaculate Virgin Mary, was delivered by Caiaphas and the Sanhedrin to Pontius Pilate,

He suffered for us, was flagellated, crucified, put to death and was buried,

He visited the abode of the dead and on the third day rose again from the dead as He had foretold.

He appeared to His Apostles, ascended into Heaven, before returning in the end times to restore all.

I believe that Jesus has already returned, opens the Book of Revelation through his special Envoy, the Angel of the Apocalypse, unmasked the Antichrist, the Beast of the Apocalypse, and inaugurates the New Heaven and the New Earth.

He manifests Himself again to those who wait for Him to give them Salvation.

I believe in the Holy Spirit given by Jesus to His intimates, in the personal presence of Christ in the Bread of Life through His Body and His Blood, in the compassionate intercession of the Virgin Mary, Coredemptrix and Medatrix of all graces, in her Immaculate Conception, in her apparitions in Lourdes, La Salette and Fatima, in the Universal Restoration and in the spiritual temple open to all men of good faith.

I believe that Mohammed is prophet of God.

I believe in the intercession and in the communion of the Saints, in the solidarity of the believers, in the forgiveness of sins, in the resurrection of the body, and in Eternal Life already established in us. Amen.

OUR FATHER (The Lord's Prayer)

Our Father, who art in us

hallowed be thy name;

Thy kingdom come;

Thy Will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

For thine is the Kingdom and the Power and the Glory, for ever and ever. Amen

(*This prayer has been simplified by Pierre2, because after years of commitment, our Father no longer wants us to pray to him "Give us this day our daily bread and forgive us our trespasses..." Because, as a Good Dad, He gives us the daily bread and He forgives us our trespasses. No need to ask Him all the time.*)

For those who may want to guard the old prayer:

... Thy will be done on earth as in heaven.

Give us this day our daily bread

And forgive us our trespasses as we forgive those who trespass against us

Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

For Thine Alone belong the Kingdom, the Power and Glory

For ever and ever. Amen.

HAIL MARY

Hail Mary, full of grace, Our Father is with thee

Blessed art thou amongst all women and Jesus, your Blessed Son is the Messiah.

Holy Mary, Mother of God and our Beloved Mother, pray for us, your children, now and at the blessed hour of our departure. Amen

(*The second part of the Hail Mary was added by the Church:*

Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners now and at the hour of our death. Amen.

Pierre2 modified it to free us from the culpability of "poor sinners", and give us a spirit of openness and filial love towards our Mother).

PRAYER TO "MATER ADMIRABILIS"

A prayer to "Mater Admirabilis" (Admirable Mother) was composed in French, on October 20 1945, by the young "Doris Toutounji", born June 24, 1930. She was suddenly picked up by Heaven on December 10, 1945, forty days after having composed this beautiful prayer inspired by the Holy Spirit. The Apostles of the Apocalypse love to recite this prayer and to please their "Admirable Mother" by offering it to her every day. They recognize themselves in the "small legion" of her children who "glorify her under this title" (Mary's Message at Marienfried). Note that Mary's apparition at Marienfried began in April 1946, four months after Doris' "death" to join this Admirable Mother to whom she had dedicated this prayer with love.

"Hail Mary, full of grace, brilliant light who reflects the Holy Trinity. Your name, O Mary, is a widespread balm, and, for us, sinners, an aid always awaited.

The Lord is with you, as you, Oh Mary, are with us, to enlighten, guide and console your children, poor pilgrims who walk in the Valley of tears, their eyes fixed upon You, their sweet star.

Blessed are You amongst women, because the Lord has chosen You to be the Mother of the Word Incarnate, without ever allowing sin to tarnish your ravishing whiteness.

Jesus, the Fruit of your womb is blessed, because through You has been given to us, the Unique Savior, who redeems us from death and reopens the gates of Heaven.

Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us who combat now on earth. Be our refuge at all times, so that, at the blessed moment of our death, we may contemplate your sweet face in the splendor of Eternity. Amen."

THANKS AND PRAISES

Thank you, dear Father for answering our prayers

For our triumph through the Immaculate Heart of Mary, your bride, our admirable Mother.

Glory be to You Father Son and Holy Spirit

O God our Father who is, who was, and who is to come for ever and ever, Amen.

Thank you, my Jesus for the first resurrection

And grant it to those who are in most need of you.

Holy Mother of God

Inflame my heart so that I can inflame the world.

Sacred Heart of Jesus

We confide but in You.

Immaculate Heart of Mary

Pray for us who have recourse to you

Paternal Heart of Joseph

We count on you and all of you our brothers and sisters of heaven and of earth, Amen

And you Michael, head of the heavenly army, push back into hell, by the divine force of the Immaculate Conception, Satan and all the evil men who roam the earth in order to lose the souls. Amen

THE COMMUNION OF JESUS

(see the text "Jesus restores the priesthood")

Contemplate. Say some prayers like the Credo, the Lord's Prayer, the Hail Mary.

We are gathered around Jesus, with all our brothers in Heaven and Earth, tenderly gathered in the Immaculate Heart of Mary our tender Mother, Joseph, Michael, Mohammed to hear Jesus say to us with Love and Fervor:

> "Take this and eat it, this is My Body, sacrificed for you, for the remission of sins. Amen.
>
> Drink from this, this is My Blood, the Blood of the New Covenant, poured out for you and for many for the remission of sins. Do this in remembrance of Me".

Jesus, we do this in memory of You

and we all live on it, because we know that this is truly

Your Body and Your Blood, glorified by Your Resurrection

to give us Life in us and glorify us with Your Glory from here below,

by the Holy Spirit found therein.

We do this with You daily, in our family, and announce Your Return.

Thank You my Jesus for being with us and for always guarding us with you. Amen

Take the eucharist

Thank You, Beloved Father for this communion, to the Body and Blood, to the Soul and the Divinity of Christ. May this communion and all others, serve for our intimate union in You. We offer You Jesus Who is in us, and we offer ourselves in You, with Him and in Him, united in the Heart of Mary, with all the prayers of the martyrs persecuted by the Antichrist. Amen.

OUR MOTHER OF THE APOCALYPSE

Our Mother of the Apocalypse, Immaculate Mother of God and our dear Mother, protect us in the fight. Safeguard us against the malice and the pitfalls of men and demons, may God make

them feel your Empire, we beseech you. And you Michael, head of the Heavenly Army, drive back into Hell by the divine force of the Immaculate Conception, Satan and all evil men who prowl the earth in order to lose the souls. Amen.

Sacred Heart of Jesus, we confide but in You.

Immaculate Heart of Mary, pray for us who have recourse to you

Paternal Heart of Joseph, we count on you and all of you our brothers and sisters of heaven and of earth. Amen.

PROMISES TO MARY

We promise you, Mary Immaculate, our dear Mother, you Our Lady of La Salette and of Fatima, to be witnesses in the world of your Immaculate Heart, in witnessing for Justice and Truth, as Jesus, your Son, taught us. Grant us your almighty aid in order to be faithful to our Oath. Amen.

In your hands, Mary, I commend my spirit and entrust our prayers, our mission, our struggle, our family and our eternal life. Augment in us internal life, the knowledge of God's will, assurance, strength, love, humility, intelligence, wisdom, discernment, the spirit of prophecy, equilibrium in all things and to be aware of living in your sweet company. Amen.

LITTLE PRAYERS

To our Father

Beloved Father, invest us with Your Power to fight Satan and his like.

And come renew everything by the Power of Your Spirit. Amen.

To our Guardian Angel

Angel of God, our Guardian

Illuminate us, guard us,

Administer and govern us,

We who have been entrusted to you by the Heavenly Mercy. Amen

Eternal Rest (to the souls of Purgatory)

Father, give them their Eternal Rest

And may the perpetual light glow on them,

May they rest in peace. Amen.

AL FATIHA

(see text below)

PRAYERS FROM THE QUR'AN OR THE HADITHS

Surah 1: Al Fatiha

"In the name of God, the Compassionate, Most Merciful.

Praise be to God, Lord of the Worlds:

The Compassionate,

Lord of the Day of Judgement.

It is You we worship, and upon You we call for help

Guide us to the straight path,

The path of those upon whom Your grace abounds,

Not those upon whom anger falls,

Nor those who have gone astray."

Surah 2, verse 255, called verse of the Throne (Ayah al-koursayy)

"God, there is no god but He, Living and Everlasting.

Neither slumber overtakes Him nor sleep.

To Him belongs what is in the heavens and what is on earth.

Who shall intercede with Him except by His leave?

He knows their present affairs and their past.

And they do not grasp of His knowledge except what He wills.

His throne encompasses the heavens and the earth, preserving them is no burden to Him.

He is Exalted, the Majestic."

Surah 45; Those who are kneeling,36-37

"Praise be to God,

Lord of the heavens and earth, Lord of mankind!

To Him be exaltation in the heavens and earth!

He is Almighty, All-Wise."

Sura 59; The Mustering,22-24

"He is God,

There is no god but He,

Knower of the Unseen and the Seen,

All-Merciful, the Compassionate.

He is God,

There is no god but He,

Sovereign, All-Holy, the Bringer of Peace

The All-Faithful, the All-Preserver,

The Almighty, the All-Compelling,

The All-Sublime!

Glory to Him far above what they associate with Him!

He is God,

The Creator, Originator, Giver of Forms,

To Him belong the Names most beautiful;

All on earth and in heaven magnify Him;

He is the Almighty, the All-Wise."

"O God, help me to remind myself of You, to express my gratitude to you and to apply perfectly my adoration for You." (Narrated by Ahmad, Abu Daoud, Nasa'i and Hakim)

"O God, You are Salvation, from You comes peace. Blessed are You, O Lord, You who holds majesty and munificence." (Narrated by Mouslim)

8.4 Prayer in a physical building?

A reader insists on the usefulness of churches as buildings to pray in. He writes us:

> In one of your responses, you tell me that the Apostles used to gather in the Temple to consult the Scriptures, as they had no texts at home. This is credible. In Acts 3,1, it is written that Peter and John went up to the Temple for the prayers at the ninth hour. What can you tell me about that?

The Apostles gathered at the Temple to consult the Scriptures, and above all to bear witness. Jesus did the same (Luke 22,53).

Paul witnessed at the Temple or in the Synagogue (Acts 17,2-4). The Apostles frequented the Temple everyday, and "broke" the Bread in their homes (Acts 2,46-48).

By witnessing, the Apostles glorified Jesus and, thanks to Him, cured many people and did miracles. Therefore, many people converted (Acts chapters 3 and 4).

The Apostles did not go up to the Temple to pray, but to meet the people who were there for prayer, and announce to them of the Messiah's Advent. Therefore, to bear witness.

For the Apostles still had the teachings and example of Jesus in them:

> "When you pray, go to your private room. . . " (Matthew 6,5-7)

When Jesus prayed, He used to retire to a private place, all alone (Matthew 14,23 / Mark 1,35)

> "Now it was about this time that He went into the hills to pray; and He spent the whole night in prayer to God." (Luke 6,12)

And after all, what common prayer can there be, between those who recognize Jesus as Messiah and those who deny Him? What common prayer can there be today between those who witness against the Antichrist and those who accept and praise him (see the open Letter to John Paul II)?

Paul already encourages us to have a firm attitude:

> "Do not harness yourselves in an uneven team with unbelievers. Virtue is no companion for crime. Light and darkness have nothing in common. Christ is not the ally of Beliar, nor has a believer anything to share with an unbeliever. The Temple of God has no common ground with idols, and **that is what we are—the Temple of the living God**. We have God's words for it: I will make my home among them and live with them; I will be their God and they shall be my people. Then come away from them and keep aloof, says the Lord. Touch nothing that is unclean, and then I will welcome you and be your father, and you shall be my sons and daughters, says the Almighty Lord." (2 Corinthians 6,14-18)

The Rebel today is the Antichrist, the State of Israel, and all those who associate themselves with it.

And St. John's Apocalypse launches the same appeal to all the upright and faithful hearts:

> "'Come out, my people, away from her (*Babylon the Great*) so that you do not share in her crimes and have the same plagues to bear. . . '" (Revelation 18,4)

Babylon the Great is Jerusalem, the heart of global Zionism.

It is up to you to choose your camp with prayer and discernment.

As far as we are concerned, we place ourselves on the side of the Apostles who had said before the Jewish high priest and the whole Sanhedrin:

> "Obedience to God comes before obedience to men." (Acts 5,29)

> "You must judge whether in God's eyes it is right to listen to you and not to God. We cannot stop proclaiming what we have seen and heard." (Acts 4,19)

And Paul confirms:

> "Anyone who does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to Him." (Romans 8,9)

The Book of Revelation says:

> "Anyone gifted with the Spirit may interpret the number of the Beast..." (Revelation 13,18)

Who then belongs to Christ today?

Let us stop living in the Church's spirit of fear.

Let us enter with worship "in Spirit and in Truth" (John 4,24), in "freedom and glory as the children of God." (Romans 8,21)

9. The Spiritual Fight

9.1 What do you think of the devil?

What do you think of the devil? Does he really exist? Does one see him on earth?

The devil is a real maleficent power, personified. His greatest ruse is making us believe he dœsn't exist. Divine Revelation denounces him in the Bible and in the Qur'an. The clairvoyant see him in his manifestations of evil in this world. An evil which often surpasses strictly human power. The devil needs persons to orchestrate his plans. He is made up of a big and diverse legion. Each in its specialty and category of men (power, violence, deceit, Trickery, injustice, disordered sex...) The diabolical current started before the creation of the world, in the spiritual realm known as "Heaven". It was triggered by the head of the Angels called Lucifer, whose name means "Carrier of Light", but who transformed into the carrier of darkness. Why? His power rose up to his head and intoxicated him to the point that he felt greater than his Creator, up to tempting Him to submit to him and in refusing to obey Him. He even demanded to be obeyed by Him. In his revolt and seduction, he dragged down an innumerable tally of Angels with him.

But Michael, who was Lucifer's subordinate, in turn refused to submit to this chief insubordinate to God. The revolter demanded Michael's obedience, but he in turn demanded that his chief obey the Almighty first so to obey to him in turn. To this refusal Michael exclaimed: "Who is like EL(*God*)?!" In Hebrew, "**Mi** (*who*) **ka** (*is like*) **El** (*God*)", which adds up as MIKAEL = MICHAEL in English, in French Michel, in Arabic Mikhaïl. The Book of Revelation 12,7-9 relates this ferocious battle which takes place in Heaven between Lucifer's followers and those who chose to rally behind Michael who, however, seemed (but only seemed) weaker, because of his humility, than his leader. It was the "weak" who triumphed and the "strong", appearing brawny and menacing by showing off his power and biceps, who was chased down to earth with his followers. The powerful love that Michael and his people had for God, Justice and Truth, overcame the power of Lucifer.

And here is our "Lucilu" on earth amongst us, ostensibly nowadays, after he was allowed to come out of the infernal Abyss thanks to the Star (*of David*) who opened the doors of the Abyss to him (Revelation 9,1). A very powerful weapon against this enemy is to ridicule him, not to take him seriously. It is why we call him Lucilu (we are sure that he dœs not like it!)

The accursed "star" which freed Lucilu, currently serves him as a subtle instrument by reproducing on earth the Luciferian revolt against God. It is why "the Dragon (*Lucilu*) had handed over to the Beast his own power..." (Revelation 13,2) and pushes mankind to bow down to it, because by doing so it is, in fact, before Satan that they bow down to. The response to Michael's resounding cry of "MI KA EL" in Heaven and his people against the devil by satanic forces on earth today is: "who is like the Beast" (MI KA ISRAEL!!!), "Who can compare with the Beast? How can anyone defeat him!!!" (Revelation 13,4). Only those prostrate before it, "whose names have not been written down in the Book of Life of the Sacrificial Lamb" (Revelation 13,8), but the chosen resist it: "This is why the saints must have constancy and faith." (Revelation 13,10) As for us, to the cry of "MI KA ISRAEL", we oppose with the almighty cry of "MI KA YESHOUA (*Who is like Jesus*)!!!" We thus reproduce Michael's counter-revolt against Lucilu on earth.

And believe it, our holy cry, paralyzed for the moment by the deafening tumult of the world (worries, wars, social events, disorderly sex, extreme sports, drugs, etc... Luke 21,34-36), will end up stifling the voice of the Apocalyptic Beast and its allies.

Our prayers, inaudible to our human enemies, but deafening to the ears of the demons, will vanquish the demons who will end up “in the lake of fire and sulfur, where the Beast and the false prophet are...” (Revelation 20,10)

See our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse".

9.2 How to fight the devil?

A reader writes to us regarding the spiritual struggle:

> "This imbecile of a fool is always here trying to disrupt and destroy us. I am very aware of him... but I am becoming more and more capable of recognizing his game. You know of whom I am talking about... How do we fight him effectively?"

The best weapons to fight him are those which make us grow spiritually: Communion with Jesus taken in simplicity at home, the Rosary and absolute confidence in Mary’s Immaculate Heart, reading of the Holy Scriptures, and prayer. The more we grow spiritually, the less the devil has a hold on us. In this daily struggle, we must fight and hold our ground. Little by little, we become more and more able to recognize the devil’s tactics. Poor devil... he often repeats himself and with time, and with the help of our daily weapons and our tender Mother Mary, we will be able to recognize him on the spot and chase him away. His tactics revolve around the following:

1. To be discouraged with dark ideas about ourselves (not worthy, not capable, it is too difficult, it is not for me, I am worth nothing, etc...)

2. To be distracted when we want to pray (just at the time of prayer a thousand and one things come to mind...), giving a distaste for prayer.

3. To obsess on a negative idea which constantly comes back.

4. To delay spiritual life (when the devil can no longer have a soul, he dœs everything to delay his evolution... then he tries to make us drop the Rosary, daily Communion with Jesus, prayer, reading of the Holy Scriptures while distracting us with a thousand thoughts... You must be aware of this).

5. To prevent regular frequentation of our brothers and sisters ("For where two or three meet in my name, I shall be there with them", Jesus had said (Matthew 18,20). It is a great force).

6. To accuse the other (a brother), to present a negative idea of the other, of what they did or said (here is where transparency between us breaks him, for to speak of what has troubled us sallows everything to be clarified; if we do not speak, a small thing becomes - by the intervention of Satan of course - a mountain...) Jesus on the contrary, as He said to His Messenger, is the One who takes our defense...

7. To be put down by people at work who attack us unjustly (You must counterattack in JUSTICE and impose yourself, try to avoid these people as much as possible for your inner PEACE; utilize the weapon of mockery. The devil and his followers cannot stand mockery...)

8. To void us internally with people and superficial activities. (You should avoid them as much as possible. Spiritual Life requires an Atmosphere... See Qur’an XIX, 61-65: “The Gardens of Eden! They are what the All-Merciful has promised His worshipers... In it they hear no empty talk, but only ’Peace!’..."

9. To influence us by a negative dream which presents a negative image of one of our brothers or that pulls us down in one way or the other. He often uses this trick when all other means are exhausted...

As soon as we recognize him, we must run immediately to our tender Mother Mary and ask for her aid. An IMPETUS OF LOVE AND FAITH is enough and the whole building of deceit collapses...

It is thus a daily fight. We all have the weapons to be victors: Communion with Jesus in the family, the Rosary, reading of the Holy Scriptures, and prayer.

And let us not forget to mock him! Lucilu (nickname of Lucifer...) cannot stand mockery... After all: “Lucilu has cute butts... he should fatten them up good...” (a song dedicated to Lucilu by the Apocalyptic Messenger).

Concerning the Rosary, Lucy, the seer of Fatima, had told Father Fuentes: “The Virgin has repeated to me that the last remedies given to the world are the Holy Rosary and devotion to Mary’s Immaculate Heart. The last means that there will be no others. Since the Holy Virgin has given great efficacy to the Holy Rosary, there is no longer any material, spiritual, national or international problem that she cannot resolve with the Holy Rosary and with our sacrifices. To recite it with love and devotion will console Mary and wipe off the so many tears of her Immaculate Heart.”

As for Padre Pio, a modern saint (who passed into the other world in 1968) who carried Jesus’ Stigmata, called the Rosary: “His weapon”.

With the aforementioned weapons, the devil in the end, has no power over us.

“Take COURAGE, I HAVE CONQUERED the world”, Jesus said (John 16,33).

The Qur’an points out: "He (*the devil*) said: ’My Lord, inasmuch as You have lured me away (*again, the accuser*), I shall make the earth attractive to them (mankind), and lure them all away, except for Your sincere servants among them.’ God said: ’... Over My servants you shall have no authority..." (Qur’an XV; 39-42). For the spiritual combat, meditate the following:

1. Introduction: Luke 14,28-33 and Ephesians 5,8-14. To commit oneself to Spiritual Life, it is like leaving off to war. One must arm himself and be ready to renounce everything.

2. To put on the armor of God: Truth (Knowledge), Justice, faith, zeal: Ephesians 6,10-20 / 2 Corinthians 6,7

3. Not to descend to the level of the enemy: 1 Peter 3,8 - Resist the devil through faith: 1 Peter 5,5-11 / James 4,7

4. To discern the voices or the thoughts inside us: John 8,38 / John 16,13 / Galatians 5,16-26. As Jesus recently revealed: “Through Adam-Eve, the devil entered into the collective subconscious by dislodging God from it. Man is no longer alone with God. He has someone else who thinks inside him. Christ comes to chase off the intruder from the souls and hearts of those who listen to Him."

5. To listen to the Word to produce fruit: Matthew 7,24 / John 15,1-3 / 1 Peter 1,22-24. The Word of God is alive. It models us, purifies us, and makes us effective for the Kingdom of our Father.

6. To employ the sword of the Word: Revelation 1,16 / Hebrews 4,12+ / Isaiah 55,10+ To have a sharp-cutting attitude vis-à-vis the unjust: Revelation 2,26 / Matthew 23,12-32 / John 2,14-17. Jesus was clear-cut with the hypocritical Pharisees. In the Temple, He did not hesitate to take out the whip and chase off the merchants. He also recommends us to be “cunning as serpents and yet as harmless as doves (Matthew 10,16)."

7. To cultivate transparency between us (pure glass, sea of crystal): Revelation 21,18 / 15,2 / Galatians 6,2

8. To renew oneself through Knowledge: Colossians 3,9-17

9.3 The problem of evil

"Why is there evil in the world?

Why did God, who is good, ‘create’ evil?"

These are questions we often hear.

To find the answers, you must make the effort to carefully reflect and employ your logic, starting, for example, by convincing yourself that God, who is good, cannot have created evil; for every tree can give but its fruit.

Where then dœs evil come from?

A reflection on evil imposes itself. Evil is not an entity in itself, but a lack of goodness, an infirmity: sickness is a lack of health, blindness is a deprivation of sight, theft is a dispossession, murder is a deprivation of life, a lie is a deformed truth, injustice is a lack of justice, irregular bodily pleasures are deviations of human energy. All these infirmities stop man from evolving spiritually. With evil thus defined, it becomes clear that God cannot take joy in “creating it”, nor takes pleasure in seeing his creations suffer. He has absolutely no interest in that. Every logical and impartial person notice this.

On the contrary, God gave meaning to creation; there is an orientation, a direction to take in life; we must not go against the flow, neither drive too fast, nor drink and drive etc... in order not to hurt oneself or others. And yet, many refuse to commit to the path traced by God and prefer to do only what is in their head. Here lies the source of evil in the world. We drive at 200 km/hr drunk, we provoke accidents and death and... it is God’s fault!!!

So, it is man who introduced the bitterness of evil into his home. He dœs not stop watering this maleficent plant through egoism and his desire for power and domination. The desires of men are at the origin of fraternal wars. Man kills man his brother in order to dispossess him and submit him to his demands. And this, against the precepts of the Divine Creator. Whose fault is it then?!

It is Divine Revelation, in the **symbolic** tale of Adam and Eve’s fall, which informs us of the source of evil in the world. Man and woman chose to believe the bad advice the devil inspired them, instead of trusting divine instruction to reach fullness of life. They thus introduced the diabolical thought into man’s intuition. This was the first sin, the schism between God and his creation. After having introduced disequilibrium between man and God, “Cain” continued the evil act by killing his brother “Abel” and introduced evil between man and man his brother. The guilty part is certainly not God who had warned man.

God’s Goodness manifests itself to sinners through the grace of forgiveness. This grace is symbolized by the “tunics made of skins” that God gave to Adam and Eve to hide their shame. In fact, God holds out his hand to all men to take them out of their misery. But He cannot force the hand of man, who is free, and cannot oblige him to practice good, nor stop him from

committing evil by force. Neither can God compel man to seize divine grace, to take advantage of divine help to save himself. He holds out his Hand. It is up to us to grab it.

God solicits; He proposes. He never imposes Himself.

In the same way, man cannot be **constrained**, neither to do good, nor to avoid committing evil. And this for two reasons:

1. **The Creator's Nature**: God is not a dictator. He advises, but dœs not oblige his creation to practice good. Free Himself, He created minds and men in his image: free.

2. **Human Nature**: Man is neither a slave, nor any animal, a dog that we tie or muzzle so that he dœs not bite. Free and dignified, he must make use of his emotional and intellectual faculties for his own interest and in the general interest. To commit evil, man must lose heart and intelligence. This is the worst of infirmities, because it is the source of all evil.

It would be right to blame the Creator if He had, from the onset, created in infirmity. And yet, in the beginning, human creation was, in its human dimension, impeccable, but subject to evolve towards God. It was human pride that rejected any possibility of collaboration, any synchronization with the Creator's Work. Hence the imbalance and source of all evil on earth.

It is man who freely commits ill-advised actions from his Creator. He is a Father who wants no harm to men. What interest would He have in seeing his creations groan? If we rightly reflect on him, there is nothing sadistic about Him. Well to the contrary, he never stops advising us paternally, to avoid practices and attitudes which harm body and soul (drugs, illusionary pleasures, injustice, egoism, pride, etc...)

Why did God create?

Life, real life, conceived by the genius of the Creator, is beautiful. And He wishes for us to share it with Him. Therefore, the basis of creation is an altruistic gesture and a good act. Few bother to search in depth, to recognize their missteps that are the true cause of their misery, to overcome their harmful prejudgments. They would gain so much, if not all, by surpassing themselves. They would find themselves, freed from false conceptions by a gesture of humility and objectivity. Whoso seeks sincerely, with objectivity and detachment, without bitterness or contention, finds infallibly.

But why create knowing well that the devil and fallen man should not enjoy life? Why create knowing that evil will come about?

The Creator is free. Infinitely free. It was from this movement that He created, thus expressing a feeling of infinite love for those whom He called to Life. Now, if He had abstained from creating, foreseeing -among minds and man- that creatures would become evil out of jealousy or defiance, then God would not have been free. He would have been depersonalized. If de facto because of such opposition God had refrained from creating, He would have been subjected to enemies even before they existed. This is clearly illogical because the Creator is infinitely free. As man can freely do what he wants within the framework of his own nature, God can all the more, do whatever He wants according to His **infinitely free** nature. The opposition of created nature is unable to slow down the Almighty Will of the Great Architect of creation.

Angelic spirits and fallen man are free to auto-destruct. But what God created, from the onset, was perfect, each according to its own nature. Such is the teaching of the Holy Scriptures.

In Christ Jesus, God gives back His eternal Life with immense love to those who collaborate in this redemption. "A man can have no greater love than to lay down his life for his friends", Jesus said (John 3,16 / 15,13 / 1 John 4,9). Therefore, we must have enough humility and

gratitude to accept, to reach out to seize the grace offered us for free. There are, alas, so few who wish to understand.

The sensible person will be able to recuperate, through Jesus, what the devil, through Adam, managed to take away from him.

9.4 The Exorcism of Leo XIII

"What do you think of the exorcism prayer of Pope Leo XIII? Do you believe in it?"

The exorcism prayer of Pope Leo XIII is the consequence of a heavenly vision and joined by its content the messages of the Virgin Mary in La Salette (France, 1846), in Fatima (Portugal, 1917), as well as the opening of the Book of Revelation by Jesus Himself on May 13, 1970 in Lebanon.

Here is an extract from the article "The terrifying vision of hell of Leo XIII", page 11 of the journal "L'Appel du Ciel" n ° 25 of September 2010:

"On October 13 1884, Leo XIII finished celebrating the Holy Mass in the Vatican Chapel. Then, he stood motionless for 10 minutes. Then he rushes to his office without giving any explanation to his close entourage, who saw him become deathly pale. Leo XIII immediately composes a prayer to Saint Michael the Archangel, ***with instructions that it be recited everywhere*** *after each low Mass. This prayer continued to be recited until September 29, 1964 (Vatican Council II...), when the instruction Inter œcumenici (n ° 48, § j.) decreed "... the Leonine prayers are abolished..."*

Later, the Pope gave his testimony: "After the Mass, I heard two voices; one kind and gentle, the other guttural and harsh. They seemed to come from near the tabernacle. It was the devil addressing the Lord, like in a dialogue. Here is what I heard:

- The guttural voice, the voice of Satan in his pride, shouting to the Lord: "I can destroy your Church".

- The gentle voice of the Lord: "You can? Then go ahead and do so".

- Satan: "To do so, I need more time and more power".

- Our Lord: "How much time? How much power?"

- Satan: "75 to 100 years, and greater power on those who will give themselves to my service".

- Our Lord: "You have the time, you will have the power. Do with them what you will".

Then, I had a terrible vision of hell: I saw the earth as if wrapped in darkness and, from an abyss, I saw come out a legion of demons which were spreading over the world to destroy the works of the Church and attack the Church itself, ***which I saw reduced to the end****. So, Saint Michael appeared and drove the evil spirits back into the abyss. Then I saw Saint Michael the Archangel intervene not at this moment, but much later, when people would multiply their fervent prayers to the Archangel."*

This vision took place on October 13 1884, exactly 33 years (Christ's age) after the last apparition of the Virgin Mary in Fatima on October 13 1917. In this vision, Leo XIII foresaw the appearance of the Antichrist (the darkness spread over the earth, see Revelation 9,1-2) and his infiltration even, in the Vatican itself. The prayer says indeed: "**There where the seat of the blessed Peter and the throne of Truth was instituted, there they have erected the throne of their abomination in impiety**". In La Salette, the Virgin Mary announced: "**Rome will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist**". This is what has happened. By the refusal of the popes to reveal the third secret of Fatima in 1960, as the Virgin Mary had expressly requested, the Vatican has definitively lost the Spirit (see the texts on the

website "Explanation of Mary's Message in La Salette" and "Explanation of Mary's Message of Fatima").

It was also at this time (1964) that Rome decided to suppress this prayer of Leo XIII, just as she had already buried the Virgin Mary's messages of La Salette and of Fatima. This latter explicitly reveals the identity of the Antichrist: it is the State of Israel, which appeared in 1948 in Palestine (see the text "The Key of the Apocalypse"). For fear of being accused of anti-Semitism, John XXIII, Paul VI, John Paul II, Benedict XVI and Francis I, have renounced their testimony for Jesus and have betrayed their noble mission. We think that John Paul the 1st was assassinated because he wanted to reveal it.

However and fortunately, **the true Church** is not limited to a Vatican institution, today dead and outdated (the word "church" actually comes from the Greek "ekklesia", which means "assembly"). She is composed of today, of all those who believe in the message of the Apocalypse, and who commit themselves against the Antichrist. It is that Church against which "the gates of hell will never prevail", as Jesus had announced (see Matthew 16,18). It is "the Church of Light" mentioned in Leo XIII's prayer (we recommend that you read profoundly the text on the website The "Road to Damascus").

Leo XIII has seen the very important role of the Archangel Michael in this End of Times, in which we are living. A large part of the Book of Revelation chapter 12 is dedicated to him.

In La Salette, the Virgin Mary had announced his intervention: "Here is the Beast with his subjects, calling himself the Savior of the world (*the Zionist Messiah*). He will rise with pride into the air (*Israel's military air power*) to go up till heaven. He will be smothered by the breath of the Archangel Saint Michael (*1 Thessalonians 4,16*). He will fall, and the earth, which, for three days (*Revelation 11,9-11*) will be in a continuous series of evolutions, will open its fiery bowels; he will be plunged for eternity, with all his followers, into the everlasting chasms of hell (*Revelation 12,16 / 19,19-20 / 20,9-10*)."

The prophet Daniel, 500 years before the Christ, had also announced it: "At that time Michael will stand up, the great Prince who mounts guard over your people. That is going to be a time of great distress, unparalleled since nations first came into existence..." (Daniel 12,1-3).

We resort to the exorcism of Leo XIII in the moments most difficult, and in the strongest internal and external struggles against the powers of evil. It is a very powerful and very effective prayer. We cannot but recommend it.

Any veritable believer is capable to perform exorcism.

The following words of Jesus give us a lot of force and assurance to chase away any kind of demon. Matthew tells us in his Gospel:

> "Jesus summoned his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits with power to cast them out and to cure all kinds of diseases and sickness." (Matthew 10,1)
>
> "And as you go, proclaim that the kingdom of Heaven is close at hand. Cure the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils. You received without charge, give without charge." (Matthew 10,7-8)

And just before His ascension to Heaven, Jesus said to them:

> "These are the signs that will be associated with believers: in my name they will cast out devils; they will have the gift of tongues; they will pick up snakes in their hands, and be unharmed should they drink deadly poison; they will lay their hands on the sick, who will recover." (Mark 16,17-18)

This promise is made to all "who have believed". Let us rekindle in us the Faith in Jesus' words. His words are eternal. They are for Today.

Any true believer, who lives in love and justice and accomplishes the Plan of God is capable of exorcising demons.

We reproduce below the exorcism of Leo XIII, in its original version. We have removed the sentence "by the sacred authority of our Mother the Church". You understand why.

9.4.1 Exorcism against Satan and the rebel angels

Published by the order of the Sovereign Pontiff Leo XIII

In the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

Psalm 68

Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered, let those who hate him flee before him! As smoke disperses, they disperse; as wax melts when near the fire, so the wicked perish when God approaches.

Psalm 35

Accuse my accusers Yahweh, attack my attackers...

Shame and dishonor on those who are out to kill me!

Back with them! Cover with confusion those who plot my downfall!

May they be like chaff before the wind, with the angel of Yahweh to chase them!

May their way be dark and slippery, with the angel of Yahweh to hound them!

Unprovoked they spread their net for me, they dug a pit for me;

But Ruin creeps on them unawares, the net they have spread will catch them instead, and into their own trap they fall.

Then my soul will rejoice in Yahweh, exult that he has saved me.

Glory be to the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit,

As He was in the beginning, now and always, and forever and ever.

Amen.

Prayer to Saint Michael

Most glorious prince of the heavenly army, Saint Michael Archangel, defend us in the struggle and the fight we have to confront against the Sovereignties and the Powers who originate the darkness in this world, the spiritual army of evil "in the heavens" (Ephesians 6,12).

Come to the aid of men whom God made imperishable, "in the image of His own nature" (Wisdom 2,23), and have been bought and paid for at such "a high price" (1 Corinthians 6,20) from the tyranny exercised by the devil.

Now again, you yourself, Saint Michael and all the army of the blessed Angels, fight the Lord's fight, just as in the past, you fought against Lucifer, the coryphée of the proud, and against his apostate angels. "And behold, they could not win, and even their place was no longer found in heaven. And he was hurled down, the great dragon, the primeval serpent, known as the devil or Satan, who had deceived all the world, was hurled down to the earth and his angels were hurled down with him" (Revelation 12,8-9).

Now, here is this enemy of old, "murderer from the start" (John 8,44), has stood up vehemently "disguised as an angel of light" (2 Corinthians 11,14), having for an escort the horde of perverse spirits, in all directions he travels all over the earth, and everywhere incorporates himself there: in order to abolish the name of God and His Christ, in order to steal, to destroy and to lose

in endless damnation, the souls that should be crowned with eternal glory. The maleficent dragon transfuses, in men mentally depraved and corrupted in the heart, a flood of abjection: the venom of his malice, the spirit of lies, impiety and blasphemy, the lethal breath of vice, of lust and universal iniquity. The Church, bride of the Immaculate Lamb, is now saturated with bitterness and soaked with poison, by very cunning enemies; they have worn their wicked hands on everything that she desires most sacred. **There where the seat of the blessed Peter and the throne of Truth was instituted, there they have erected the throne of their abomination in impiety; so that having struck down the shepherd, the flock may be scattered.**

O Saint Michael, invincible chief, bring yourself then now to the people of God who are fighting against the spirit of wickedness, give them victory and triumph. The Holy Church venerates you as Her Guardian and her Protector; she renders you glory as being her Defender against all the dangerous powers on earth and in Hell; to you the Lord has entrusted to conduct the souls of the redeemed in the place of supreme bliss. Pray to the God of Peace that He crushes Satan under our feet, so that he may no longer can, nor keep men captive, nor harm the Church. Offer our prayers in the presence of the Most High, so that "the mercies of the Lord arise in us without any delay" (Psalm 79,8), and that you seize the dragon, the primeval serpent, who is the devil or Satan, and who, once in the abyss, no longer seduces the nations (Apocalypse 20,3).

So trusting in your protection and your patronage, [...] it is with all confidence that we undertake to repress, in the name of Jesus Christ, our God and Lord, the infestations of the diabolical tricks.

Here is the Cross of the Lord, flee, enemy powers.

He has vanquished, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David.

May Your mercy, Lord, come over us.

According to the same measure in which we hope in You.

Lord, listen to my prayer.

And may my cry rise up to You.

Orison

God and Father of Our Lord Jesus Christ, we invoke Your Holy Name and we implore supplicating Your clemency so that, by the intercession of the Immaculate Virgin Mother of God, of the Archangel Saint Michael, of Saint Joseph, Spouse of Mary, of the saint Apostles Peter and Paul and of all the Saints, that You deign to lend us Your aid against Satan and all the putrid spirits that roam throughout the world so as to harm the human race and for the perdition of souls.

Amen.

EXORCISM

(At the "+" make the sign of the Cross)

We exorcize you, whœver you may be, malignant spirit, satanic power, horde of the infernal enemy, demonic legion, all diabolical sects and assemblies; in the Name and by the "Virtue" (Luke 8,46) of Jesus Christ + Our Lord, be eradicated and chased away from the Church of God, from souls (Matthew 12,43) created in the image of God and redeemed by the Most Precious Blood of the Divine Lamb +. From now on, you no longer dare, perfidious serpent, to deceive the human race, to persecute the Church of God, to torment God's elect and "sift them like wheat" (Luke 22,31) +. He commands you, the Most High God + to whom, in your

great pride, you still claim to resemble, "He who wants everyone to be saved and reach full knowledge of the truth" (1 Timothy 2,4).

He commands you, God the Father +

He commands you, God the Son +

He commands you, God the Holy Ghost +

He commands you, Christ His Majesty, Eternal Word of God made flesh + , who, for the salvation of our race, lost due to your envy, "humbled Himself, becoming obedient unto death" (Philippians 2,8), who has built His Church on the firm "Rock" (Matthew 7,24) and promised that "the powers of hell would never prevail against Her" (Matthew 16,18), since "He will dwell with Her all the days until the end of the world" (Matthew 28,20). He commands you, the sacred Sign of the Cross + , and the inherent virtue of all the mysteries of the Christian Faith +.

She commands you, the most venerable Mother of God, the Virgin Mary + who, from the first instant of her Immaculate Conception, has, by her humility, crushed your over proud head. She commands you, the Faith of the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul and all the other Apostles +. It commands you, the blood of the Martyrs and the pious intercession of all the Saints +.

So then, accursed dragon and all diabolical legions, we adjure you by God + the Living, by God + the True, by God + the Holy, by this God who so loved the world that He handed over His only begotten Son, so that everyone who believes in Him will not perish but live the everlasting life (John 3,15). Stop deceiving human beings and feeding them the poison of eternal damnation. Stop harming the Church and shackling her liberty.

Begone Satan, inventor and master of all fallacy, enemy of the salvation of men. Cede your place to Christ in Whom you have found none of your works. Cede your place to the new Church of Light, the same one acquired at the price of His Blood. Bow down under the powerful hand of God, tremble and flee at the invocation that we make in the holy and redoubtable Name of this Jesus who makes all hell tremble, to whom the Virtues, Powers and Dominations of the Heavens submit, to whom the Cherubim and Seraphim praise unceasingly with voices saying: Holy, Holy, Holy is the Lord, the God of the Armies.

O Lord, hear my prayer.

And let my cry come unto You.

Orison

God of heaven, God of earth, God of Angels, God of Archangels, God of Patriarchs, God of Prophets, God of Apostles, God of Martyrs, God of Confessors, God of Virgins, God who has power to give life after death, rest after work, because there is no other God but You, and that there can be no other but You, the Creator of all things visible and invisible, of Whose reign there shall be no end: we humbly beseech Your glorious Majesty to use Your power to deliver us from all tyranny of the infernal spirits, their snares, deceits, malice, and to keep us unharmed from all evil. Through Jesus Christ Our Lord. So be it.

From the snares of the devil,

Deliver us, O Lord.

That Your new Church may serve You in liberty, order and peace:

We beseech You, hear us, Lord.

That the enemies of Your Holy Church be humiliated and converted:

We beseech You, Lord, hear us.

Amen

10. Biblical Themes

10.1 What is it to have the Holy Spirit?

> What is it to have the Holy Spirit? And how do we know we have it?

To have the Holy Spirit is to be in harmony with the mind of God, to think like Him (1 Corinthians 2,16 / 7,40 and Hebrews 10,16).

We know that we have the Holy Spirit when our judgment is in conformity with prophecy. They announced the Messiah's Advent and had revealed the main characters. Jesus fulfills all these prophecies. Those who have the Holy Spirit recognize the Messiah in Him: "I want you to understand that on the one hand no one can be speaking under the influence of the Holy Spirit and say, 'Curse Jesus', and on the other hand, no one can say, 'Jesus is Lord', unless he is under the influence of the Holy Spirit." (1 Corinthians 12,3)

Today, the Antichrist having appeared, those who recognize him have the Holy Spirit, declares the Apocalypse: "There is need for shrewdness (*discernment*) here: if anyone is **clever enough** he may interpret (*recognize*) the number of the Beast..." (Revelation 13,18). Recognizing the Beast equates to a new spiritual baptism dispensing the former baptism in water, as it had exempted circumcision by recognition of the Messianism of Jesus.

It is incumbent upon us to understand the spiritual dimension of the events unfolding before our eyes. What would Jesus think and say in seeing all this? Would He speak like the Pope? Would He distort the messages of La Salette and Fatima? Would He say "God bless Israel"? What would Jesus say about the ecclesiastical pedophilia, the marriage of priests? etc...

Not to believe in God's existence, that Jesus is the Messiah, that the prophets are sent by God, not to believe in the Biblical and Qur'anic prophecies, in good and evil, etc... that, is not having the Holy Spirit. See our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse".

10.2 Should we hate the Romans?

> "Some people blame the Jews for having killed Jesus. It was still all Pilate's decision, the Roman Governor of Palestine, and his Roman soldiers, according to the Gospels, who materially crucified Jesus (certainly under pressure of the crowd). Should we hate the Romans too?"
>
> A.R.

You ask: "Should we hate the Romans too?"

Hate?! Strange vocabulary! Isn't there a more adequate word in your periphery? You insinuate then that we must also hate the Jews! If these sentiments are in you, do not project them onto others.

As for us, we do not hate Jews, Palestinians, or anyone. We are not against Jews, many of whom are badly misinformed and misled by the Zionist media. We are against Zionism whose goal is Greater Israel (Eretz Israel), which extends from the Nile to the Euphrates, by dispossessing all the non-Jewish peoples who are there with the cry "maout ha aravi" (death to the Arabs). Is this a cry of love or hate? We have an admiration for Jews like the young orthodox Jewish lawyer Shamai Leibovitz, who decided to defend the Palestinian resistance fighter Marwan Barghouti, and appeared on TV kissing him. We have esteem, even affection, for such non-Zionist Jews and Israelis like the movements of Neturei Karta in the US, "Shalom Akhshav" (Peace Now), the lawyer Felicia Langer who stands up for Palestinians, Israel Shamir and other Jews who denounce Zionism and its crimes. We refer you to Israel Shamir's website (`www.israelshamir.net`).

Should you "hate" him too?

We hate no one, not even the Sanhedrin who condemned Jesus after having denied Him as the Messiah. **Righteous anger** and opposition to injustice do not mean hatred, but judgment. A criminal is not condemned out of hatred for that person but out of love for justice and to safeguard society. Whœver clears a criminal is a criminal too. Moses killed and made war, prophets too. And Jesus, on occasion, took the whip (John 2,13-17) and demanded that we judge in Justice, without weakness (John 7,24 and Luke 12,57). The prophet Mohammad did the same. To follow your logic, we must close the tribunals and sentence the judges.

It was not Pilate, after all, who decided to crucify Jesus. You admit yourself that this happened "certainly under the pressure of the crowd". What more to explain to you then? You have understood everything! However, and to clarify to others, we answer according to the Gospels, since you are referring to them.

The Gospels declare that Pilate, far from wanting to crucify Jesus, attempted, on the contrary, to save Him. The decision to crucify Jesus, we repeat, was certainly not Pilate's, as you claim. It was the Sanhedrin who condemned Him to death (Luke 23,13-19 and Mathew 27,11-26). Let us not distort History. The Sanhedrin threatened Pilate by denouncing him to Caesar as protector of a man of a revolt, Jesus, who incites the Jewish people to rise up against Rome (Luke 23,2). "Pilate was anxious to set Him free, but the Jews **shouted**, 'If you set Him free **you are no friend of Caesar's**; anyone who makes himself king is defying Caesar'... 'We have no king except Caesar'" (John 19,12-15). It was this blackmail that intimidated Pilate, whose fault was in not taking up the challenge. The Romans reluctantly crucified Jesus; but the will which incited the crime, the hidden hand that crucified Him, was indeed that of the Sanhedrin who fomented the crowd, as you yourself mentioned.

Here is why Jesus asked the Father to forgive them because "they do not know what they are doing" (Luke 23,34). This forgiveness covers the Romans who knew not why they crucified this innocent man; they did not want to put Him to death. On the contrary, the Scribes and Pharisees, members of the Sanhedrin, they, knew very well why: they had unjustly refused the spiritual Messianism -neither Zionist nor political- of Jesus. They were therefore unjustifiable because all the Scribes and Pharisees knew the messianic prophecies well. Now, they apply perfectly to Jesus; but the Romans, they, did not know these prophecies. This is the reason for their justification. Did Jesus not tell Pilate: "The one (*Caiaphas*) who handed me over to you has the greater guilt." (John 19,11) For, as John reveals, there is sin that is forgivable -that of the Romans- and another, that against the Holy Spirit, which is unforgivable. It is the sin of Caiaphas and his ilk (1 John 5,16-17). Did they not say: "His blood be on us and on our children!" (Matthew 27,25) They therefore recognize their responsibility, not that of Pilate.

Where do you place the hatred then?

10.3 What is it to prophecy?

It is the prophetic Word which Paul speaks of and its importance (1 Corinthians 14).

"If your tongue dœs not produce intelligible speech, how can anyone know what you are saying?" (1 Corinthians 14,9)

Prophesying, in the evangelical mentality, dœs not mean the prediction of future events, but to speak of divine, heavenly things, clearly explaining prophecy and divine and celestial truths. But there are different ways of expressing yourself, some are vague, confusing and most often incomprehensible. To express yourself in this way is to "speak in tongues", to utter imprecise words, more like babbling... There are good speakers around the world who only know how to express themselves in talking politics, economics, science, etc... They are "prophets" of politics, economics or science. There are seducers who "prophesy" their lies well and are able to convince people of little instruction.

There are few spiritual prophets who know, guided by the Holy Spirit, how to convey the Father's Message and Spirit correctly. It is why Paul says: "The one with the gift of tongues talks for his own benefit, but the man who prophesies dœs so for the benefit of the community" (1 Corinthians 14,4).

For a long time the Christians did not understand what Paul meant by "speaking in tongues" and "to prophesy". The so-called "Charismatic" movements began to repeat thoughtless blabbering accompanied with guitar or other musical instruments under the pretext that they "speak in tongues". This is not "speaking in tongues", but simply expressing yourself wrongly: this is why Paul says: "Anybody with the gift of tongues speaks to God, but not to other people; because nobody understands him when he talks in the spirit about mysterious things. On the other hand, the man who prophesies dœs talk to other people, to their improvement, their encouragement and their consolation." Anyone who speaks in tongues needs someone to explain their thoughts more clearly to the recipients.

I have written many texts. In your opinion, did I express myself in tongues or did I prophesy? Have you indeed understood what I have written? If I was clear, then I have prophesied. Many, among the clergy, speak in tongues during their sermons without knowing it. They say a lot of nice words but what do we finally get out of it? Blah blah blah...

I will leave you to read Chapter 14 of 1 Corinthians.

Speaking in prophesy is of utmost importance for us, Apostles of the Apocalypse. We must all pray for this gift of prophesy, recommended by Paul in his epistle. For we "are to prophesy again, this time against many different nations and countries and languages and emperors (*these are people seduced by the beast*) ..." (Revelation 10,11)

Jesus said: "As for my enemies, who did not want me for their king, bring them here and execute them in my presence." (Luke 19,27)

St Paul said to the Ephesians: "You must receive the Word of God from the Spirit to use as a sword." (Ephesians 6,17)

How do we execute them? With a knife or with a sword?

With a "double-edged sword", that which comes out of His Mouth (Revelation 1,16). So it is by the Word of Truth which is found in the prophesies, and the Apocalyptical prophesies in particular, with which we execute the enemies of our Divine Spouse. Is it not He Who "will kill the Antichrist with the breath of his mouth and will annihilate the Rebel with His glorious appearance at His coming"? (2 Thessalonians 2,8)

The Word of God, The Word of Truth, is powerful. It destroys, executes the enemy. This Word is sharper than a sword. No one could or will be able to argue against it. "The Beast is Israel". This Word alone executes, kills!!!

Peter

10.4 What is the difference between a saint, a prophet and an angel? Are you saints?

10.4.1 A Saint

From Christian terminology, a saint is a man or woman who lived a pure and exemplary life on earth. Some were also gifted, with charisma like Padre Pio for example, St Francis of Assisi, St Clair, all the Apostles of Jesus, etc... The Church canonized them. But there are lesser known saints, such as Sir Thomas More, Chancellor of King Henry VIII and jurist in 1529, who was disgraced, then imprisoned, and finally executed due to his firm opposition to Henry VIII's divorce. The movie "A man for all seasons" relates his edifying story.

In a bigger sense, a saint is any person who seeks to know the one and only Truth, and this at the cost of his own life. Being ready for all persecution is often the price to be paid to discover and keep the one and only Truth. For us Gandhi is a saint. How many so-called believers, Jews, Christians, or Muslims, seek **to know**... They are thus catalogued by birth, but hardly care to justify their religious affiliation.

To know the Truth is only a half tread path. We must **remain in it**, not to renounce it for fear of eventual persecution, or for sordid material gain, or even carnal pleasures: "**If you make** my Word your **home**... you will learn the truth and the truth will set you free", says the Messiah (John 8,31). So knowledge alone is not enough, but to take up the challenge by remaining in Truth and moral integrity.

Knowing the truth leads to knowing the Creator's Will and His Salutary plan, which are often opposed to **our** inclinations, **our** desires, **our** human plans and interests. Are we ready to overcome ourselves, to renounce points of view and commitments opposed to the way which leads to absolute Truth? Pope John-Paul II himself, by not revealing the "secret" of Mary's message of Fatima, could not submit his will to that of God. In our opinion, "his sanctity" is only a deceiving human title. So many other so-called believers and practitioners have neither the strength nor the desire to give up luxurious comfort and vain human glory in order to reach eternal glory. Nowadays, this glory is obtained by remaining in the Word of Truth by bearing witness against the Antichrist.

Today, sanctity is to recognize the Beast of chapter 13 of the Book of Revelation, and then, not to be carried away by it, caught in its subtle nets: "This is why **the Saints** must have perseverance and faith..." (Revelation 13,10) ... "There is need for shrewdness here..." (Revelation 13,18) The saints, today, are these witnesses of the Apocalypse, these martyrs who "even in the face of death, they did not cling to life" in their struggle against the Apocalyptic Beast (Revelation 12,11). They are also those who, at their level and according to their setting, "prophesy against many different nations and countries and languages and emperors" seduced by the Beast, the Antichrist (Revelation 10,11). (Read our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse").

All who do God's Will on this earth are saints. He asks us to unmask the Beast and to also establish on earth "the new Heaven and the new Earth" (Revelation 21,1-8 / 2 Peter 3,13).

Sanctity is to know and then to spread knowledge to those whom the Heavenly Father sends us. Then we will be loved by God. This is sanctity: **To win God's Heart**. Happy are those who succeed in doing so.

We are asked if we are saints!

Our response is that of Joan of Arc: "If we are, may God keep us so. If not, may God make us so!" We think we are on the right path, the Apocalyptic Path of He Who had said: "I am the Way, the Truth and the Life" (John 14,6). The Gospel is exceeded today by Saint John's Book of Revelation, this "Small Unrolled Scroll" (Revelation 10,2) which, in our age of the end times of the Antichrist, is "that of Life" (Revelation 20,12) and the **renewal** of all things: "I am making the **whole of creation new**" (Revelation 21,5).

Meditate Leon Bloy, a Christian thinker who said: "There is only one sadness: not to be a saint".

10.4.2 A Prophet

A prophet is a human being, man or woman, who is sent and inspired by God to denounce faults (Jeremiah 1,10), or is the herald of one or more future events, the most important of which being the Messiah's Advent (Isaiah 53 / Zechariah 9,9-10).

10.4.3 An Angel

There are several meanings:

1. Guardian Angels: Every being born into this world is accompanied by its Guardian Angel. They are spiritual beings, not incarnate like the Archangels Michael and Gabriel.
2. Heavenly Angels: Our physical eyes cannot see them. Some saints have intuitively perceived them by divine grace. They fill the Kingdom of Heaven; Matthew 4,11: “and angels appeared and looked after Him (*Jesus*)", and also read Matthew 22,30
3. Angels: also means “messenger of God”: Matthew 13,39-50 / 24,31
4. Angels: also means “Community chief”, bishop, etc: Revelation 1,20 / 2,1 / 2,8...
5. Fallen angels are those who refused to adapt themselves to the divine plan. They revolted against the Creator, wanting to establish a different order. Lucifer (Satan) was their leader. They try, often with success, to train men after them. They succeed with the majority on this earth.

Clear discernment helps us recognize the holy angels from the fallen angels.

10.5 Reincarnation

> I believe in reincarnation. Jesus said: “unless a man is born from above, he cannot see the kingdom of God. . . ” (John 3,1-11) I have personal inner experiences so to believe in it. What do you think?

Divine Revelation affirms that every man is born only once: “Since men only die once, and after that comes judgment” (Hebrews 9,27).

We must be attentive about everything Jesus said about being reborn; it is about being reborn “in spirit, **from above**". Indeed, addressing Nicodemus, He says:

"Unless a man is born (*some translate it: again*) from above, he cannot see the kingdom of God... Unless a man is born through **water and the Spirit**, he cannot enter the kingdom of God: what is born of the flesh is flesh; what is born of the Spirit is spirit." (John 3,3-6)

Jesus spoke of the water of baptism which purifies the soul and makes it reborn through faith in his Person as the expected Messiah. This same baptism is replaced today by that of the spirit which operates by faith in the revelation that Jesus made of the Apocalyptic mystery (see our text: "The Key of the Apocalypse").

As for “inner experiences” of this kind, one should be prudent, even wary of them. The forces of evil are cunning and know how to play on our feelings and ignorance. They seek to relive on earth through us, to possess us to divert us from the Way which leads to Truth. Let us give credit to Holy Scripture. They are **already** pushing us to be reborn, to take full advantage of our stay on earth to be reborn, ourselves, in Spirit and to discover, in us, the new being that **we are invited to become**, of which Saint Paul spoke:

"You must give up your old way of life; you must put aside your old self, which gets corrupted by following illusory desires. Your mind must be renewed by a spiritual revolution so that you can put on the **new self** that has been created in God’s way, in the goodness and holiness of the truth." (Ephesians 4,22-24).

It is therefore about an inner, personal, spiritual renaissance, making us a new, regenerated being during our unique time on earth. Let us make the most out of this passage.

10.5.1 Letter to a Soul in research on Reincarnation

"Reincarnation; to believe in it or not, is very important. A doctrine such as this can make us **miss our goal** if it is false. It is incompatible with the teachings of Christ, incompatible with His Church, incompatible with the Holy Scriptures **revealed by God**.

In St Paul's letter to the Hebrews we read: "Instead of that, he (*Jesus*) has made his appearance once and for all, now at the end of the last age, to do away with sin by sacrificing himself. Since men **only die once**, and after that comes judgment, so Christ, too, offers himself only once to take the faults of many on himself, and when he appears a second time, it will not be to deal with sin but to reward with salvation those who are waiting for him." (Hebrews 9,26-28)

The soul is an obscure realm which we cannot fully probe. We have already spoken of that. It is why we must accept the only valid Light, the only one in which we can trust, confide in, even if we still do not have the answers to all our questions. This Light is Christ Jesus. And when, leaning on His Heart, on Mary's Heart, you have decided to make a pact with Him, you will discover the mystery of the truths that haunt you.

We had talked about the psychology of the depths (Jung's archetypes). It is amazing to **feel** that such a moment, such a person, such a place, such a circumstance was experienced by me "before". In fact, it was not previously in time and space, but a predestination, a **certain** predestination inscribed in our souls in advance, a kind of "pre"-feeling, a "pre"-taste, that waited for the proper moment to reveal itself to the most intimate part of ourselves and to trigger an encounter with the inner **Me** (the subconscious), (the subconscious), then with God in us, with Eternity of which we are already a part, a tete-a-tete, not with a reincarnated body, but with God's very soul, a dialogue, not between the me of today and the me of yesterday or the me of yesteryear, but between me and ME, then between ME and God. It is not a matter of history and geography, but a matter of Eternity already begun.

It is not a matter of the past, but of the present future, ie Eternity.

Nothing must distract you from this dialogue (with God) which must make you giants. Any other interpretation makes you dwarves, worried, prisoners and dissatisfied and will not lead us to the One Source which has nourished you like never before.

Isn't it true? And is it not a sign of Truth to eat until we are full?

Your soul leans with all its weight to say "yes" to Christ. It is that already for you (for You) there are no other matters that can offer you what you have already tasted. He is the One, and there is none other than Mary. Where would you go my little bird? They alone make you chirp the way you want and roam as you aspire.

After reading these lines, a wall will crumble and a Beam will liberate you.

On the soul's level, personal experiences and feelings can be communicable, for example, by meeting someone happy, they may communicate to us their joy. Someone gloomy can make us, depressed.

As for the departed, there are some who are envious and evil, and who work that we lose ourselves with them. They communicate to us their own feelings, their own experiences, and their knowledge when God allows them to do so. "May God protect us from the evil dead, especially the members of our families", said a saint. These can do us a lot of harm.

These ominous souls, among which are evil spirits, act in us to squander us. In our ignorance and blindness to everything that occurs in us, we confuse realms, ie we do not distinguish between what feelings or states of mind are our own and what are communicated to us, or "infused".

Sometimes, we get the feeling of recognizing a place seen for the first time: "I have already seen this house, this street, this garden etc..." And we conclude that we were ourselves reincarnated.

And yet, this place is only 2 or 3 years old. It is therefore necessary to look for the explanation elsewhere.

It is thus, likewise, that God can communicate knowledge to us, His knowledge which we call "innate knowledge" of which we have already spoken, a clear and specific intuition on various subjects. It is necessary to distinguish between this innate knowledge and the knowledge acquired by our own effort. The knowledge of Christ is all innate, inside us.

This is how a young girl currently takes herself as the reincarnation of Chopin, since she was not even 14 when she played and composed like him. A dead soul can pass on such an experience. . Anyone can, in accordance with the demons, become if he desires overnight a musical virtuoso for earthly glory, attributing that to reincarnation, when the reality is anything but.

A lot of discernment and divine light are needed to discover all that occurs in us and be able to reject the negative feelings which satanic spirits want to impose on us such as despair, depression, gloom, fear, etc... On the contrary, joy and optimism are fruits of the Holy Spirit. We are influenced by those we frequent; in good or in evil. "Tell me who you frequent, I will tell you who you are". This proverb is also valid for the spiritual world.

11. Diverse Questions

11.1 Pre-marital relations

What is your position concerning pre-marital relations?

Our position concerning pre-marital relations is not "ours" but the Savior's, the Master: "I say this to you: if a man looks at a woman **lustfully**, he has already committed adultery with her in his heart." (Matthew 5,27-30) We have known people who only wanted to have a spouse who could share, not so much their bed, but their thirst for the spiritual. They aspire to read in depth, the divine words of the Holy Scriptures together. To love God together. Saint Exupery said: "Love is not to look at one another, but to look together towards the same goal". Let us therefore not put our physical relationships before feelings. We are called upon to exalt our conception of the links between man and woman.

The French philosopher Jacques Maritain and his wife Raïssa were in love with each other. Yet they never knew each other sexually. This certainly dœs not mean that all couples should imitate them. But their example prompts us to consider matrimonial ties to a dimension other than carnal; then the rest will come. This is to sanctify oneself with the help of Heavenly Grace and prayer. Joseph and Mary of Nazareth, too, loved each other and married without ever knowing each other sexually.

As for pre-marital relations, they are normal nowadays for the world. As for us, we have been chosen to witness, in this world, against this sensual mentality. On a spiritual level, a man and a woman living far from God and having intimate relations with each other are already married according to God and according to us. They should consider themselves so, linked to each other and faithful to each other. As soon as they get closer to our Father, they are called upon to legalize their union.

As for those who want to live according to the Plan of God, the practice of continence before civil and spiritual marriage is the way to follow for their sanctification and testimony before men.

Because, a so-called "sentimental" relationship for the sole satisfaction of the senses, with such or such a person is adultery. So you have to pray well to merit a holy husband and a holy wife. Such a marriage becomes sanctifying.

11.2 Birth control products

What do you think of the use of contraceptive products?

Their use depends on the particular case. Those who already have children and cannot have others for valid reasons (material, physical, psychological, etc...) are justified. God is an understanding Father. Requiring a couple who have had twins twice to abstain from contraceptives dœs not seem fair to us, especially in our difficult and demanding times. It all depends on the spirit in which we act. So, if it is simply to satisfy sexual pleasures that one marries, if it is to flee from paternal or maternal responsibilities that one is largely capable of assuming, if it is to party here and there every night or every weekend that we devote ourselves to contraceptives, then, yes, such irresponsibility, such immaturity is to a large extent a damnation for the soul. Fatherhood and motherhood are a purification that can lead to holiness.

11.3 Marriage: A Testimony

11.3.1 What is your testimony regarding marriage?

Response: Letter of Pierre2 (2005):

> Dear brothers and sisters,
>
> The OFFICIAL engagement of S. and M. gives parents the occasion to bear witness to their and our spiritual commitment, of our unwavering Marriage with God through Christ. In this week of the 13th of May, day of the apparition of the Blessed Virgin in Fatima, we owe this testimony to God and to this Immaculate Mother.
>
> Some of our youngsters have bonded out of love and already live together without getting married... or even officially engaged. This is the mentality of this faithless world. Now, for us who believe in God, this bond is sanctified by a union frankly declared and blessed by God. This blessing is obtained through recognized and blessed marriage (therefore civil and spiritual). The world on the contrary, is content with concubines who live together during rosy times, only to separate when the petals wither after the euphoria and enthusiasm of the early days and first kisses... Love between a man and a woman is a commitment for the better or for the worse. It is not limited to the spring kisses and "intercourse" made under "protection" of contraceptive pills (harmful to women's bodies), condoms, etc... "'For me there are no forbidden things'", Saint Paul says, "Maybe, but not everything does good... I am not going to let anything dominate me... But the body—this is not meant for fornication (illicit intercourse); it is for the Lord..." (1 Corinthians 6,12-14)
>
> "You know, surely, that your bodies are members making up the body of Christ... use your body for the Glory of God" Paul adds (1 Corinthians 6,15-20). I mention these verses considering, of course, that you are Christians! If you disapprove of them, know at least that you are not Christians... or are no longer so.
>
> In this case I have nothing to say to you. Lead your worldly life as you see fit... at your own risk and peril, to the detriment of Spiritual Life!
>
> Parents – if they want to be authentic witnesses to their faith – are required to warn their children living in concubinage... openly or discretely. Parents in solidarity with a concubinage displayed by their children are a counter testimony of their faith in God, and certainly not blessed by Him. They help increase spiritual darkness in this already so darkened world and move away from God. They will have to render count to Him... they too! He is on trial against them!
>
> It would be good for parents to discuss with their children already engaged in love and cohabitation, to talk to them frankly. They have to tell them:
>
> – We cannot endorse an unlawful relationship. If you really love each other, declare this love by an official engagement followed by a marriage blessed by God, as we did.
>
> – You are an example for others, especially for your sisters and brothers. An example to follow or to avoid, depending on the case. You risk shocking, scandalizing, being imitated, spreading this immoral epidemic. If you are believers, manifest your faith by legalizing your love in the eyes of God and society. If you are not, we do not support your morally impure union in the eyes of God and under divine sanction. "Do not model yourselves on the behavior of the world around you, but let your behavior change, modeled by your new mind. This is the only way to discover the will of God and know what is good, what it is that God wants, what is the perfect thing to do." Saint Paul says (Romans 12,2)

– If you are believers, that is what you must do. If you refuse to hear us, we refuse to acknowledge you, to support you and approve of you. You are free! Us too!

I communicate to you this message from the Father.

Pierre2

11.3.2 What do you think of spiritual and civil marriage? Can we separate them?

The marriage blessed and desired by our Father is one. Spiritual marriage and marriage before men is one.

If one marries before our Father (whether in private around the Communion with Jesus, or whether before our spiritual family), we must also marry before men, ie in the town hall. The two things are inseparable and should not be separated in time.

Civil marriage is important as a testimony before men.

Jesus said: “Pay Caesar what belongs to Caesar - and God what belongs to God” (Matthew 22,21).

There are human laws that we must respect.

Pierre2 strongly said to a couple after their spiritual marriage: “Now hurry up with the civil marriage. The testimony before men is important”. He always insisted on the spiritual marriage before God and on the civil marriage, performed at the same time. He advised a couple in Lebanon that was married spiritually to go get a civil marriage in Cyprus, because civil marriage alone dœs not exist in Lebanon.

Do not be a cause of scandal:

And above all, above all, our behavior must be irreproachable, so we are not a cause of scandal or a pretext for deviations.

In this world completely gone mad, where there are no more rules and where everything is permitted, may our conduct within our spiritual family be a clear example that cannot be misinterpreted by others. We think especially of our youngsters.

It is therefore good to abstain from physical relationships as long as you are not married before God and before men.

Otherwise, we become a counter testimony, because the people who see us think that we are for liberal unions.

It is important, that EVERYTHING BE CLEAR AND TRANSPARENT, especially on a subject as important as marriage.

Jesus, our Beloved Brother said:

> "Have you not read that the Creator from the beginning made them male and female and that He said: This is why a man must leave father and mother, and cling to his wife, and the two become one body? They are no longer two, therefore, but one body. So then, what God has united, man must not divide." (Matthew 19,4-6)

Man and woman must therefore leave their parents and found a new home, assuming the responsibilities of commitment, whether spiritual or temporal.

> "You are light of the world. A city built on a hilltop cannot be hidden. No one lights a lamp to put it under a tub; they put it on the lampstand where it shines for everyone in the house. In the same way your light must shine in the sight of men, so that, seeing your good works, they may give the praise to your Father in heaven." (Matthew 5,14-16)

May we always be a lamp that lights and warms hearts by fidelity to the Spirit of Jesus!

In no way, should we open the door to acceptance of “liberal unions”. For if we do not legalize our marriage (spiritual) immediately by civil marriage, then we live in “concubinage” before men.

It is a counter testimony and that destroys our Father’s plan.

Our Father said, a few years ago, regarding two of our youngsters who had a liberal relationship:

“16.05.2005: ’Saboteurs!! The same ones who sabotaged the foundations of my Church’”. (Two youngsters of the family who were living a liberal union)

To meditate: Not to be a cause of scandal (1 Corinthians 8,13).

Paul also said:

“We who are strong have a duty to put up with the qualms of the weak without thinking of ourselves. Each of us should think of his neighbors and help them to become stronger Christians. Christ did not think of himself...” (Romans 15,1-3)

By practicing continence before official marriage -thus spiritual and civil- we follow God’s Plan and we bear witness to love as our Father desires.

A brother from Lebanon, inspired by our Father said: “The one who marries before God and not before men (civil marriage), deceives God, because he dœs not bear testimony before men to what he did before God”. He was prompted by the Holy Spirit to say that. Indeed, he not only deceives God, but deceives men too, because he hides from them that he is married. Now, marriage is not a private affair. Marriage is an integration into society with responsibilities. We cannot make it a private matter before God alone.

Civil marriage and family are the foundations of our society. It is why the Zionists work hard to abolish marriage. Be careful not to go in their direction. It is they who have launched the very popular slogans among the youth like: “Marriage is just a document”. This argument has no base. So, it’s just paper. The most important contracts are made on paper. Moreover, this paper is signed in the town hall and in the presence of witnesses. It is a “document” that enacts laws, among other things, for the protection of our children. And laws are made to avoid chaos and abuse in society.

European and American societies are far too permissive. Liberal relationships have become commonplace and subconsciously do not even react to it.

Jesus said to Pierre2: “Say to Israel: Stop. It is the Europeanism...” (15/05/1983).

With Pierre2, we have meditated on this and said that the European mentality is rotten. It is overrun by the Zionist-Masonic plan which seeks and causes the dismantlement of society through the destruction of families.

Do not model yourself according to the world:

> "I beg you, in a way that is worthy of thinking beings, by offering your living bodies as a holy sacrifice, truly pleasing to God. Do not model yourselves on the behavior of the world around you, but let your behavior change, modeled by your new mind. This is the only way to discover the will of God and know what is good, what it is that God wants, what is the perfect thing to do." (Romans 12,1-2)

“The will of God and know what is good, what it is that God wants, what is the perfect thing to do” (Romans 12,2) is then logically, to refrain from intimate relationships until official Marriage before all.

This is clearly expressed by Jesus in his words on marriage:

> "'Now I say this to you: the man who divorces his wife—I am not speaking of fornication—and marries another, is guilty of adultery.' The disciples said to him, 'If that is how things are between husband and wife, it is advisable not to marry.' But he replied, 'It is not everyone who can accept what I have said, but only those to whom it is granted... there are eunuchs who have made themselves that way for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven. Let anyone accept this who can.'" (Matthew 19,9-12).

These words of Jesus concern marriage, for it was truly this subject that Jesus was speaking of. They mean that God's chosen abstain from physical relationships -make themselves eunuchs- before marriage, and then live marriage in love and faithfulness to the spouse, without looking left and right. Happy are those who understand this language!

Paul also says:

> "There is something want to add for the sake of widows and those who are not married... but if they cannot control the sexual urges, they should get married, since it is better to be married than to be tortured." (1 Corinthians 7,8-9)

In God's perspective, physical relationships are thus not possible except in the context of a marriage blessed by God and recognized by men.

God also emphasizes this clearly in the Qur'an:

> "Let those who find not the means to marry have recourse to chastity until God enriches them from His bounty." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,33)

The most beautiful preparation for marriage and the most beautiful testimony of a living faith for two fiancées is therefore to grow together spiritually and to discover each other at the level of the spirit and the soul until the blessed day of the union recognized before God and everyone.

In this way, we sanctify the Name of God and live these beautiful prayers of Paul, who addresses them to us:

> "May the God of peace make you perfect and holy: and may you all be kept safe and blameless, spirit, soul and body, for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ." (1 Thessalonians 5,23)
>
> "I pray that the God of peace, who brought our Lord Jesus back from the dead, to become the great Shepherd of the sheep by the blood that sealed an eternal covenant, may make you ready to do his will in any kind of good action; and turn us all into whatever is acceptable to himself through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever, Amen." (Hebrews 13,20-21)

11.3.3 Can civil divorce be considered for financial reasons?

> Lately some couples divorce civilly for financial reasons. In Switzerland for example, there are laws that make married couples, when each one works, pay more taxes than those living together and who are not married. Is that a reason for a civil divorce?

Certainly not.

We are part of a society before which we must be irreproachable. We must not bypass the laws for personal interests. Our testimony on marriage is very important for future generations. We bear a huge responsibility. If we accept an exception to the guidelines formulated at the beginning of this FAQ, we open the door to many other exceptions, as many would have reasons

to “divorce” for financial reasons, or not to marrying “for financial reasons”. If everyone starts to act according to their interests, we expose ourselves to all kinds of deviations.

Recently, we were reflecting on ourselves in addressing our Father: "But we are not anarchists (to bypass civil marriage and leave it as a free choice to each person)!" Our Father has given us the answer in inspiring us to read Romans 13. The answer was a striking one. Here is what Paul says:

"You must all obey the governing authorities. Since all government comes from God, the civil authorities were appointed by God, and so anyone who resists authority is rebelling against God's decision... The authorities are there to serve God... You must obey, therefore, not only because you are afraid of being punished, but also for conscience' sake. This is also the reason why you must pay taxes... Pay every government official what he has a right to ask–whether it be direct tax or indirect, fear or honor." (Romans 13,1-7; meditate also 1 Timothy 2,1-2 / Titus 3,1 / 1 Peter 2,13-15 / Matthew 17,24-27).

Apparently, the first Apostles were confronted with the same question as us.

When we get married, we do so for the life before God and before men. And "what God has united, man must not divide" (Matthew 19,4-6), not even in civil marriage, because the testimony before men is important.

Muslims practice apart from legal marriage, the "marriage of pleasure", ie a man and a woman recite a formula "before God" and then they sleep together and can separate at any moment. If two of us get married only before God, it opens the door to this kind of deviation. We think about the future generations.

Thinking of marriage, each time, a thought imposes itself on us: "You must therefore be perfect just as your heavenly Father is perfect." (Matthew 5,48)

Jesus said: "Why not judge for yourselves what is right?" (Luke 12,57). Now, let each person judge for oneself what is right and act accordingly!

Finally, Paul recommends us this line of conduct:

> "Do all you can to preserve the unity of the Spirit by the peace that binds you together... And to some, his gift was that they should be apostles; to some, prophets; to some, evangelists; to some, pastors and teachers; so that the saints together make a unity in the work of service, building up the body of Christ. In this way we are all to come to unity in our faith and in our knowledge of the Son of God, until we become the perfect Man, fully mature with the fullness of Christ himself. Then we shall not be children any longer, or tossed one way and another and carried along by every wind of doctrine, at the mercy of all the tricks men play and their cleverness in practicing deceit. If we live by the truth and in love, we shall grow in all ways into Christ, who is the head..." (Ephesians 4,3-15)

24.06.2016 (Feast of Doris)

11.4 Is "The Passion of Christ" antisemitic?

> Do you think that Mel Gibson's film "The Passion of Christ" is anti-semitic?

Regarding the film “The Passion of Christ”, a sound reflection is essential. The fundamental question is not, I repeat IS NOT whether this film is or is not antisemitic, but if Jesus of Nazareth is **or is not** the Messiah predicted by the biblical prophecies.

A proper understanding of Isaiah's prophecies, among others, lead to one conclusion: Jesus (Yehoshua) is without a doubt, the Messiah announced by the Lord Creator.

We have all crucified the "Son of Man". The forgiveness of this tragic sin is to believe that He, Jesus, is the one and only Messiah, through whom we can all obtain eternal salvation by believing in Him. Isaiah's prophecies lead to no other conclusion. Mel Gibson's film comes at the opportune moment to remind us of the prophetical words of this great prophet:

> "As the crowds were appalled on seeing him—so disfigured did he look that he seemed no longer human... He was despised... a man of sorrows and familiar with suffering... Yet he was pierced through for our faults... On him lies a punishment that brings us peace, and through his wounds we are healed. We had ALL GONE ASTRAY... and the Lord burdened him with the sins of all of us..." (Isaiah 52,14 to 53,12)

How can we thus accuse a category of people since "we had **all** gone astray"?

The only conclusion after watching Mel Gibson's film is far from antisemitic. It is clearly and simply for the universal messianism of Jesus of Nazareth... and anti- my own sins that crucified Him. The sound spiritual reaction should be in kneeling and imploring for forgiveness from the Merciful Lord.

Our concern is not if we are pro- or anti- Semitic but rather if we are pro- or anti- messianic identity of Jesus, in other words pro- or anti-Christ, as St John revealed, a Semite: "The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ–he is the liar, he is the Antichrist" (1 John 2,22).

No antisemite would want to follow Jesus, a Semite, or even think of reading his Gospels and the whole New Testament written by Semites.

So let us stop thinking in narrow and morbid terms of pro- or anti- Semitism. Only a guilty conscience has recourse to a vile and futile escape from the severe judgment of God through his Holy Semitic Messiah.

11.5 Question on divorce

> Good day,
>
> I was lucky to come across your website and was fascinated by its content. And I would really like to know your opinion on divorce and what the Holy Texts say about it.
>
> Sincerely,
>
> K.

Dear K.,

We are glad to know you have appreciated our website.

To understand God's Intention in marriage, we advise you to read our text "A Look of faith at the Qur'an" (see some extracts under PS at the end of this mail).

The divorce was not permitted by Mohammed except in grave and serious cases, and that by pedagogy, for a certain time in history, because of the Arabs' mentality at that time who were habitual to easy divorce. This was the case with Moses too.

But God's Intention is unchanging. It is reported by Jesus in the Gospel:

> "'Have you not read that the Creator from the beginning made them male and female and that He said: This is why a man must leave father and mother, and cling to his wife, and the two become one body? They are no longer two, therefore, but one body. So then, what God has united, man must not divide.' They said to Him, 'Then why did

> Moses command that a writ of dismissal should be given in cases of divorce?' He said, 'It was because you were so unteachable that Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but it was not like this from the beginning.'" (Matthew 19,3-8)

And on another occasion, Jesus said in the same way:

> "And He said to them, 'The man who divorces his wife and marries another is guilty of adultery against her. And if a woman divorces her husband and marries another she is guilty of adultery too.'" (Mark 10,11-12).
>
> "But I say this to you, everyone who divorces his wife, except for the case of fornication, makes her an adulteress; and anyone who marries a divorced woman commits adultery." (Matthew 5,32)

Paul in his letters testifies similarly on the unchanging character of marriage in the Intention of God:

> "For the married I have something to say, and this is from me but from the Lord: a wife must not leave her husband—or if she does leave him, she must either remain unmarried or else make it up with her husband—nor must a husband send his wife away." (1 Corinthians 7,10-11)

If God has prescribed us marriage "for the better, or for the worse", it means that He will give us the strength to overcome all the difficulties and the trials of marriage. At the interior of marriage, one needs to know to forgive. Jesus said to forgive not 7 times, but 77 times (Matthew 18,22). And no one amongst us is perfect.

But with grace and prayer, any difficulty, even of insurmountable appearance, can be overcome.

Love, nourished by prayer and sacrifice, gives us the strength to reinforce the marriage each day further for God's Glory and the internal peace of our children.

In fact, it is inconceivable that true believers divorce (when both are true believers), because marriage is the path to sanctification through the overcoming self. Such is the Intention of God.

It is why Mohammed says in a Hadith considered authentic:

> "Iblis establishes his throne on water and sends his legions. The demon of closest proximity to him is the one who succeeded in creating the greatest trouble (*fitna*). One of these demons comes to him and says: 'I did so and so'. But he replies: 'You have done nothing'. Then one among them comes to him and says: 'I did not spare so and so until I succeeded in provoking the separation between him and his wife.' Iblis goes near this demon and tells him: 'What a good son you are!'" (reported by Muslim, n°2813, and others)

In other words, the divorce is the fruit of the work of Satan.

We must in prayer, resist the demon of divorce and seek with the spouse the path of openness, dialogue, forgiveness and love.

May God give you the strength to walk in this Way.

Website Pierre 2

PS: Extracts from "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an", paragraph 3.3.2, marriage (on our website):

In observing modern Arab society, we remark the success of God's pedagogic plan in the practice of monogamy. The Arabs, the grand majority, today have but one wife, and polygamy

is rather discredited. Likewise, divorce is scorned by the majority of Arab families; generally, it is considered as the last recourse in very serious cases. Great is the difference between the Islamic society of today, and the pre-Islamic society after the passage of the vivifying breath of the Qur'an.

The Gospel too, adopts the same pedagogical attitude with marriage and divorce: the Pharisees, who freely practiced divorce, questioned the Messiah on this subject to embarrass Him:

> "'Is it against the Law for a man to divorce his wife on any pretext whatever?' He answered, 'Have you not read that the Creator from the beginning made them male and female and that he said: This is why a man must leave father and mother, and cling to his wife, and the two become one body? They are no longer two, therefore, but one body. So then, what God has united, man must not divide'. They said to him, 'Then why did Moses command that a writ of dismissal should be given in cases of divorce?' He said to them, 'It was because you were so hard-hearted, that Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but it was not like this from the beginning...'" (Matthew 19,3-8)

It should be stressed that this attitude shocked the Apostles themselves in hearing the words of the Master and asking him:

> "'If that is how things are between husband and wife, it is not advisable to marry'. But he replied, 'It is not everyone who can accept what I have said, but only those to whom it is granted. There are eunuchs born that way from their mother's womb, there are eunuchs made so by men and there are eunuchs who have made themselves that way for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven. Let anyone accept this who can!'" (Matthew 19,10-12)

Two important facts are to be considered from this story: the first, it is Moses who permitted to give a letter of divorce, not God. Moses authorized this as a pedagogical step, a temporary concession, because of the psychological immaturity of men at that time. A concession that had to be overcome later, to return to the original state wanted by God, as Jesus had explained. But the Jews, attached to human tendencies, attached themselves to the letter of the Law, refusing to elevate themselves to the divine intention.

The second point to retain is that the Messiah, in his discourse on marriage and divorce, went further, praising the chastity of those who "have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven". This expression dœs not implicate a surgical operation, nor perpetual celibacy, but a faithful marriage filled with profound and spiritual feelings. It is no longer a question of satisfying purely sexual instincts, but of mastering them, until the meeting of the companion chosen by God. They are thus made *spiritually* "eunuchs", that is to say chaste and **faithful** in the **unique** marriage all their lives.

The Qur'an also speaks of chastity saying:

> "And let those who find not the means to marry have recourse to chastity until God shall enriches them from His bounty (*by sending a spouse*)." (Qur'an XXIV; Light,33)

The Arabs of the times of anarchy despised continence and chastity before marriage. This virtue was ignored, even despised, to the point that those who practiced it were accused of a lack of virility. It is the case, still today, in so-called Christian countries.

The Qur'anic teachings have produced their good fruits in the hearts of many Arabs. The Qur'an is the instigator of the evolution of the Islamic society, even though some of its teachings remained fruitless with many Muslims who have closed themselves to the Qur'anic spirit.

Likewise, the Gospel did not bear its fruits in the hearts of many Christians who scorn the chastity and holiness of marriage.

Extracts from "Reactions to the Book 'A Look of Faith at the Qur'an'":

2nd response to Sheikh KR

"... You were also angry at me because I said that divorce, which was anarchic at the time of Arab ignorance, is scorned in the Arab world today, after the passage of the Qur'an's vivifying breath. What is there in these remarks which make you so angry? I remind you of the words of the noble prophet Muhammad in his Discussions: "For God, divorce is the most odious of the permitted things (*of the "permissible" things*)". I do not have to comment on these prophetic words, as there is a wisdom for those who are capable of understanding."

11.6 The forgiveness of sins

> Since a while now, you have sent me a response to my question concerning the confession of sins. Here is an extract of your email:
>
> "*With the Apocalypse, Jesus consecrates as priests all those who believe in the open Book, He forgives their sins and the second death has no power over them (Revelation 1,6 / 20,6).*
>
> *Additionally, "No one who has been begotten by God sins... he cannot sin when he has been begotten by God", Saint John says (1 John 3,9).*
>
> *So, where there is no sin, there is no need for confession. All is changed and renewed in the "New Heaven and new Earth" (Revelation 21,1), in which there is no longer temple or church or synagogue for believers, being themselves the Temple and the Place of encounter with the Father (1 Corinthians 3,16-17 / Revelation 21,22)*".
>
> However, I have noted that in the Bible it is written that if we say we have no sin in us... the truth is not in us (1 John 1,8+).

To understand what John says in his first Letter regarding sin, we must distinguish between:

The "little" daily sins, the imperfections, we all commit and from which Jesus washes us in His Blood each day through Jesus' Supper.

More serious sins are those through which we hurt for example a brother. For this kind of sin, as well, Jesus washes us in His Blood each day, when we ask Him forgiveness from the bottom of our hearts. At the same time, it is good in these cases to ask forgiveness directly from the brother who we have hurt. It is this, the meaning of Jesus' words: "So then, if you are bringing your offering to the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your offering there before the altar, go and be reconciled with your brother first, and then come back and present your offering. Come to terms with your opponent in good time while you are still on the way to the court with him, or he may hand you over to the judge and the judge to the officer, and you will be thrown into prison. I tell you solemnly, you will not get out till you have paid the last penny." (Matthew 5,23-26) And also: "Watch yourselves! If your brother dœs something wrong, reprove him and, if he is sorry, forgive him. And if he wrongs you seven times a day and seven times comes back to you and says, 'I am sorry,' you must forgive him." (Luke 17,3-4) True repentance, from the bottom of the heart, is the condition to obtain forgiveness.

Finally, there is the sin against the Holy Spirit, which is a voluntary sin, informed, for which there is no forgiveness (Matthew 12,31-32) and for which John says that one must not pray for (1 John 5,16).

We thus need to distinguish in Spirit of which kind of sin John speaks. By writing: "If we say we have no sin in us, we are deceiving ourselves and refusing to admit the truth" (1 John 1,8), John speaks of the sins of categories 1) and 2). We all commit errors.

When he says: "No one who has been begotten by God sins..." (1 John 3,9), John speaks of the sin against the Holy Spirit. The one who is begotten by God, cannot commit such a sin.

In the understanding of the Holy Scriptures, it is very important to raise oneself to the Spirit and not to be attached to the letter, because as Paul says: "The written letters bring death, but the Spirit gives life." (2 Corinthians 3,4-6)

It is the sins of categories 1) and 2) that Jesus washes us from everyday by His Blood. In fact, continuing with the reading of 1 John 1,8, it is clear that Jesus "purifies us of all iniquity", because "He loves us and has washed away our sins with his blood" (Revelation 1,5).

In the end Times (our times), this is produced through the daily communion with Jesus' Body and Blood, taken in the intimacy of the homes, as expressively desired by Jesus (Revelation 3,20). Therefore, it is no longer necessary to go to confess to a priest. This is part of the "New Heaven and New Earth" (Revelation 21,1). Anyway, in this new Heavenly Jerusalem, each man and each woman who believes in the Apocalyptic Message revealed on May 13 1970, becomes priest (Revelation 1,6).

Such is our Father's marvelous Plan in the Universal Restoration prophesied by Peter (Acts 3,19-21).

Deepening Read the Biblical Course, Lesson 12, paragraph VII.

11.7 Can I still be saved?

> A couple of years back I used to go on pornographic sites. My spirit tells me that I am probably not going to see the face of God. So as penance, I will go as far as possible, get away from sunlight, live as much as possible in darkness.

After having prayed and asked for the Advice of our Father, we give you the following answer:

The fact that you write us is already a confession. So, now ask forgiveness from God from the bottom of your heart.

After that, do not look at the past anymore. Pierre received the following Message on 04.01.2009:

"Never look back: what we were... etc... but to what we are and will be: sons and daughters of God, victorious, victorious for His Holy Grace!"

It is Satan who tells you to live in darkness. Jesus invites you to live in the Light.

The devil wants to discourage you by enchaining you by our past. Do not listen to him. Recognize him in his negative thoughts and chase him off by the Immaculate Conception and some little invocations often repeated like: "Dear Mother, help me to be free from all that". "Mom, I confide to you these thoughts, drive them out". "I order you Satan to back off in the Name of the Immaculate Conception".

Be strong G. Our Father wants us strong.

Remember, that if you believe in the Apocalyptic Message revealed to Pierre in 1970, then you are an apocalyptic priest. So, take Jesus everyday in the Bread of Life at home, with love, in intimacy as is explained on the website. Because He gives Himself to us for the "Remission of sins":

"Now as they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and when he had said the blessing he broke it and gave it to the disciples. 'Take it and eat'; he said, 'this is my body.' Then he took a

cup, and when he had returned thanks he gave it to them. 'Drink all of you from this,' he said, 'for this is my blood, the blood of the covenant, which is to be poured out for many for the remission of sins.'" (Matthew 26,26-28)

It is in the daily Bread of Life that Jesus washes us profoundly of our faults and sins.

And more so, dear G, after that, live in the Light. Live in His Light.

It is for this that you are called.

Our sins are nothing, when we throw them with love and repentance in Jesus' Blood which was shed profusely on the Cross for us.

G, we love you. Courage

Website Pierre2

PS: Here additionally, are some Heavenly Messages to Pierre to be meditated:

03.01.1995: "Everyone is to repent, and to ask for forgiveness. Then, live the repentance, to live in forgiveness. Live in vigilance so not to fall again."

01.01.2006: "Love covers a multitude of sins."

07.07.1990: Jesus talks to us about the Bread of Life: I had told your brothers, the first apostles, that I give Myself to them through my Body and my Blood for the remission of sins. The One who remits the sins, it is I. I remit your sins because you come to Me who is in the Bread of Life.

I had also made the commandment of perfection: "Be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect", all knowing that you, all alone, you cannot perfect yourselves. It is why I had said: "Without Me you can do nothing". And it is still the reason for which I give Myself to you in the Bread of Life, so that with Me, you can perfect yourselves and, in elevating you, you elevate man.

Padre Pio said:

"My past, O Lord, to Your Mercy, my present to Your Love, my future to Your Providence".

Psalm 38 (37) (re-baptized by Pierre2)

"Lord, Our good Father,

You did not punish me in your rage.

Your paternal compassion took me out of my sin.

My offenses rose over my head,

I was overwhelmed, slain to death by my sins;

I was helpless, crushed, sad and demoralized.

I did not know, tender Father, that all my mourning was before You,

that none of my thoughts were hidden from you.

So my heart is throbbing, my strength deserting me,

I suffered from my sins.

But you, beloved Father, revealed Yourself to me.

You sent me your Messiah, I heard his Voice,

I recognized my faults, I repented.

So your grace has supported me to never do it again.

I drank the vivifying words from Jesus,
I was like the Samaritan at the edge of this Well of Life.
Thanks to him I came back to life, and joy sprang up in my overwhelmed heart.
Then you revealed to me Mary, She flooded me with her light,
She supports me in the noble fight for the glory of your Name.
I wanted to share these divine lights with my parents, my friends and my companions.
But they all turned against me and kept their distance.
They lay snares for me, in wanting my life and hatching plots against me.
And I did not open my mouth.
I said to you 'It is in you Lord Jesus, it is in you that I hope.
Lord Jesus, my God, you will answer!'
Those who hurt me for no reason had multiplied.
They still seek to persecute me for seeking good,
They want to shoot me down for telling the truth,
they render me harm for the good that I have done to them,
they persecute me for accomplishing your Will.
You, Our Father, You will not abandon me,
You are there very close to me, you are in me.
Hurry to rescue me, Father, come quickly to our help
Come quickly to my help, O You our Savior."

Copyright © 2026 - Pierre2.net - All rights reserved.

Contents

I Independent believers **3**

1 Introduction **5**

2 To our Brothers **7**
1. To the Jews our Brothers . . . 7
2. To the Christians our Brothers . . . 8
3. To the Muslims our Brothers . . . 9

3 Our Faith **11**

4 Our Mission **13**

5 The "Road to Damascus" **19**
1. Chart of Independence . . . 19

6 The Tragedy of Jesus **23**
1. Zionism against Judaism . . . 24
2. History of the politicization of Judaism . . . 24
3. John the Baptist . . . 25
4. Jesus . . . 25
5. Judas . . . 29
6. The Apostles after the Cross . . . 29
7. The Jews of today . . . 30

7 Christians and Israel **31**
1. The historical legitimacy . . . 33
2. The Biblical legitimacy . . . 34
   - 2.1 The Promised Land . . . 34
   - 2.2 The Chosen People . . . 36
   - 2.3 What to conclude then? . . . 38
3. Israel, sign of the times . . . 38
4. The attitude of every true Christian . . . 39

II The Messiah 41

1 The Messiah Announced 43
1. Prophecies on the place of birth and occupation of the Messiah . . . 43
2. Prophecies of the moment of the Messiah's apparition . . . 44
3. Prophecies on the Messiah's precursor . . . 44
4. Prophecies concerning certain characteristics of the Messiah . . . 44
5. Prophecies on the Messiah Prophet, King and Priest . . . 45
6. Prophecies on the Messiah, Son of David, Son of God. The Messiah's Divinity . 46
7. Prophecies on the Messiah, Savior of all Nations: Universality of the Messiah . . 47
8. Prophecies on the suffering Messiah . . . 48
9. Prophecies on the Messiah's Resurrection . . . 50
10. Conclusion . . . 51

2 The Messianic Prophecies 53
1. Dialogue between a Priest and a Rabbi . . . 53
2. The Messianic prophecies . . . 54
3. The Messiah as Prophet . . . 55
4. The Messiah as King and Priest . . . 55

III The Antichrist and the Return of Christ 59

1 The Antichrist Yesterday and Today 61
1. The Antichrist of yesterday . . . 61
2. The Antichrist today . . . 62

2 The Antichrist and the Return of Christ 63
1. A Message to Mankind . . . 63
2. The Return of Christ and the Antichrist . . . 63
3. The announcement of the Antichrist . . . 64
4. The Antichrist, sign of the Return of Christ . . . 66
5. Return of the Messiah . . . 67
6. The role of the Apostles of the end of times . . . 68

3 The Antichrist in Islam 71

4 The Signs of the Return of Jesus 77
1. Introduction . . . 77
2. Apparition of the Antichrist: Israel . . . 78
3. Apparition of false prophets . . . 78
4. Wars, nations against nations . . . 79
5. Famines . . . 79
6. Earthquakes . . . 79
7. Treasons . . . 79
8. Universal propagation of the Gospel . . . 79
9. Signs in the sky . . . 79
   9.1 Mary's apparitions . . . 80

9.2 The announced coming of the Messenger of Revelation . . . 80
9.3 The opening of the Book of Revelation . . . 80
10. The Greatest distress of all Time . . . 80
11. Spiritual darkness . . . 80
12. Jerusalem . . . 81
13. The Light returns from the East . . . 81
14. The Apocalyptic Messenger . . . 81
15. The Apostles of Christ's Return . . . 82
16. Commentary . . . 82
17. Conclusion . . . 83

5 The Return of Jesus 85
1. The Announcement of the Return of Jesus . . . 85
2. How will the Return of Jesus occur? . . . 86
2.1 "Away from sin" . . . 87
2.2 "To those who are waiting for Him" . . . 87
2.3 "To bring them Salvation" . . . 88
3. The motivations for Jesus' Return . . . 89
3.1 To unmask the Antichrist, the Beast of the Apocalypse . . . 89
3.2 The Universal Restoration . . . 89
4. The date of the Return of Jesus . . . 90

IV The Apocalypse 93

1 The Key of the Apocalypse (Revelation) 95
1. Introduction . . . 96
2. The Key-Enigma . . . 97
3. How Jesus revealed the Enigma . . . 99
4. Presentation of the Book . . . 106
4.1 The first part . . . 106
4.2 The second part . . . 106
5. Summary of the Story . . . 111
5.1 The protagonists allied to the Antichrist . . . 111
5.2 The protagonists allied to the Christ . . . 116
6. The Reasons for Hermeticism: The sealed Prophecy is explained at its Time . . . 119
6.1 The Entanglement . . . 120
6.2 Varied Repetition . . . 120
6.3 The varied form of symbols . . . 121
7. Explanation of Numbers and Symbols . . . 122
7.1 The number "666" . . . 122
7.2 The "42" months . . . 123
7.3 The "horns" . . . 124
7.4 The "4 horses" and their riders . . . 124
7.5 The Apocalyptic weapons . . . 124
7.6 The characteristics of the Beast . . . 126
8. After the Fall . . . 128

8.1 The Restoration: a new Heaven and Earth . . . 128
8.2 The Kingdom of God on earth . . . 128

2 The Explanation of Mary's Message in La Salette 131

3 Mary's Message of Fatima 137
1. Sister Lucy speaks of the Message in 1958 . . . 138
2. Apparition of July 13, 1917 . . . 139
3. Distressing Warnings . . . 139
4. Article from the "Neues Europa" Journal . . . 140
5. Text of Radio Vatican . . . 141
6. Article of "Vox Fidei" . . . 142
7. Excerpts of the Book in French: 'Frère Michel de la Sainte Trinité' . . . 142
8. Commentary . . . 144

4 Mary's Apparitions in Marienfried 145
1. First Vision: April 25, 1946 . . . 145
2. Second Vision: May 25, 1946 . . . 145
3. Third Vision: June 25, 1946 . . . 146
4. Prayer to "Mater Admirabilis" . . . 147

5 The Key of the prophecies 149
1. The Revelation explains all the Biblical prophecies . . . 150
2. The Prophecies that concern the "End of Times" . . . 150
3. The Divine Purpose . . . 151
4. Gog and Magog are assembled in Palestine, from the four quarters of the earth for war . . . 151
5. A clarifying addition . . . 151

6 Open letter to Pope John-Paul II 153

V The Universal Restoration 155

1 The Universal Trial 157

2 The Universal Restoration 159
1. The purpose of the Return of Christ . . . 160

3 Worship and place of worship 165

4 The true Baptism 169

VI The new priesthood 173

1 Jesus restores the Priesthood 175

2 Bread of Life and new Priesthood 179

3 The Golden Censer **187**

VII Unity of the Bible and the Qur'an 193

1 A Look of Faith at the Qur'an **195**
1. Introduction . . . 196
2. The Qur'an is an Arabic text of the Bible . . . 201
3. The Principles of the Study . . . 206
   - 3.1 The reference to the Qur'anic text . . . 206
   - 3.2 The search for the spiritual sense of the text . . . 207
   - 3.3 The divine pedagogy in the Inspiration . . . 212
   - 3.4 The Unity of the Inspiration . . . 216
   - 3.5 Commentary . . . 219
4. The litigation points . . . 220
   - 4.1 The Divine Trinity, the three Aspects of the One and Only God . . . 221
   - 4.2 The Messiah and his Title of Son of God . . . 224
   - 4.3 The Divinity of the Messiah . . . 227
   - 4.4 The crucifixion of the Messiah . . . 232
   - 4.5 The falsification of the Bible . . . 237
   - 4.6 The life of the Prophet Muhammad . . . 244
5. The principal points of Agreement between the Qur'an and the Gospels . . . 252
   - 5.1 The Messiah . . . 252
   - 5.2 The Virgin Mary . . . 255
   - 5.3 The Heavenly Table . . . 256
   - 5.4 The Spirit . . . 258
6. Invitation to reflection . . . 259
   - 6.1 The letter to Heraclius . . . 259
   - 6.2 The refuge of the Muslims in Ethiopia . . . 260
   - 6.3 Conclusion . . . 261

2 Reactions to the Book "A Look of Faith at the Qur'an" **263**
1. First Reaction: Article of the Sheikh Z Y . . . 263
2. Second reaction: Response to the articles of Sheikh KR . . . 265
3. Sheikh KR's response . . . 272
4. Second response to Sheikh KR . . . 274

3 The Apocalypse according to Muhammad **281**
1. The Book of Revelation . . . 281
   - 1.1 The Book of the Pure . . . 281
   - 1.2 The Book laid open . . . 282
   - 1.3 The unrolled parchment . . . 282
2. The door opened to Heaven . . . 283
3. The Beast and Gog and Magog . . . 284
   - 3.1 The Beast . . . 284
   - 3.2 Gog and Magog and the Two-Horned One (Dhu'l Qarnayn) . . . 285
   - 3.3 The wild beasts . . . 286

3.4 The Seducer . . . 286
4. The Hour, Judgment Day . . . 287
4.1 Caught unawares . . . 287
4.2 A World War . . . 287
5. The Return of Jesus . . . 290
5.1 The Throne of your Lord . . . 290
5.2 Jesus knows the Hour . . . 291
5.3 Jesus returns to Damascus with the two witnesses . . . 292
6. The Angel of the Apocalypse, or "the greatest witness" . . . 293
6.1 Preparation for the Encounter . . . 293
6.2 To Designate the Antichrist . . . 294
7. The Apostles of the End of Times . . . 294
7.1 The Return of Jesus with his Angels . . . 294
7.2 The men who will emerge in groups . . . 295
7.3 Those who are sent forth . . . 296
7.4 Those who escape death . . . 296
7.5 The companions of Jesus . . . 297
8. The new Heaven and the new Earth, the Universal Restoration . . . 297
8.1 The new Heaven and the new Earth . . . 297
8.2 The Restoration: to free oneself . . . 298
8.3 The Restoration: Intimacy with God . . . 299
8.4 The Restoration: Only one community . . . 300
8.5 The Great Day of Reconciliation . . . 302
8.6 The Restoration: The Bread of Life in the Family . . . 303
9. Conclusion . . . 304

4 The action of the Holy Spirit according to the Bible and the Qur'an 307
1. The Holy Spirit in the Books of the Old Testament . . . 307
2. The Holy Spirit in the Books of the New Testament . . . 307
2.1 Characteristics of the Holy Spirit . . . 307
2.2 The action of the Holy Spirit . . . 308
2.3 Our relationship with the Holy Spirit . . . 309
3. The Holy Spirit in the Qur'an . . . 309
3.1 Jesus is a Spirit eminent from God. He was fortified by the Holy Spirit . 310
3.2 The Spirit was breathed into Mary. Testimony of her virginity. The miracle of Jesus and Mary . . . 310
3.3 God breathed his Spirit into man, at the time of the creation . . . 310
3.4 God breathed his Spirit into man and makes of him a prophet . . . 311
3.5 God inspires the Qur'an through his Spirit . . . 311
4. The Holy Spirit in the Book of Revelation . . . 312
4.1 The Heavenly Jerusalem and the Spirit . . . 312
4.2 Those who have the Spirit listen . . . 313
4.3 The Spirit and the Bride call Jesus . . . 314

5 Qur'anic verses about the Messiah Jesus 315

6 Christ God in the Gospel and the Qur'an 317

1. Historical Context . . . 317
2. To Compare with the Gospel text . . . 317

VIII Biblical themes 321

1 The Mystery of Piety 323

2 The Mystery of Impiety 325

3 Faith versus the Law 329
1. Consecration of the Priests . . . 329
2. Daily holocaust . . . 330
3. Sacrifice for the forgiveness of sins . . . 330
4. Unclean animals . . . 330
5. Circumcision . . . 331
6. Sabbatical rest . . . 331
7. Stoning of an adulterous woman . . . 332
8. Not to eat blood . . . 332
9. Unclean pregnancy . . . 332
10. Sexual Uncleanliness . . . 332
11. Conclusion . . . 333

4 Forgiveness of sins 335

5 The Shepherd, His Sheep and the Gate 337

6 The Intercession of the Saints in the Bible 339

7 The Survival after Death 343
1. Survival of the soul . . . 343
2. Resurrection of the bodies . . . 343

8 The Afterlife 345
1. Heaven . . . 345
2. Hell . . . 346
3. Purgatory . . . 347

9 Isaiah 7-8-9 349

10 Two wonderful Twin Discoveries 353

IX God our Father 357

1 The True Name of God 359

2 God is Father 365

3 The Divine Trinity 369

1. The Father is God . . . 369
2. The Son is God . . . 370
3. The Holy Spirit is God . . . 370
4. Manifestation of the Holy Trinity in the Gospels . . . 371
5. Reflection . . . 371

X Jesus 373

1 The Divinity of Jesus 375
1. Answer to the first point . . . 375
2. Answer to the other points . . . 376
3. The Messiah's Divinity in the Old Testament . . . 376

2 The brothers of Jesus 377

XI Deepenings 381

1 The Bread of Life in the Bible and the Qur'an 383
1. In the Old Testament . . . 383
   1.1 Melchizedek . . . 383
   1.2 Jacob's blessing through Isaac . . . 383
   1.3 Judah's blessing through Jacob . . . 383
   1.4 The Manna . . . 384
   1.5 The Cup and the spiced Wine . . . 385
   1.6 The Bread and the Wheat . . . 385
   1.7 The Restoration through the abundance of Bread and Wine . . . 386
   1.8 The Table prepared by God . . . 387
2. In the New Testament . . . 387
3. In the Book of Revelation . . . 388
4. In the Qur'an . . . 389
   4.1 The Table that comes down from Heaven . . . 389
   4.2 The sealed Wine . . . 390
   4.3 The delicious wine, the cups that circulate, the cups filled with delectable liquor . . . 390

2 Mary in the Qur'an 395
1. The Immaculate Conception . . . 395
2. Mary's virginity . . . 396
3. Mary's childhood . . . 397
4. Conclusion . . . 399

3 Mary in the Bible 401
1. In the Old Testament . . . 401
2. In the New Testament . . . 404

4 Love and Justice 407

1. Old Testament . . . 408
2. Spiritual dimension . . . 409
3. Human dimension . . . 410
3.1 We should always act in justice . . . 411
3.2 Denounce any kind of injustice . . . 413
4. Justice requires firmness . . . 414
5. Messages received by Pierre 2 . . . 416

5 The Day of Yahweh 419
1. Old Testament . . . 419
1.1 The Punishment . . . 419
1.2 The Consolation . . . 425
1.3 God will be exalted . . . 428
2. New Testament . . . 429

6 The Regaining of Paradise according to the Bible and the Qur'an 435
1. The first report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an . . . 435
2. Second report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an . . . 437
3. Third report of Adam's sin in the Qur'an . . . 440

7 The eschatological mystification in prophecy 445
1. General perspective . . . 445
2. The Bible condemns the Statehood of Judaism . . . 448
3. The prophets have announced Israel reappearance . . . 449
3.1 The Mystification . . . 450
3.2 Israel is Announced as the Unexpected Trial . . . 453
3.3 Israel is Announced as the Universal Trial . . . 454
4. The fruits of the Zionist mystification . . . 455
5. The Prophetic Dimension of The Arab-Israeli Conflict . . . 458
5.1 The Jewish biblical scholars . . . 460
5.2 The prophet Muhammad . . . 460
6. Conclusion: Syria salvation role . . . 462

XII Miscellaneous 467

1 The Palestinian Calvary 469
1. INTRODUCTION . . . 469
2. FIRST PERIOD: Palestine and the Palestinians . . . 469
2.1 The Zionist aims for Palestine . . . 470
2.2 Zionism . . . 471
2.3 Historical context . . . 472
3. SECOND PERIOD: After exile . . . 476
3.1 In Palestine's interior . . . 476
3.2 In Palestine's exterior . . . 477
3.3 The PLO (The Palestine Liberation Organization) . . . 478
3.4 The Zionist agression of 1967 . . . 479

3.5 Two attempts of Genocide . . . 479
4. BIBLICAL APPENDIX . . . 481

2 Listen Israel **483**

XIII FAQ 487

1 Frequently Asked Questions **489**
1. The independent believers . . . 489
   1.1 Who are you? . . . 489
   1.2 An Association of independent believers? . . . 489
   1.3 How to act? What is the meaning of Pierre2 (Peter2)? . . . 490
   1.4 The Usefulness of the Church . . . 491
   1.5 Pope John Paul II . . . 492
   1.6 Pope Francis the 1st exhorts Christians to treason: The Covenant of the Jews is not revoked . . . 494
2. The Antichrist . . . 502
   2.1 On the Subject of the Antichrist . . . 502
   2.2 Antechrist or Antichrist? . . . 504
   2.3 Pope John Paul II and the Secret of Fatima . . . 504
3. The Apocalypse . . . 505
   3.1 Do you not think that God's Mercy will reign prevalent over the world rather than his anger? . . . 505
   3.2 The Apocalyptic fight against the Antichrist . . . 506
4. The Universal Restoration . . . 510
   4.1 The Eucharist without a priest? . . . 510
   4.2 Conference on the Apocalypse? . . . 510
   4.3 The prophet Haggai and the Temple . . . 512
5. Jesus . . . 514
   5.1 According to the Qur'an, claiming that Jesus is the Son of God is blasphemy? . . . 514
   5.2 Why do you say that Jesus is God? . . . 515
6. The Qur'an . . . 516
   6.1 Why don't you become Muslims? . . . 516
   6.2 The 5 Pillars of Islam . . . 517
   6.3 Questions concerning the Qur'an . . . 520
   6.4 The veil in Islam . . . 520
   6.5 The Veil and internal purification . . . 522
   6.6 Alcohol in the Qur'an . . . 527
7. Mary . . . 530
   7.1 Why is it said that Mary is the Immaculate Conception? . . . 530
   7.2 So did Mary remain Virgin? . . . 531
   7.3 Question on the Wedding of Cana . . . 531
   7.4 The Almighty Intercession of Mary? . . . 531
   7.5 Medjugorje . . . 532
8. Prayer . . . 535

8.1 How do you address God in your prayers? . . . 535
8.2 The Rosary . . . 536
8.3 Can you tell us how you pray? . . . 539
8.4 Prayer in a physical building? . . . 545
9. The Spiritual Fight . . . 547
9.1 What do you think of the devil? . . . 547
9.2 How to fight the devil? . . . 548
9.3 The problem of evil . . . 550
9.4 The Exorcism of Leo XIII . . . 552
10. Biblical Themes . . . 557
10.1 What is it to have the Holy Spirit? . . . 557
10.2 Should we hate the Romans? . . . 557
10.3 What is it to prophecy? . . . 558
10.4 What is the difference between a saint, a prophet and an angel? Are you saints? . . . 559
10.5 Reincarnation . . . 561
11. Diverse Questions . . . 564
11.1 Pre-marital relations . . . 564
11.2 Birth control products . . . 564
11.3 Marriage: A Testimony . . . 565
11.4 Is "The Passion of Christ" antisemitic? . . . 569
11.5 Question on divorce . . . 570
11.6 The forgiveness of sins . . . 573
11.7 Can I still be saved? . . . 574